



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 05

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

Drunken Tiger

(醉虎)

Synopsis

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: Good News

In Eschyle, buildings that were made of rocks or cut into mountains existed everywhere. This city was built on the mountain. As a result, the most common bluish white dolerites became the primary raw material of all the buildings here. Many people even directly chose to build buildings on huge dolerites.

Those buildings ranged from small roadside stores with a size of 10m high to skyscrapers 100 m in height which rested between the mountain bodies.

Being different from those made of reinforced bars and cement, these buildings cut from rocks maintained the exterior lines of rocks or mountains. If not for the doors and windows, people would barely be able to distinguish them from common rocks or mountain bodies.

With these buildings, this city was filled with a wild and exotic ambiance.

Corresponding to this exotic motif, there was a wild feeling to the heavy business atmosphere and barbaric civilization. On the roadsides, people could see brands of firms and commercial organizations everywhere. Even though it was raining heavily, people carrying various weapons could still be seen all over the streets. Most of the men on the streets would carry a very remarkable weapon. Even women and kids were carrying sabers and swords. It was really Zhang Tie's first time seeing such a city.

In the heavy rain, Zhang Tie flashed through the relatively quieter alleys and streets. Being covered by the sound of raindrops, he didn't catch anyone's attention. It was too common for a traveler to move hurriedly in the rain to seek shelter in Eschyle City.

Knowing that he had been tracked by people from Magical Snake Island, of course, Zhang Tie would not simply wander around

without any target. Instead, he needed to find a place to change his appearance.

In about 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had already found a barber shop in a relatively quieter and narrow street.

Because of the heavy rain, there were few people on the street. As no guest was in the barber shop, the 40-odd-year old year barber was sitting inside the store lazily and watching the lines of raindrops flowing down the eaves with a glass window in front of him.

When Zhang Tie came to the door of the barber shop, he shook off raindrops from his waterproof raincoat before walked inside.

"Do you want to take shelter from the rain? Take a seat at your will. If you want to read a newspaper, take it from the table. But be warned, its three days old." At the sight of Zhang Tie coming in, the barber told him casually.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he undid his raincoat and his luggage before putting them behind the door, "I need a haircut!"

"You need a haircut?" After glancing at Zhang Tie, the barber immediately became spirited. He then asked Zhang Tie to sit in front of the mirror as he covered a cloth over Zhang Tie.

"Which hairstyle do you want?"

"Just make it look common. But it should be remarkably different than my current look. I like new things!" Zhang Tie replied casually.

"Okay!"

Under the barber's flying scissors, Zhang Tie's hair became much shorter than before. Now, Zhang Tie looked much more energetic.

After looking in the mirror, Zhang Tie nodded then asked, "Can you dye hair?"

"Yes, I can!"

"Dye my hair then!"

"But your blonde hair looks nice!"

"Hmm, I want a new fresh color." Zhang Tie scratched his head as he explained. People from Magical Snake Island might not have his photo. Additionally, fewer people knew him here. Therefore, it would be very difficult for people from Magical Snake Island to find him based on his look or hairstyle. According to his rich experience, after slightly changing a part of his look, he would easily avoid their spying.

"You young people really like being distinctive. Tell me, which color do you want? My dye is made of the juice of special colorful peals and rootstocks from the Ice and Snow Wildness. It'll cost 4 silver coins. Plus the hairdressing fee, you need to pay me 4 silver coins and 50 copper coins!"

"No problem."

"Which color do you want? Any color is available here!"

Zhang Tie remembered that many people had beige hair. Therefore, he answered, "Beige!"

"It might require 2 hours to dye your hair!"

"No problem. I have enough time." Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he picked up a newspaper in front of the mirror. At the same time, the barber started to make dye for him.

When the barber started to dye Zhang Tie's hair, Zhang Tie saw an alarming title on the 4th page of the newspaper "Eschyle Daily"—

——Animal Tide Threatened the Rhizotomists on Grey Hill, Felt Mongers Rubbed their Palms

It had been a long time since the animal tide broke out last time. Packs of iron-teeth Hyenas also started to wander around the Grey Hill. In the latest 2 weeks, Adelais Business Group which owned

the most of the medicine business of Grey Hill had lost 40 more rhizotomists because of the attack of iron-teeth hyenas. Some rhizotomists of other business groups on Grey Plain are also missing. According to the witnesses, people have found the tracks of the iron-teeth hyenas in the regions where those rhizotomists went missing. Some rhizotomists who survived claimed that they had been attacked or followed by iron-teeth hyenas. At the same time, it was also heard that some villages near the Grey Hill also have missing people and domestic animals.

Because of the animal tide on Grey Hill, the prices of snow ginseng, golden knotweed, red grass, cinnabar and bloody caltrop started to rise in different degrees this week in Eschyle Herbs Trading Center. According to an insider of Eschyle Herbs Trading Center. Because of the changing continental situation recently, herbs trading grew hot in the Ice and Snow Wildness as the demands of various medicines started to increase greatly. If the animal tide on Grey Hill was not curbed, many business groups would suffer losses.

However, when many people in the Eschyle Herbs Trading Center were worried about the animal tide, the felt mongers became excited. Because the fur of iron-teeth hyenas was always the best raw material of quality leather-armor and lining of senior helmets. In this month, the supply of its fur also surpassed its demand.

Adelais Business Group was reaching an agreement with the Eschyle Herbs Trading Center and some felt mongers to recruit pioneers and free warriors to deal with the animal tide on Grey Hill. After killing an iron-teeth hyena, a pioneer or a free warrior could not only sell its fur to felt monger but also gained extra 6 silver coins from Eschyle Herbs Trading Center.

The only condition was above LV 3.

Those who'd like to apply for it could inquire it from Adelais Business Group on Iron Bear Avenue. The first batch of applicants

would set off from Eschyle on August 13th.

...

Zhang Tie skimmed over the news. Even the barber behind him had not noticed that Zhang Tie was reading the newspaper. After reading it, Zhang Tie looked unchanged yet his heart raced. 'Hah, good news from a good place! I'm craving the taste of Iron-teeth hyena seven-strength fruits. Animal tide! Heihei, I love it...'

...

Two hours later, the rain stopped. With a new colorful hairstyle, Zhang Tie dropped 5 silver coins before left the barbershop. When he reached a hidden place, he put his waterproof raincoat, package and sleeping bag into Castle of Black Iron before he took out a common long sword and carried it.

The status as a pioneer was just a nominal cover for him in the Ice and Snow Wildness. Now that this cover had been identified, if he remained a pioneer, he would put himself in a greater danger. Therefore, Zhang Tie had to change his mind.

After doing this, Zhang Tie was only carrying a common long sword around his waist and looked like a young free warrior. After asking for the whereabouts of Iron Bear Avenue, he started to walk towards where the Adelais Business Group was located.

Actually, it was very necessary for Zhang Tie to cover his status in these 2 hours. He had not noticed that it was 2 people who were tracing him, instead of 1. It was safer and more skilled to trace a person by 2 people. One was responsible for gazing at the target while the other was responsible for gazing at his partner. In this way, even if one was exposed, the other one could pass the news.

After knowing that Zhang Tie had killed 2 LV 9 roundtable warriors of Magical Snake Island, the 2 spy who received the order to trace Zhang Tie chose this safer and more skilled way.

After the second spy realized that he had lost the target, he

became very flurried. Thinking of Magical Snake Island's punishment to those who failed their tasks, he gritted his teeth and set Zhang Tie into a greater trouble...

When the rain stopped, a team of policemen of Eschyle Police Office had arrived at the location in the alley where the guy was killed...

Chapter 402: Being Wanted Once Again

As the only city in the Ice and Snow Wildness, Eschyle's ruling system was as established as that of other cities. Additionally, its ruling system was very powerful as this city was also where the civilization collided with savagery in this age.

Those powerful tribes in the Ice and Snow Wildness were formed by the righteous swordmen who came here for business from the Ewentra Archipelago and people from all walks of life with different ambitions. In order to rule this city, they had to establish a powerful ruling system. However, in the complete ruling system, the most powerful, threatening deterrent was obviously the deterrent of violence.

As a deterrent to violence, the police station of Eschyle City was different from policemen in other places. Policemen of Eschyle City were also called bounty hunters. Few people who committed crimes in Eschyle City could escape from those bounty hunters. The complete Eschyle City and the port area were under the management of policemen of Eschyle City. After leaving this territory, even if one killed a person, one would have nothing to do with them.

...

After the rain, the alley had been surrounded by yellow cordon while a team of policemen in black uniforms were investigating the spot of the murder. From the scene, they could conclude that the killer was definitely a powerhouse. After realizing that a LV 6 fighter was killed so easily, all the police felt they were facing a powerful enemy.

"It's tricky..." After squatting beside the dead body for a short while, a police in black boots finally waved his head as he stood up. "Someone grabbed his neck before stabbing him. The lethal wound was between the 5th and the 6th ribs..." After picking himself up,

the police imitated Zhang Tie's movement precisely. "The dagger was thrust through here, causing a 4 cm-long wound. However, it didn't touch the bones inside his body. He moved very fast and smooth and almost reached his heart. The killer is experienced who must have killed a lot of people. Given from his fighting strength, he should be at least LV 8, or even LV 9!"

Hearing these words, the head police frowned. "It's truly chaotic in Eschyle City recently. As too many foreigners arrive here. Few of them are docile..." After saying this, the head police turned around and asked one person beside him. "You say you've seen his look and his name?"

The guy being asked was that person who followed his partner in the alley.

"He's a pioneer that's about 18 years old. After knowing that a ship would reach the harbor this morning, Perse and I then waited at the harbor. You know, sir, we jewelers like to cooperate with these pioneers who always sell us good things. Additionally, most of those pioneers coming to the Ice and Snow Wilderness these days would not enter Eschyle City. Therefore, Perse and I came here to try our fortune. We waited at the harbor for an entire morning..." As he explained, the person rolled his eyes.

"Tell me the key part..." The police waved his hand impatiently.

"Yes, sir; yes, sir..." The guy licked his lips. "That person disembarked the Polar Light. As he caught sight of Perse and me, he went directly towards us..."

"Did you know each other at the beginning?"

"Of course not. He had seen our gestures which indicated that we were here to purchase pieces of jewelry and valuables. That's why he walked towards us. You know those pioneers are very smart. They always communicate with each other through a set of special gestures. After doing business with them for a long time, we also learned a bit."

"What's next?"

"Then, he told Perse that he wanted to sell something. Being afraid of robbery, he requested for the trade to be performed downtown. When he walked towards us, I heard some pioneers call his name, Peter Hamplester."

"A 17-year old pioneer call Peter?"

"Right. At the beginning, given his young age, Perse and I didn't take precautions against him. Therefore, I told Perse to trade with him downtown while I wanted to stay in the harbor for other business. Finally, all the passengers had left in several minutes. By then, the rain grew heavier. Therefore, I hurriedly ran into downtown to seek for Perse and take a look at the new item that he purchased. When I was queuing up outside the city gate, I caught sight of Perse and that person walking into this alley. At the moment, I predicted that something bad would happen. When I came here, I have seen Perse lying here. However, the killer had disappeared together with Perse's 100-odd gold coins..."

"You mean you've not seen the one killing your partner and you are the only witness?" As the police investigated, he slightly narrowed his eyes.

"Erm...as you say!"

"Do you remember what that person looked like?"

"Yes, I remember! If you can arrest him, I'd like to provide 1000 gold coins as a reward!"

"According to your description, the pioneer called Peter could only be wanted as a criminal suspect. As to whether he had committed a crime, we need a further investigation. You go back to the police station together with police Posse. Remember to describe the suspect's look carefully so that we could send the order for an arrest..." The head police waved his head as he arranged another person to bring him back to the police station.

The moment that guy left, the police had moved one step forward, "The guy was lying. I found many problems in his words!"

"I know, but at least one point was right. This incident is definitely related to that young pioneer called Peter. However, as so many foreigners come to Eschyle, we need time to look for him. No matter what, we can have a reward!"

"But that guy might be tricky!"

"Tricky?" The head police revealed a proud smile. "This is the Ice and Snow Wildness, the territory of the Slav bear tribes. Only figures like Samaranth could enjoy the word "tricky". That guy is just a small pioneer. Do you think he's a knight? I don't care whether he's LV 9 or LV 10. As long as he dares to challenge the rules of the Ice and Snow Wildness, a great number of people would like to deal with him!"

"I heard a news from Elzida Mountain..." After looking around and seeing nobody, that police lowered his voice.

"I don't know! At the beginning, Elzida said the man who could reunite our bear tribes would come here first the moment he arrived at Ice and Snow Wildness. Therefore, the IronBear tribe chose to build Eschyle City here. No Slav wanted to present wilderness to him when he arrived here. This legend has been spread in the Ice and Snow Wildness for several hundred years. However, nobody had seen that man at all! Go prepare the order for arrest! Oh, what's the name of that pioneer being wanted?"

"Peter Hamplester!"

"Another one called Peter? What a sh*t name!" The head police tilted his mouth.

"Yup!"

...

The efficiency of the police station of Eschyle was very high. Only after 1 hour, an order for arrest with the image of "Peter

Hamplester" had been distributed to all the other places of the city.

It was a class 3 arrest order, which was mainly targeted at those criminal suspects whose crimes had not been confirmed. Therefore, the police requested to catch Zhang Tie alive, instead of "dead or alive" on a class 2 arrest order or "kill on sight" on a class 1 arrest order.

The reward on the order for arrest was 1050 gold coins, 1000 of which were provided by the party of the victim while the remaining 50 were from the fixed subsidy of the security tax for such pernicious cases in Eschyle City. The person who provided a clue could gain 80% of the reward. If anyone who could catch the criminal suspect alive, he could gain 90% of the total reward. If he killed the criminal suspect before sending him to the police station, he could only gain 40% of the total amount.

1050 gold coins was not the highest reward in the history of Eschyle, yet it was definitely not a small figure. The highest reward in the history of Eschyle was 1,250,000 gold coins on a class 1 arrest order. Rewards on arrest orders usually ranged from dozens of gold coins to hundreds of gold coins. Even seeing the least amount of reward, most of commoners and policemen across Eschyle would be excited with racing hearts and widening eyes.

The one said he remembered Zhang Tie's look truly told a lie. When he was in the yard, he only glanced at Zhang Tie once from afar. Although he could remember Zhang Tie's back and clothes very clearly, he could not remember the details of Zhang Tie's look at all. As a result, the image on the arrest order drawn by professional in the police station was only 70-80% similar to Zhang Tie's previous image.

Zhang Tie didn't know that he was wanted on the same day.

In order to deal with the animal tide on the Grey Hill, Adelais Business Group employed many low-level warriors. The iron-teeth hyena was a low-level mutated wild beast which was only 1 level

higher than a common wild wolf and hyena. Therefore, this wild beast's attack power was limited. With a weapon, even a LV 3 warrior could deal with several iron-teeth hyenas at the same time. Additionally, as the reward was very low, fighters with higher levels would never do this job at all. Therefore, only those pioneers and warriors who were under LV 6 would do this job for that bit of money.

Now, almost all the pioneers across the Ice and Snow Wilderness were heading for the Hadelia Glacial Crack, including some low-level fighters. As a result, the Adelais Business Group could employ fewer people to hunt iron-teeth hyenas on Grey Hill.

If a person with a high level attended such a task, it would be too attractive. Therefore, in front of the recruitment point, Zhang Tie fabricated a lie.

"I'm LV 4!"

"Young man. I have to warn you that, iron-teeth hyenas are not that easily dealt with. We are recruiting people above LV 3. Although we provide you benefits, if you are killed, we will not compensate. Even if you are injured, the Adelais Business Group could only compensate you for some medical expenses"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie stayed still for a second before revealed a smile, 'Do I look too young to be LV 4? Perhaps, for most commoners, a LV 4 person who looks 17 or 18 years old is truly too outstanding. If I keep staying in Blackhot City, I could at most reach LV 2. I'm afraid that only Glaze could reach LV 3.'

"But I'm truly LV 4 now. Additionally, I've hunted dozens of wild wolves. I'm responsible for my decision!" Zhang Tie explained confidently.

"Well, here's the employment agreement. Press your fingerprint here!" After glancing at Zhang Tie for a short while, the director pushed a form in front of Zhang Tie.

"Do I need to show my ID certificate?"

"Hah, nobody needs that in the Ice and Snow Wilderness!" The director responded with a sinister smile.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie pressed a fingerprint on that form without any hesitation.

"Oh, what's your name?"

"Hoy!" Zhang Tie instantly fabricated another name, 'I'm here for seven-strength fruits. All the other things are not that important. As I don't need to pay tax for a new name, neither do I want to be found by others, I will change myself completely then...'

Zhang Tie soon realized his intelligence.

After application, Zhang Tie was arranged to be placed in a small inn in downtown by the Adelais Business Group. He would set off next morning. Soon after he came to the inn, Zhang Tie had seen some police investigating guests in the inn with orders for arresting "Peter Hamplester"...

Chapter 403: The First Destination

The one standing together with the policemen was a director of the Adelaide Business Group at this inn.

"All the guests living here are warriors who were recruited recently by the Adelaide Business Group to deal with the iron-teeth hyenas on Grey Hill, nobody would care about a LV 8 or LV 9 suspect at all." As the director accompanied the policemen to investigate the guests one by another, he kept explaining something to the policemen. When he passed by Zhang Tie, the director glanced at him, "Hoy, your room is No. 4 on the 2nd floor. Don't run around after supper. The business group will distribute your equipment to you after supper. If you don't get the proper weapon, don't complain about others!"

"Who's he?" A policeman glanced over at Zhang Tie before he looked at the arrest order in his hand. Zhang Tie still looked a bit similar to the pioneer Peter Hamplester. Thankfully, Zhang Tie had changed his hairstyle and the color of his hair in a short period of time. Additionally, he was a free warrior instead of that pioneer. Therefore, the difference between his current look and that image on the arrest order was greater than the similarities.

That policeman also looked a bit confused.

"He's Hoy, a LV 4 warrior recruited by our business group." The director of the Adelaide Business Group at the inn explained. Even he had noticed the order for arrest, he still didn't connect Zhang Tie who was going to Grey Hill to make money with the guy who was wanted with a reward of 1050 gold coins. "There are some more people upstairs, I will take you there."

That police glanced over Zhang Tie's face once again before he followed the director upstairs.

Although Zhang Tie pretended to be calm, he still glanced at that order for arrest in the policemen's hands out of curiosity. At the

same time, his heart raced. It was really out of Zhang Tie's wildest imagination that he could get into such trouble the moment he arrived at this place.

If what he did to that guy in the alley was seen by someone by chance, it wasn't strange for him to be a wanted man. Although the alley looked hidden, there were buildings on its two sides. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not sure whether someone had witnessed what happened from afar through the windows. If this truly happened, the witness might have reported this to the police.

'However, the name Peter Hamplester is on the arrest order, which indicates that the one who reported this to the police was nobody else but a member of Demon Snake Island in Eschyle City. Only these people know my previous name and what I've done. Additionally, it must be two people that followed me instead of one. The second spy must have followed the first one out view.

Since they couldn't find me themselves, the lackeys of Demon Snake Island finally chose to look for me with the power of the police after judging the current situation.

Based on the image on the arrest order, it indicates that the lackeys of Demon Snake Island have not figured out my true look. At least for now. However, this situation is temporary. Even the lackeys of Demon Snake Island don't have my photo at the present, they still have many ways such as inviting a professional artist to fix my image precisely based on others descriptions.

If they dispatch someone to kill me, they must know how I look. As I've already met one guy from Demon Snake Island in Bluesea Castle, it's very simple for that guy to describe my image. Being limited to communication means in this age, although Demon Snake Island could not pass my image here now, they could change the current situation in a couple of days.'

Zhang Tie analyzed his current situation calmly and clearly before finally coming to the conclusion, 'I have to leave Eschyle

City right now. If I stay here, I might encounter the killers from Demon Snake Island. Additionally, I have to escape from the police's investigation, which would disrupt my plan.'

Zhang Tie didn't think that he was qualified to challenge the ruling orders of such a strange and powerful city despite being able to defeat most of common LV 9 fighters. Especially if he was taken advantage of by those b*stards from Magical Snake Island, it would be a needless sacrifice.

'Thankfully, the Adelaide Business Group would organize them to leave Eschyle City tomorrow. I only need to stay here for half a day at most. It should be okay. If I set out tomorrow with the others, it would be less suspicious than leaving right now.'

As he considered it, Zhang Tie entered room No. 4 on the second floor without any concern.

Of course, the Adelaide Business Group only arranged those low-level warriors to live in tidy and clean rooms instead of any high-end rooms. In room No. 4, besides Zhang Tie, there were another five people, who were all low-level warriors recruited by the Adelaide Business Group whose ages varied from 20 to 30 years or so.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the room, he had smelt the stimulative odor of sweat and feet. Thankfully, born at the bottom of society in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie had adapted to such a bad environment as he had experienced group living several times.

More than 80 low-level warriors recruited by the Adelaide Business Group these couple of days were living in the inn. As they would set out tomorrow, they all returned to the inn tonight, causing it to be very boisterous.

Zhang Tie only introduced his name to his partners in the room. He looked very indifferent while the others also replied him with a solemn look or a sinister smile. Therefore, Zhang Tie was soon pushed out by the other five people.

Zhang Tie only smiled inside as this was exactly what he needed. The moment he arrived at Grey Hill, he would leave the Adelaide Business Group as he didn't want to bring his trouble and possible dangers to these commoners who had nothing to do with him. Zhang Tie knew that these people only wanted to make a few gold coins and it was not necessary for them to be involved in his own business.

...

After supper, the Adelaide Business Group finally distributed the equipment to these temporary "mercenaries".

The alleged equipment was just a light leather armor and a great number of weapons.

Zhang Tie found that the leather armor was only made of common material covered with iron sheets. It was worth 70-80 silver coins at most. Although there were so many weapons, each of their value was almost as same as that of this light leather armor. They could be used to deal with common wild beasts, however, their endurance and sharpness could not hurt fiercer animals. Huaiyuan Palace would not equip its troops with such weak weapons.

"Each one could have one set of high-quality leather armor. Additionally, each of you could choose one quality weapon. These are from the Adelaide Business Group. When you arrive at the Grey Hill, anyone among you could kill 50 iron-teeth hyenas would have this set of leather armor and the weapon that he has chosen as his best reward!"

"Finally, those who perform excellently among you will have the chance to join the armored guards of the Adelaide Business Group and become a member of the Adelaide Business Group officially. Therefore, please don't just take this task as a job. Instead, you should treat it as an opportunity to change your destiny. As long as you have the chance to be a member of the armored guards of the

Adelais Business Group, you will gain a better training and a higher compensation. Besides that, you will have a higher social position. You will not be a small figure anymore. You will be a member of the Adelais Business Group."

When they distributed weapons, the director of the Adelais Business Group boosted their morale while standing on the freight car being loaded with weapons. Hearing that they could choose weapons freely, a great number of people surged forward at once.

Everybody rushed towards the heaviest and most valuable weapons. As a result, Zhang Tie was pushed aside. Finally, Zhang Tie only chose a common long spear.

Early the next morning, Zhang Tie left Eschyle City together with the other warriors who were recruited by the Adelais Business Group in leather armor with a long javelin in hand.

Seeing the truck exiting the city gate, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh inside.

The truck kept moving towards the north. After 5-6 hours, it arrived in a small town at noon. The road in front was so poor that wheeled vehicles could not pass. Therefore, after a simple lunch, they started to head north on foot. When most of them could not hold their breath, a grey horizon finally appeared in front of them.

'Here's the Grey Hill...'

Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh. Watching the grey horizon, Zhang Tie was a bit excited about seeing so many seven-strength fruits from the iron-teeth hyenas. 'After traveling tens of thousands of miles since I left Huaiyuan Prefecture, I finally arrive at the first destination...

That evening, everybody just camped in the wild.

Early the next morning, when the director of the Adelais Business Group organized this new force to start hunting for iron-teeth hyenas, he couldn't find Hoy. However, his leather armor

and weapon were lying tidily in his tent. Besides, there was a brief note under a gold coin.

Thanks for the kind treatment of the Adelais Business Group, this gold coin is for my lodging and travel fee.

Reading this note, the director of Adelais Business Group scratched his head out of confusion...

On the same morning, Dawson, the fighter from Demon Snake Island disembarked. After taking a deep breath, he grinned, exposing the gold-capped teeth all over his mouth.

Chapter 404: What A Freak!

The wind blew over that undulant Grey Hill, creating green waves over the meadow. Everything seemed so quiet and harmonious.

It was afternoon while the sun was hanging high. Some mature deer were wandering among those low buckthorns on one side of the meadow. Lowering their heads, they were enjoying the sweet and juicy berries on the buckthorns. For all the animals in the Ice and Snow Wilderness, this was the best season in of the year.

The wind breezing over the meadow, causing the one-man high weeds to rustle. Meanwhile, the wind also brought other sounds and smells.

Seemingly feeling something, some of the wild adult deer suddenly grew still as they raised their heads to look around. Soon after that, they started to escape out of panic.

The moment they started to speed up, air-breaking sounds had arrived. In a split second, there were javelins inserted in the deer's previous location. One of the deer's neck had been pierced. With a wail, it fell to the ground.

At this moment, 7-8 teenagers in leather hides rushed out of the meadow and started to chase after the other escaping deer.

"This one is dead. Go chase the others..." The teenager in the front shouted loudly to guide the other teenagers. Receiving his orders, all the other teenagers passed by the dead deer. At the same time, they pulled out their own javelins from the ground before chasing after the escaping deer.

These teenagers were only looked to be around 13 years old, however, they had grown very robust. This was especially so in running. In such a short distance, they had shown their amazing explosiveness and speed. As a result, the distance between the

escaping adult deer and these teenagers remained unchanged.

As they ran, those teenagers threw out their javelins. The javelins constantly inserted into the soil closely after those escaping deer, driving the deer to run faster. After throwing all of their javelins, they finally hit another one and caused it fall to the ground.

However, the teenagers didn't care about the prey. Instead, they kept chasing after the rest of the deer.

The teenagers chased after the rest of the deer out of the buckthorns when the land in front became plain and vast at once. Therefore, the deer sped up, leaving the teenagers farther behind.

However, besides javelins, those teenagers had another weapon——stumbling stone.

"Prepare the stumbling stone..." The head teenager shouted while all the rest took out their stumbling stones. As they kept running, they waved their stumbling stones rapidly.

"Release!" Following after the head teenager's stumbling stone, all the other teenagers threw out theirs.

With great centrifugal forces, the stumbling stones flew towards the rest of the deer at speeds that were much faster than the teenager's running speeds, causing strange sounds "wuh" in the air.

Most of the stumbling stones failed, except one which wrapped around a deer's legs, causing the deer fall to the ground.

With cheers, the teenagers instantly surrounded the deer that was struggling to stand up. As was imagined, the teenagers immediately pressed it on the ground. At the same time, they tied its limbs with the rope of the stumbling stone.

"Hah, a female one. We can bring it back to the village..." A teenager exclaimed happily, "We will have deer milk to drink!"

"Choy, you are really my good elder brother. Why not tell your family members to marry Ada to me when she grows up? She's 6

years old. I will wait for her another 10 years. All the villagers said she would grow up as a great beauty!" A teenager joked.

"Piss off!" The teenager called Choy waved his fist. "My Ada will at least marry a bear-killing fighter. My dad said that. Don't mention it until you become a bear-killing fighter!"

Saying this, the boy called Choy glanced at the head teenager, Evan, the only one who could become a bear-killing fighter in the future in the eyes of the villagers.

'Do dad and mom want to marry Ada to Evan?' The teenager called Choy came across a strange thought. No way! Even Evan and I are friends, I will not allow him to take Ada away from me. I will also practice hard to be a bear-killing fighter so that I could protect Ada!'

As Ada's elder brother, the moment Choy thought about that Ada might be taken away by a man, he would feel that something precious was taken away from. Therefore, in a split second, he made up his mind to become a powerful bear-killing fighter.

"Prepare your things, we need to leave here as soon as possible. It's too far away from the village." The teenager called Evan prepared his javelin as he looked around vigilantly, "We have to walk a long way before we came back to the village. We have to go back before dusk. We'd better not meet any iron-teeth hyenas on the way back..."

After gaining a big harvest, they were all very happy. Hearing Evan's words, they all quickened their movements. The teenager called Choy directly lifted the restrained deer onto his back. Although with over 50 kg on his body, he could still walk easily.

They then returned the way they came. After rapidly killing the remaining two wounded deer, the teenagers prepared to go back to village jubilantly.

This place was still over 30 km away from the village. If they sped

up, they could return to the village before sunset.

Because the soil and rocks here looked grey, from afar, this place was wholly grey except for those being covered with plants. Nobody knew why. There was only one old saying that the soil and rocks on the surface were buried underground over hundreds of millions of years. After the catastrophe, they turned upside down because of heavy geological movement.

Because of this, the soil here contained some rare elements and nutrients. Therefore, some special plants with high value grew here. Although not being suitable for all plants, all the plants here were growing pretty well. Some mutated plants could also be discovered here.

Additionally, even in winter, the surface temperature here was still higher than that in other places. Some plants that couldn't grow in other places could still grow here, making it a marvelous place.

Although this was not the only place in Ice and Snow Wilderness, as this place was only over 300 km away from Eschyle City, it had become the most famous warehouse of medicinal materials across the Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Take the buckthorns that the teenagers had passed when they chased after the deer as an example, even the roots, stems, leaves, flowers and fruits of common buckthorns were of high medicinal and edible value, not to mention the mutated hockthorns over the Grey Hill, which contained a higher value.

Especially the buckthorn oil found here which was the best and the most expensive across the whole Waii Subcontinent. Besides being one of the most important exports of Eschyle, the buckthorn oil in the Ice and Snow Wilderness was almost the necessity in each pharmacist's lab or warehouse of raw materials.

While taking turns placing the prey on their backs, the teenagers rapidly moved on the Grey Hill. In only 1 hour, they had

walked 7-8 km. Those who didn't carry the prey would hold weapons and guard the team at the front and the rear.

Through long-term cooperation, these teenagers had been tacit with each other. They knew when to shift. Only Choy among the teenagers who had made his firm decision to be a bear-killing fighter just now stuck to carrying one deer back to the village independently. He treated it as a chance to train himself.

As the old Chinese saying went——What you are afraid of always happen. Only after 1 hour, the teenagers had encountered the thing that they were concerned most——they were followed by a pack of iron-teeth hyenas.

Iron-teeth hyenas were very sensitive to the scent of dead animals. They were known as sharks in the Ice and Snow Wilderness. An iron-teeth hyena could smell the blood of the other animals from 1-2 km away. They would finally find their prey from the source of the scent.

At the beginning, there were only 5-6 iron-teeth hyenas behind them. Seeing those teenagers who were carrying their prey and their weapons, they kept a distance.

These iron-teeth hyenas looked like dogs, however, their heads were shorter and rounder than that of common dogs. Besides this, they had wider skulls. Additionally, their forequarters were stronger than their hindquarters. These iron-teeth hyenas had coarser and harder body hair. With the help of brown spots over their bodies, they could easily hide in the background color of this Grey Hill.

Certainly, if you treated them as common dogs, you would definitely be torn into pieces by them, leaving even not a single bone. It was no joke. Everybody across the Ice and Snow Wilderness knew that iron-teeth hyenas had powerful and sharp teeth and excel at grinding hard bones so that they could lick the marrows inside the bones.

Marrow was the favorite food of iron-teeth hyenas.

Each of the iron-teeth hyenas following those teenagers was longer than 1.6 m. They looked smart and fierce.

After being chased by the iron-teeth hyenas for several minutes, Evan decisively sent an order.

"Drop a deer!"

Although they were reluctant, they quickly dropped a deer. This way, they could move faster. Meanwhile, the iron-teeth hyenas would slow down their speed.

'We'd better escape from these iron-teeth hyenas in this way.'

After dropping one deer, each teenager prayed inside. Nobody knew the terrifying iron-teeth hyenas better than them.

After dropping the deer, the teenagers started to run as another one took over that alive deer from Choy.

Soon after they sped up, they had heard the terrifying sounds of bones being ground by teeth.

The teenagers didn't escape from the iron-teeth hyenas. After less than 5 minutes, more iron-teeth hyenas had appeared behind them. This time, the figure rose to 20-30, instead of 5.

At the sight of so many iron-teeth hyenas, all the teenagers turned their faces. They knew that they were in big trouble. Iron-teeth hyenas liked to hunt in packs.

This time, without Evan's order, all the other teenagers had dropped the remaining two deer. After that, they used all their strength to run. Even Choy didn't say anything at this moment. They all knew that life was the most important. If they lost the female deer, they could catch another one, but if they died, they would have nothing. The number of iron-teeth hyenas behind them had surpassed their ability to deal with.

They hadn't imagined that they would encounter the animal tide.

They hadn't ever seen so many iron-teeth hyenas near their village before. They were still in the regular hunting range of their village. Previously, when animal tide broke out, this area was still threatening to those wild beasts. However, so many iron-teeth hyenas were not only threatening them but the whole village.

The teenagers tried their best to run towards the village. Being breathless, before they were 2 km away, they had seen those iron-teeth hyenas watching them with ferocious eyes behind them...

People could never run as fast as iron-teeth hyenas in the wild. If they kept running, they would finally get tired and have their last bit of energy exhausted.

The iron-teeth hyenas behind them had started to scatter as they intended to surround the teenagers from both sides.

At the sight of a mountain cliff in front of them, Evan shouted at once, "Gather over there, we have to get into formation"

Several minutes later, the teenagers stood close to each other as they leaned against the mountain cliff. They were holding their weapons tightly and waiting for the great pack of iron-teeth hyenas to surround them up.

Watching those iron-teeth hyenas, all the teenagers' faces turned pale. They knew that they would finally be killed this time. The only concern was that how many iron-teeth hyenas they could kill before death.

"Choy, you can consider it, I mean it!" The teenager who joked with Choy over 1 hour ago added at this critical moment.

"F*ck, can you talk about it later?" Choy glared at the b*stard.

"Sh*t up!" Evan growled.

When those iron-teeth hyenas moved closer to them, the teenagers' palms had been full of sweat. At this moment, they heard an obviously surprising voice.

"Wow, so many babies, you are all mine..."

This voice with a great surprise was like from a grave robber, who exclaimed as he opened a coffin and watched a great pile of treasures inside or a traveler who had been in a desert so long time finally saw a vital oasis.

Hearing this voice, Evan and Choy both became stunned. At this scene, this voice was truly dumbfounding. What was more confusing was the word "babies"! 'Where are the babies? The iron-teeth hyenas or something else?'

As they thought they were suffering from an acousma, they heard another euphonious sound, which was very like a buzz or a faintly jarring sound of friction between grinding gears.

Along with this sound, a spray of sprouting blood happened to one of the iron-teeth hyenas. At the same time, its body was penetrated through with a metal bolt, causing a huge hole in its body.

The metal bolt was so powerful. After penetrating through that iron-teeth hyena, it was completely inserted into the ground. Watching such a great strength, the teenagers were dumbfounded.

From then on, the teenagers started to hear increasingly denser buzzing sounds, about 3-4 times per second. Each buzz would cause a spray of sprouting blood on one of those iron-teeth hyenas. The iron-teeth hyenas then fell to the ground one after the other with blood and flesh exposed all over.

What happened just now was really too fast. Not to mention these teenagers, even those iron-teeth hyenas hadn't realized what happened. Before the other iron-teeth hyenas realized what was happening, 17-18 of them had been killed...

The teenagers watched one guy rushing down the hill from afar, who was holding a huge crossbow. They had not seen such a strange crossbow at all. The eccentric buzzing noises were coming

from that crossbow.

As he rushed towards them, the guy kept shooting those iron-teeth hyenas, one bolt for one head. What he did really scared the teenagers. In a blink of an eye, a few more iron-teeth hyenas had been killed. As a result, the remaining iron-teeth hyenas who were gazing at the teenagers just now instantly turned around to escape. However, the man seemed as if he hadn't seen the teenagers at all. Without greeting them, he directly chased after the iron-teeth hyenas with the strange crossbow.

In a wink, some more sprays of blood were seen on the escaping iron-teeth hyenas.

"Babies, stop..." That man kept shouting at the same time...

The teenagers then exchanged glances at each other, "What a strange person..."

Chapter 405: Partners

A couple of minutes later, Zhang Tie carried that heavy crossbow back to the place of these teenagers with a big smile.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt like a ferocious beast seeing a grand meal or like a whoremaster seeing the brand prostitute in a brothel. He was so happy that he even wanted to hum a song.

This time, he killed the whole pack of 28 iron-teeth hyenas. Plus those he killed yesterday and this morning, he could get one more ripe iron-teeth hyena's seven-strength fruit on the small tree. The moment he thought that he could eat another seven-strength fruit, Zhang Tie felt so cold taking a bath in the ice spring in hot summer.

He made the right choice to be here. Only arriving here after 3 days, he was going to eat the 2nd seven-strength fruit.

Watching him smile, those teenagers felt very strange. Therefore, as Zhang Tie walked towards them, they all gazed at him nervously instead of being relaxed after the death of those iron-teeth hyenas.

As they were in the wild, encountering such a weird person, all the teenagers felt flurried inside. Now that he could kill all the 20-30 iron-teeth hyenas in a wink with that terrifying weapon, he could also easily kill them.

Nobody knew whether he was their enemy or a friend.

When Zhang Tie was closer to them, he noticed them panic. He then knew what they were concerned about, Zhang Tie was not angry about that. If he was one of those teenagers, he would also be alert in that case. As these teenagers were born in Ice and Snow Wildness, they were used to be hostile against everything. Therefore, it was normal for them to be precocious. This also explained why they came out for hunting at such an earlier age.

After placing that heavy crossbow on the ground with its muzzle against the ground, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Are you all right?"

Watching this, these teenagers finally looked reassured.

"Yes. Thanks for your help. We are okay! If not for you, we might be in a great danger!" Evan replied.

"It's easy. I was just doing that by the way!" After saying this, Zhang Tie lowered his body and pulled one bloody bolt out of the ground. After cleaning off the mud and blood stains, he put the bolt back into one of his bolt containers over his waist.

When Zhang Tie collected his own metal bolts, those teenagers exchanged glances with each other before came close to help him. In a short while, they had helped Zhang Tie collect all the metal bolts.

Those metal bolts were very heavy. Although having been used by Zhang Tie, they still looked like new ones after being cleaned as no scratch could be seen on them. All the teenagers were amazed about this.

"Oh, can we know your name?" After helping him collect all the bolts, Evan courageously asked Zhang Tie, "As you've saved us, we will have to pay you back!"

Finding these teenagers interesting, Zhang Tie then replied, "I'm Peter, what about you?"

"I'm Evan!"

"I'm Choy!"

"I'm Tavnov!"

"I'm Zoan!"

...

All the 8 teenagers then started to introduce themselves while raising their chests.

After introducing themselves, everybody then felt harmonious with each other's atmosphere. At this moment, those teenagers were not cautious about Zhang Tie anymore. After all, seeing Zhang Tie's fighting strength, if he wanted to kill them, he didn't even need to talk so much with them. Additionally, they didn't think that they were valuable to Zhang Tie.

After taking the crossbow from ground, Zhang Tie looked at the weather and asked, "Evan, where do you live?"

"Right in the Kurgan village over 10 km away!"

Zhang Tie knew that the village that they referred to was the smallest tribe on Ice and Snow Wilderness which was only surrounded by barriers and a cob wall. Except for Eschyle, above 99% of people on Ice and Snow Wilderness were living in the form of tribes. In this place, tribes were divided into different ranks. The tribe with the highest rank had a population of over a million of those tribes that can be hung as the tribal totems. The alleged Kurgan village was actually a small Slav tribe which only contained less than 2000 people.

"As there are some dangers in the wild, I'm not sure whether you will meet other iron-teeth hyenas on your way back. So I decide to accompany you back in case of emergency!"

Hearing this, all the teenagers felt that Zhang Tie was a kind person.

"Erm...do you need these iron-teeth hyenas?" One teenager named Basa hesitated a moment, asked Zhang Tie while pointing at those iron-teeth hyenas on the ground.

"I don't need them. If you can take them back home, I will gift them to you!" Zhang Tie replied generously. He truly didn't need these iron-teeth hyenas. He had tried to eat their meat 2 days ago. Although they were edible, their meat was too fishy and oily that made Zhang Tie disgusted even now.

As for their furs, even Zhang Tie was frugal, he would not choose to exchange those furs for only a few silver coins from those felt mongers. At this time, Zhang Tie was also not sure whether the message that he had left Eschyle after changing the name was exposed or not. After all, besides those people from Magical Snake Island, even that barber who had cut his hair in Eschyle might also leak his trace. It would be very risky for him to contact any business group in Eschyle at this moment. After all, over 1000 gold coins was not a small amount for many people.

After a round of choices, each teenager finally selected one iron-teeth hyena respectively before stepped on the way back. Zhang Tie just stayed with them as a bodyguard.

As they walked, they started to chat with Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie also learned much information about the Grey Hill.

"Peter, you're so sharp. Are you a bear-killing fighter from Eschyle City to deal with the animal tide here?" Choy peeped at Zhang Tie's terrifying metal crossbow as he asked with a special brilliance in his eyes.

On the way back, all the teenagers kept staring at Zhang Tie's weapon. It was really their first time to see such a sharp weapon. Being different from common metal crossbows that they used to see, Zhang Tie's weapons could release fire with great destructive force. The moment its bolt touched an iron-teeth hyena, it would penetrate through its body at once. Furthermore, the metal bolts that matched this crossbow were also not common.

"I'm not a bear-killing fighter!" Zhang Tie waved his head. He knew what did Choy mean by bear-killing fighter. They were a special Slav fighter on Ice and Snow Wildness. All the bear-killing fighters were above LV 6; however, not all the fighters above LV 6 were bear-killing fighters. The key point to be a bear-killing fighter was to master the maniac ability to increase his fighting strength in a short time. With the help of the maniac ability, a common fighter could increase his fighting strength greatly in a short time

so that a LV 6 bear-killing fighter might defeat a common LV 7 fighter or a LV 7 bear-killing fighter could challenge a common LV 8 fighter.

"You are not a bear-killing fighter?"

Zhang Tie's answer made all the teenagers surprised.

"Of course not!"

"Why are you here then? It seems you're being interested in hunting iron-teeth hyenas!" Out of great curiosity, Choy put it straightforwardly without being afraid of violating Zhang Tie's privacy.

"Actually, I'm a devoted follower of the school of patron!" As this was not Zhang Tie's first time to fabricate it, he had been looking very devoted and easygoing as he told him. Zhang Tie found that when he took the school of patron as an excuse, he could explain what he had done easily. This excuse was as useful as tiger balm. No matter what he had done, as long as he connected it to this school, he could make his deed full of righteousness, "It's the fundamental rule which the school of patron always used to maintain the balance between the basic laws of the mother nature and all the species. I think the animal tide on the Grey Hill could influence the balance between species and the mother nature, here come I!"

"Ah, you're also a member of the school of patron?" Evan watched Zhang Tie with widening eyes, "Another man of the school of patron also came to our village several days ago!"

Hearing Evan's words, Zhang was stunned. After leaving Blackhot City, it was Zhang Tie's first time to hear the news of another member of school of patron. For this mysterious school, Zhang Tie knew nobody else than the benign, Grandma Teresa. The moment he heard this teenager's words, Zhang Tie also became curious.

"Wuh, what did that person come to your village for?"

"I don't know. He left after talking with uncle Zieg in our village for several hours!"

...

"Why did school of patron dispatch a member to a small village on Ice and Snow Wildness?" Zhang Tie kept thinking about that before he arrived at the village.

After over 10 km, a team of men who were all elder than 20 years old with weapons in their hands encountered Zhang Tie's group on the way.

"Evan, Zoan, it's so nice to see you are safe!" An elder and stronger man instantly let out a sigh the moment he saw those teenagers. He ran towards them, "As too many iron-teeth hyenas appeared in a place not far from the village, uncle Zieg let us to find you and accompany you back as soon as possible!"

"Hmm, we've met over 20 iron-teeth hyenas just now. We almost could not come back!"

"What happened?" Hearing this, those youths instantly held fast their weapons, "But where are the iron-teeth hyenas?"

"Thanks to Peter, we've killed them all. If not, we've been chewed!"

Hearing Evan's introduction, those youths stared at Zhang Tie seriously.

"Evan, if so many people have been here to protect you, I will leave. See you later!" Zhang Tie smiled as he prepared to leave and eat his latest seven-strength fruit.

"It's almost dark. Why not take a rest in the village? If uncle Zieg knew that we let you go, he would definitely beat us and blame us for being impolite to you..." Evan urged.

"That's it..." All the others agreed with Evan almost in unison.

"You've saved the lives of 8 men in Kurgan village. Therefore, you are our most honorable guest. Please come with us and taste our Buckthorn wine!" One of those youths invited.

Thinking of that member from school of patron who came to Kurgan village several days ago, Zhang Tie then nodded firmly, "Well, I'd like to taste your Buckthorn wine!"

Seeing Zhang Tie being that straightforward, everybody burst out into laughter.

On the way back, Evan and the other teenagers told those youths how they met Zhang Tie and how Zhang Tie saved them. Hearing the whole process, the team of youths glanced at Zhang Tie with respectful looks. Some of them even wanted to challenge Zhang Tie as what young men would always do when they see their peers being better than them.

Zhang Tie was about 3 years elder than Evan and the other teenagers yet was 3 years younger than those youths. Some of the youths felt that Evan was exaggerating when he described how Zhang Tie killed 20-30 iron-teeth hyenas himself. According to Evan and the other teenagers, Zhang Tie might have become a bear-killing fighter now. However, a bear-killing fighter of 17-18 years old had not been seen in Kurgan village for a long time.

"Peter, is that huge weapon in your hand a heavy crossbow? You killed over 20 iron-teeth hyenas with it just now?" A youth named Burman asked straightforwardly.

Zhang Tie had seen so many people like Burman. Actually, he felt much easier to get along with such a person, "Yup, You want to have a try?"

"Sure!" Burman rubbed his hands full of excitement.

Zhang Tie then passed it to him with one hand. Seeing Zhang Tie moved it so easily, Burman also prepared to receive it with one hand.

"It's a bit heavy. Are you sure you want to take it with one hand?" Before releasing the crossbow, Zhang Tie warned Burman out of kind intention.

Burman replied with a cold harrumph as he seemed being unhappy about being belittled by Zhang Tie.

Watching Burman's look, Zhang Tie directly released his grip after seeing that Burman had held it fast.

However, the moment Zhang Tie released his grip, Burman had turned his face. With a tilt, he almost fell to the ground together with that heavy crossbow. Before he tumbled over, he roared as he hurriedly took over that heavy crossbow with the help of another hand. Although he finally saved his face, his face had already turned red due to sudden strength. Although Zhang Tie could walk freely with this weapon, he could only barely carry it.

"Argh, Burman..." At the sight of this, the other youths responded with dumbfounded looks at the same time, "Isn't this weapon light in Peter's hand? How come Burman look so embarrassed! Burman has a great strength!"

"How come..." Burman looked at Zhang Tie amazingly, "This...this crossbow is...at least 300 kg..."

"What? 300 kg? How come!? Even it's made of steel and iron, it would not be that heavy!" Another youth shouted as he also stretched out his hand, "Give it to me, I will have a try..."

When Burman passed that heavy crossbow to the other youth, the latter one also turned his face, "Damned, It's really...too heavy...how come!?"

All the youths then crowded round to have a try. However, after trying it, everybody looked at Zhang Tie as if they saw a ghost in the daytime.

Even Evan, Choy and the other teenagers came over and tried it. However, for those teenagers, that heavy weapon of over 300 kg

was absolutely out of their endurance. As for those teenagers, 1 people could barely hold it fast; 2 people could not even carry it; 3 people could barely carry it.

As they imagined how Zhang Tie moved agilely with this weapon, they all worshiped Zhang Tie so much.

"Peter, how come is it so heavy?"

Touching his nose, Zhang Tie replied, "I don't know why. I didn't make it. But I know that a material called aerosiderite was used to make it. With that material, the key arcualias that could sustain stress would not be worn even after being used for tens of thousands times."

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, everybody understood it. Some youths who knew how to use such a heavy crossbow tried to put it on the ground by foot before trying to load on a bolt with the help of the hydraulic sliding bar. However, although with blushes on their faces, they failed to press the sliding bar to the bottom.

Watching them being that hard, Zhang Tie directly took over the crossbow. With one hand on the handle, he pinched that hydraulic sliding bar and dragged it back so easily. With a low sound of "kacha" and an euphonious buzz of the rotating gears, Zhang Tie had loaded on one bolt.

Watching Zhang Tie, those youths completely gave up their challenging thoughts...

Before sunset, Zhang Tie accompanied them to their village...

Chapter 406: It was Strange

Kurgan village was in a plain valley. A small river flowed by the village while the mountain slopes on both sides of the village were covered with Buckthorns.

The whole village was surrounded with wooden barriers and mounds as high as one adult person. On the side of those barriers and mounds were some simple yet practicable wooden embrasured watchtowers.

The sun was going to set off while some columns of smoke were rising from the village.

The moment Zhang Tie and the other teenagers and youths moved closer to the village, they were immediately seen by the watchdogs on the embrasured watchtowers.

"All the members of Evan's team and Burman's team are back! With 8 iron-teeth hyenas...", one of the watchdogs had screamed with full of pleasure the moment he saw them.

Hearing this voice, some more sounds drifted from inside the village while many younger kids ran out; meanwhile, they kept calling "brother", "brother". When they came to search those who arrived, they started to pull the corners of those people's garments; some of them even surrounded the iron-teeth hyenas on the backs of Evan's team. Drooling, they even urged to make clothes with the furs of iron-teeth hyenas. What a boisterous scene!

All the villagers had coarse skins and robust figures. This was the feature of aboriginals who lived in Ice and Snow Wilderness for so long. Everybody here looked a bit shabby. All the rooms in the village were 1-storey cabins. 2-3 cabins being surrounded with wooden barriers would form a house with a courtyard. Although, it was still filled with cheers and laughter, especially after those hunters came back.

After being introduced how he saved 8 teenagers for Kurgan village, Zhang Tie undoubtedly became the most popular one in this village.

Uncle Zieg, the head of Kurgan village brought Zhang Tie into his own house. After that, the family members of the 8 teenagers sent their dried meat and Buckthorn wine there to express their gratitude to Zhang Tie.

The villagers here were too pure and simple which moved Zhang Tie to a certain degree. After taking around the village, Zhang Tie knew it was not rich here; however, the food that the villagers gifted him were the best that they could afford across the village.

Took dried meat as an example, on the way back to the village, Zhang Tie knew that Evan's team were carrying those iron-teeth hyenas back to pickle their meat. For Zhang Tie, it didn't taste good; however, for those residents in Ice and Snow Wilderness, it could not be wasted. Now, they kept those bad-taste meat of iron-teeth hyenas at home and brought Zhang Tie with the especially yummy meat of deer and pheasants.

Zieg, the village head of Kurgan was a tough man of 50-60 years old. After experiencing so much in Ice and Snow Wilderness, he looked elder than his real age. Therefore, Zhang Tie could not identify his real age.

There was a deep frown on Zieg's forehead. However, he still stood straight; besides, he was taller than 2 meters with thick shoulders. Zhang Tie felt that he was a responsible person the moment he saw the village head.

After giving the food to his wife to process them in kitchen, Zieg started to chat with Zhang Tie at the stony table in the courtyard.

Zieg's wife made two cups of hot water for them. Seeing the yellowish green leaves floating over the golden water, Zhang Tie blinked with an amazed look. "Are they tea leaves? No way! How come tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness be so luxurious?" A pack of

tea leaves would definitely be much more expensive than one same pack in Blackhot City!

Zhang Tie took up his cup and sniffed. It smelt a bit different from that tea water. However, it also had a faint plant scent. After blowing it, Zhang Tie took a sip but it felt a bit sour beside refreshness.

"Are they tea leaves?" Zhang Tie asked.

"These are not tea leaves from the east. These are the leaves of Buckthorns that we made ourselves!" Zieg narrowed his eyes as he also took a sip with a pleasant look, "Both people and domestic animals would grow fat if they always eat it. With those Buckthorns over the mountain slopes outside the village, nobody of Kurgan village had starved to death during the past 200 years...people could always survive on Buckthorns!"

The village head of Kurgan said proudly.

"This thing really tastes nice!" Zhang Tie smiled. After sipping twice, Zhang Tie imitated Zieg as he chewed the Buckthorn leaves forcefully. Actually, Zhang Tie was not used to drink expensive tea drinks. He felt it being nothing different than the "wild spring" that served by the senior of Huaiyuan Palace. Although a cup of "wild spring" might be more expensive than all the Buckthorns over the mountain slopes, Zhang Tie didn't think it was great as he didn't measure the value of an item in terms of money. He had deeply formed this value since he was in Blapei.

Seeing Zhang Tie eating all the Buckthorn leaves without any hesitation, Zieg revealed a big smile as he erected his thumb towards Zhang Tie, "You are the real friend of Kurgan village!"

Zhang Tie had almost figured out the personalities of these residents in the Ice and Snow Wilderness. All of them were very straightforward and generous as they kept gratitude deep in their mind. If you treated and respected them well, you would gain twice the simple respect and warm treatment; however, if you

dared to find them trouble, you had better be ready for fighting them to death.

Zhang Tie liked them.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie decided to put it straightforward what he desired most in Kurgan village.

"Before I came, Evan told me that a member of school of patron had been here several days ago. Can you tell me about him? As I'm also a devoted follower of school of patron, it's really out of my expectation to hear another member of the same school in Ice and Snow Wilderness!"

"Wuh, you're a follower of school of patron?" Zieg, the village head glanced at Zhang Tie with an amazing look.

"Right, I was a devoted contributor of school of patron when I was in Norman Empire. When I saved Evan's team, I told them I'm a devoted follower of school of patron; therefore, Evan told me about that one member of our school came here several days ago!"

Hearing this, Zieg didn't doubt anymore, "He was a powerful wild patron from school of patron; he was here to survey the animal tide over the Grey Hill!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie was really shocked as it was his 2nd time to hear the title "wild patron". When he was attending the survival training in Wildwolf Valley, Zerom told him for the first time that wild patron of school of patron had a great ability to control animals. It was a very powerful and mysterious profession! Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could hear such a person here.

"Is there anything special with this animal tide?"

Now that it could attract a wild patron's attention, this animal tide was definitely special.

"The last animal tide broke out 7 years ago; however, it breaks out now. That's how it's weird!" Zieg frowned his forehead.

"Why?"

"According to the record of animal tides over Ice and Snow Wilderness, the distance between 2 animal tides was about 12-15 years. Ice and Snow Wilderness was too huge that so many ferocious wild animals would increase their population greatly after a fixed period, namely animal tide. It was nothing strange to see an animal tide at all; however, this animal tide is only 7 years after the last one. That's how it is strange! This had never happened in Ice and Snow Wilderness at all!"

"Only because of this?"

"Of course, there are some things more strange!" Saying this, the frown on Zieg's forehead deepened, "Previously, animal tides of different species didn't break out at the same time. For instance, when iron-teeth hyenas broke out its tide, the other living beings such as huge wolves on Wilderness and hell-magical rats would not break out their tides at the same time; instead, they would break out by turns. However, this time, I was told that many living beings broke out their tides at the same time across Ice and Snow Wilderness. What's more, the magic arts on the bloody territories outside many tribes and villages became ineffective..."

"Bloody territory?"

Realizing that Zhang Tie didn't know what was bloody territory, Zieg started to explain to him.

'The alleged bloody territory is magic art that shaman flamen applied in Ice and Snow Wilderness with the fresh blood and lives of some wild and dangerous living beings. The only function of this magic art is to drive those dangerous living beings away from the villages where tribes live in and protect those villagers invisibly.

A magic art of bloody territory only targets at one wild beast. In the surroundings of some larger tribes, there are always multiple magic arts which could prevent some dangerous living beings from

hurting commoners.

Taking Kurgan village as an example. Over 4 decades ago, a shaman priest once applied a magic art of bloody territory to iron-teeth hyenas which always appeared nearby the village, although we had experienced animal tides some times over the past 4 decades, we didn't even see a single iron-teeth hyena within 10 km of our village.

However, this time, not knowing whether because the magic art lost its effect or those iron-teeth hyenas had been driven mad, 10 km was not a safe range for us to stay away from iron-teeth hyenas anymore.

Besides Kurgan village, many other places had encountered this problem.'

Chapter 407: A Great Ambition

Hearing Zieg's explanation, Zhang Tie also started to consider about this abnormal situation. Combining with the above points, this animal tide was truly too weird. No wonder one wild patron of school of patron was attracted here.

"What did that wild patron find?"

"I don't know. He stayed over one night in Kurgan village to inquire about what I've told you. After that, he left!" Saying this, the village head recalled something, "Oh, he has a pet, a very huge black eagle. Before I saw him off, that huge eagle directly landed on the ground from sky, startling me a lot."

A weird animal tide, a wild patron of school of patron who came here to investigate with a huge black eagle. These clues reminded Zhang Tie of that attack from iron-beak ibis on the way back to Huaiyuan Prefecture by airship. Because of the attack from those iron-beak ibises, many airlines above Waii Sub Continent had been greatly influenced, some were even stopped.

"Is there any link between the two events?"

Zhang Tie sensed a bit danger instinctively. However, it was not a negative event for him; instead, it was easier for him to form seven-strength fruits. Therefore, he didn't think too much about this event.

For Zhang Tie, whatever happened in the future, he had to keep increasing his fighting strength in the first place.

It was a grand supper. Zhang Tie had not tasted such yummy food before he came here, especially the Buckthorn wine which was brewed by the villagers themselves, absolutely unforgettable.

It was a simple process to brew Buckthorn wine. Being similar to the brewing process of wine, picking off Buckthorns, cleaning them and crumbling them into pieces; after that, mix them with

sugar and ferment the mixture in wooden barrel. Zieg said that everybody across Ice and Snow Wilderness could brew Buckthorn wine, each of them grew up drinking Buckthorn wine. Not only did it taste good, but also made people healthy. People here almost didn't get sick at all.

If it was before, Zhang Tie would have been amazed about this; however, now, Zhang Tie knew it clearly that those aborigines were actually fermenting. Although these people might not know what was ferment, they had found the way to obtain a great amount of ferment in Ice and Snow Wilderness so easily and instinctively.

People here seemed inseparable from Buckthorns. All the items; Buckthorn tea, Buckthorn wine, Buckthorn oil and the Buckthorn twigs was stored for tiding over winter and were closely related to their daily lives.

Even the Buckthorns being planted outside the village had formed a barrier to this village. Standing neatly in lines like guardsmen, these Buckthorns could prevent wild beasts coming close to this village from all directions to a certain degree. As a result, those wild beasts could only move closer to the village through special accesses that people had prepared. In this way, villagers would be able to notice the traces of huge dangerous wild beasts entering the village much easily.

Besides, Buckthorns could fertilize the soil. After being planted with Buckthorns for some years, the previous barren farming land could be grown with vital plants like soya beans and provide grains for people. Villages across Ice and Snow Wilderness usually inter-plant wheat among Buckthorns and could always have big harvests.

Living conditions and quality of life of these people was influenced by this plant. It could be said that without Buckthorns nobody across Ice and Snow Wilderness could survive here.

This common plant had become the most important guarantee of local residents. Buckthorn fruits and leaves were edible and easily stored. Additionally, as the main fuel of the local residents, they could help people tide over the long winter. Besides, it was the most important cash crop here. By exporting Buckthorns, people here could gain gold coins as payment. Finally, by growing them, people could fertilize their soil and further expand their living space. It was hard to imagine how people would survive here without Buckthorn.

At the dining table, Zieg introduced the functions of Buckthorns. Hearing those words, Zhang Tie instantly came across a thought, "I'm wondering whether it would be more marvelous after a round of mutation and evolution in Castle of Black Iron."

The moment it hit his mind, Zhang Tie had become excited. Such a sense of achievement of creating a species was really cool. When Zhang Tie was imagining about the new Buckthorn that might have greater effects, another thought flashed across his mind and struck him like a lightning bolt, causing him stiff all over at once.

"What if Ice and Snow Wilderness is covered with the new Buckthorn and those residents could get a better life brought by the new buckthorn?"

Zhang Tie started to quiver faintly as he remembered what he had learned in the book 'General History of Man Kinds' in Huaiyuan Palace.

Before catastrophe, the agents and lackeys of demons among humans were applying this scientific means to control the quality of grains over this planet before influencing people's agricultural production. After that, humans were actually under the control of demons and their agents and lackeys among humans.

The grain seeds provided by demons to humans were poisonous. The toxin was not the common chemical; instead, it was a more terrifying gene virus. Grains were growing with that gene virus.

After entering people's body, it could regulate their genes and DNAs, reducing their life expectancy and making them frail and sick, even making them slow-witted and infertile. By replacing people's grain seeds, demons were actually castrating humans, causing them losing their ability to fight demons. If humans eat those poisonous grains, they would definitely be ruled by demons in the end.

At that age, Chinese were under the conspiracy of demons and suffered a lot before finally woke up. After that, Chinese led the rest of humans to resist demons and became the pillar of humans of the 2 holy wars.

"If I could get a new Buckthorn, of course, I would not poison the aboriginals with it; however, given that these people could not survive without Buckthorn, I can have a greater influence over Ice and Snow Wilderness by controlling them with the new Buckthorn like how demons ruled humans by the poisonous grain seeds. It's of the same logic."

If it was before, Zhang Tie might not have such a great ambition; however, this time, the moment this thought flashed across his mind, it had started to grow and extend wildly like weeds in his mind.

Seeing Zhang Tie becoming absent-minded, Zieg thought that Zhang Tie didn't like these food as he asked him out of concern, "Don't like this?"

"Wuh, of course not!" Zhang Tie responded with a smile, "When I heard about the functions of these Buckthorns, I was thinking about taking some seeds back as a memory!"

"You want the seeds of Buckthorns?" The village head asked.

"Is there any in the village? If not, I can collect some outside!"

Zieg then burst out into laughter and generously replied, "The last thing that you cannot get from Kurgan village is Buckthorn

seeds. As they are used for squeezing oil, many Buckthorn seeds are piling in the mill. We've got several hundreds kg. You can take as many as you will. If you tell me where you live, I can have some young men carry them to your place!"

"I only need a small pack, about half a kilo!"

"Hassan, go get a small pack of Buckthorn seeds from the mill for Peter!" Zieg touched his grandson who was only about 6 years old.

Hearing this, his grandson glanced at Zhang Tie before nodded and scuttled outside. After a short while, he already came back with a pack of Buckthorn seeds which weighed about 1 kg...

Gazing at those seeds, Zhang Tie faintly narrowed his eyes, "Although it's low for Buckthorn seeds to mutate and evolve in Castle of Black Iron, If I could input different number of merit values, aura values and basic energy storage into the 300 Buckthorn seeds, which are divided into different groups, I might finally gain a whole new Buckthorn seed."

Thinking of those Buckthorns over Ice and Snow Wilderness which would be "docile" to him in the future, Zhang Tie revealed with a smile.

After supper, it was already dark. Zhang Tie learned a lot about Ice and Snow Wilderness from Zieg. At this time, Evan and the other teenagers came here to invite Zhang Tie to attend their bonfire party.

"Go, evening belongs to you, young man. Actually, there are only young men at the bonfire party. We old people do not go there!" Zieg also persuaded.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Tie agreed pleasantly. It was still a period of time before going to bed. As they were all young, Zhang Tie didn't mind attending it.

Hearing Zhang Tie's response, all the other teenagers became joyful. Before leaving, Evan pointed at Zhang Tie's heavy crossbow

which was placed against the wall, "Can we take that huge thing there? So many people want to take a look at it!"

Zhang Tie instantly took his crossbow. Seeing that, everybody burst out into laughter.

The bonfire party was held in the middle of the village. Each night, this place would be the world of young persons and kids in Kurgan village. They set a big bonfire in the vacant place; meanwhile, they sat around the bonfire to chat, drink, sing, dance and share their achievements on the very day; besides, these adolescents wrestled and challenged their peers on fighting skills. What a boisterous scene!

Those diligent girls who helped their family members do farming works in the daytime would also come out in the evening. They sat and joked with boys, being not bashful at all.

Smaller kids ran around the bonfire as they caught fireflies or played hide-and-seek game.

Those married ones or elders would not attend such a party at all. Therefore, these young men felt free doing whatever they wanted here.

According to Evan, such parties were held everyday as long as weather permitted or nothing special happened. These young men would kill time here each night. All the young ones would like to attend this party.

Before arrival, Zhang Tie had already seen the fierce blaze from afar and heard the laughter of these young people.

When he arrived there, Zhang Tie found about 400-500 people over there. The atmosphere was boisterous and free. The age of these people ranged from 5-20-odd years old. The younger ones were even running here and there with naked butts. Everybody here looked relaxed and pleasant.

Zhang Tie noticed that more than 20 young men spared a region

on one side of the bonfire as they threw javelins towards a scarecrow being covered with hide which was standing dozens meters away. They were so hyper.

This was more an open-air party than a bonfire party that every young people would like to attend each night in Kurgan village. Zhang Tie as an average person who grew up in a small city had not imagined about enjoying such a special treatment by attending parties and exchanging with familiar peers each night. Young people in cities often went to bars. However, the atmosphere and feeling in bars could never match that of here. Not to mention that Zhang Tie was very poor when he was in Blackhot City and couldn't afford bars at all.

At this moment, Zhang Tie started to admire about the night life of the youth in Kurgan village. They didn't spend even a penny on attending this party; yet their happiness and freedom could not be bought by many people.

Zhang Tie's arrival didn't arise any surprise. Those young men didn't welcome him with any special audible and visual effects; instead, they all acted as casual as before. Zhang Tie then followed Evan's team into that circle formed by Burman's team whom he met at the sunset. After that, they started to chat with each other happily.

The heavy metal crossbow that Zhang Tie took here seemed being more attractive than himself. The moment those young men caught sight of such a huge weapon, they instantly surrounded it and wanted to have a try.

After teaching them how to adjust the moment gear of that hydraulic sliding bar, Zhang Tie handed it to those young men. Many people then tried to take it up one by another.

Those who could take up this crossbow stared at Zhang Tie with full of admiration; however, those people who could not take up, would not feel too embarrassed either; instead, they only felt a bit

bashful as they would always laugh in a benign way.

Evan shouted that with this crossbow, a bolt could penetrate through an iron-teeth hyena before completely sunk into the soil with its full strength. With Zhang Tie's consent, some more young men crowded in and wanted to have a try.

When in trial shooting, almost all the young people in the village crowded over here.

They tested its power at the point where they threw their javelins. Zhang Tie told some of them to place 3 scarecrows in a row 40 m away.

Because nobody could take up that huge weapons and shot horizontally like Zhang Tie, they carried it onto a wooden vaulting horse which was about 1 m high. After fixing that metal foot stool with the help of the vaulting horse, they triggered the crossbow.

Burman was the first. He firstly inserted a metal bolt clip into a slot under the crossbow. After that, he forcefully pulled the sliding bar 8 times consecutively before finally made it with a sound of "kacha". He then placed it over his shoulder against the fold-able handle of the crossbow and triggered the bolt in a few seconds.

Almost nobody had heard the faint buzz; however, they saw 3 targets exploding at the same time.

"Wow..." All the young men in Kurgan village uttered a scream as this crossbow's power was out of their imagination.

"Even Eschyle City could not make this..." A teenager sighed with emotion, "I've seen the heavy crossbow in Eschyle City. They could not match its power and craftsmanship at all!"

"It might cost a lot!" Evan watched that crossbow as he asked Zhang Tie with sparkling eyes.

"Hmm, probably!" Actually, even Zhang Tie didn't know the price of this heavy crossbow. Because he took it away from the warehouse of the Zhen's Mansion in Heavens Cold City. It was

absolutely a imported good from other continents. He had 10 more heavy crossbows of the same kind in Castle of Black Iron. After arriving at Grey Hill, Zhang Tie found this weapon was the most efficient weapon in killing iron-teeth hyenas; therefore, he took one out of Castle of Black Iron and kept using it.

Zhang Tie thought this crossbow should be worth 400 gold coins or so in Huaiyuan Prefecture. It might be more valuable in other places. In a contrast, the price of a Faerie-Dragon T9 sports car was only 500-odd gold coins. Based on this, the price of such a crossbow was truly expensive.

After Burman, almost all the teenagers above 12 had a try one after another. Even those girls couldn't wait to join them.

It was such a boisterous and happy party. Zhang Tie performed as an interpreter of weapon and a coach on teaching the young men in Kurgan village to manipulate this heavy crossbow. After all, the crossbow was like a big-bore heavy weapon before catastrophe, which was rarely seen. However, this weapon became a big toy in this bonfire party, making everybody excited.

After playing with his peers innocently for such a long time, Zhang Tie also felt very happy.

...

The bonfire party didn't come to an end until midnight. As the flames gradually became lighter, those young men returned to their homes.

Zhang Tie was arranged by Zieg to sleep in the only public room of the village. It was a cabin built by the villagers. If any family could not hold their relatives or guests, they could arrange them in the public room. The wild patron from school of patron also slept here that night.

As was imagined, Zhang Tie didn't complain about the treatment at all. Actually, he found that this public room was even better

than most of private cabins in the village. Additionally, although the quilts here were not new, they were very clean and carried the smell of sunshine. The villagers especially prepared them for Zhang Tie.

...

When all the households in Kurgan Village died out their lamplights, Zhang Tie, lying on his bed, was intending to enter Castle of Black Iron to taste the latest seven-strength fruit. However, at this moment, he heard faint footsteps from outside the cabin, which stopped Zhang Tie's intention at once.

"It's been so late! Who's that?"

"Bang, bang, bang..." After a short while, someone finally knocked at his door.

When the second round of knocks drifted in his ears, Zhang Tie got off the bed instantly and opened the wooden door.

It was a beautiful girl of 18 years old who was wearing a cloak made of bear's fur. Zhang Tie could even smell the fragrance of flowers from her, which indicated that she had just taken a bath.

"She's familiar. I've met her today; oh, she's Evan's elder sister..."

Before Zhang Tie uttered, the girl had revealed a smile as she walked inside. After closing the door, she took off her cloak, sending it sliding onto the wooden floor. At the same time, a perfect white, naked body was present in front of Zhang Tie...

Chapter 408: Impulsion and Enlightenment

After taking off her cloak, Evan's elder sister closed her eyes. Meanwhile, she started to pant faintly with undulant breasts in a nervous way. After doing this, she was waiting for Zhang Tie's next action.

However, she had not imagined that Zhang Tie wouldn't embrace or further violate her; instead, he put that bear-fur cloak which contained her body fragrance back on her.

When she felt what Zhang Tie was doing, she opened her eyes at once. With a dumbfounded look, she felt bashful all over as her face blushed.

"Don't...you like me?"

Being a bit bashful and somewhat nervous, the 18 year old girl asked with a faintly quivering voice.

"Are you Evan's elder sister?" Zhang Tie stared at her with a smile, "You're very beautiful, but I'm not used to be treated in this way after saving people. Evan doesn't know that you are here, right?"

Evan's elder sister bit her lips as she waved her head.

"If Evan knew about this, he would be very sad! If a man could not even protect his elder sister from making such a sacrifice, he would have a sense of failure deep in his mind; this would not be good to his later development. Have you thought about this?"

"But Evan expects to be a bear-killing fighter!" Evan's elder sister lowered her head while feeling bashful looking straight into Zhang Tie's clear eyes.

"I know. On the way back to Kurgan village, I've already been told that each teenager here dreamed to be a bear-killing fighter!"

"However, very few people in the village could guide him. Uncle

Zieg was also a bear-killing fighter; however, as he's old and has suffered a heavy wound, he has lost the greatest power as a bear-killing fighter. On the other hand, there are so many teenagers in the village; therefore, he could not pay special attention to Evan. I know that you have such a power. Although you're not a bear-killing fighter, you're very powerful; you're even more powerful than uncle Zieg. You could give Evan enough guidance and help him realize his dream. I can do anything for my younger brother! I'm doing this to extend my gratitude and pray..." after saying this, Evan's elder sister raised her head and gazed at Zhang Tie with a brave look.

Zhang Tie became silent for a second as he watched this woman seriously, "On the way of cultivation, the only shortcut is enlightenment; however, it requires very rigid conditions; fortune and talent. Even for me, it's very hard to gain enlightenment. Each step forward is at the price of countless sweat drops and fresh blood. As I have to leave next morning, even if I guide him in such a short period, it would be useless!"

With a sound of "dong", Evan's elder sister knelt down in front of Zhang Tie at once with tears in her eyes. Raising her head, she gazed at Zhang Tie, "Can you take Evan away? Just let him accompany you. You can take him as a servant and guide him when you're free. I know that he would be very safe with you as no wild beasts across Ice and Snow Wilderness could hurt you. Additionally, he likes to stay with you. You must have seen that his eyes were filled with worship when he looked at you. Evan's mother had died soon after she delivered Evan. At age 7, he lost his father. It was my first time to see him watching a man with that look. I know it would make you inconvenient, but you could guide him for 3 months. I'm deeply convinced that by following you for 3 months, he could learn more than he could gain in this village for 10 years. As I'm his elder sister, for his development, I'd like to do anything that I wish to satisfy you, if there is. Whatever it is, I'd like to do anything for you. I also like to be your mistress..."

Zhang Tie was really moved by Evan's elder sister's love to Evan...

Receiving no response, Evan's elder sister moved 2 steps forward with her knees. When she moved close to Zhang Tie, although with tears in her eyes, she still revealed a charming smile reluctantly, "I've not been touched by other men; but I know how to satisfy you. You can have a try..."

Saying this, she had bravely started to undo Zhang Tie's waistband with quivering hands.

"You don't need to do this!" Zhang Tie stopped her hands instantly as he waved his head. The girl exerted her utmost effort, only to not move even a bit. Feeling this, her tears flew out at once.

Zhang Tie then glanced at the door as he said, "Evan, come in, don't stay outside!"

Kneeling down in front of Zhang Tie, Evan's elder sister became stunned. She turned around and found the door had been pushed open as Evan was looking at her with tears covering his face outside the door.

The moment she stared at Evan, the girl hurriedly sprung up from the ground. At the same time, Evan rushed in. Hugging his elder sister, he burst out into tears.

"Evan, your elder sister is talking useless. I can not help you to be a bear-killing fighter..."

"Elder sister, I don't want to be bear-killing fighter any more..." Evan cried.

"Pah..." The girl pushed him away as she smacked him. At the same time, she scolded him with tears, "If you say this for the second time, I will go die right away. You better tell me, you're destined to be a bear-killing fighter!"

"Yes...I...I'm destined to be a bear-killing fighter!" Evan cried.

Hearing this, she embraced Evan once again as they cried again.

Watching them on one side, even Zhang Tie felt like crying. It was hard to learn fighting skills and secret knowledge even in Blackhot City, not to mention a wild village in Ice and Snow Wildness.

In Ice and Snow Wildness, teenagers in larger tribes would have more chances and better conditions. By contrast, teenagers in smaller villages like Kurgan would be too hard to be outstanding. Even though there were bear-killing fighters in this village, they would not stay in the village; instead, they preferred to challenge themselves in the outside world. That been said, nobody would like to guide teenagers like Evan in the village.

Zhang Tie didn't persuade them until Evan and his elder sister finished crying, "You go back first; leave Evan here, I'd like to say something to him!"

After glancing at Zhang Tie with a sophisticated look, Evan's elder sister gritted her teeth before she left, leaving Zhang Tie and Evan in the cabin.

"You have a good elder sister!" Zhang Tie told Evan with a sophisticated look, "I won't belittle her; she's doing right! I could feel her selfless affection to you!"

"Thanks!" Evan lowered his voice, "She's the best one in my eyes!"

"Hope you could think this way! If you want to be a bear-killing fighter, I can give you a chance."

Hearing this, Evan's eyes gleamed at once.

"Watch me carefully. I only perform one time. Whether you can learn something from it, it depends on you!" After saying this, Zhang Tie calmed down as he posed a starting gesture of Iron-Blood Fist.

Closing his eyes, Zhang Tie recalled all the fierce fighting moments that he had experienced in both real lives and trouble-

reappearance situations since he started to cultivate Iron-Blood Fist.

There were total 36 free hand movements of Iron-Blood Fist. However, Zhang Tie had spend countless blood, wounds and virtual lives on cultivating each free hand movement...

He gradually immersed his physical and spiritual energy into that fierce and invincible sensation; nothing exists, me or substance, life or death, come or go...

Being destructed in mind, everything became quiet...

At the beginning, Evan felt a bit strange as he didn't know what Zhang Tie meant by that starting gesture. However, watching Zhang Tie entering that strange state both physically and mentally, Evan's face gradually turned pale.

In a split second, Evan started having an illusion. He felt that he was not in that common cabin anymore; instead, he was in a hell full of bloody sea. Heavens collapsed, ground broke, fire columns burst out of the ground and shot directly into the sky, causing the sky to turn red all over. Meanwhile, the thunders and lightnings fell on the ground like rain, quaking the earth like a broken huge drum. It was like the end of the world as it was spread with fierce and terrifying demons and ghosts, who were fighting and swallowing each other...

The moment he entered this illusion, Evan's heart was held by a powerful hand at once. As a result, he felt breathless. In such an end of the world, he felt that he was as trivial as a piece of duckweed in that endless bloody sea, a sparkle in one fire column or an ant under the foot of a huge mountain-like demon. He felt nothing but weak and despair in this world...

When Evan felt that he was to be crushed into pieces by the scene, he saw a giant between the heavens and the land whose frame was as irresistible as a steel mountain, even in the end of the world.

Standing in the bloody sea, that person stared up at the heavens while the whole bloody sea started to quiver, boil and boom under his feet...

Suddenly, that figure moved.

The moment he stepped out his feet, the whole world became quiet. Under the foot of that giant, the entire bloody sea was like puddle. Being sprayed in the air, the bloody sea turned into a thousands-m high bloody tsunami and rolled in all directions...

Numerous demons and ghosts then rushed towards him...

Numerous thunders and lightnings boomed him...

Numerous fire columns tilted towards him...

At this moment, a fist appeared between the heavens and the land which started to destroy everything...

...

The moment Zhang Tie entered that state, Zieg, the village head who was living 100 m away had sprung up from his bed like being poured in a basin of charcoal fire although he had fallen asleep.

After springing up from his bed, Zieg's eyes gleamed as his skin turned a bit red. Meanwhile, the veins underneath his skin crept irregularly like earthworms. Breathing quickly, Zieg looked over himself with an amazement, "What the hell? How come the source of madness like a spring which had withered for a long time suddenly became so active?"

Zieg knew that it was not because that he had recovered, which enabled him to possess the previous ability of being mad; instead, it was because that his source of madness was stimulated and influenced by a power Qi field and special spiritual field. He sensed it like how a nail was magnified after being rubbed with a magnet. With the influence of those powerful Qi fields and special spiritual fields, the source of madness in bear-killing fighters bodies would also be driven mad.

After closing his eyes and sensing it for a short while, Zieg put on his clothes. He then left his home rapidly towards that public room.

...

After performing that whole set of 36 free hand movements, Zhang Tie opened his eyes.

At this moment, Evan had been oozing sweat all over his forehead as his face turned pale.

Zhang Tie didn't ask about Evan's enlightenment; instead, he turned around and took out the book "Iron Blood Fist" from Castle of Black Iron through his luggage and put it onto Evan's hands.

"What you were watching just now is described in this book. I've already performed the whole set of fist to you, including my recognition. It depends on you how much you obtain from it. This fighting skill is very difficult; yet once you make it, you will be unrivaled!"

Evan tightly held that secret knowledge as he stared at Zhang Tie with a sophisticated and appreciative look.

"Can...can I call you master?"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie became faintly stunned as this special Chinese appellation had been spread among many humans; in many places, it was almost like "godfather". It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that people here could also use this word.

"Yes, you can!" Zhang Tie nodded as he saw Evan becoming excited.

"Can I allow other people in Kurgan village to learn this fighting skill?"

"Of course you can. But, you'd better be careful as this fighting skill is the secret knowledge of the imperial household in Norman Empire!" Zhang Tie told Evan as what Captain Kerlin had told him.

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally understood the mentality of Captain Kerlin, like what Captain Kerlin thought. Zhang Tie also hoped these small kids to survive themselves. Compared to their lives, a secret knowledge was nothing important at all.

However, from Evan's question, Zhang Tie noticed that this boy was purely innocent. Like Zhang Tie, Evan also like to share his goods with his partners.

"Perhaps, I'm destined to meet these teenagers in Ice and Snow Wildness!"

Zhang Tie told himself.

...

When Evan left Zhang Tie's cabin, he still felt like he was dreaming. Putting the book in his coat, he was recalling that illusion that he watched in Zhang Tie's cabin right now.

Of course, Evan knew what he saw just now was not a real existence but an impact to his spirit when Zhang Tie performed that set of fist. It was really a sharp impact. Like what really happened, it directly involved Evan into the spiritual situation of Iron-Blood Fist.

In the darkness, a tall figure had already stood in front of Evan. Being flurried, Evan almost hit the person.

"Uncle Zieg!"

"This fighting skill is the greatest one I've seen. I've heard about that before. Peter has already showed his spiritual realization on this set of fist to you. Do you know how precious it is to perform the essence of this fist in front of others?"

"Is it very precious?" Evan asked out of curiosity.

"Even though we sell all the valuable goods in Kurgan village, we will still not afford that performance!" Zieg heavily patted onto Evan's shoulder as he added enthusiastically, "Treasure it!"

Evan instantly became dumbfounded...

After deeply glancing at that cabin of Zhang Tie, Zieg then turned around and disappeared in the darkness; however, Evan's eyes became more determined at this moment...

...

Zhang Tie knew that Zieg had come to the outside of the cabin just now and knew that he was imparting Iron-Blood Fist to Evan. Now that village head didn't come in, Zhang Tie didn't feel it necessary to invite him in. They both knew how to deal with that.

The cabin recovered silence. Zhang Tie didn't enter Castle of Black Iron this time as he was really afraid that he would be seen by someone, if he came out of Castle of Black Iron. If that really happened, it would be a great trouble! Therefore, he decided to eat the latest fruit when he returned to his wild settlement.

Lying on the bed, Zhang Tie recalled the enlightenment of the performance. Not only Evan, even Zhang Tie had a further enlightenment about Iron-Blood Fist.

Fist was will!

A sudden enlightenment flashed across Zhang Tie's mind...

...

Chapter 409: Encounter

Zhang Tie left Kurgan village before dawn without bidding farewell to anybody. Besides, he also left that heavy metal crossbow and more than 200 metal bolts in that cabin.

He knew that Zieg was clear about his intention.

This was his gift to those villagers. With this equipment, even though there was no powerful fighter in Kurgan village, they could improve their fighting strength a lot, on dealing with various dangerous wild beasts in Ice and Snow Wildness. Perhaps this weapon could save lives in the village sometimes.

This metal crossbow was the most powerful single-handed heavy weapon of this era! Even if Kurgan village could afford this, they could hardly buy one in Ice and Snow Wildness.

Zhang Tie was deeply impressed by everything here, including Evan, Evan's elder sister, those innocent and straightforward teenagers and that joyful bonfire party.

Zhang Tie liked this place.

Additionally, Zhang Tie had gained a lot here.

The aspiration on mutated Buckthorns, the burning ambition, his further enlightenment on the essence and meaning of Iron-Blood Fist and the information about this animal tide and the wild patron from school of patrons, each of the above achievements was more than 1000 gold coins, which could never be matched by an icy weapon.

"Now that I've gained so much here, I will leave something here as payment." Zhang Tie thought.

Therefore, he left the book "Iron-Blood Fist" and that expensive heavy metal crossbow which could greatly increase the defensive capability of this small village...

"It felt good to serve others!"

When the first ray of sunlight cast on the ground at the dawn, Zhang Tie was standing at the top of a hill on the side of Kurgan village as he gazed the village. At this moment, he felt relaxed.

He noticed that Evan had already gotten up in the early morning and was practicing the lying-tiger movement, one of the basic movements of Iron-Blood Fist in the courtyard. Seeing Evan becoming that diligent, Zhang Tie felt reassured.

At this moment, Evan's elder sister was walking out of her cabin. Due to female's amazingly precise intuition, the moment she came to the courtyard, she looked towards the top of the hill where Zhang Tie was standing.

Although it was about 500-600 m away, she could still see Zhang Tie standing over there.

At this moment, Zhang Tie also saw her. However, Zhang Tie just revealed a smile; knowing that she couldn't see him, he turned around and trotted away...

Seeing Zhang Tie left, Evan's elder sister instantly dropped off her tears. Although she didn't make love with this man, but her heart had been filled with the shadow of this man.

"Peter" Evan's elder sister muttered.

...

After leaving Kurgan village, Zhang Tie started to run over the hills. Only after half an hour when the sun completely rose above the horizon, Zhang Tie had already been more than 20 km away from Kurgan village and arrived at the wild vast depopulated area on Grey Hill.

After finding a secret place, Zhang Tie took out another same heavy metal crossbow from Castle of Black Iron.

This weapon was like a huge set square. With a wholly sealed

metal structure, it was 1.4 m in length and 1.6 m in width. Besides, its charger was connected externally. A great amount of special alloy were used on its key parts which ensured its long service life and great power. However, this greatly increased its weight——312 kg. Zhang Tie saw this net weight with no charger on the operating manual.

If this weapon was matched with those recycled metal bolts and charger which was made of the same super powerful metal alloy, its standard total weight in fight would be 375 kg; this number had surpassed that of "Man's Certificate"——358 kg.

This weapon was covered with camouflage matte paint which was hidden in the wild. It was especially suitable for fighting on hills. By choosing this weapon, Zhang Tie could not only increase the efficiency of killing iron-teeth hyenas but also improve his fighting strength invisibly.

When he came here on the first day, Zhang Tie ran over the Grey Hill the whole day and felt a bit tired. However, after taking the first seven-strength fruit that he reaped here, Zhang Tie felt much relaxed by running the whole day with this huge weapon. What a great effect!

After taking one seven-strength fruit, it took him about 10 hours to completely digest and absorb it. At this moment, Zhang Tie looked at the sky, "If I take it now, I would have to waste today. I'd better kill some more iron-teeth hyenas in the daytime and take one seven-strength fruit at night."

"Being patient is a virtue!"

Zhang Tie warned him once again. After that, he forcefully swallowed his saliva and started to wander over Grey Hill with that huge weapon.

Only after 1 hour, Zhang Tie had met a boar among the paper mulberries. After easily killing that boar, Zhang Tie broke its body and spread its fresh blood and innards everywhere. After that,

Zhang Tie climbed onto a tall paper mulberry with this weapon and awaited there for his prey.

Through these days of hunting, Zhang Tie had already found iron-teeth hyenas' habits. This animal was very sensitive to odors. Once they sniffed the bloody odor or smelly rotten meat, they would come for that from afar. This greatly increased Zhang Tie's hunting speed.

The first batch of 8 iron-teeth hyenas arrived here after 20 minutes. What was waiting for them was needless to say.

The second batch of iron-teeth hyenas made Zhang Tie wait over 3 hours. When the sun was at the highest point in the sky, this batch of 11 iron-teeth hyenas finally arrived.

After hunting 19 iron-teeth hyenas with that dead boar, Zhang Tie was a bit satisfied.

As too much fresh blood of iron-teeth hyenas was covering here, for cunning animals like iron-teeth hyenas who were very sensitive to the fresh blood of their kind, they would not come close easily.

After killing the 2nd batch of iron-teeth hyenas, Zhang Tie carried that huge weapon as he dragged the disgusting dead boar being surrounded with flies and moved towards another place rapidly.

That boar weighed about 100 kg. Although it was nothing for Zhang Tie, it was really disgusting. After killing it, Zhang Tie even broke its intestines and exposed it under the sun for a while. What a stink!

After running less than 20 km with that dead boar, Zhang Tie almost vomited by its stink, not to mention those humming flies around it. Zhang Tie had never been surrounded by so many flies ever since he was born.

However, Zhang Tie stood it for the latest seven-strength fruit.

After running several kilometers, Zhang Tie finally loosed his

grip. After staying away from the previous location, Zhang Tie threw the boar onto the Buckthorns. He then awaited quietly over 100 m away.

Before the sun almost set off, Zhang Tie killed another batch of 16 iron-teeth hyenas in total with the help of this dead boar.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could kill 35 iron-teeth hyenas today. Therefore, he felt pretty satisfied. He estimated that after killing another 10-odd iron-teeth hyenas, the 3rd seven-strength fruit would grow ripe.

This speed was really skyrocketing. However, this also indicated the terror of the animal tide over Grey Hill. A dead boar could attract 30-40 iron-teeth hyenas in one day. What a easy job! If it were another common LV 2 or LV 3 warrior, he would have long lost his life facing so many iron-teeth hyenas in one day.

After chasing and killing the last iron-teeth hyena, Zhang Tie returned to his original place. Previously, he thought about taking one hind leg back to roast it at his foothold; however, at the sight of those eggs of flies which were surrounding the boar, Zhang Tie finally gave up his plan although he was a tough man.

"Alright, no more trouble. I will eat some frozen meat of that huge deep-sea monster. Roasted huge deep-sea monster also tastes good." Zhang Tie muttered.

After one day's work, Zhang Tie was covered with the smelly odor of the boar.

With this stink, Zhang Tie returned to his foothold on the Grey Hill.

When he came back, it was fully dark.

The foothold was on one bank of a big river over Grey Hill. The river's width changed from 1 mile to 800 m. With limpid river water, it flew undulating across the greater part of the Grey Hill towards the ocean 50 km away.

After coming to the riverside, Zhang Tie took off his clothes quickly and took a bath. After cleaning off that stink, Zhang Tie returned to his foothold.

The foothold was in a mountain cave on the riverside.

After picking up some dried firewood and weeds, Zhang Tie entered the cave and started to set a fire. After that, he took out a piece of flesh from that huge deep-sea monster and started to roast it...

20 minutes later, the flesh started to suffuse a exquisite fragrance, making Zhang Tie drooling. The moment Zhang Tie wanted to eat it, he raised his ears as he took up that heavy crossbow and targeted it at that entrance.

"Wow, someone is here..." A voice sounded outside the entrance. At the same time, a pioneer walked in. At the sight of Zhang Tie's weapon, he became stunned remarkably. After a short while, he responded with a kind smile as he shrugged his shoulders. Meanwhile, he revealed a mouthful of golden-capped teeth, "After seeing the fire here, I came here. As it's dark now and I cannot find any suitable place in the neighborhood. Can I sleep one night here?"

...

Chapter 410: Empty City Tactic

Zhang Tie watched that person with faintly narrowed eyes, "Come in, this place is enough for two people..."

Hearing this, that man walked in. After glancing at Zhang Tie's heavy metal crossbow, he intended to walk close.

Zhang Tie then pointed at a place over 10 m away with his heavy metal crossbow, "If you're a pioneer, you should know the rules among pioneers. You can sleep over there and set a fire yourself with those dried firewoods. As we don't know each other, in case of conflict, you'd better stay away from me. I'm as timid as a rabbit. Besides, I would always sleepwalk. I'm afraid of hurting you if you are too close to me!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, that person's smile froze at once. Whereas, after a short while, he revealed a smile once again, "You're right!" After that, that man picked some dried firewoods and weeds from the ground in the mountain cave and started to set fire by his windproof lighter at the place over 10 m away from Zhang Tie.

Although that person was a bit far away from Zhang Tie, he faintly blocked the entrance. If Zhang Tie wanted to leave the mountain cave, he had to pass by that person.

After that person set a fire, the kebab of huge deep-sea monster being on Zhang Tie's metal bolt had turned golden and was dripping oil onto the bonfire. As a result, the flame below grew higher, causing the sound of "Zra, Zra".

The fragrance in the mountain cave grew richer.

During this process, Zhang Tie and that person just looked at each other, causing a bit weirdness in the silence.

After cooking the kebab well, Zhang Tie took it up. Blowing it slightly, Zhang Tie started to eat it. Even though he was eating the

kebab, he still didn't drop his heavy metal crossbow; instead, he put it on his legs, setting the mouth of the crossbow faintly towards a place 10 meters away.

"Little brother, what are you eating? It smells good!" That person licked his lips.

"Hmm, this is a fish I got from the river outside. It does not look bad!" Zhang Tie fabricated. At the same time, oil dripped off his mouth corners. "Flesh of huge deep-sea monster is truly yummy; it makes my stomach warm and very comfortable. After eating it, my tiredness and sense of hunger gradually faded away. The chef is right. the energy of Qi and blood in the flesh of huge deep-sea monster is very beneficial to human body."

"I've not eaten anything today. Can you share me with that kebab, little brother?" that man smiled, exposing a mouthful of gold-capped teeth. "

"Oh, sorry, the flesh is only enough for myself. If you are hungry, you better get something from outside. As a pioneer, it should not be a problem to get some food!" Zhang Tie kept engulfing the cooked kebab, sparing no face to that guy at all. He even didn't glance at him.

Hearing this, that guy with a mouthful of gold-capped teeth twitched his eye corners at once before smiled. After that, he took out a piece of jerked meat and started to roast it above the fire. At the same time, he sighed with emotions, "Alas! I could only eat my own food! But my food is not as savoury as yours. Your meat smells like that of top cuttlefish in the deep sea! How come cuttlefish exist in the freshwater river outside!"

Zhang Tie also responded with a smile. After sweeping the last piece of kebab, Zhang Tie cleaned his mouth as he put away his metal crossbow, "It's nothing strange at all. Perhaps I just encountered a foolish cuttlefish that swam along the river from the sea! Actually, this place is not far from the ocean..."

"Cuttlefish is not foolish. They are actually the most clever and ferocious hunters in the ocean, especially some mutated and evolved ones. If they truly swim against the current and enter this river from the ocean, they must be chasing after their preys..." The "gold-capped teeth" explained with a smile as he stared at Zhang Tie. Being reflected by the fire in front of him, his teeth radiated metallic gleam, making Zhang Tie feel chilly, "Do you know what those smart and powerful cuttlefish would do after they catch their preys? Hehe, they would always not kill the preys right away; instead, they enjoy the process to kill the preys. At first, they would bound the preys tightly with tentacles; then, they gradually corrode preys' limbs with gastric acid. Finally, they start to eat their preys one bit after another. A cuttlefish could even survive 1 week with a fat prey!"

"Wow, is that true..." Zhang Tie also smiled, "Besides feeling disgusted about those cuttlefish, I don't think that they are that sharp. Although some cuttlefish look huge and sharp, as long as you cut off their tentacles, they would not be able to move any more. Like what I've seen on the passenger liner that I took. I watched how a sword sage cut off the tentacles of a huge deep-sea monster one by one and finally turn it into a pile of dead flesh floating over the sea!"

"Do you mean Samaranth, the Star and Moon Sword Sage?"

"Yes! I fought a huge deep-sea monster together with him. At the critical moment, I gave him a little help by shooting the huge deep-sea monster to death with the ballista on the ship. From then on, we know each other! Mr. Samaranth feels that I am very brave. But to tell the truth, I am really brave..." Zhang Tie said with an easy and honorable look.

"You know Samaranth?" Saying this, the "Gold-capped Teeth" didn't smile anymore as he stared at Zhang Tie, seemingly wanted to judge whether Zhang Tie was telling a lie.

Without changing his look, Zhang Tie watched "Gold-capped

Teeth". At the same time, he broke a small wooden spike from a withered Buckthorn twig on one side and started to pick his teeth with it in a casual way. Meanwhile, he peered at "gold-capped teeth" with a disgusting and proud look, "Is that strange? You will see him right away. When you see him, you can also talk about that story about cuttlefish to him. Mr. Samaranth hates cuttlefish the most. I think he must be interested in that story!"

Hearing this, "Gold-capped Teeth" rolled his eyes as he glanced at the entrance, "Hehe, your story is very funny, but everybody knows that the Star and Moon Sword Sage is heading for Haidela Glacier Crack in the south of Ice and Snow Wildness for the pieces of Star of God!"

"Dare you bet?" Zhang Tie maintained his look as he stared at "Gold-capped Teeth" with a scornful look, "If the trace of a sword sage could be known by everybody, is he qualified to be a sword sage? Mr. Samaranth is going to Haidela Glacier Crack; however, before going there, he wants to prepare something on Grey Hill. Perhaps, he believes in me; therefore, he wants me to give him a bit help."

"What help?" "Gold-capped Teeth" asked.

"You don't need to know about this! Perhaps, if you think that Mr. Samaranth could treat you well, you can ask him!" Saying this, Zhang Tie casually took out his pocket watch and glanced at it, "Sword Sage would come at any time. You can wait here for a while!"

Hearing this, the "Gold-capped Teeth" changed his face. He had fully lost his calmness. He glanced at the entrance before focused on Zhang Tie with ferociously gleaming eyes. However, he became a bit hesitated at the moment as he became wholly flurried inside.

"gold-capped teeth" stood up from the ground immediately as he stared at Zhang Tie with eyes full of killing intent, "How do you know that I'm from Demon Snake Island?"

"Nonsense, please think about it with your cuttlefish-like brain. What's the time now? How come pioneers still stay on Grey Hill?" Zhang Tie stared at "gold-capped teeth" with a disdainful look. At the same time, he pointed his heavy metal crossbow towards "Gold-capped teeth", "If not to help Mr. Samaranth here and was promised to be taken to Haidela Glacier Crack, I would never stay in this hell place. As a pioneer, I'm here to [hug sword sage's thigh](#), what are you motherf*cking here for? Are you also here to help sword sage?"

"Only this?"

"That's how I say you are as stupid as a cuttlefish..." Zhang Tie sneered, "At the sight of a stranger walking in with a heavy metal crossbow, no pioneer below LV 7 would still dare to walk inside a wild mountain cave and ask for one night. The reason lies in that you think you are more powerful than me and this heavy metal crossbow could not pose any threat to you. However, it's impossible for pioneers with such a high rank and fighting strength to not go to Haidela Glacier Crack at this moment!"

"This explanation is not persuasive. Perhaps, I'm just a pioneer and don't want to go to Haidela Glacier Crack and I just stay here due to other reasons!" "Gold-capped teeth" urged with a confident look.

"Even though you think you can surpass me on fighting strength, what if you fall asleep? After you fall asleep, if I want to set you up, I only need to trigger my crossbow in such a short distance. You would not be able to respond to it at all. Therefore, I've known that you're lying when you said that you were going to live one night with a stranger who's holding a heavy metal crossbow."

Zhang Tie sneered, "Nobody, if he's normal, would be able to sleep well in such an environment. Perhaps you could really rest here one night; but it must happen after you are killed or ensured that I do not have to resist; instead of being pointed by my crossbow. Therefore, I have already got 2 hidden meanings the moment you

entered the mountain cave and told me about your intention: you are sure that I cannot threaten you tonight; you've already known about my real fighting strength and are here for killing me. You've not planned to let me survive me tonight. Besides b*stards on Demon Snake Island, I have no other enemies at all. Facing a person who knows me better than others and wants to set me up while not being afraid of being revenged, I could not find anybody else but those from Demon Snake Island. You only want to kill me, but why do you make it so sophisticated!"

Gritting his golden teeth, he glared at Zhang Tie. He had not imagined that his well-planned performance was full of loopholes in front of Zhang Tie since the beginning. Like a brand standing on his head, even his status and motive was seen through by Zhang Tie at once. To be honest, this made "gold-capped teeth" a bit self-abased. As a result, he grew more hateful towards Zhang Tie.

"I suggest you to not waste your brains with that poor intelligence, not to mention any ambience or personality. Bandits and killers like you are all scumbags. After catching sight of your targets, you should directly go kill them! Never dream about making any plot. I beg you, please!" Zhang Tie's sharp words completely destroyed the self-esteem of "gold-capped teeth". It seemed that Zhang Tie was in the advance position.

"I'm Dawson, a round-table warrior in Demon Snake Island. Do you think that I dare not to kill you?" Dawson stared at Zhang Tie as he moved one step forward.

"If you want to die, you can have a try!" Zhang Tie still looked calm.

"By what; your crossbow or your fighting strength as only a LV 9 fighter?" Dawson urged as he moved another two steps forward, intending to launch the attack at once.

"I've told you that you better not rack your cuttlefish-like mind. If you insist on doing that, you could only have two results: the

first one is that you kill me and will be killed by Mr. Samaranth, unless you think that you could escape from a sword sage in Ice and Snow Wildness; the second one is that Mr. Samaranth will kill you when you are fighting me!"

"How come Samaranth follow your order?"

"Of course a sword sage would not follow a trivial person's order. I'm not allowed to control his will; however, what if he feels that his dignity is violated or being irritated by someone as his good plan is destroyed? Additionally, do you think that the Star and Moon Sword Sage likes you b*stards from Demon Snake Island?" Zhang Tie then added, "I'd like you to guess whether I am postponing time for the second result?"

Hearing this, Dawson became startled instantly as he understood something. In a split second, he had already moved back to the entrance. After throwing a ferocious glare at Zhang Tie, he turned around and intended to escape. At this moment, Zhang Tie triggered his crossbow ferociously towards him. Seeing this, Dawson twisted his body in a weird way to avoid from Zhang Tie's first wave of bolts.

Zhang Tie followed him closely while shooting at the latter consecutively with his heavy metal crossbow, preventing Dawson from leaving.

As the speed of the bolts could hardly reach that of sound in the air, they could hardly threaten a LV 10 strong fighter. With some flashes, Dawson had already been dozens of meters away as he soared towards Zhang Tie, "Wait there, brat..."

"Peh..." After chasing him out of the cave, Zhang Tie spat ferociously towards Dawson's back as he jumped up and swore, "You timid b*stards. You only know about bullying weak people, yet fearing powerful ones. If you are back, I will show my shooting skills with my crossbow. F*ck!"

Dawson from the distance was so furious that he almost spat out

blood. In a few seconds, he had disappeared in the mountain woods hundreds meters away.

After seeing Dawson disappearing in the mountain woods, Zhang Tie felt his back wet and cold in the night wind.

Some of those words were real, some were not. He truly had identified that Dawson was from Demon Snake Island at the beginning. As for the contents about the Star and Moon Sword Sage, he fabricated them all.

Actually, since Dawson walked out of that mountain cave, Zhang Tie had been scared so much that his back even oozed cold sweat. He had not imagined that he could be blocked by a member of Demon Snake Island in a mountain cave in such a short period. As a people whose comprehensive fighting strength was a bit greater than a common LV 9, if he was blocked by a LV 10 strong fighter in that narrow space, Zhang Tie knew that he would not even survive 2 minutes in a fight.

Since he was in the Dragon Cave of Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie had already experienced the gap between him and a LV 10 strong fighter. After these days' cultivation, although he had made progress and had eaten a Iron-Teeth Hyena Seven-Strength Fruit, Zhang Tie still felt that the gap could not be narrowed in such a short period. He had no confidence in defeating Dawson.

At that moment, when those thoughts flashed across Zhang Tie's mind, Zhang Tie had determined to take the pre-emptive move himself; otherwise, he had to die tonight. When he could not win a fight by fighting strength, he could only depend on his high intelligence.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie was the winner. He fabricated a story about the Star and Moon Sword Sage which even convinced himself. With the help of his calmness and perfect performance, Zhang Tie finally scared Dawson away.

Of course Dawson didn't leave too far away. Zhang Tie knew that

such a sharp figure would never be scared too far away only by his words. Zhang Tie knew that Dawson must be observing him in a hidden place in the woods to judge his words. If Dawson was sure that the Star and Moon Sword Sage wouldn't appear there or Zhang Tie was intending to escape, he would flash out right away.

Watching that broad river outside the mountain cave, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. Now that Zhang Tie knew that he was being chased, how come he not prepare anything in advance? That was why he set his foothold on the riverside, which was his greatest guarantee.

Before leaving his foothold, Zhang Tie determined to give another ferocious blow to that b*stard. Although this blow could not hurt Dawson's body, but it could disturb his mental and spiritual state, enabling him to not be calm when facing Zhang Tie in the future. Overall, the more flurried that b*stard was, the safer Zhang Tie would be.

Looking at the direction where Dawson escaped towards, Zhang Tie laughed his head off on purpose; at the same time, he hammered his chest and stomped his feet...

In this evening, Zhang Tie's laughter's might even be heard miles away. Zhang Tie was sure that Dawson could definitely hear his laughter's while observing what Zhang Tie was doing.

"B*stard from Demon Snake Island. You are Dawson, right? You are really as timid as a rabbit. You've been so scared by such a fabricated story about the Star and Moon Sword Sage, huh? How dare you be a killer? Roll back to your mom and eat some more breast milk, hahahaha..." Zhang Tie added, "I know you are still in the neighborhood. You rubbish! You coward! Besides your gold teeth, can you [find something else as hard as it in your body](#)? Your brains are really as foolish as that of cuttlefish. Even a trivial cuttlefish is much braver than you. I really don't know whether your brains are filled with bullsh*t or paste. Remember to be a bit smart next time. Don't believe in anybody else like an idiot next

time! You wait here for the Star and Moon Sword Sage, this grandpa will not accompany you. Wait here, I will chop off your head sooner or later!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie jumped into the river. Besides sprays, no more sound was left.

The river was still babbling while the two bright moons on the sky were smiling like a ripped mouth; they were watching what was happening here...

Ten more seconds later, with a growl from the distant woods, Dawson reappeared. He rushed towards that point where Zhang Tie jumped into the river. After taking a serious look, he also intended to jump in; however, with a hesitation, he roared, "Peter, I will peel off your skin..."

...

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie climbed onto the opposite river bank full of pebbles about 70 km away. Even Dawson stood here, he would never believe that someone could swim against the current for 70 km in half an hour. This was Zhang Tie's greatest advantage.

There were also all sorts of dangers in the river, especially in the evening. On the way, Zhang Tie had met more than 10 huge crocodiles which were longer than 5 m and some huge carnivorous fish. Although they swam faster in water and wanted to have a close touch with Zhang Tie at the sight of him, they were all easily lagged behind by Zhang Tie. In order to not leave any clue to Dawson, Zhang Tie didn't kill them; although they swam faster in water, compared to Zhang Tie, they were like tortoise in front of rabbit on land.

After reaching the opposite bank, Zhang Tie found a tree hole of a huge red willow. The moment he drilled into the hole, he instantly entered Castle of Black Iron...

"Castle Lord, Welcome to Castle of Black Iron..." Heller was greeting him...

Empty City Tactic:

In the Chinese classic Romance of the Three Kinddoms, after Jieting (Gansu Province, China) was lost, Sima (Surname) Yi (Given name) launched an attack towards Xicheng City where Zhuge (Surname) Liang (Given name) 's military headquarter was located. As Zhuge Liang's force was weak, he left the city gate open and arranged people to clean the streets. Sima Yi was very suspicious about this; as a result, he ordered his army to retreat. Nowadays, Empty City Tactic is used to cover one's weakness in force so as to baffle the opponent or make the opponent retreat.

Hug one's thigh refers to rely on one's great power.

This line was used to mock that Dawson was too weak and timid.

Chapter 411: Earthworm Number One

At this moment, as Zhang Tie had just come out of the river, he was wet all over. Although, looking embarrassed, he still looked very good. In the first round of fight with that LV 10 strong fighter, Zhang Tie was the winner; besides, he even humiliated that b*stard and escaped away under his gaze. Of course, Zhang Tie deserved the high spirit, It was not because of his advantage on fighting skills but on his high spirit and will.

Dawson didn't say that he was LV 10. However from his swift actions on dodging Zhang Tie's bolts and escaping away, Zhang Tie found that it was nothing different than that b*stard in Zhen family who chased after him in Dragon Cave. Therefore, Zhang Tie had figured out his level.

"Demon Snake Island truly dispatched a LV 10 powerhouse to kill me as I've imagined." Zhang Tie felt stressed while a wild fire completely burned inside, "This Dawson will be the first stepping stone on my way to be a powerhouse."

"Have you started to catalyze those seeds of Buckthorns?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"The first batch contains 400 Buckthorn seeds which have started to catalyze according to different input plans. We will know about the catalytic result of the first batch of seeds in 3 weeks. If any Buckthorn seeds evolve or mutate, we can increase the input of aura values to accelerate their growth and stimulate them to bear fruits. In this way, we can gain a great number of evolved and mutated Buckthorn seeds!" Heller explained calmly, "The aura values and basic energy storage in Castle of Black Iron could satisfy this round of catalysis; however, the merit values grow a bit slowly. Its main source is from setting free fishes on Hidden Dragon Island. We could only obtain 50-70 merit values a day by doing this."

Zhang Tie recalled that he only had a bit more than 500 merit values left on Polar Light when he formed the Flower of Life. If he wanted to accomplish the catalysis of so many Buckthorn seeds at once, he estimated that those merit values might have been dried up.

"I might add some merit values in a few days!" Zhang Tie replied uncertainly.

"Might?" Heller stared at Zhang Tie with a doubtful look.

Zhang Tie then scratched his head, "I made an appointment with someone last year. In case of no emergency, another batch of earthworms would be set free in a few days!"

Heller then responded with a relieved look...

If Hanna's family members could still comply with that appointment that Zhang Tie had made with them before he left Blapei, they would be buying earthworms from Chevli village and its surrounding villages and set them free. After one year, the number of those earthworms which should have been used to feed domestic animals had recovered to its previous level. It was the right moment to set free.

However, Zhang Tie had been forced to leave Blapei so long as a criminal and didn't contact them in this period, Zhang Tie was not sure whether Hanna's family members could still imply with the appointment or not.

Although Zhang Tie was not in Blapei, with the ability to control yeasts granted by the fruit of creator, he could let Hanna's beer lose its special taste which helped her win the reputation "Beer Queen".

Zhang Tie didn't know how Hanna's family life had changed after Hanna won the reputation of Beer Queen. If Hanna's family failed to comply with the appointment, Zhang Tie could punish them by inactivating the mutated yeasts. However, Zhang Tie didn't want to do this. Actually, Hanna's family treated him well while Hanna

brought him much pleasure. If Hanna's family failed to fulfill this appointment, Zhang Tie would just call it an end to their friendship. To be honest, Zhang Tie didn't want his beloved woman to lose everything.

As for merit values, Zhang Tie intended to seek for other methods. Zhang Tie didn't believe that there was no chance to do good things in Ice and Snow Wildness. If not, he could return to Ewentra Archipelago and set free fishes and shrimp at the cost of tens of thousands of gold coins. However, if he did this, he would be taken as a lunatic by others.

"Speaking of earthworms, I've got a good news to tell you, Castle Lord. Those earthworms in Castle of Black Iron have completed their first round of mutation and evolution. A new earthworm had formed in Castle of Black Iron. It's waiting for you to name it, my lord!" Heller smiled.

Hearing this news, Zhang Tie became stunned. Closely after that, he became too excited. After about 1 year, since he handed the work of the evolving earthworms, bees, basic energy aura yeast, soya beans and corns to Heller, he almost forgot it. It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that he could have new species in Castle of Black Iron. Zhang Tie had not figured out the effects of these new earthworms; however, thinking of that he could control a wholly new species after eating a fruit of creator, Zhang Tie felt so happy.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to open the operation panel of Castle of Black Iron, he was stopped by Heller.

Pointing at Zhang Tie's clothes which were still dripping wet, Heller suggested, "Castle Lord, why not change to a new set of clothes?"

Zhang Tie responded with a smile and accepted Heller's suggestion. "As I'm already in Castle of Black Iron, I have enough time."

Zhang Tie then took a bath in Castle of Black Iron, after that, he changed to a new set of clothes before sitting on one chair in the room comfortably. After doing this, he touched the option "Management on Livings and Populations" and found the item "Management on Animals" under "Management on Carbon-Based Livings and Populations" where he found the information about the new earthworms.

The three-dimensional holograms of 2 earthworms appeared in front of Zhang Tie at once...

From the appearances, Zhang Tie had already found the difference between common earthworms and mutated earthworms.

Before mutation, common earthworms were red and reddish-brown, which were also the colors of most earthworms. However, the mutated earthworms had 2 more black circles on their heads and tails besides the original red and reddish-brown colors.

Additionally, mutated ones were larger than those common earthworms.

Under the three-dimensional holograms were the differences between 2 kinds of earthworms on chromosomes and DNAs. Zhang Tie couldn't understand them; therefore, he just skipped to the end to see the new features of this mutated earthworms.

——Black-circle earthworm is a whole new earthworm species which has experienced a round of mutation and evolution. This earthworm is more suitable to environment than common earthworms. Under light, its survival time is 31% more than that of common earthworms. Besides, this new species could adapt to 4 Celsius degrees more or less than the highest and the lowest temperatures respectively. What's more, this earthworm is more suitable to various soils and is able to improve and fertilize the activity of soil.

——The feces of this earthworm contains 2.75% of nitrogen,

1.96% of phosphor, 0.37% of k-alum, 35.4% of organic matters, 23 amino acids and rich earthworm enzyme. Each gram of its feces contains more than 10,000 beneficial microorganisms; as a contrast, there are only a bit more than 100 beneficial microorganisms in aged and barren soil. Earthworm enzyme could kill many kinds of viruses, harmful bacteria and a lot of special substances which restrict the growth of plants.

"Castle Lord, please name this new earthworm!" Seeing Zhang Tie finish reading this information, Heller said aside.

"Let's call it earthworm number one!" Zhang Tie casually named it like what lazy guys always do.

For this name, Heller only nodded his head. However, from Zhang Tie's look, Heller felt that Zhang Tie might not know about the significance of this kind of earthworm at all.

"Castle Lord, do you know the real effect of these earthworms?"

"Aren't they used to improve and fertilize soil?" Zhang Tie asked with a curious look.

"That's true; but do you know what does this effect mean to you?"

"What?" a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

"Right, have you got it?" Heller smiled.

"You mean...we don't need to plough soil anymore with them!" Zhang Tie's heart raced.

"Right. From then on, as long as there is such earthworms, all the farmland would be free from ploughing with the help of these earthworms. If you put 0.9 million of this kind of earthworms on a parcel of land of 10,000 square meters, you will save 4 skilled farmers "8 hours" work in each day. Additionally, their feces will be equal to 140 tons of organic fertilizer each year on that parcel of land.

Although Zhang Tie had not done any farming work, he clearly

knew about farming through the education at school in Blackhot City which emphasized survival ability. It could be said that plough, as an important farming activity was closely related to crop farming and agriculture since a long period before catastrophe. As the old saying went, "No pain, no gain." Ploughing was very important in agriculture, which was almost the most consuming work in the rural areas. But now, Heller told him that all the farmlands were free of plough with the help of this kind of earthworm.

"Don't be strange about that. Actually, before agriculture, some countries and regions had already adopted the most advanced and natural farming mode after figuring out this effect of earthworms. 'Agricultural Free-Plough Act' was even formulated in many regions. Actually, they put a lot of earthworms in the soil so as to substitute manpower and mechanical plough. By doing this, they could save a great amount of manpower and money; meanwhile, the soil was improved and purified!"

"Why didn't they popularize this method in a wider scale?"

"There are too many reasons about this. Only a few people knew about this method at that time because a powerful selfish interest group stopped its popularization in the traditional agricultural mode! At that time, traditional agriculture was a inferior farming mode which separated farmland from crops and the mother nature. By doing this, someone could get rich. All the people who could make money through this way didn't expect this channel to be stopped by little earthworms!"

Zhang Tie finally understood. Because of human's greed, selfishness and arrogance, many people thought they were greater than creator. As for cultivation and fertilization, people invented many machines; however, few people knew that even the greatest machine could not match these trivial earthworms.

With this explanation, Zhang Tie recognized the importance of earthworm number one. However, the quantity of these

earthworms was relatively small. If he wanted them to exert a greater importance, Zhang Tie had to prepare enough quantity of this kind of new earthworms. Take Castle of Black Iron as an instance, if he wanted to turn this parcel of land into forever quality farmland, Zhang Tie had to put at least 6 million earthworms number one here based on Heller's calculation.

Thankfully, earthworms reproduced very fast.

After solving the questions about the new earthworm, Zhang Tie came in front of the small tree.

Besides the second iron-teeth hyena seven-strength fruit, Zhang Tie found a new fruit of creator in shape of a kidney bean.

——Fruit of Creator has become matured. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——All the creations carry infinite karma. Because of you, earthworm number one appears in this world. They are your creations. Therefore, they belong to you. You are their father and god. This fruit of creator will grant you with the supreme control over this earthworm in the world. In accordance with the material existence law of earthworm number one, your will and orders interpret their existence.

With his eyes on this fruit of creator, Zhang Tie picked it off devoutly. Before eating it, Zhang Tie touched the trunk of the small tree and told him seriously, "Thank you. Without you, I will be nothing. Please believe in me that I will treasure this marvelous fruit!"

Hearing this, the small tree waved itself, causing the sound, "sisi".

After eating that marvelous fruit, Zhang Tie soon had one more special ability. Without having to count, he knew everything about

these new earthworms——at this moment, there were 185919 earthworms number one in Castle of Black Iron.

These earthworms really liked Castle of Black Iron, especially that soil nearby Pool of Chaos as if it was like their holy land.

"Reproduce, put your efforts to reproduce. From now on, your greatest task is to enlarge the quantity of your species", Zhang Tie released his first order to those earthworms.

After this order, Zhang Tie picked off that delicate seven-strength fruit in shape of iron-teeth hyena. After that, he sat under the small tree before he put it in his mouth...

Chapter 412: Dropping Teeth

Each kind of fruit on that small tree had its special effect and would bring Zhang Tie different abilities and benefits; however, the only one that could grant Zhang Tie with the experience of the 'greatest life experience' was seven-strength fruit.

After eating each seven-strength fruit, Zhang Tie could feel a baptism and a whole new and powerful improvement in his body.

Seven-strength fruit constantly improved Zhang Tie's life experience.

As LV 1 living beings, iron-teeth hyena was one level higher than wild wolf. They were greater than common wild wolves on strength and speed. However, after taking each iron-teeth hyena's seven-strength fruit, Zhang Tie would have one more iron-teeth hyena's full strength in his vitality.

...

When Zhang Tie opened his eyes under the tree the next morning, he felt that something was in his mouth. After spitting it out, Zhang Tie saw 2 teeth falling onto the ground in front of him. "How come I drop off teeth at this age? What's happening? But I don't feel any pain at all!" Zhang Tie's curiosity arised.

These were 2 bigger molars, Zhang Tie put his fingers inside his mouth and touched the 2 ends of the lower teeth. Surprisingly, 2 new teeth had already grown out over one night but were only half the size of the original ones. Although they were not fully grown, they had a good texture.

"How come my teeth be replaced at this age? I don't even have my wisdom teeth fully grown." Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile. "Is it because of that seven-strength fruit that he eats yesterday?"

At this moment, it was already dawn in Castle of Black Iron. As the time in Castle of Black Iron was synchronous with that of

outside, Zhang Tie probably knew the time outside.

Zhang Tie picked himself up from the ground, causing the cracking sound of his bones. Feeling that comfortable and powerful sense, Zhang Tie couldn't help but roar in Castle of Black Iron.

He roared longer than 3 minutes. Zhang Tie found that his voice grew louder and louder; meanwhile, he found that his one breath could last longer. From the 2 aspects, Zhang Tie knew that his body had been much stronger than it was yesterday.

He was instantly in a good mood.

Hearing the roar, Heller and his 3 subordinates walked towards Zhang Tie. At the same time, Zhang Tie walked off the high platform from the small tree.

"Castle Lord..." At the sight of Zhang Tie, Agan, Edward and Aziz had knelt down in front of him with full pleasure and started to kiss Zhang Tie's shoes in a humble way. These days, Zhang Tie always left Castle of Black Iron in the early morning and returned late in the night, which were different from their schedule; as a result, Agan, Edward and Aziz hadn't seen Zhang Tie these days.

"Are you going to work now?"

"Yes, Castle Lord, your earthworm number one could save a greater part of our time on farming work from today on!" Agan responded happily, "In this way, I will have time to build some more beautiful rooms for Castle Lord. I'm really sorry for the current rooms!"

"I can also build some proper weapons for Castle Lord. If you like javelins, I will definitely make javelins that fit you the most! If you like crossbow, I will build the most powerful crossbow for you." Edward also revealed a smile.

"If Castle Lord likes drinking, I can brew various good wines with the fruits here. I can make any drinks that you like!" Aziz added.

Hearing their words, Zhang Tie suddenly remembered that they were not only qualified to be farmers. "But I've been taking them as laborers and coolies since they appear in Castle of Black Iron together with Heller. What a pity!" Zhang Tie sighed with emotions.

Zhang Tie remembered that these 3 people were nothing different from true people, just like Heller. They should also eat food to sustain their physical energy consumption. Besides, they need to rest and sleep. "Given their piety, perhaps I should treat them better."

"There are a lot of huge deep-sea monster's flesh in the ice cave of Castle of Black Iron. It tastes good and is beneficial to your health. From today on, you can have 1 kg of its flesh per week. This is my reward for your diligent work in Castle of Black Iron!" Zhang Tie said generously.

Hearing this, Agan, Edward and Aziz were deeply moved that they even dropped off their tears.

"Aziz, as you can brew wine, can you spare some time to share your drinks in Castle of Black Iron with the rest of people. Although being my servants, you should also have the flesh and wine so that I could have a face!"

Receiving the task, Aziz was so thrilled that his face even turned red, "Trust me Castle Lord, I will not disappoint you. I wonder which wine do you like, my lord. If you can sip even a bit of wine that I brew, I would feel pretty honorable!"

"What drinks can you brew then?" Zhang Tie asked seriously.

"Any drink. I can brew any wine, red wine, beer, fruit wine, liquor, high wine, low wine. I can brew any wine with alcohol, total 5689 varieties. The processing methods are deeply imprinted in my soul and memory. As long as the raw materials and conditions are satisfied, I can brew any wine as you like!"

It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Aziz could brew 5689 drinks.

"How many kinds?" Zhang Tie raised his voice at once.

"5689!" Aziz became a bit restless, "Castle Lord, do you think that I cannot satisfy your demand?"

Zhang Tie stared at Aziz, "No, you're very good. Just brew whatever you want with the raw materials and conditions here!"

"Fine!"

When the 3 servants left politely and started to do their works, Heller walked closer.

"Castle Lord, how are you feeling about the new teeth?"

"You know that?"

"I've told you that I know everything that happens here!"

"I was going to ask you why. How come it happened over one night? I'm not a kid!" Zhang Tie rubbed his cheeks and added with a faintly gloomy look, "Because of the seven-strength fruit?"

"Yes, it's because of the seven-strength fruit. Iron-teeth hyenas have completed a round of evolution on the basis of common wild hyenas. They have a very sharp teeth and could almost bit through any animals' bones in Ice and Snow Wildness. The power of teeth indicates the power of the marrow of this animal. Teeth is the external symbol of the strength of marrow of living beings. Similarly, when human grow old, they would drop teeth. It's because of the exhausting strength of marrow inside human body. Conversely, if a human's strength of marrow starts to grow, he would have new teeth! The growth cycle of each human's teeth is closely related to his strength of marrow."

Hearing this explanation, Zhang Tie understood it right away. After eating that seven-strength fruit of iron-teeth hyenas, Zhang Tie had combined that special great strength into his strength of

marrow. This strength of iron-teeth hyena was 40% greater than that of 2 common wild wolves.

"If so, why didn't this happen after I ate the seven-strength fruits of wild wolves?"

"At this time, the strength of marrow in the 9 seven-strength fruits of wild wolves that you've eaten has not reached the limit of your body. After breaking this limit, some vital signs and natural changes would appear on your body like how some withered woods could sprout after being stroked by lightning bolts. Everything was concerning about energy. As long as the energy surpasses some critical point, qualitative changes would happen!"

"You mean the strength of marrow in the 2nd seven-strength fruit of iron-teeth hyenas have just broken through that critical point in my body?"

"You got it!"

"I will not become a monster, right?" Zhang Tie changed his face, "I will not have teeth like that of iron-teeth hyenas, right? If so, I would have never eaten it. I don't want to be taken as a monster as long as I open my mouth!"

"No, Castle Lord, you think too much!" Heller smiled, "However, because of the powerful strength of marrow in your body, the new teeth are truly different than before to a certain degree, although they will not make you a monster with terrifying teeth. You will know about it in the future. From now on, your old teeth might get replaced with new ones any time! In a couple of days, you will have all your teeth replaced."

Hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie became reassured. However, before leaving Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie found a mirror and checked his new teeth carefully.

The two new molars looked like the most expensive ceramic whitewares that were carried from East Continent. Besides being

white, bright and clean, they were nothing different than common human teeth. Although Zhang Tie's previous teeth were also tidy and white, they were still dwarfed by the 2 new teeth.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could have a pair of more beautiful teeth besides improving his fighting strength. He wondered whether he could experience a change in his image and body when the other strengths of seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas break through his critical points. He was curious whether he would look completely different than before like which was always described in the legends. "Donder have mentioned this special situation about cultivators. I wonder whether I'm experiencing such situation or not." a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

After a second, Zhang Tie had given up this question, as long as he didn't become a monster or a person who was totally different than before, it would be acceptable.

Before leaving Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie sent an order in mind, letting 5000 earthworms climb out of the soil. When he wanted to find some package to hold them and take them out, he heard Heller's voice.

"Castle Lord, are you going to take these earthworms outside?"

"Right!"

"That's simple. When you come out, you only need to lock these earthworms with your spiritual energy through the teleportation door of Castle of Black Iron. After that, you can order them to climb out themselves; no need to take them out by yourself!"

"What? But I remember you told me that all the animals should be carried by me to access the teleportation door."

"This rule remains unchanged. However, for new species in Castle of Black Iron that were made by you, you are their owner both mentally and spiritually. From a perspective, you're their

god. As long as you open the teleportation door for them, you will have them follow your will. The Castle of Black Iron will also follow your will and have them leave here by themselves. You don't have to take them away yourself."

"I see!" Zhang Tie smiled, "Well, good luck to me!"

"That guy who chased after you could find you on Grey Hill, it indicates that he had special methods or talents in this aspect. You'd better take care of yourself, my lord!"

Zhang Tie nodded before leaving Castle of Black Iron. He reappeared in the hole of the red willow on the riverside which he entered last night. Over one night, with growing spiritual energy, Zhang Tie found that he could also sense the situation outside Castle of Black Iron through the marvelous teleportation door at the cost of spiritual energy although being in Castle of Black Iron.

Now, Zhang Tie could sense the situation of 5 or 6 meters outside Castle of Black Iron. Within this range, Zhang Tie's spiritual feelings were very real. If any human or animal was in the neighborhood, he could definitely find it. But it didn't work out of the range. Although this was a small progress, it greatly increased Zhang Tie's safety when he left Castle of Black Iron.

With his spiritual feeling, Zhang Tie could feel a hedgehog beside the huge red willow. However, the tree hole was still safe. After checking it, Zhang Tie reappeared in the tree hole at once. At sight of Zhang Tie appearing in the tree hole out of nowhere, the hedgehog got scared so much that it shrunk to be a thorny ball.

Right in the tree hole, Zhang Tie called 5000 earthworms number one out of Castle of Black Iron. The moment those earthworms climbed out of Castle of Black Iron, they had started to drill into the soft soil forcefully.

The soil on the riverside was both wet and soft, which was very suitable to the growth of earthworms.

Zhang Tie brought this new species into this world for the first time. At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't know what did this mean. He sent a supreme order in mind to those earthworms——on the premise of ensuring your safety, try your best to reproduce! I grant this parcel of land to you for your reproduction! Go conceive it, my cute earthworm army!

Although earthworms didn't speak, they still gave a feedback signal of pleasure and excitement to Zhang Tie.

Watching the last earthworm drilling into the soft soil by creeping its body Zhang Tie left.

The sun had just come out; the riverside was still covered with fog. Zhang Tie drilled out of the fog and started to run towards the hill in the far.

...

2 days later, at noon...

The moment Zhang Tie killed some iron-teeth hyenas who were wandering nearby the grassland, he had heard a grim sneer from the shrubs on his left rear.

With that jarring sound, Dawson from Demon Snake Island appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was not holding that heavy metal crossbow anymore; instead, he was holding a long saber.

At the sight of Dawson, Zhang Tie was not flurried at all; instead, he was very calm. After turning around, he watched Dawson's mouthful of golden-capped teeth with a cold look.

"Brat, I will see where you can run this time." Dawson revealed a look that he was going to peer and engulf Zhang Tie alive, "I will pull off your teeth one after another; and let you swallow them. After that, I will cut off your tongue; in the next, I will play you 1 week. Trust me, as payment for being played, I will definitely make you die with great pain!"

Zhang Tie smiled, revealing a mouthful of snow-white, tidy and close teeth, "You cannot pull off my teeth easily!"

"Brat, don't play tricks any more, do you think that you can escape from me today?" Dawson revealed a sneer, "Even you are a powerful LV 7 fighter, you're still a loser in front of a LV 10 fighter. The difference between you and me is decisive. I'm already a 2-star strong fighter who's ignited 62 surging points. Do you think that you can escape this time without any assistant?"

"I wonder how you find me so fast on Grey Hill!"

"Do you think that I will tell you?" Dawson grinned with dissatisfaction.

"If so, show me your power as a 2-star strong fighter who's ignited 62 surging points."

Zhang Tie didn't escape this time; instead, he rushed towards Dawson...

Chapter 413: Heavy Wounds

Zhang Tie's action really shocked Dawson, who was irritated in a split second.

If a mouse rushed towards a cat instead of escaping away when it caught sight of a cat, it was actually posing a defiance to cat.

Dawson was driven extremely furious as he forced a sneer, "You're looking for death!"

If Zhang Tie did this when he was only LV 7, he was truly looking for death; however, Zhang Tie had fully lit the 16th surging point on his spine and was lighting the 17th surging point. This indicated that he had lit 4 more surging points than that he had done when he was LV 7. Additionally, he ate 3 seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas on Grey Hill and had fought the huge deep-sea monster in the trouble-reappearance fruit several times. As a result, he understood how to use Iron-Blood Fist in a better way.

Therefore, Zhang Tie wanted to know the difference between him and a 2-star fighter who had lit 62 surging points.

If a person could not face his fear or a really powerful enemy, he would not make progress.

Zhang Tie intended to use Iron-Blood Fist by sword this time.

Dawson also had a weapon. He was wearing a pale blue metal glove on each hand. They looked pretty grim. The moment the fought began, Dawson had already grabbed Zhang Tie's long sword and his face with his weird claws. What a insidious movement!

Zhang Tie slashed his sword towards Dawson's neck with the powerful Qi of Iron-Blood Fist. After cutting through the air, it caused a loud booming sound as it was colliding with Dawson's pale blue glove.

Zhang Tie's attack was very powerful and out of Dawson's expectation. The moment Dawson touched Zhang Tie's sword, his

smile froze. With a shocking look, he was forced 3 steps back. Besides, his hand became slightly numb. Meanwhile, Dawson's claw missed too.

Zhang Tie became a bit disappointed. He was intending to chop off Dawson's hand; however, he had not imagined that Dawson's pale blue glove was so powerful that it prevented him from any harms. Additionally, Zhang Tie felt that his sword didn't touch Dawson's hand at all; instead, it crashed with a battle Qi over Dawson's glove, which was still several centimeters away from Dawson's hand.

When Zhang Tie was chased after in the Dragon Cave, he had realized that a LV 10 strong fighter had completely opened his Qi sea and was able to release battle Qi without having to touch the opponent. However, it was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that besides off-body strike, a LV 10 strong fighter could cover human body and weapon to resist enemy's strike. A LV 10 strong fighter had been much more powerful than a LV 9 fighter only on the usage of battle Qi. LV 10 strong fighters had so many skills on using their battle Qi. No wonder those people said that it was the real beginning of cultivation only when you entered LV 10.

Zhang Tie was also sent flying back in the air by Dawson's huge strength. Dawson only moved 3 steps back; however, Zhang Tie moved about 10 m away in the air. Seeing the dense luster of battle Qi over Dawson's pale blue glove, Zhang Tie didn't escape; instead, he launched the second round of strike. The unrivaled battle Qi of Iron-Blood Fist boiled in Zhang Tie's blood vessels. The moment Zhang Tie's feet touched the ground, he thrust against the ground forcefully at once causing a small pit, with the help of that great counter-force, Zhang Tie rushed towards Dawson like a flying bolt once again.

In a split second, Dawson's killing intent boiled. What a terrifying opponent! A 2-star LV 10 strong fighter was forced 3 steps back by a guy below LV 10; this was impossible and definitely

a shame! Additionally, Dawson felt chilly when he saw Zhang Tie rushing towards him with that extremely powerful battle will and his icy yet unswerving belief in his eyes. "If this teenager is already so powerful at this age, what would he be when he grow up?"

Dawson knew it well that before becoming a powerful fighter, the key point was that this person had to have an unswerving powerful belief and will when facing any powerful enemies instead of having any powerful fighting skills or secret knowledge. This was the ladder towards the peak. Besides Zhang Tie's unbelievable fighting strength, Dawson was frightened by Zhang Tie's high spirit and will to be a powerful fighter.

Therefore, Dawson didn't plan to keep Zhang Tie alive this time regardless of Zhang Tie's current level. If he left Zhang Tie alive this time, he was afraid that this teenager would match him on fighting strength, even surpass him in the near future. If so, he would be killed then. As for cunning enemies with a great growth potential, Demon Snake Island would always kill them as soon as possible, leaving not a single chance to him.

At this moment, Dawson became especially serious about the fight.

"Go to hell!" With a muffled voice, Dawson released his pale blue battle Qi; it formed a huge yet grim claw and stroke towards Zhang Tie's chest.

"Kill!" Zhang Tie had already exerted his full effort in throwing his long sword towards Dawson before that pale blue battle Qi reached in front of him.

The long sword turned into a white light after it left Zhang Tie's hand and flew towards Dawson's chest after crossing that bright huge claw.

Zhang Tie did this because he realized that there was no difference on speed and power between throwing long sword and throwing javelin in this short distance. For powerhouses at Zhang

Tie's level, it was almost like fighting with bayonets by using this fighting method.

The moment Zhang Tie threw out his long sword, Dawson's claw of battle Qi had already reached Zhang Tie's chest. Zhang Tie could not dodge it; instead, he punched that claw.

After breaking the air, the long sword caused a shrill wind, together with the muffling sound between Zhang Tie's punch and Dawson's battle Qi and a sound of tearing clothes.

After this resonance, the two people stopped as they watched the opponent with a distance of over 10 m.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's mouth corners was bleeding. Although he had destroyed that battle Qi, he was wounded at the same time. Besides his innards being hurt, his right sleeve had been boomed into ashes, leaving many bleeding wounds over his arm like being cut by broken glass.

Dawson was still standing at the original place. It seemed that he had not even moved at all. However, a breach longer than 30 cm was made on the position under his armpit while Zhang Tie's long sword completely sunk into the ground 30 m away, exposing its handle.

Zhang Tie wiped off the blood at his mouth corners by his left hand while glaring at Dawson with the same ferocious battle intention. Dawson lowered his head to check his broken clothes as he looked pretty calm.

"You bring me surprise each time. It's really out of my imagination. It's my first time to see such an opponent!" Dawson raised his head as he told Zhang Tie with an extremely calm voice.

"Really?" Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "But I don't think it's surprising enough; if not, my long sword should have penetrated through your heart and nailed you on the ground!"

"I agree that you almost made it!" Dawson watched Zhang Tie

with the same calm tongue. At the same time, his eyes became as narrow as needles, "You can release a fierce sonic boom with your long sword in such a short distance, if I were a strong fighter who had just lit 55 surging points, I might have been killed by you. What a pity! I've consolidated my rank completely. Your attack is useless to me!"

"Just wait!"

"You are very confident. But do you know what real strong fighters mean? The alleged strong fighter refers to those who could completely surpass LV 9 fighters from all aspects. Although LV 9 fighters could launch sonic boom with some weapons, causing a huge destructive force and power, we strong fighters could break through sonic barrier ourselves in an extremely short period and distance. It's a essential difference between LV 9 fighters and LV 10 strong fighters. Besides, strong fighters have a great perception on weapons which draw close to them. All the sonic booms are useless to strong fighters!"

"You've not seen the fastest throwing speed!" Zhang Tie's battle intention was not disrupted by Dawson's words; instead, he was still full of confidence. Zhang Tie had seen hope from this strike. Compared to that his flying javelin was easily dodged by that strong fighter of Zhen family in the Dragon Cave, Zhang Tie knew that he was closer to the target. He almost killed Dawson just now. His throwing speed had been much faster than before.

"Actually, do you think the destructive force between one-time the speed of sound transmission and two-times the speed of sound transmission is the same? Although my sonic boom strike is only one time that of sound transmission, do you think that you can still dodge away when my throwing speed reach twice or thrice the speed of sound transmission? Do you think that your alleged great dodging speed is still be useful by then?"

"Hahaha..." Dawson smiled, "You're right. If you can release a flying sword twice the speed of sound transmission, I truly would

not easily dodge. Actually, if you raise the speed of your flying sword by 20%, I would not doge away. However, fighters have physical limits. Nobody could break through this limit. You might have reached your physical limit. I've not heard that any fighter could release a sonic boom strike above twice the speed of sound transmission. You are not bad! If not provoking us, you might have a chance to be a strong fighter in the future. Pitifully, too many young men like you are too self-righteous. Finally, you will lose your life because of this."

"I feel I am living quite well and I will live long!" Zhang Tie responded with a smile.

"Really?" Dawson narrowed his pupils once again, "Let's call it an end today!"

The moment Dawson finished his words, he had already reached in front of Zhang Tie. Although Zhang Tie had been preparing for that by activating a rune effect of his rapid moving skill, Dawson's speed was still out of Zhang Tie's imagination. If Zhang Tie rushed towards him like a bolt just now, Dawson was a bolt himself. He had already moved almost 10 m and appeared in front of Zhang Tie in less than 0.1 second. He directly pointed towards Zhang Tie's heart with his illuminating glove. It was a fierce strike of strength and speed. As long as he touched Zhang Tie, he would undoubtedly scoop out Zhang Tie's heart.

When in fight, the effect of rapid moving skill would drop by 80%, thanks to the remaining approximate 20% effect of rapid moving skill. Zhang Tie could move 24% faster than before and dodged away. Otherwise, Zhang Tie might have been heavily wounded.

The moment Zhang Tie dodged away, he saw Dawson punching him with another fist. This time, Zhang Tie could not dodge at all; therefore, he directly boomed Dawson's glove which was covered with 1 m-thick battle Qi.

After a shock on innards, Zhang Tie felt like spitting out blood; however, he forcefully swallowed it back. Dawson's battle Qi was very sharp and aggressive. Zhang Tie felt that Dawson's battle Qi intended to drill into his body; thankfully, his iron-blood battle Qi was unrivaled. When the battle Qi intended to invade along his arm, it had been torn apart by Zhang Tie's iron-blood battle Qi. Even though, Zhang Tie's arm was still covered with many wounds.

"Which battle Qi are you practicing?" Seeing Zhang Tie dissolving his battle Qi by hand, Dawson was shocked inside. Actually Dawson was also practicing a senior battle Qi. For inferior fighters, if they were boomed by Dawson's battle Qi, they would be invaded by his battle Qi. As a result, all their blood vessels would break. If a inferior fighter who was not invaded by his battle Qi while booming against it by hand, the only possibility was that he was practicing a more powerful battle Qi than Dawson. Only top battle Qi could prevent the invasion of Dawson's battle Qi at a lower level.

After knowing that Zhang Tie was practicing the top battle Qi, Dawson became more decisive in killing Zhang Tie. "This man is too dangerous. I will kill him. If not, he would definitely be a great trouble for Demon Snake Island in the future."

Zhang Tie didn't prepare to answer Dawson's question at all. The moment Zhang Tie started to fight this really strong fighter in such a short distance, he felt the great fighting strength of the latter. Zhang Tie realized that he could never deal with such a powerful fighter at all in such a short distance. Besides rich fighting experiences, Dawson's attacking speed was also advantageous. What was more difficult for Zhang Tie was that Dawson could release his battle Qi in the air. Therefore, before Zhang Tie's punch reached him, Dawson's battle Qi had already struck on Zhang Tie's body.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie had enlightened "one step, one scene" and

super high spiritual energy which could help him capture Dawson's moving traces; besides he had activated his rapid moving skill which increased his moving speed by 24%; otherwise, Zhang Tie had long been killed by Dawson in a wink.

However, Zhang Tie was still reluctantly defensive against the attack of Dawson. After 10 more rounds, Zhang Tie's shoulder was boomed by Dawson's battle Qi. Zhang Tie knew that it was impossible for him to defeat Dawson in such a short distance based on his fighting strength. The only efficient way to deal with Dawson was using his flying javelins, which was Zhang Tie's most powerful weapon.

Zhang Tie started to move back rapidly along with Dawson's strike...

The moment he moved back, Zhang Tie had increased his moving speed by 120% due to the full effect of the rapid moving skill. In a split second, Zhang Tie had been dozens meters away and was leaving increasingly faster.

Noticing that Zhang Tie was going to escape, Dawson grinned as he instantly followed up.

In Dawson's opinion, he could definitely catch up with Zhang Tie sooner or later. However, gradually, he found that he was totally wrong. Zhang Tie was moving as fast as a super sportscar. In a blink of eye, Zhang Tie's moving speed had surpassed 100 km/h. Dawson had not seen any LV 9 fighter running so fast. Even most of the new strong fighters could not run so fast.

As a strong fighter, Dawson could truly move faster than sonic transmission speed in an extremely short period and distance such as booming Zhang Tie or dodging away from Zhang Tie's booms; however, if he could keep chasing after Zhang Tie at such a high speed, he would almost be a knight; instead of a strong fighter.

Dawson used all his efforts to chase after Zhang Tie; however, his best mark was 30 m; after that, the distance between him and

Zhang Tie grew longer and longer.

When they were about 50 m away from each other, Dawson gritted his teeth as he took out an egg-sized iron bead and threw towards Zhang Tie without saying anything...

Like how Dawson had not imagined that Zhang Tie could bring him so many surprises, Zhang Tie didn't imagine that this round-table warrior could also throw a secret weapon at sonic transmission speed either.

Before Zhang Tie heard the sound, he felt a sharp wind arriving from behind. Before dodging away, Zhang Tie's back had already been struck by that item.

After spitting out a mouthful of blood, Zhang Tie tried to keep calm before passing out. Gritting his teeth, Zhang Tie changed the direction; after accelerating 70-80 m forward in a faster speed, Zhang Tie jumped off a cliff in front of him...

Dawson rushed over there closely after him. Seeing Zhang Tie rolling down the cliff, he thought for awhile; but finally he didn't jump off after him.

It was a bottomless valley under the cliff. Even during the daytime, the sunshine could still not reach the bottom. Dawson saw mist rolling 1000 m below, making it a bit gloomy. Unless carrying a parachute, if he had jumped off from here, he would have fallen into pieces even as a strong fighter.

Zhang Tie soon disappeared in the mist...

"F*ck!" Dawson's face turned gloomy. If it were anybody else, Dawson was sure that guy would die by doing this; however, when he thought about Peter, his heart started to pound. Without seeing his corpse, he would never be reassured.

After looking downwards at the direction of the valley and surrounding terrain, Dawson turned and left here soon...

...

Chapter 414: Demon Rats

When Zhang Tie woke up, he felt that his bones all over were going to crack. Due to extreme pain, he uttered a faint groan.

Besides pain, he also felt happy, "Haha, I'm still alive!"

Although this fighting course with Dawson was not long, he finally understood that a LV 10 strong fighter had an overwhelming advantage over a LV 7 fighter like him. "Dawson the douchebag was right. Strong fighters are indeed powerful." Zhang Tie muttered.

Compared to last time when he was chased after by a LV 10 strong fighter in Dragon Cave, Zhang Tie had made a great progress. From the beginning to the end, Zhang Tie and Dawson used about 10 movements respectively. In the whole course, Zhang Tie could attack and defend properly. Besides almost killing Dawson with his long sword, Zhang Tie also boomed Dawson's battle Qi attack several times by his bare fist. As a LV 7 fighter, Zhang Tie should be proud of that.

He even almost escaped away from Dawson safely despite Dawson's flying black bead.

However, Zhang Tie had never imagined that Dawson could also throw an item at the speed of sonic transmission speed.

Thanks to the effect of iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie's body had been pretty strike-resistant. If not, even though Zhang Tie might survive, he would lose his mobility in a split second.

Zhang Tie didn't know what Dawson hit him with but he knew that the weapon was covered with a fierce battle Qi. The moment Zhang Tie was struck, he felt like booming against Dawson's battle Qi. In a split second, Zhang Tie felt that his spiritual energy was broken into pieces. At that critical moment, he could not even enter Castle of Black Iron with full concentration. Therefore, he

could only make a dangerous choice and continue to rush forward with his braveness of blood and Qi.

After recovering his consciousness, Zhang Tie faintly closed his eyes. He felt that his preliminary recovery body was gradually working while the pains and wounds were relieving one bit by another.

Based on his sense, Zhang Tie knew that it was definitely dark now. Because his preliminary recovery body could completely take effect only at night.

Although the preliminary recovery body gradually took effect, the spiritual energy in his mind was still in an "unstable" state. Similarly, ships in storms could not move stably under the influence of undulant waves. Therefore, passengers could not "board" ships.

For Zhang Tie, he was "boarding" to Castle of Black Iron; however, because of poor spiritual energy, he could not even complete the simplest things like eating and drinking.

"F*ck!" Zhang Tie swore inside. Dawson the d**chebag definitely did not strike me with a common secret weapon. Common secret weapons could not have such an effect after striking me. Not only my physical health, even my spiritual energy had been weakened.

Due to a weak spiritual energy. Zhang Tie could not access to Castle of Black Iron; besides, his dark vision driven by spiritual energy also disappeared. Zhang Tie found that his vision had recovered to his original level.

Speaking of his body, Zhang Tie found that he was lying in water. Facing the sky, he felt pretty comfortable in the warm water.

After realizing that he was in water, Zhang Tie moved his body slightly; however, his mouth and nose were instantly filled with water, causing him to choke.

Zhang Tie felt very inconvenient now. The moment he moved,

he would feel painful and sore all over. The water was a bit deep. At least he could not reach its bottom with his feet. With the great swimming ability that he had formed in Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie tried his best to float above the water although being very uncomfortable and painful. After waving his hand in water, he found that his clothes were hooked by a vine; therefore, he pulled that vine and started to swim towards that black stone which was less than 10 m in the front.

If it was in the past, Zhang Tie would have been there in a wink; however, this time, he almost exhausted his full strength.

Less than 2 square meters from that stone in the water. Some rotten and withered vines were in the water around the stone. Floating on water, Zhang Tie smelt a mouldy odour; therefore, he spent his effort in pulling himself onto that stone. After doing that, he felt that all of his strength had been exhausted; meanwhile, Zhang Tie panted heavily with his undulant chest.

After lying there for 10 minutes, Zhang Tie found that the clouds that covered the 2 bright moons had dispersed. After recovering a bit, Zhang Tie was finally able to sit on the stone as he started to observe the surroundings.

This was an extremely deep and serene valley. Its opening was wider than its bottom. Raising his head, Zhang Tie felt like observing the sky in a well. Endless cliffs were on both sides of the valley. With the moonlight, Zhang Tie could see a lot of vines over the cliffs.

In order to get enough sunlight, those vines were trying to move upward and outside although being crossed with each other. Zhang Tie estimated that those withered vines in water dropped from the cliffs.

At the sight of those vines, Zhang Tie knew that he was saved by them. Those plants served as a buffer when he rolled down. Thankfully, he finally fell into the water; otherwise, Zhang Tie was

doomed to die.

Zhang Tie looked around the water and found that it was a big pond which covered about 7000 square meters. The stone was in the center of this pond. There were so many ponds like this in the serene valley. They scattered densely in the valley. Some were connected with each other; some were not. This terrain looked really weird.

Zhang Tie recalled that mist when he jumped off in the daytime. It was formed in the following way: vapour rose and was condensed when it met cold air.

Besides the pond in the serene valley and those vines on cliffs, Zhang Tie only saw some scattered stones; especially the place near the pond made Zhang Tie a bit curious.

After resting half an hour on the stone, Zhang Tie recovered a bit due to the effect of his preliminary recovery body; additionally, aches all over started to relieve. It should be a bit cold at night, especially for a person who was wearing wet clothes, Zhang Tie didn't feel cold at all because of his cold-resistance body.

Suddenly, a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. "Is there any monster?" The moment Zhang Tie thought about this, he quivered all over. According to Donder, some terrifying animals always lived in places which seemed to have no lives.

Widening his eyes, Zhang Tie looked around as he forcefully swallowed his saliva. Zhang Tie then comforted himself, "How come? I've not been killed after rolling down such a high cliff, I don't think that I could see anything more strange. God should not allow me to be the dessert of monsters. Besides being a bit lascivious in usual time, I didn't do any bad things; instead, I've done many good things. Although I've killed so many people, but they all deserved death. Although I'm not a very good person, I always help people in dangers and poverty. Additionally, I've accumulated so many merit values in Castle of Black Iron.

When Zhang Tie was comforting himself that he would not meet anything strange here, red sparkles started to appear in dark corners under the cliff.

At the beginning, there were only a few red sparkles; because of the poor light and long distance, Zhang Tie thought they were fireflies. However, the red sparkles started to appear everywhere. Zhang Tie found something was not right. "They are not fireflies, but eyes of animals!"

Finally, those red sparkles started to flow like tide in the valley, causing a sound of "sisi".

Zhang Tie slowed his breath as he squatted on the stone and watched those red sparkles.

Seeing some red sparkles coming to the bank of the pond and lowered their heads to drink water, Zhang Tie finally knew what they were.

The moment Zhang Tie saw it clearly, Zhang Tie's fine hair all over stood up at once.

They were rats! The red sparkles were rats' eyes.

Of course Zhang Tie would not fear about some rats; however, the mice in front of him had completely toppled over Zhang Tie's recognition about mice. Because Zhang Tie had not seen such huge rats before.

These mice were longer than 40 cm without calculating the length of the tail. They were as long as common dogs. If their tails were included, they would be longer than 1 m.

With pointed mouth, sharp teeth and a pair of ferocious, bloody eyes, Zhang Tie might solve it easily if there was only one mouse; however, seeing the dense red sparkles, Zhang Tie felt goosebumps all over.

They instantly reminded Zhang Tie of a terrifying living being in Ice and Snow Wildness——Demon Rat.

They were a very terrifying animal. Besides stones and metals, they could almost eat anything, including animals' corpses, flesh, blood and plants' roots, stems, twigs and leaves. When they appeared in groups, all the other animals had to dodge away.

When there was only 1 demon rat, Zhang Tie didn't feel it was harder to deal with than common wild wolves; however, the terror of this animal lay in its geometrical increase. When there were more than 20 demon rats, even 20 wolves could not defeat them; when there were more than 50 demon rats, they could scare off any wild animals; when there were over 1000 demon rats, they could even sweep over a hill.

The more demon rats there were, the more terrifying it would be.

There were at least 1000 red sparkles in the darkness.

Zhang Tie was driven flurried this time as he had not imagined that he was in a nest of demon rats.

"You cannot see me, you cannot see me" Zhang Tie prayed!

Pitifully, as the old saying went, "when you worry about something, something would happen." At this moment, a demon rat raised its head and caught sight of Zhang Tie at once.

Zhang Tie and the rat then stared at each other...

"Brother, I beg you! Don't whistle! I owe you. I promise to invite you to have seafood!" Lowering his body on the stone, Zhang Tie prayed silently.

That demon rat blinked its red eyes as it uttered a shrill sound, "Zhi...zhi...zhi".

"F*ck you!" Zhang Tie swore furiously...

The jarring sound resonated in the serene valley. Hearing this warning, all the other red sparkles changed their moving direction at once. They surrounded Zhang Tie's pond in only 10 seconds.

Even Zhang Tie couldn't count how many of demon rats were there.

At that moment, being gazed by demon rats with wholly red eyes, Zhang Tie felt being a piece of flesh on the table.

The bloody eyes of demon rats didn't hide their mad and icy killing intent at all; as well as their desire for Zhang Tie's blood and flesh.

After being in a stalemate for a few seconds, a demon rat suddenly jumped into the water after flying over 10 m in the air. Although being several times larger than common rats, these demon rats were several times swifter than common rats. With a puff sound, it started to swim towards Zhang Tie without any hesitation from over 20 m away.

Realizing Zhang Tie that even rats could swim well. "When tiger go down to level land, it would be insulted by dogs! However, this father is insulted by rats! Motherf*cker! Even a rat dares to find me trouble by water." Zhang Tie sighed loudly with emotions while raising his head against the sky. After that, he patted his waist as he pulled out his double-carp swords.

The moment the first demon rat drew close to the stone in the middle of the pond and charged towards Zhang Tie, its head had been chopped off by Zhang Tie in the air with the sword Qi.

Gripping its body, Zhang Tie raised his head and opened his mouth. He then poured the sprouting blood into his mouth, causing a sound of "gulugulu". The moment the warm blood entered his stomach, Zhang Tie felt being a bit more vital. The preliminary recovery body not only brought him the great ability to recover, but also the greater ability to digest food.

"Come on..." Zhang Tie threw its dead body aside as he exclaimed. At the same time, he wiped off the fresh blood on his face and stared at those demon rats who wanted to engulf him, "Let's see who's the winner!"

The demon rats became noisy at once. After another communication "Zhi...zhi...", another 7-8 demon rats jumped into the water like lightning bolts and swam towards Zhang Tie from different directions...

A fierce battle started...

...

Chapter 415: A Wretched Tactic

In Zhang Tie's eyes, demon rat ran faster than any other animals on the ground. They were definitely charging towards him like lightning bolts. Even many powerhouses above LV 6 could not match demon rats on speed and sensitiveness in a short distance.

High moving speed was the terror of demon rats.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie was in the middle of the pond. There was still a distance of about 30 meters between him and those demon rats, which the latter could not surpass easily. As a result, Zhang Tie took the water as his last reliance.

Zhang Tie had been heavily wounded; therefore, he could only perform 10% of his total fighting strength. The 2 parties both had their own limits.

More demon rats pounced into water from the bank and swam towards Zhang Tie with bloody brutal eyes. Zhang Tie was standing on the stone and waving his double-carp sword; he tried to kill them before they arrived at the stone.

With his full effort, Zhang Tie could only push out 2-m long sword Qi out of the 6-m long slim sword blades, which could only protect himself and that stone.

The sharp blades helped Zhang Tie a lot. Although the demon rats' furs were as smooth as oil yet they were cut open the moment they touched the blades without any exception.

The injuries of the same kind drove the remaining demon rats more restless and crazier. Being simulated by this, they dashed towards Zhang Tie one after another, regardless of the injuries.

After 2 hours of battle, the water around the stone had turned blood-red while many dead demon rats were floating above the water. Even Zhang Tie didn't know how many demon rats had he killed. He estimated that the figure was about 300-400.

Zhang Tie also suffered injuries. Zhang Tie's feet were bitten several times; additionally, his arms and waist were left with blood stains of demon rats' claws. If not for his preliminary recovery body, Zhang Tie could not stick to the end of this 2-h battle at all. Even so, after killing 300-400 demon rats, Zhang Tie's sword blades were only a bit longer than 1 m, half of that before. They were nothing different than 2 common long swords. He could not make it longer at this moment.

Gradually, the demon rats stopped their attack when the pond was covered with the corpses of those demon rats.

Zhang Tie panted heavily as he was kneeling on the stone with one leg; meanwhile, he was glaring at those demon rats on the bank. If Zhang Tie was in a good condition, he could fight 2 days ceaselessly without even a wink. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie felt very tired. Each time he waved his double-carp sword, he felt a sharp pain all over his body, especially on his back where Dawson had struck him.

After those demon rats stopped their attack for a while, Zhang Tie thought that this battle finally came to an end. Right then, a slightly smaller demon rat with purple-black fur walked out of the crowded demon rats. Coming to the bank, he watched Zhang Tie.

When it appeared, all the other demon rats gave a way to him while they all put their eyes on it.

Although it was a beast, Zhang Tie could still sense the killing intent in its eyes.

"Is it the head?" Zhang Tie wanted to sneer. However, the moment he moved his mouth, he realized that he was very thirsty...

"Zhi...zhi...zhi..." That special demon rat stood up with its hindquarter and raised its head. Closely after it all the other demon rats' squeaked along with it.

Zhang Tie became alert at once. Observably, they were not singing for him. "I was told that they had a good memory about their enemies. As I've killed so many of their partners, I wonder what other tactics could they apply."

Some more demon rats flashed out once again. When Zhang Tie thought that these demon rats could swim towards him like the previous ones, he was really scared by their actions this time. They were stepping onto the corpses of their partners and had come closer to Zhang Tie by jumping only 3 or 4 times.

"Wow, f*ck! Leapfrog skill..." Zhang Tie swore loudly as he hurriedly cut some demon rats into pieces with his double-carp sword in the air.

More and more demon rats started to adopt leapfrog skill. Without having to touch water, they had come closer to him. In this method, they could attack Zhang Tie several times faster.

Zhang Tie knew that he had to utmost his full strength to fight them. "These demon rats are so smart." Perhaps they have already been ready for plan B when they swam towards him at the beginning.

Only after 10 minutes, although Zhang Tie killed dozens more demon rats, he suffered more wounds this time than he did 10 minutes before.

Thankfully, they were all slight wounds which didn't influence his movement. With rich fighting experiences, Zhang Tie dodged away from their attacks on all the fatal positions of his body.

Feeling a sharp wind at ear, Zhang Tie turned around and found another bloody scratch on his neck which was close to his shoulder. "What a fast attack!" If Zhang Tie didn't suffer any wounds at this moment, he could easily deal with it; however, it almost cut open the main artery on his neck.

It was that purple-black demon rat. It didn't leave; instead, it

started to dash on the corpses of its soldiers around the stone like stepping on level land. At the same time, it glared at Zhang Tie with its bloody eyes, seemingly seeking for Zhang Tie's loopholes and preparing to give a final strike to Zhang Tie.

"D*mn, is that a rat?" Zhang Tie was shocked inside. Seeing increasingly more rats charging towards him in a crazier way. Zhang Tie felt it more difficult to deal with them. "Is this father, a living person, going to be troubled or killed by a group of rats? No way!"

"What to do? What to do? What to do?"

All of a sudden, Zhang Tie's heart raced as he caught sight of that pond in front of him. He almost slapped himself ferociously. "What an idiot! Am I a fool after being struck by Dawson the d**chebag? Although I've just came out of water, I could also come back. I was recovering myself just now; but I can survive myself this time. Although those demon rats could attack me by leapfrog skill, I could become a frog. I don't believe that they could bit off my ass in water!"

After glancing at that pond full of dead demon rats, Zhang Tie tried his best to be not get disgusted. At the same time, he ferociously slashed his sword. After killing another 2 demon rats, he instantly jumped into the water.

Zhang Tie's response was out of all the demon rats' imagination. In a split second, all the demon rats started to utter shrill sounds.

When that purple-black demon rat flashed towards him and prepared to give Zhang Tie another strike, Zhang Tie slightly moved in water and dived in the depth 67-m at once. After that, he faintly swayed his hands to suspend himself in water.

Zhang Tie raised his head and found many demon rats had jumped into water, aiming to find him in the water. Some put their heads in the water. Although they glared at Zhang Tie with bloody eyes and wanted to dive in, they could only reach half a meter in

depth no matter how they waved their claws and tails.

Watching all this, Zhang Tie finally relieved with a big smile. As he had imagined, although many animals with claws could swim, only few of them could dive. According to Zhang Tie's knowledge, he knew that only some bears could dive into water for fish in cold areas. Although demon rats could swim, they could not dive. However, as the most intelligent animal, of course human could dive better than rats.

Seeing so many dead demon rats above water, Zhang Tie really felt disgusted about this, especially about the bloody odour and the floating intestines and organs of demon rats.

Zhang Tie felt that he was floating in a pot full of rat soup which savages only drunk.

Whereas, no matter what, Zhang Tie had to survive.

Seeing their bellies in water, Zhang Tie revealed an insidious smile. He silently swam upwards. When he was 1 m away from a demon rat, he triggered his blades and cut open a deep wound from its neck to its belly; soon after that, he swam away...

In only a couple of minutes, Zhang Tie had killed 10 more demon rats; however, they could not even touch him at all.

Zhang Tie became so delightful about this. "Thanks to the great diving skill that I've practiced in Hidden Dragon Island, I can finally save my own life and snatch a victory out of defeat."

Launching a sneak attack towards a rat under water...oh, no, demon rats. Although being a bit disgusting and wretched, I think it is a very efficient tactic. Teenagers are always wretched.

The demon rats swam back onto the bank. Zhang Tie then exposed his head out of water to take some fresh air, he found that those demon rats were still glaring at him.

The demon rats then jumped into the water; Zhang Tie dove back and continued to cut open their bellies.

After several rounds, more corpses floated above water. When Zhang Tie exposed his head above water once again, he did not find even a single demon rat around the banks. Probably those demon rats finally realized that they could not get any benefits by doing this with Zhang Tie, not to mention to gnaw Zhang Tie; therefore, they left...

Zhang Tie climbed back and threw himself onto the stone. Feeling exhausted both physically and spiritually, Zhang Tie watched that pond full of dead demon rats and suddenly felt like vomiting; however, he didn't even have the strength to vomit...

...

Gradually, the skyline over his head had turned pale. Lying on the stone, Zhang Tie felt a shock in his mind while his bumpy spiritual energy recovered like the water level after storm.

Zhang Tie attempted to lock that marvelous arch door in his mind with his spiritual energy. He made it and entered Castle of Black Iron without any hesitation.

"Castle Lord..." Zhang Tie saw that Heller have long been waiting there for him with a solemn look.

"I know what you're going to talk about. I only want to have a rest. Talk about it later when I wake up!" Zhang Tie waved his hand in a tired way.

Heller didn't say anything. After bowing towards Zhang Tie, he left.

Zhang Tie instantly drunk a bottle of 200 ml all-purpose medicament. After that, he took off his wet clothes. After a short bath, he returned to his room. Covering himself with the quilt, he fell asleep immediately.

The all-purpose medicament instantly took effect on Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie soon felt a warm and agile flow inside. In a few minutes, Zhang Tie had recovered his heart beats, fever and fallen asleep

like dozing off in spring...

...

Outside the room, Heller was standing below the high platform of that small tree. Watching the sky in Castle of Black Iron gradually turning bright in synchronous with that outside, Heller muttered, "What an obtrusive Castle Lord! Low-end fighting skills like Iron-Blood Fist develops from the human knowledge in Bronze Age which was discovered tens of thousands years ago indeed made people easily puzzled. In Bronze Age, there was no real powerful people or hero; instead, there were only some average people who desired for the glorious gods to control everything..." After saying this, Heller drew down in the air with his hands. As a result, like drawing down a curtain, Castle of Black Iron entered deep darkness once again...

...

However, at the same time, Dawson was in a valley which was a hundred miles away from Zhang Tie's place. After wandering there over one night, he found that he was back at the original point. He finally collapsed mentally as he roared.

"Who the motherf*cker will tell me where I am? Argh..."

Receiving no one's response, his voice attracted a pack of iron-teeth hyenas who were staring at him, drooling off their saliva...

Meanwhile, a huge eagle was hovering in the sky...

...

Chapter 416: Kill Them All

Zhang Tie didn't know how long had he slept. When he opened his eyes, he felt agile and energetic both mentally and physically like waking up from a nap in the order of his mom at weekends when in Blackhot City.

He got up quickly and put on his clothes. After that, he left the only 2-storey cabin in Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie found it was already afternoon.

With a smile, Heller saw Zhang Tie walking out of his cabin.

"Did you sleep well, Castle Lord?"

Zhang Tie forcefully swung his arms as he felt that all the pains had relieved, "How long have I slept?"

"36 hours!" Heller replied precisely, "I had kept Castle of Black Iron in the state of darkness so that your preliminary recovery body could help you recover faster. With the help of all-purpose medicament, although just being 36 hours, your recovery effect was equal to 1 week's recovery effect of commoners!"

Looking at those old scars over his arms, Zhang Tie kept silent. "At the critical moment, my preliminary recovery body would always take effect greatly. I've done really right by setting earthworms free." Zhang Tie determined that after he reached his target in Ice and Snow Wilderness, if Hanna's family didn't fulfill the appointment, he would go to Blapei once again and set free earthworms himself. If it improved to medium recovery body, it would have a greater effect in saving his life. "Besides Blapei, I could also inquire whether people in other places also breed earthworms. I can set free more earthworms at the same time so that I could update to medium recovery body as soon as possible."

At the sight of Heller's respectful and solemn look, Zhang Tie became embarrassed.

"Erm...I will take care next time. I've not imagined that b*stard could attack me with his secret weapon before I escaped to the riverside!"

"Even though an earthworm or an ant has its special feature, not to mention a LV 10 strong fighter. Facing such a great opponent, the safest way is to boom him into pieces with your javelin after eating enough seven-strength fruits. Additionally, to be honest, although you've already selected a way to escape, the river is indeed far away from where you hunt those iron-teeth hyenas. Facing such a great opponent, I suggest you to narrow the safe distance within 3-5 km!"

Zhang Tie accepted Heller's suggestion modestly. This crisis was the best warning for his excessive confidence. Zhang Tie thought that Dawson could not catch up with him with the help of rapid moving skill; therefore, he dared to hunt iron-teeth hyenas at a place far away from the riverside. Additionally, he felt that he could enter Castle of Black Iron at the critical moment. Furthermore, he was not using his true name and face. Even if he had been seen by Dawson, he could change his look. In this way, Dawson could never find him. However, Zhang Tie had not imagined that he almost bid farewell to Castle of Black Iron in this crisis.

"Heller, which secret weapon did he use to strike me? It's very sharp! How could it influence my spiritual energy? I could not have it back in over 10 hours!"

"That's a rune weapon. Besides weakening your battle Qi, it could make your spiritual energy unstable and void. If not having eaten so many Iron-body fruits, it might have penetrated through your body! You have to especially take care of yourself when you encounter him next time!"

Iron-body fruits reminded Zhang Tie of something instantaneously, "I should have some new seven-strength fruits after killing so many demon rats!"

"Why not take a look?" Heller smiled.

Zhang Tie hurriedly rushed towards the small tree. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie bounced happily.

"Ha...ha...That's great! Crisis brings me bliss..." Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he danced like a lunatic. He found 8 seven-strength fruits in shape of demon rats were hanging over on the small tree. They were so cute! "I'm rich..."

"Although demon rats are not as powerful as wild wolves or iron-teeth hyenas, this kind of mutated rats are huge. They are not weaker than a common dog. Additionally, this animal could not match wild wolves and iron-teeth hyenas on speed and agility. Therefore, the seven-strength fruits of demon rats must contain such special features."

Like how he obtained the ability to run constantly at a high speed after eating wild wolf's seven-strength fruits, "I should be able to improve my abilities on some special aspects with these seven-strength fruits."

"Castle Lord has killed 367 demon rats in total. Therefore, there are 8 demon rats in total, 7 of which have been ripe and edible..."

Hearing Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie hurriedly rushed towards that cabin on his side.

Seeing this, Heller was startled, "Castle Lord, what are you going to do?"

"I will find a rope and kill all the other demon rats outside in case of more dangers. I remember that those demon rats lived in a nearby mountain cave!"

...

So many items were piling in the cabin. Zhang Tie searched over them for a short while before found 2 pioneering kits which he bought in Blackhot City. After opening 1 of them, Zhang Tie found what he needed, an iron claw and a rope longer than 60 m.

After fastening the rope on the iron claw, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron and reappeared on the stone in the middle of the pond in a split second.

Although it was daytime outside, Zhang Tie could barely see any light. Because of the vapour from all the ponds, a thick mist had formed above the serene valley. The rolling mist gradually faded away covering the whole sky and making it a cloudy day.

The corpses of demon rats were still floating over the pond. Only after one more day, Zhang Tie had already smelt a vomiting odor due to the high temperature here.

Holding his breath, Zhang Tie started to observe the surroundings. He noticed a bulged rock on the cliff being not far from the bank. There were so many cracks around the rock, where he could have his iron claws on. Therefore, he threw his iron claw towards there immediately.

Although it was over 50 m away, the iron claw hit the target right away. The opening angle bar had firmly tucked into the cracks. Holding the rope, Zhang Tie swung himself forcefully and fell on the ground steadily after flying over dozens of meters' of water.

After putting away his rope and iron claw into Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie took out his double-carp sword and walked in a nearby mountain cave.

If those demon rats lived in smaller holes, Zhang Tie could only wait here; however, as they lived in that mountain cave, Zhang Tie didn't care to take a look inside.

The mountain cave was about 3.5 m in height. Some twigs were lying disorderly at the entrance. Because of the poor light outside, the inside of the cave became darker. Being daytime, Zhang Tie could still barely see inside with his naked eyes.

Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile as he injected some spiritual energy into his eyes. Right now, the dark vision started to take

effect. Everything in the mountain cave became bright.

He then entered the mountain cave. The inside space of the mountain cave was pretty large. Amazingly, Zhang Tie found that it was very orderly inside. Someone seemed to have lived here before. There was a pond on the plain ground. Furthermore, Zhang Tie even saw some stony stages and a stony table over 20 m away from the mountain entrance.

"Someone lives here?" Zhang Tie's heart pounded as he held his double-carp swords tightly. Under the curiosity, Zhang Tie started to fumble towards the deep inside.

When he came in front of that stony table, Zhang Tie touched it and found the dirt over it was 1.5 cm in thickness. Seeing this, Zhang Tie knew that someone might have lived here before. However, the people had left for a long time.

Walking upstairs, Zhang Tie continued to dig deep in. Only after a few steps, he had encountered a demon rat. At the sight of Zhang Tie, it instantly uttered a shrill sound, "Zhi...zhi..." The sound of the demon rat drifted far away in the quiet mountain cave. Hearing this warning, all the other demon rats in the cave started to reply, causing the mountain cave noisy right away. The squeaks grew louder and louder.

Along with a sword Qi, a 6-m long agile golden carp struck past that demon rat, cutting it into two halves at once.

Having been totally recovered, Zhang Tie could easily deal with all of them with double-carp swords.

A great number of demon rats poured out of the deep inside. There were hundreds more. After seeing their public enemy, their eyes turned pretty red. No matter how they identified Zhang Tie, from his look or through his special odor, the moment they saw Zhang Tie, they charged towards him immediately, aiming to engulf Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie responded with a smile...

Chapter 417: Great Wildness Sutra

Although demon rats flashed like lightning bolts, Zhang Tie's double-carp swords were faster.

The silver carp blade encountered a purple-black demon rat in the air. Before the rat left any wound on Zhang Tie's neck, it had been cut open by the silver carp blade less than 2 m away; after spurting a blood mist, it fell down the ground.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the first demon rat that he killed in the mountain cave was the "head". This demon rat indeed moved faster. The moment he saw Zhang Tie, it had already started to launch an attack. As a result, it was exploded by Zhang Tie's sword.

Although demon rats were smart, the head rat still couldn't figure out how that guy who was chased into the water by them about 30 hours ago to kill became so sharp.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't need to explain anything to those demon rats; instead, he just waved his gold carp and silver carp swords rapidly.

Under the force of iron-blood battle Qi, the blades of gold carp sword and silver carp sword had been fully extended. The sword Qi reached 6 m away. The sword Qi was as agile as water while a golden carp and a silver carp were swimming happily in it. Everywhere they reached would arouse a lot of bloody ripples.

Seeing their head being killed, all the remaining demon rats became furious. They started to attack Zhang Tie completely out of mind. However, after 1.5 days, Zhang Tie had completely recovered from his heavy wounds while his swimming golden and silver carp swords became an insuperable barrier for those demon rats.

As the sword Qi of double-carp swords reached 6 m away. Besides

that head rat at the beginning, no other magical rats could reach Zhang Tie within two meters.

If someone who didn't know about fighting skills watched this fight, he might be amazed with what he saw. Because Zhang Tie was absolutely like a magician who released his magics in the water. As long as he waved his hands, he would make numerous golden or silver carps out of his swords handles and send them into the demon rats, arousing blood mists.

Since he obtained the 2 swords in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie had been able to use one sword to attack and another to defend when in fight.

As Zhang Tie barely used such high-end weapons by 2 hands at the same time, he could only try his best to coordinate them. It was more powerful to use the 2 swords at the same time than only 1 sword. However, he could not use them perfectly at the present. In the eyes of real powerhouses, Zhang Tie might still have problems on the continuity and coordination of this set of double-carp swords. Whereas, it was enough for Zhang Tie to use double-carp swords to deal with those demon rats.

In less than 10 minutes, when the last demon rat's head was cut open by the double-carp swords, the entire mountain cave recovered its calm once again.

The ground was covered with dead demon rats while their blood was flowing everywhere. For those demon rats who wanted to engulf Zhang Tie, he didn't spare any sympathy to them. After doing that, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh inside.

With another adjustment of his iron-blood battle Qi, Zhang Tie narrowed the length of his sword blades from 6 m to 1 m, causing a mellow buzz. They looked like common long swords as the thin and smooth blades slightly swayed in the air. After watching it for a while, Zhang Tie found no blood stains or defects over them at all.

"What great swords!"

Zhang Tie highly praised inside. "This pair of double-carp swords are better than the red-snake sword that I have used before."

Because it was impossible for demon rats to live together with other animals and nobody was here, Zhang Tie hung the double-carp swords back onto his waistband.

"Castle Lord, those demon rats tastes nice; their furs are also useful. Why not take them in Castle of Black Iron? After a short treatment, we might use them in the future!"

Heller's voice sounded in Zhang Tie's mind at this moment. Glancing over the demon rats over the ground, Zhang Tie found each of them weighed about 10-20 kg. "As those in the pond are too disgusting, I will not take them; but it's really pitiful to leave these fleshs and furs here. Now that they are useful and nobody has seen that, I will put them away."

Zhang Tie picked up all the dead demon rats and threw them directly into the underground ice cave in Castle of Black Iron. Plus their furs and bones, they might weigh around 5000-6000 kg in total. "I will have Agan deal with them."

Previously, Zhang Tie planned to leave this mountain cave after he killed these demon rats and made the last demon rat grow mature; however, now that he knew that someone might have lived here before, out of curiosity, Zhang Tie continued to walk inside.

Someone indeed lived in this mountain cave before. Only after a few steps, Zhang Tie had already seen some artificial stony rooms. Some undying fluorite lamps were hanging on the walls, radiating a greenish luster. In one room, Zhang Tie found some simple living products like bottles and jars, which had been covered with dirt or were completely rotted. Only after a glance at them, Zhang Tie had left.

This mountain cave was not deep. After walking 70-80 m, Zhang Tie had already reached its bottom, where he saw some stony stages winding upwards like wheelks. Zhang Tie then walked upwards along the stony stages.

There was another huge space above the stony stages. The moment Zhang Tie arrived there, he had already seen an artificial room. Some water-drops were dripping off the stalactites on the roof. A natural, philosophical small pond formed outside the room. A bundle of sunlight cast from a crack on one side of the mountain cave, making it much brighter down there.

"Sunlight, fresh air, clean water. If there's anything precious in this mountain cave, it must be in this room." Zhang Tie muttered.

There were many stony room in the mountain cave; however, only the one in front of him had a stony gate. Zhang Tie then walked in front of that stony gate. After a slight push, Zhang Tie had already opened it, causing a cracking sound. At the same time, a lot of dust dropped off from the top of the gate. Zhang Tie hurriedly dodged away. After that, Zhang Tie walked in this stony room.

The moment he entered the room, Zhang Tie saw a skeleton sitting on the stony bed. Besides a stony bed and a stony table, most of the other items in the room had been rotten.

Out of curiosity, Zhang Tie came to the front of that skeleton on the stony bed. The skeleton's clothes had been covered with dust. Zhang Tie could not identify its texture. After a slight touch, it was broken into pieces. It seemed that it had been sitting here at least dozens of years. Besides, he could not find even a single item from that skeleton, not even a copper.

It sat up straight with complete bones. None of its bones were broken or cracked. Additionally, the bones also looked normal. From this, Zhang Tie could easily conclude that this man died of natural causes. It seemed that this person didn't encounter any

accident or poisoning.

"I'm so sorry. Although you lived here before, you're dead now. By chance, I came here to see whether there are something I can use. No matter what, you don't need them anymore. Hopefully, you don't mind! Hehe..."

Zhang Tie explained to that skeleton before coming to the front of the stony table. Some bottles and jars were on the stony table. Zhang Tie opened some of them and found the contents inside had long become sh*t.

After checking all the bottles and jars, Zhang Tie was greatly disappointed. "The items here were nothing but junks. They were not even worth a silver coin in total. Isn't it written in knight novels that people would always have a great achievement in similar cases? How come it doesn't work on me!"

After glancing over this room once again, Zhang Tie saw nothing special at all.

"Do you want me to kowtow in front of this skeleton or to bury it somewhere like what Donder has told me?" Thinking of the contents of eastern knight novels that Donder has told Zhang Tie and watching the hard stony floor, Zhang Tie almost burst out laughter, which flushed away his disappointing mood at once.

"I'm afraid that you are just an average hermit. Now that there's nothing special, I will not disturb you!" Of course, Zhang Tie would not kowtow to it. After all, it's just mentioned in knight novels. Receiving no achievement, Zhang Tie directly turned around and left.

After another circle outside the stony room, Zhang Tie found nothing special either. The moment he wanted to walk downstairs, he suddenly felt empty inside like losing something.

The lower he reached, the sharper the sense became. When he reached the middle of the stages, Zhang Tie stopped his feet

immediately as a detailed scene flashed across his mind.

Zhang Tie instantly turned around and rushed upwards like a wind. When he came to the front of that skeleton, Zhang Tie started to observe the hands of that skeleton seriously.

Before death, that man put his hands below his lower abdomen levelly. It looked pretty calm and nothing special was found. However, Zhang Tie finally focused on its left hand. Its left hand was supporting his right hand. It was nothing weird for cultivators. However, besides the third finger of its left hand which was straight, all the other 4 fingers of this hand were curved.

Zhang Tie was afraid that nobody else would notice this detail except him.

In Blackhot City, when a person erected his middle finger, it meant that he was swearing someone. Seeing this, of course Zhang Tie who had always erected his middle finger in No. 7 Middle School in Blackhot City understood that he was not swearing, but pointing at somewhere in such a hidden gesture.

Along the direction of the finger, Zhang Tie looked at a stony wall on the right side of the stony bed.

Coming to the front of the wall, Zhang Tie forcefully blew off the dust on it; then, he started to fumble and knock it seriously with his fingers.

After 2 minutes of hard work, Zhang Tie's face changed as he started to rub the stony wall with his sword forcefully. After a short while, he had scraped off the stone powers from the wall, exposing a fine crack in front of him. Zhang Tie became very excited as he started to work harder. After a few minutes, he inserted his long sword into the crack. After prying it for a couple of times, Zhang Tie pried out a stony brick covering 20 cubic centimeters.

After putting it carefully down, Zhang Tie saw a hole on the stony wall. Something was inside it! He put his hand in and got it out of there.

That was a black heavy wooden box which was unlocked.

At the sight of it, Zhang Tie's heart started to palpitate. After a couple of deep breaths, he finally recovered his composure.

After opening it, Zhang Tie saw a book with a black cover. The cover looked aged and mysterious; some pure, golden patterns like fishes, insects, birds and other fierce beasts as well as some Chinese seal characters "Great Wildness Sutra" were on it...

"A Chinese secret knowledge? He's Chinese?" Zhang Tie focused his eyes on that skeleton.

If he fumbled over the skeleton the moment he entered the room and profaned the dead, he would definitely destroy the direction of the middle finger; as a result, he would not have found that "Great Wildness Sutra".

Similarly, when he didn't find anything in the room, if he lost his temper on this skeleton out of disappointment, he would get nothing either.

The erecting middle finger reminded the visitors to be careful and respectful about the skeleton and mocked those who might ruin the skeleton.

"It turns out that the contents in knight novels are all real." An absurd thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

It was hard to guess the contents of this book only from its name "Great Wildness Sutra". However, it was not suitable for him to study this secret knowledge at this place at this moment. Therefore, Zhang Tie directly threw it in Castle of Black Iron. After that, he turned around and left quickly.

...

Chapter 418: To be an Animal Controller

It was indeed not the right place and time to study the secret knowledge. Undoubtedly, it was the silliest choice to stay here with a treasure. Additionally, Dawson might come in this cave at any time.

Therefore, Zhang Tie left the cave rapidly. Outside the entrance of the mountain cave, he found this serene valley ranged east to west. It seemed that each direction was available. However, Zhang Tie asked himself which direction he would choose if Dawson came down for him.

After thinking about it for 2 seconds, Zhang Tie remembered the general terrain of this valley before he rolled down. The ranges on both sides of this valley was "west high, east low". If Dawson came down, he would definitely choose east. In case of another battle with Dawson, Zhang Tie would choose west.

After figuring it out, Zhang Tie rushed towards west at once.

Zhang Tie was not familiar with the path; he just moved by his intuition. He kept running westward in the narrow valley. After a short while, he had been 6-7 km away from that mountain cave. This place was full of verdant grasses and woods; by contrast, there was nothing but some ponds in the surroundings of the mountain cave which was occupied by demon rats.

After 1 hour of travelling in the valley, Zhang Tie came about 40-50 km away from that mountain cave. At this moment, it had almost been dark. Zhang Tie saw a lot of vines with purple tiny flowers on the cliff. Among those flowers, Zhang Tie saw many pits and cracks. Therefore, he ran towards there.

He climbed up deftly along those vines and found a pit on the cliff which was over 10 m above the ground. That pit was about 1.7 m in height which extended 7-8 m inside. A great number of plants with purple flowers covered the entrance. It was clean inside. Soon

after climbing in, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron.

...

Zhang Tie was right. It was really not wise to stay in the mountain cave. Less than 40 minutes after he left the mountain cave, Dawson had appeared there. He raised his head and looked at the crisscrossed vines on the cliffs and the huge ponds down there; soon after that, his face became gloomy.

Especially when he saw so many dead demon rats in the huge pond, his face turned gloomier.

He picked a demon rat from the pond and checked its wounds carefully. After that, he threw it back into the pond ferociously. Like Zhang Tie, he also noticed that mountain cave and rushed in immediately.

After 10 more minutes, when Dawson came out of the cave, although with a gloomy face, his eyes gleamed.

Dawson then chased after Zhang Tie towards west...

...

The moment Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron, he saw Heller. Heller responded with a smile, "Congratulations, Castle Lord. I've not imagined that you could have such a great achievement in the mountain cave."

Zhang Tie knew that Heller referred to "Great Wilderness Sutra". In Chinese, any book with the Character "经[1]" was special. At this moment, as Zhang Tie was in an absolutely safe place, he got curious about that book.

As seven-strength fruits would not escape away from the small tree themselves, Zhang Tie didn't worry about them. After greeting Heller, he came to his study room in the 2-storey cabin. A black wooden case was lying on the table.

Noticing that his hands were a bit dirty, he cleaned his hands

seriously before opening the wooden case.

The moment he opened its cover, he saw a piece of paper dropping down the ground from the title page. Zhang Tie was stunned as he picked up the piece of paper.

"4 decades ago, our Great Wildness Sect was unrivaled on both Eastern and Western Continents with animal controlling skills. Although there are so many animal controlling skills among hundreds of millions of population, only the secret animal controlling knowledge in Great Wildness Sect is mysterious and unrivaled. So many heroes are desiring for it. However, when Great Wildness Sect reaches its extreme prosperity, it starts to decline. I'm the only alive member of Great Wildness Sect; I'm going to die together with my cultivation base; however, I still could not find our enemy and rejuvenate our Sect. How regretful!"

Regretful, regretful, regretful, regretful, regretful, regretful, regretful!

My bones lie in an uncivil land. The one who can obtain the 'Great Wildness Sutra' is lucky. However, the animal controlling skills in the book 'Great Wildness Sutra' are the top secrets. Actually, they are the great laws and top secrets on controlling our incarnations. With these skills, we can control all the animals in the sky and on the land. We don't reveal these skills to the outsiders. Therefore, we establish the 'Great Wildness Sect'. Because of this, we are swept by other forces. When the Great Wildness Sect became prosperous, it ruled the hundreds of millions of square meters for hundreds of years on the south region of Eastern Continent like an undying kingdom; when the Great Wildness Sect declined, it encountered great damages over night while tens of thousands of followers and hundreds of years of foundation ruined so fast. These were all caused by "Great Wildness Sutra"

As you're lucky enough to obtain this top secret knowledge of the Great Wildness Sect, if you want to be rich, you can learn some

secret skills from this book and work as a common animal controller in human countries or great families where you could be treated as the top guest. Namely, you can get money and social status so easily. However, you should never reveal to the public that you've mastered the top secrets in the Great Wildness Sutra; otherwise, you are doomed to be killed. Keep it in your mind! Keep it in your mind! At the beginning, the forces that ruined the Great Wildness Sect were very powerful. They were so ferocious that they could destroy a city very easily. In order to get the Great Wildness Sutra, those people had been driven mad; if they know that you have the Great Wildness Sutra, they would not keep you alive.

Although the Great Wildness Sect has been ruined, its reputation is still high in the world, especially in the South Region of Eastern Continent. Over the past hundreds of years, the sect has so many followers among the hundreds of millions of mountains in the South Region. If you want to be a king in the future, you can seek for an opportunity in the South Region of the Eastern Continent. However, although it might bring you countless wealth, it will also bring you high risks. Therefore, hopefully, you can considerate it.

I found dozens of demon rats in the valley, which had been tamed. There's not a head rat yet; I feed them with a secret medicine; a head rat is doomed to form in the future. If you can master the soul-based animal controlling skill from this "Great Wildness Sutra", you can incarnate yourself as that head rat so that you could order the other demon rats.

Those demon rats are mutated ones; they are born to be ferocious and cunning. Additionally, they are very aggressive. If their population could reach millions, they would be irresistible. Whereas, demon rats could not match common rats on the basis of reproduction. I planned to increase their reproductivity with improved species so as to rejuvenate our sect by establishing the Great Wildness Sect once again in the uncivil land; however, after

more than 2 decades of cultivation, I still could make no progress. As I have no time to do that which might be the god's intention, I'm afraid that I cannot finish this task.

By using soul-based animal controlling skill, you have to consume a lot of Qi, blood and the essence of spiritual energy and soul. Although it's a marvelous secret knowledge, its incarnated situation always makes you unforgettable. However, you'd better not indulge in it or use soul-based animal controlling skill freely, as which might consume a lot of your essence. If you do that, you are seeking for death. In its heyday, the Great Wildness Sect had more than one million of books, which included various classical secret knowledge like methods that were used to strengthen one's essence. Besides, there were the mountains of eccentric secret medicines in the sect. Therefore, followers of the Great Wildness Sect could recover their essence that were lost by using soul-based animal controlling skill. Now, the foundation of the Great Wildness Sect has been ruined. Everything precious has been robbed away. You have to be considerate before using the soul-based animal controlling skill.

That's what I want to say. If you can get this "Great Wildness Sutra", you must have a good personality and mentality. As the great law of ancient human could continue to carry forward, I can close my eyes.

"The will of Cloud Crane from the Great Wildness Sect!"

After reading this paper repetitively, Zhang Tie finally let out a long sigh. Zhang Tie really didn't imagine that he could meet a follower of the Great Wildness Sect of Eastern Continent in the cave. Additionally, he obtained this "Great Wildness Sutra", which could be explained with nothing else but god's will.

"However, Cloud Crane might have not imagined that his demon rats which had developed so many generations were killed by me. I'm so sorry about that. I'm afraid that it is impossible to tame them anymore."

However, the thought of using demon rats really made Zhang Tie excited. In a split second, Zhang Tie had realized that he could have those demon rats mutated and evolved in Castle of Black Iron, but he had to solve two questions.

The evolutionary direction of living beings in Castle of Black Iron was optional and uncontrollable. Even if a demon rat was evolved, its reproductivity might not be strengthened; instead, it might be weakened. According to the universal law and the basis of the existence of various species, the greater the animals were, the weaker they were in reproductivity. This law could hardly be broken.

Furthermore, given the growth cycle of demon rats and the possible astronomical cost on evolution and mutation, Zhang Tie could not afford it at all. Perhaps he could get no return in dozens of years. If he made such a great investment only for obtaining some demon rats with greater reproductivity, it would be so stupid. By contrast, earthworms and Buckthorns had shorter growth cycles and stronger reproductivity.

After thinking it through, Zhang Tie dropped the thought about demon rats as he moved back onto the "Great Wildness Sutra".

The two words soul-based animal controlling skill and incarnation made Zhang Tie highly spirited.

Zhang Tie opened the "Great Wildness Sutra" and was shocked by the first line.

——Humans, heart of the universe; living beings, the body of the universe!

As he opened new pages one after another, Zhang Tie entered a wonderful world that he had never imagined.

Amazingly, Zhang Tie, who always dreamed to be an alchemist, became an animal controller, who inherited the "Great Wildness Sutra" of the Great Wildness Sect on the South Region of Eastern

Continent...

...

Chapter 419: Making a Breakthrough

The contents in the "Great Wildness Sutra" were ancient and profound. Each words and sentences were very fantastic. That was a world that Zhang Tie had not touched before. The world was full of sutras, fingerprints, illusions, rules and new definitions about the relationship between human and everything else in the universe. It was completely different from that fighter cultivation system that Zhang Tie adopted since he was young. It broadened Zhang Tie's vision greatly.

Of course, animal controller was a profession in this age. This profession only existed less than 700 years. However, it was hard to say how long have human coexisted with everything else in the universe, including various wild animals. According to a common saying, people had existed at least 6 million years on this planet.

Before the appearance of animal controller, of course humans could coexist with everything else in the universe. The "Great Wildness Sutra" was talking about the methods for humans to coexist with various animals in the mother nature; therefore, Zhang Tie could not only learn about the abilities to control animals from this book.

Humans could not coexist with animals simply by controlling them. In Zhang Tie's opinion, many contents in the book were nothing different than the skills of the legendary shamans, flamens and wizards. They were far more than what animal controllers could be in this age.

For instance, according to the book, before entering adventurous lands, one could make demon figures with grass so as to avoid from being bitten by venomous insects or snakes. Wasn't it similar to the deeds of shamans and flamens?

However, it would be too polite if one said that this book was about "coexistence" rules between humans and other animals;

actually, to put it straightforward, the "Great Wildness Sutra" was definitely an arbitrary book as it was described in the book, "Human is the heart of the universe while everything else forms the limbs of the universe; to drive its limbs with the heart is like driving its fingers with its arm."

The secret knowledge of the "Great Wildness Sutra" included 5 sections; "Summon", "Amulet", "Increase", "Drive" and "Incarnation".

The section "Summon" taught people how to summon animals; the section "Amulet" taught people how to protect themselves; the section "Increase" taught people how to gain more benefits; the section "Drive" taught people how to drive animals while the section "Incarnation" taught people how to incarnate their souls on animals, which was the essence of the "Great Wildness Sutra".

In this age, it was enough for an animal controller to completely master the contents in the section "Summon" and the section "Amulet" of the "Great Wildness Sutra".

Zhang Tie read that book for 2 days in the cabin repeatedly. Until the third morning did Zhang Tie stretch his limbs and walk out of his 2-storey cabin.

This was the longest period that Zhang Tie had stayed in Castle of Black Iron since he obtained it.

It was early morning in Castle of Black Iron. Agan, Edward and Aziz had already been doing farming work in the verdant farmlands with farming tools. Heller seemed being meditating while sitting below the cherry grove not far away.

This was Zhang Tie's first time to see Heller meditating; therefore, he was a bit curious about that.

Yellow chrysanthemums were growing around the fence. They were blossoming brilliantly. A swarm of bees were busying working among those chrysanthemums. The entire Castle of Black

Iron looked tranquil and vigorous.

Zhang Tie stood in the courtyard for a while to enjoy the beautiful scene. After that, he revealed a faint smile before coming to the small tree.

The small tree was also fruitful at this moment. Only after a deep sniff of the rich fragrance of seven-strength fruits, Zhang Tie had already being highly spirited and intoxicated.

The 9 crystal seven-strength fruits in the shape of rats looked pretty cute. They were like crystal artworks which aroused Zhang Tie pity.

8 of the 9 demon rats looked same, except one which looked a bit deeper with a purple luster flowing inside, making it very special.

"Isn't this one not ripe yet? How come that be!? I've killed so many demon rats!" With this doubt, Zhang Tie stretched his hand towards that special seven-strength fruit.

——Seven-Strength Fruit of King Demon Rat. This fruit has gathered; the strength of Qi, the strength of blood, the strength of channel, the strength of vein, the strength of bone, the strength of marrow and the strength of spirit of king demon rat. Usage: Pick and direct eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——This seven-strength fruit was a senior fruit of demon rat. It comes from a king demon rat. The seven-strength inside this were 5 times that of common seven-strength fruits of demon rats.

After reading the above 2 paragraphs, Zhang Tie was startled for a short while. He then burst out into laughter. "This small tree is really unbelievable. I've not imagined this special fruit after killing the head rat."

"According to the old Chinese saying, if you want to catch thieves, you have to catch their king at first. I will eat this seven-

strength fruit firstly!" Saying this, Zhang Tie picked off this seven-strength fruit of king demon rat as he sat down with his legs crossed. He then put it in his mouth and chewed it carefully.

The sweet juice of the seven-strength fruit slid in Zhang Tie's esophagus very soon and gradually turned into seven rolling hot Qi's and energy inside Zhang Tie's chest.

Once again, Zhang Tie felt his body being blown up like a balloon by that combined strength.

...

When the 1st strength Qi swam to the sea position of Zhang Tie's lower abdomen, it gradually integrated with Zhang Tie's body; meanwhile, Zhang Tie heard the familiar sound of heavy wind blowing by his ears in his mind...

Then, the 2nd strength...

When the 3rd strength swam to Zhang Tie's after-brain, it resolved and entered Zhang Tie's muscles all over in terms of thousands of smaller strength. When they arrived there, they started to slightly quiver like strings of a musical instrument. Zhang Tie felt that he became a huge harp. With the effect of that strength, he started to sound himself all over.

This time, the "performance" lasted especially long...

Followed by the 4th strength...

...

When Zhang Tie opened his eyes, he became stunned as he found it was morning.

Heller was standing beside the small tree and watching Zhang Tie.

"How long did it take me to digest the seven-strength fruit?" Zhang Tie asked.

"30 hours!" Heller replied, "The more powerful the seven-

strength fruit is, the longer it will take you to digest it!"

Zhang Tie smiled as he stood up and picked off another demon rat seven-strength fruit.

When Zhang Tie woke up once again, it was almost night.

After eating this common demon rat seven-strength fruit, Zhang Tie felt that its strength of Qi, strength of blood, strength of bone, strength of marrow, strength of vein and strength of spirit was almost equal to half of that of a wild wolf seven-strength fruit respectively; however, its strength of channel was about 1.5 times that of a common wild wolf seven-strength fruit, which might be deeply related to Zhang Tie's great explosiveness...

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie picked off another demon rat seven-strength fruit.

After digesting the 3rd demon rat seven-strength fruit, it turned completely dark. The moment Zhang Tie opened his eyes, he saw Heller who was holding a lamp.

"Castle Lord, haste makes waste. After eating so many seven-strength fruits at once, you'd better slightly move, eat or drink before take a sleep. Only by relaxing yourself to fit your latest physical functions could your body contain the energy of the other seven-strength fruits!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he left the small tree, ate something and drunk some honey-water. After that, he took a bath and slept for some hours. When it was late morning, he came to the small tree and started to eat seven-strength fruits once again.

This time, he ate 4 seven-strength fruits consecutively. After that, he continued to rest, sleep and eat.

On the 3rd day, Zhang Tie ate the last 2 seven-strength fruits of demon rats.

When he woke up this time, Zhang Tie felt being completely different than before. After eating 9 seven-strength fruits in a

couple of days, he updated his body 9 times. Even Zhang Tie wondered how powerful he was at this moment. With a will, Zhang Tie felt that the strength in his muscles was moving ferociously like a piston in a high-pressure cylinder which was going to explode at any time.

Like before, Heller knew what Zhang Tie was thinking about. Zhang Tie found that he was standing below the small tree, with a javelin container in hand. Agan, Edward and Aziz were standing respectfully behind Heller. Each of them were carrying a new wooden target.

"Castle Lord, you must not wait to try the power of your javelins!"

Zhang Tie responded with a smile as he walked downstairs. After glancing at the 3 nice targets, he nodded, "I remember that Agan is a carpenter and stonemason. He made them, right? Not bad!"

Receiving Zhang Tie's praise, Agan was so excited that his face even blushed. He hurriedly knelt down to kiss Zhang Tie's shoes, "Castle Lord, it's my great honor to serve you!"

"Let's have a try over there!" Saying this, Zhang Tie walked towards the most open parcel of grassland on the lake's shore, followed by Agan, Edward and Aziz.

After coming to the shore, Zhang Tie drew out a javelin from Heller's javelin container before narrowed his eyes and looked at the distance.

"How far?" Heller asked.

"200 m, 300 m and 500 m!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Agan, Edward and Aziz directly ran away. Agan stopped 200 m away; carrying the target, he stood still like a dare-to-die corps member; Edward stopped 300 m away while Aziz stopped 500 m away. They all moved very fast. In less than 2 minutes, they had already arrived at the right positions and

gave signals to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then drew out a javelin from Heller's javelin container. After fixing his eyes on that target 200 m away, he took a deep breath; closely after that, he threw out the javelin.

In a split second, the javelin had disappeared in the air. Almost at the same time, Zhang Tie heard the cracking sound of Agan's target and the air-breaking sound.

Zhang Tie threw out the 2nd and the 3rd javelins consecutively in an extremely short period closely after the 1st javelin.

The 3 targets were almost exploded in a second. Seeing this, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh satisfactorily. After throwing out 3 javelins, Zhang Tie felt so cool. Zhang Tie felt that he had realized essential improvements on strength, responsiveness and explosiveness. Certainly, the speed of his javelin was much faster than before.

Zhang Tie didn't know about its precise speed; but it was true that it only took him a bit more than half a second from throwing out the javelin to the crack of the target 500 m away.

After breaking through the 3 targets, the 3 javelins continued to fly forward until they hit the colorful, rolling fog to the edge of Castle of Black Iron. They suspended there for several seconds before dropping off.

"Congratulations, Castle Lord, all the initial speeds of the 3 javelins were greater than 728 m/s, which was twice that of sound transmission speed in air. Your javelin could match heavy crossbow on destructive force within 300 m. Its destructive force didn't decline until 400 m. Its maximum effective destructive range was 800 m."

Zhang Tie did not feel strange about the precise flying speed of his javelin. Because it was in Castle of Black Iron while Heller was the administer and intelligent spirit of Castle of Black Iron; of

course, he knew everything.

Zhang Tie only cared about one thing, "Can Dawson survive my javelins?"

"He can't!" Heller shook his head, "Unless he could reach or approach LV 11 in these days, he could never dodge away from sonic boom which was twice the speed of sound transmission speed in the air. You're already able to kill most of strong fighters with javelins. Few strong fighters could respond faster than this speed."

A harsh countenance flashed through Zhang Tie's eyes...

"Are you going out now, Cast Lord?" Heller asked.

"No hurry. I will stay here for a couple of days..." Zhang Tie smiled as his eyes gleamed, "As nobody disturbs me here, I can practice the first section of the "Great Wilderness Sutra". As the first section should be finished in a row, I need to spare 7 days to practice it; but I cannot find such a good condition outside!"

...

Several hours later, Zhang Tie became completely relaxed. After adjusting himself to his best condition, Zhang Tie returned to the place below the small tree. Crossing his legs, he started to make a fantastic gesture described on the "Great Wilderness Sutra". At the same time, Zhang Tie started to recite the 7 word-sutra of strange pronunciation by only moving his tongue and throat...

...

Chapter 420: The All-Spirits Pagoda

The gesture, the sutra and the illusionary, mysterious strength gradually took effect on Zhang Tie on the 2nd day.

Of course, the manifested content was in Zhang Tie's mind which could not be sensed by others.

In Zhang Tie's mind, a whole new mysterious space swirled like a milky-way under mist of golden spiritual energy with Zhang Tie's meditation.

In Zhang Tie's mind, previously it was all empty except for that golden swirl of spiritual energy; however, under the guidance of the secret knowledge of the "Great Wildness Sutra", Zhang Tie saw a lamp in his mind. As a result, those unknown land in the darkness gradually became clearer, expanding the space in Zhang Tie's mind.

Soon after the space in his mind was expanded, his swirl of spiritual energy started to hang in the sky like a milky way while a bronze, classical pagoda was rising straight from the ground in that mysterious territory under the swirl of spiritual energy.

Each time Zhang Tie finished reciting that mysterious sutra, he would have some tadpole-like mysterious runes out of the void. Those runes then merged in that pagoda one after another. Like the materials of the pagoda, they became a part of that pagoda and enabled the pagoda to rise higher.

In such a meditation of foundation, the concept of time became vague.

Zhang Tie didn't know how long had he entered meditation. He only made a gesture and recited the 7-word true words of the great wildness repetitively; meanwhile, he was visualizing the tadpole-like mysterious runes. Like a diligent ant who kept working inexhaustibly, he was sensing the ground-breaking change in his

mind and watching the classic pagoda gradually rising higher.

Although it was a painstaking course, Zhang Tie was filled with pleasure inside.

Skill was no burden! Nobody would disguise about having one more skill, including Zhang Tie. Furthermore, it seemed to be very interesting and useful to control wild beasts. Therefore, Zhang Tie was immersed in it.

...

When he finished reciting the true words of the great wildness for 300,000 times, he felt a slight shock of that pagoda; closely after that, the pagoda stopped its growth; meanwhile, the swirling golden spiritual energy above the pagoda started to roll heavily. In a split second, Zhang Tie's mind went dark and turned bright like a lightning bolt flashed across. With a thunder-like boom in his mind, Zhang Tie quivered all over at once. After that thunder, the milky-way like swirling spiritual energy suddenly scattered into fine sparkling light-spots and fell on the pagoda. After such a bath, the pagoda looked more glamorous at once. At the same time, various eccentric decorative patterns of insects, fishes, birds and beasts started to glitter and appear on the pagoda before fading away.

The pagoda had 5 facets and 21 stories. After the special bath, each facet was manifesting various images of animals. Until the glamorous rain incarnated by his spiritual energy stopped and the pagoda recovered to its classic and chunky look. Additionally, a layer of golden light was rolling in the pagoda, making the pagoda more magnificent and mysterious.

After completing this, Zhang Tie had consumed about half of his total spiritual energy. He carefully sensed the all-spirits pagoda in his mind which represented that he started to cultivate the "Great Wildness Sutra". He felt that this pagoda was much higher than that in the book. Additionally, the body of the pagoda looked like a

firm solid; instead of an illusionary image after the completion of the foundation of the "Great Wildness Sutra" as was described in the book.

Zhang Tie didn't think too much about this difference. He only took it as a result of his strong spiritual energy. Actually, the spiritual energy that he had consumed was equal to that of dozens of people in total. How come a commoner complete such a foundation at once?

...

Sitting below the small tree, Zhang Tie opened his eyes once again. At this moment, tens of thousands of bees were circling around him and the small tree in the clock-wise manner. Zhang Tie had never seen this before.

"These bees look very happy." Zhang Tie thought at once. After that, he became stunned, "But, how do I know that?"

Scratching his head, Zhang Tie felt that the "Great Wildness Sutra" was truly amazing.

Heller walked towards Zhang Tie with gleaming eyes, "Castle Lord, have you finished the foundation?"

"Yup, what's the matter with these bees?"

"They've already been here 2 days ago. It might be related to your cultivation of the foundation!"

"I see!" Zhang Tie recalled and found it was when he formed the all-spirits pagoda in his mind. "According to the book, all-spirits pagoda and all the living beings could sense each other. It's seems true."

Zhang Tie took a look at the grasses and woods in Castle of Black Iron and felt an unknown friendliness. All the living beings became vital in Zhang Tie's eyes. Zhang Tie felt an improvement in his sensing ability once again.

Not knowing the reason, the moment Zhang Tie thought about the all-spirits pagoda, he had remembered those TV towers and antenna which were used to emit and accept electro-magnetic signals before Catastrophe. He forced a smile inside at once. Certainly, according to people's recognition, besides emitting and accepting signals, they were at least sure about one thing—the basic functions of towers was to form field energy, gather and compress energy. Pyramid was a representative.

Zhang Tie relaxed his arms as he walked downstairs from the platform. "Is there anything to eat? I'm too hungry!" Zhang Tie asked.

"I've long prepared it for you, Castle Lord!" Heller smiled...

After walking downstairs, Zhang Tie saw those bees flying away...

...

On the second morning, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron with 2 short javelins and reappeared in the crack being covered with vines on a cliff.

The sun had just risen up. Everything in the serene valley also seemed having just waken up. Pulling a vine, Zhang Tie slid off the crack nimbly. After breathing the fresh air which was mixed with moisture and the fragrance of grasses and woods, he ran westwards.

"As I have stayed in Castle of Black Iron for over 10 days, I wonder whether Dawson has left this valley or not. If not, Heh...Heh..."

Zhang Tie revealed a chilly smile as he was running.

...

2 days later, at dusk, nearby a Buckthorn wood on Grey Hill...

The sun was going to set off while Zhang Tie had picked up some

dried Buckthorn twigs and was setting a fire at a leeward place to cook his supper.

When the hind-leg flesh of iron-teeth hyena dropped its oil onto the bonfire, the fragrance of those wild potatoes had long drifted in the air. Imitating those villagers in Kurgan village, Zhang Tie crumbed the Buckthorn juice and pulp of Buckthorns and sprayed the on the flesh. He was told that by doing this, he could sweep the fishy smell.

After doing this, he picked up his short javelins to dig out some wild potatoes from the bonfire. Holding one, Zhang Tie blew the ash off its skin while changing it between two hands rapidly; meanwhile, his face was filled with the pleasure of harvest.

Plus those iron-teeth hyenas that he hunted today, the 3rd iron-teeth hyena's seven-strength fruit on the small tree might have grown ripe

Thinking of the latest fruit, of course Zhang Tie felt pretty good.

Especially then when he was sitting beside the bonfire, enjoying the night breeze and eating potatoes and roasted meat. When the night fell, he could put his arms under his head and lay on the grassland to watch stars. Everything was that pure. If not so many things to deal with, Zhang Tie really thought it was a free way to live the rest of his life.

The roasted potatoes were hot and tasted good. Zhang Tie kept blowing it as he was eating. However, Dawson appeared on the hillside over 60 m in front of him like Zhang Tie's shadow when Zhang Tie only ate half of that potato.

Watching Zhang Tie eating his roasted potato beside a bonfire, Dawson's eyes gleamed weirdly.

Zhang Tie also saw Dawson, but he only raised his head to glance at him like peering at a common iron-teeth hyena. After that, he continued to blow and eat his potato.

Seeing this, Dawson who was preparing to walk closer felt his heart pounding at once. Being suspicious, he looked around carefully. After ensuring that nobody was in the surrounding, he let out a sigh and slowly moved closer to Zhang Tie.

When Dawson was about 30 m away from Zhang Tie, he was sure that Zhang Tie could never escape this time. Therefore, he finally recovered his composure.

"Brat, I will see what else tricks can you play this time. You should be proud enough of escaping away twice from me; however, never dream about the 3rd time!" Dawson grinned hideously.

Seeing Dawson's meticulous look, Zhang Tie sniggered, "What? How come you become so timid? Why not move closer?"

...

Chapter 421: A Butcher

Dawson had a deep feeling about Zhang Tie's crafty and great fighting strength. Seeing Zhang Tie's calm look, he became worried about Zhang Tie's tricks. After ensuring that nobody else was in the surroundings, Dawson even checked the ground in front of him carefully.

"You look bolder now!" Dawson moved his eyes from the ground to Zhang Tie without even a wink. He seemed wanting to see through Zhang Tie; meanwhile, he also noticed the short javelins in Zhang Tie's hand and on his side. Dawson remembered that Zhang Tie had no such weapons when he fell down the cliff. However, he didn't pay much attention to these common weapons.

"I'm always bold!" Zhang Tie grinned while exposing his tidy teeth. Under the effect of the great strength of marrow, Zhang Tie had changed all of his teeth over these couple of days. Now, his teeth were as white as porcelain; besides, they were delicate, compact and as hard and sharp as diamonds. Furthermore, he found that he had some more teeth this time. Although he was not that boring to count his teeth before; as he was free these days, he carefully counted them and found that he had more teeth than common people.

Zhang Tie's grin was really shiny to Dawson's eyes.

"Bold people always have their dependence. I've checked the place where you stayed in the valley. I've understood what you've survived on. However, as it was only over 10 days, whatever you got from that mountain cave, you will not survive this time!" Dawson's eyes became greedy at once as he licked his lips and watched Zhang Tie like watching a fat sheep, "Give me what you've got from the mountain cave. I might keep you alive if you satisfy me!"

'He's been to the mountain cave?' Zhang Tie raved his mind. "If

he's been to the mountain cave, he must have seen the stony room. Even if he has noticed the hole on the wall in the stony room, he wouldn't know what's inside at all." Zhang Tie understood that he should never tell him about the "Great Wilderness Sutra". Otherwise, he was doomed to face endless troubles. "If I spread this news to public, those b*stards from Demon Snake Island would not be the only ones who want to kill me."

Even Zhang Tie had already taken Dawson as a dead man, he still didn't prepare to talk to him about the truth. There were so many odd secret skills in this world; Zhang Tie was not sure whether his words would be revealed or not if he told him the truth even if he killed Dawson right away.

Zhang Tie sneered as he watched Dawson like watching an idiot, "I've been to that mountain cave you mentioned. When I dropped into the pond, I was almost killed by a swarm of demon rats. There was a stony room in the mountain cave. A skeleton was sitting there. However, everything inside has been rotten, except for those cheap bottles and jars. That skeleton had been there for so many years. Are you dreaming that I got something from there? Is your head kicked by a donkey?"

"You get nothing from there?" Dawson watched Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

"No crap!"

"Hehe, it doesn't matter. I will kill you and search it out!" Dawson replied with a cruel smile as he reached his tongue out to lick his lips. He then slowly walked several steps closer to Zhang Tie. Besides keeping up the stress on Zhang Tie, he was trying to find out Zhang Tie's tricks.

"Even if Zhang Tie really got some secret knowledge from the mountain cave, he could not surpass me after only 10 days." Dawson was clear about it. "However, Zhang Tie looked too calm. As a person whom I've almost killed twice, his performance is not

reasonable." As a LV 10 strong fighter, Dawson had a sharp sense about the potential danger. However, because of the strong greedy desire, he could not stand to let Zhang Tie go. "If this brat truly has got some secret knowledge from the mountain cave, I'd better kill him right away!"

Additionally, Dawson faintly felt that Zhang Tie was becoming that calm because of that special thing he got from the mountain cave.

After thinking for a while, Dawson looked both greedy and cautious in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie knew well about what Dawson was thinking about at this moment. If it was before, he could understand Dawson's deed; he might even feel facing a great enemy; however, at this moment, Zhang Tie felt like laughing, "Isn't it hilarious for a person to be that tricky, greedy and meticulous when he's going to die?"

Zhang Tie continued to eat his roasted potato leisurely. He seemed to have not seen Dawson at all. The more Zhang Tie acted like this, the more cautious Dawson became. After moving forward another few steps, he stopped as he looked a bit suspicious.

"Do you really want to know why I'm so calm?" Zhang Tie suddenly raised his head and asked Dawson.

Hearing Zhang Tie's question, Dawson became faintly stunned as he rolled his eyes for two circles. He then suddenly understood something as he burst out laughter's, "Brat, you're really a good performer. However, it's impossible for you to scare me off with small tricks. As I've told you, if you give me what you've got from the mountain cave, I might save your life!"

"I'm wondering how did you find me in Ice and Snow Wildness. If you tell me the reason, I will tell you my reliance. How about that?" Zhang Tie smiled, "As it's too late, one of us must die before the next sunrise. Out of one human fighter's respect to another human fighter, I suggest us to satisfy the other's demand before

death. How do you feel?"

"It's okay. I'm good at tracking. Additionally, as I'm practicing a special battle Qi. After LV 9, each level I reach, one more sensory organ of mine would be strengthened. When I reached LV 10, I had my sense of smell improved. I can smell the aroma of human flesh from several miles away, especially on the open land of Ice and Snow Wilderness. As long as someone pass by some place, the aroma of their flesh would stay in the air. When I pass by, I will be able to smell it. As there were few people on Grey Hill, it's not difficult to find you! The smell of a LV 7 teenager was different from that of others..." Dawson said confidently.

"The aroma of human flesh?" Hearing Dawson's words, Zhang Tie frowned.

"Heh...heh...you've not tasted the yummy human flesh. If you eat it sometime, you will find that human flesh tastes best among all kinds of flesh. Especially the taste of fresh flesh of kids or virgins which are full of energy. By eating them, you will be fully energetic. Demons like to eat human flesh and drink human blood, because they could gain a lot of life energy and special DNAs from human flesh and blood so that they could become stronger. The fresh blood of humans who were filled with terrors have a special energy, which could not even be matched by the best drinks..." Saying this, Dawson reached his tongue out and licked his lips again.

"It's my fault. No matter what, b*stards like you are not qualified to gain any respect at all..." Zhang Tie waved his head as he stood up, "Don't you want to know what I'm relying on? I will fulfill my promise. Look...get it..."

Soon after Zhang Tie finished his words, he had raised his hand while a black shadow flew towards Dawson. Having been prepared for Zhang Tie's trick, Dawson was really startled at the sight of that black thing. Almost at the same time, he flew backwards at his greatest speed; in the course, he even constantly changed his

movements. In a wink, Dawson had already stood still 50 m away in another direction.

With a sound of "Pah..." the black thing threw out by Zhang Tie finally dropped down the ground after flying over 40 m in the air. After recovering his composure, Dawson glanced at it and was driven extremely furious. Because that black shadow which forced him back was only a roasted potato skin. Dawson realized that he was scared off by a roasted potato skin. Such a humiliation could not even be stood by commoners, not to mention a LV 10 strong fighter.

"Go die..." Dawson's face and eyes instantly turned amaranth. Glaring at Zhang Tie, Dawson's killing intent boiled immediately.

However, Zhang Tie was watching him with disdainful and sneering look like watching a lump of sh*t of iron-teeth hyena on Grey Hill, "I thought a person who dares to eat human flesh had something special. I find you are just a coward and d**chebag. At the first time, you were scared away by my words; this time, you were scared so much by merely a piece of potato skin. I really wonder how you dared to eat human flesh. Even an iron-teeth hyena is bolder than you. I think you cannot even eat a hot lump of sh*t! Peh..."

Zhang Tie spat his saliva onto ground.

"F*ck..." Dawson roared as he rushed towards Zhang Tie right away...

"Get it!" Zhang Tie raised his hand again while another black shadow flew out...

It moved as fast as a lightning bolt. It had absolutely surpassed Dawson's limits of perception and physical responsivity. When Dawson intended to move, he saw that thing penetrating through his chest. With a huge inertia and great sharpness, it opened a big hole on Dawson's body and sent Dawson, who was rushing forward, flying backwards like a kite with a broken line...

Before the sharp air-breaking sound disappeared, Zhang Tie had already sat down. Without looking at Dawson, he just found a small wooden stick from aside and dug out a potato from the middle of the ash. After that, he patted it by hands and blew off the ash. As he blew, he started to eat the steaming potato. After eating it, Zhang Tie turned over one kebab. After doing this, Zhang Tie picked himself up once again and walked towards Dawson in the distance.

After penetrating through Dawson's body, the javelin which was dripping blood was inserting into the soil over 20 m away in a declining way, 10 cm of it had entered the soil. After pulling the javelin out of the ground, Zhang Tie wiped the soil off it from a trunk aside. He then walked towards Dawson who was lying on one side of the Buckthorns.

With a bloody hole on his chest, Dawson was lying on the ground, eyes staring at the sky, mouth wide opened; meanwhile, his abdomen was moving undulantly as he was heavily breathing. His blood that flowed out of his chest had painted the ground around. Because of his great vitality as a LV 10 strong fighter, Dawson was still alive.

Zhang Tie came by. Although Dawson was lying on the ground, he could still move his dead-fish like eyes. Slightly opening his mouth, he uttered some words in a very low voice, "Wh...why?"

Zhang Tie knew what Dawson wanted to know. Last time, his long sword was dodged away by Dawson; however the difference between that long sword and this javelin on destructive force was too sharp. Dawson didn't understand how Zhang Tie could make such a great improvement in only about 10 days. It was unnecessary for Zhang Tie to hide his real fighting strength at that critical moment.

Dawson had too many questions. However, Zhang Tie didn't want to explain to him at all. As he had fulfilled his promise. He didn't cheat Dawson. When he threw out the potato skin, he had

already told the latter his trump card was throwing weapons. However, this b*stard was completely an idiot. Now that he didn't understand it, he had to die.

Seeing Dawson opening mouth and gold-capped teeth, Zhang Tie didn't say anything; instead, he stepped on Dawson's necks. Like killing a dog, under the terrifying eyes and imploration of Dawson, he ferociously poked the javelin into Dawson's mouth and nailed him onto the ground after penetrating through his after-brain.

After kicking his feet twice, Dawson finally died.

"This gift is from those whom you've eaten, you d**chebag!"

After killing Dawson, Zhang Tie started to search over his body. Although this d**chebag could not even match a lump of sh*t, it must have many good items as a LV 10 strong fighter. Zhang Tie didn't have the habit to waste. Actually, precious items and money could not be identified by good or bad. It depended on who had them. "Of course, Dawson could not do good things with them...but if they were in my hands...hmm...well, even though I would not do good things, at least I would not do bad things."

Zhang Tie didn't have any mental burden at all.

He undid that container over Dawson's waist which was made of sharp's skin. After opening it, Zhang Tie's eyes gleamed as it was that pair of terrifying metal gloves which radiated pale blue luster.

Zhang Tie's heart raced as he injected some spiritual energy into the gloves. Instantly, the information about this pair of glove appeared in his mind.

——Rune Equipment. Dark Ripper Glove. This equipment could be used as double-hand weapon or an auxiliary equipment. Wearing it, the wearer could increase his flexibility by 3% and block all the alloy blades below LV 10 and battle Qi's below great master. If the wearer torn the opponent's body with this double-hand weapon, he could have the special rune effect of this pair of

glove, activate the Qi and blood that had lost and increase his recovery speed by 18%. The length of time would depend on the abundance of the enemy's Qi and blood.

——This item was made by Kui Andi, a rune manufacturer.

Watching the pair of dark ripper glove, Zhang Tie almost burst out laughter's. "It's really suitable for me." Zhang Tie instantly put it back into the leather container before hanging it over his own waist.

After that, Zhang Tie searched a purse and a small black metal ball.

The surface of the small black metal ball was covered with sophisticated floral patterns. At the sight of the ball, Zhang Tie's back had started to ache faintly. Zhang Tie felt having seen it before. After injecting some spiritual energy into the small ball, Zhang Tie got its attributes instantly.

——Spirit-Sealing Bead. After injecting your spiritual energy into the item, you can cause a follow-up impact on the enemy's spiritual energy when you struck him, enabling him to not use his spiritual energy in a short time.

This item made Zhang Tie slightly amazed. Compared to Zhang Tie's powerful javelin, this item didn't work too much. It might be helpful sometimes. Therefore, Zhang Tie put it away directly.

The name of the rune manufacturer was not included in the information of this item. According to the traditions of rune manufacturers, as to these weapons which are used to attack people secretly, rune manufacturers would not record their names on them in case of troubles, except for some sharp weapons with exceptionally great power.

Zhang Tie opened Dawson's purse. Besides 20-30 gold coins, Zhang Tie found some gold checks which were worth 2000 gold coins. Amazingly, the gold check was issued by Golden Roc Bank.

Zhang Tie became further shocked by the power of Golden Roc Bank.

When Zhang Tie searched over his booty and was going to stand up, he heard a voice from his back.

"I've not imagined to see robbery here. It seems that no place is safe with people!" the voice was full of helplessness.

Zhang Tie turned around and saw a tall figure standing 30 m away who was watching him with a calm look.

This man was over 40 years old. Besides whiskers, he was wearing a very old, pale gray robe like an ascetic.

This man's eyes were green. At the sight of him, Zhang Tie felt looking at a green sea as his heart palpitated at once.

A huge eagle was hovering above that man's head. When Zhang Tie turned around, he saw the huge eagle was falling on the man's shoulder...

Zhang Tie knew who was he in front of him...

Chapter 422: The Wild Patron

Zhang Tie didn't know about the fighting strength of this wild patron; however, from the opponent's eyes, he didn't see any animosity; instead, Zhang Tie found the opponent was only observing him. Therefore, Zhang Tie became a bit relaxed.

"This man is Dawson, a round-table warrior from Demon Snake Island. He's a d**chebag. As I destroyed their plan in Saint Herner Island, I was chased after by. Thankfully, I killed him and was collecting booty," Watching that man, Zhang Tie added calmly, "Therefore, I'm not robbing. You'd better say I'm a cleaning riot and evil person for the safety of commoners!"

"Why do I believe you?" that man asked.

Zhang Tie shrugged, "I don't care whether you believe me or not. Based on this guy's gold-capped teeth, if you are not afraid of being revenged by Demon Snake Island, you can chop off his head and send it to Ewentra Archipelago. You might get several thousands of gold coins as a reward! Pitifully, I remember that you wild patrons from the Gaia School don't always care about the wars between human race."

After being revealed his real status, the man's eyes gleamed, "You know me?"

"When I was in Kurgan village, I heard about you from the village head Zieg..." Saying that, Zhang Tie glanced at that huge black eagle on the man's shoulder and explained calmly, "Your pet left a deep impression to the village head Zieg. When I saw you, I was not sure that was you; however, when I saw your black huge eagle, I knew that was you!"

Hearing Kurgan village and the village head Zieg, that wild patron revealed a smile as he became relaxed instantly. He then walked towards Zhang Tie, "What an interesting young man! Are you dodging away from the Demon Snake Island or picking herbal

medicines on Grey Hill?"

Hearing this question, Zhang Tie thought too much. However, in less than 0.1 second, he had got the best answer.

"Actually, I'm a patron, a devoted follower of Gaia School!" Zhang Tie repeated the reason that he told Kurgan villagers. However, this time, he considered many utilitarian goals, "Previously, I was here for the relics of Haidela Glacier Crack. If I was lucky, I could have a look at the piece of star of god; however, when I came to Eschyle City, I was told about the animal tide. Therefore, I decided to come to Grey Hill. It is the responsibility of each devoted follower of Gaia School to maintain the balance between the nature law and various species.

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, that man's calm look finally changed. He looked very amazed. He wanted to see through Zhang Tie, "Good, I've not imagined that I could meet a devoted follower of Gaia School here. Young man, do you mind me eating some of your roasted potatoes? I've smelt the aroma of your roasted potatoes in the ash!"

"Please!" Zhang Tie smiled.

...

The two people then sat beside the bonfire. When eating potatoes, that man kept testing Zhang Tie. He talked about religious doctrines and rules of the Gaia School with Zhang Tie. As Zhang Tie had heard so many times about these contents from grandma Teresa in Blackhot City, he had been so familiar with them; therefore, Zhang Tie had a lot of common topics with that man.

That man asked where did he accept these knowledge, Zhang Tie replied instantly, "In Blackhot City. This city was once a member of Andaman Alliance. Last year, after being annexed by Norman Empire, it officially became a LV 4 city of Brunswik Province under the affiliation of the governor of the North Region of Norman

Empire!"

"I know that place! It's a border area in Blackson Human Corridor. It's close to the New Crescent Prairie..." That man ate Zhang Tie's potatoes as he said casually, "Gaia School has a church in Blackhot City. People can indeed accept the doctrine of Gaia, the mother of land! I remember that a flamen was dispatched there to take charge of the church..."

"You might be wrong. The school of patron has no church in Blackhot City. There's only a narrow orphanage. The one who was in charge of it was not a flamen, but grandma Teresa. She's a nun!" Zhang Tie smiled as he tore a piece of roasted meat and threw it to that huge eagle. Seeing it, the huge eagle clutched it instantly and started to tear and engulf it, "Grandma Teresa taught me about the greatness and tolerance of Gaia!"

That man stopped what he was doing as he watched Zhang Tie throwing the piece of roasted meat at that huge eagle. He then became silent with a very strange look for a short while. Then, he turned around and glanced over Zhang Tie seriously. With brilliance in his eyes, he revealed a smile. This time, the man finally showed his sincerity, "Young man, I think we need to introduce ourselves. I'm Crell, the wild patron in Ice and Snow Wilderness dispatched by the Gaia School. Who are you?"

"I'm Peter, Peter Hamplester!" Zhang Tie replied.

Crell slightly narrowed his eyes, which reminded Zhang Tie of Dawson whom he had killed just now. Not knowing why, Zhang Tie always felt this man had hidden thoughts.

"Peter..."

"What?"

"Are you sure that you've not met any other followers of our school besides grandma Teresa?"

"Truly not, you're the 2nd patron I've ever met! How do you

know?" Zhang Tie became a bit alert as he watched Crell.

"It's simple. If you've met other followers, you've definitely have been told one thing!"

"What?"

"You're born with the heart of mother nature!" Crell explained as he pointed at his black huge eagle, "Besides mine, the eagle would not eat the food from anybody else. You are the first one who could feed it. All the people who are born with the heart of mother nature have received the bliss of Gaia. Only they are reliable to the black eagle!"

"Heart of mother nature? What's that?" Zhang Tie looked perplexed. "I only felt that the black eagle was hungry; therefore, I threw a piece of roasted meat to it. Is there anything related to the heart of mother nature?"

"Wait, how did I feel that black eagle was hungry?" when Zhang Tie thought about the all-spirits pagoda in his mind, he seemingly understood that the heart of mother nature mentioned by this wild patron was the ability to be intimate to these animals that granted by the all-spirits pagoda like how he could feel the moods of bees in Castle of Black Iron...

"Erm, can you explain about the heart of mother nature to me? It sounds cool!" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"Of course I can!" Crell smiled, "the heart of mother nature is an ability to exchange with other living beings in the mother nature. Actually, the most remarkable symbol for a member of school of patron is to have a heart of mother nature. Individuals have two ways to obtain the heart of mother nature: first, after experiencing a strict cultivation, individuals could sense the existence of Gaia and keep the link with Gaia's will; second, individuals are blessed by Gaia. The latter one are born with heart of mother nature. They can be intimate to everything in the mother nature."

"Erm, how many people are born with heart of mother nature?"

"Neither too many nor too few. Some people are born with heart of mother nature; however, they gradually lose it after being isolated from the mother nature since they are grown up. It's indeed rarely to see people at your age still have a heart of mother nature!"

Hearing this reply, Zhang Tie let out a sigh at once. He was thinking about how to be intimate with Crell; he had not imagined that the all-spirits pagoda had such a great function. It was a great surprise to be considered to have the heart of mother nature.

"Zieg told me that you were investigating the animal tide over Grey Hill. This animal tide is truly weird. Have you found something?"

"Yes, I've got the reason. Someone must be manipulating this animal tide in Ice and Snow Wilderness. These iron-teeth hyenas on Grey Hill are very irritable. This is not a normal animal tide!" Crell frowned his forehead, "At least one powerful animal controller is pushing behind it!"

"Why are they that boring? Is this beneficial to them?"

"For some people, their target is to make human race chaotic by consuming the reiki and fighting strength of humans!"

"Demons?"

"Possible!"

"How do we find the culprit?"

"If he wants to manipulate so many iron-teeth hyenas, he must always stay in a huge pack of iron-teeth hyenas. If not staying with those beasts for a long time, even the greatest animal controller could not control those wild beasts. As a result, those wild beasts would recover their consciousness and instincts and escape away. I've discovered several large packs of iron-teeth hyenas on Grey Hill; however, I didn't find that person. According to my

speculation, that person might have sensed me; therefore, he changed his location and played the cat-and-mouse game with me."

"A huge pack of iron-teeth hyenas", hearing these words, Zhang Tie's heart raced. After thinking about it with a faint frown, he revealed a virtuous expression, "If you want to find out the guy playing hide-and-seek, the power of two people is bigger than that of a man!"

"It's very dangerous. You might lose your life at any time. Have you made a decision?" Crell asked Zhang Tie with a solemn look.

"He's profaning the mother nature and harming the living beings in Ice and Snow Wilderness. I believe that each follower of Gaia School would not stand it!"

...

Chapter 423: Motive

The Grey Hill covered about tens of thousands of square kilometers. Therefore, it was not easy to find a person on it, even for a wild patron from the school of patron, not to mention that the target was a powerful animal controller.

Given the survival ability and concealment ability in the wild, animal controllers were much better than pioneers. Because animal controllers were especially about getting along with wild beasts, they were good at concealing themselves in the wild. As an old saying went, "Animal controllers could live wherever wild beasts lived. However, wild beasts might not survive where animal controllers could live."

After circling around Grey Hill for 3 days, Crell gained nothing.

For Zhang Tie, those 3 days were his happiest period that he could even laugh out when in dream.

The benefit to stay with a wild patron was displayed on the 2nd day. Previously, if Zhang Tie wanted to kill the iron-teeth hyenas, he had to depend on fortune or set some harsh traps. He could only hunt 20-odd iron-teeth hyenas a day at that time. However, staying with Crell, Zhang Tie didn't need to find those iron-teeth hyenas anymore; because Crell seemingly had a marvelous talent; he could always take Zhang Tie to the most aggressive pack of iron-teeth hyenas easily.

Crell said that these "most aggressive" iron-teeth hyenas probably had just contacted with the animal controller. After the hidden animal controller took effective measures on these iron-teeth hyenas, he drove them more aggressive and irritable. Based on this, they could narrow the animal controller's scope of activity.

Zhang Tie really admired this ability.

Zhang Tie felt being a bit selfish as he only cared about seven-

strength fruits instead of that mysterious animal controller when he was staying with Crell.

In the 3 days, he had 3 more seven-strength fruits on the small tree. Plus that seven-strength fruit of iron-teeth hyena that Zhang Tie had not eaten on the day when he met Crell, there were 4 ripe seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas on the small tree. With 3 more, Zhang Tie would have all the seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas from the small tree.

On the 3rd night, the 2 people chose to sleep in a mountain cave of the Grey Hill. When Zhang Tie came back with some firewoods, he found one more guest in the mountain cave——an iron-teeth hyena.

The iron-teeth hyena was lying at the foot of Crell and was as docile as his pet dog. Fondling its head, Crell was muttering something like holding a strange ceremony.

Zhang Tie kept silent; he just stood and watched aside. Crell was uttering that strange sound "Gulugulu" completely through the resonance between his throat and abdomen.

2 minutes later, Crell drew a strange pattern on its head before patting it slightly. After that, the iron-teeth hyena stood up. With a glance at Zhang Tie, it flashed out of the mountain cave.

"This iron-teeth hyena looked very relaxed when it left."

Crell glanced at Zhang Tie with an admiring look, "You're right. It indeed felt relaxed when it left!"

"What were you doing? Was it a ceremony? I was told that all the wild patrons were able to control animals." Zhang Tie put down the firewood and set a fire rapidly as he asked out of curiosity.

"I was comforting it and removing the invisible bound in its mind so as to set him free again. That was a skill to control animals, being similar to that of an animal controller!" After these days, Crell had trusted Zhang Tie very much. He imparted some secret

knowledge to Zhang Tie which could be barely touched by commoners in the school of patron. Remarkably, he had taken Zhang Tie as his fellow. Soon after Zhang Tie's question, he answered honestly, "Actually, all those with the heart of mother nature have the potential to be an animal controller or a wild patron!"

It was an evident hint. Of course, Zhang Tie could understand it. However, Zhang Tie pretended to consider it for a short while, "I'm interested in animal controllers, but I cannot be a clergy of the school of patron as I've got many things to concern. I cannot sacrifice myself to Gaia!"

After these days, Zhang Tie had known what it meant by becoming a clergy of school of patron. As school of patron had very strict disciplines, if being not decisive enough to sacrifice one's youth and life to Gaia, the mother of land, one better do not attempt to be an official clergy of this school. Take Crell as an example, as a wild patron, he had to live in the wild all the year. He could not get married and have babies. Since the day a person became the wild patron, he had been forbidden to eat meat. Because everything on the land was the offspring of Gaia, the mother of land. As a clergy of Gaia, of course, he could not eat the offspring's of Gaia.

After staying with Crell for 3 days, Zhang Tie ate roasted potatoes and wild vegetables every meal. To tell the truth, Zhang Tie could not stand such an ascetic-like life.

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Crell responded with a smile, "All those who chose to be official clergies of school of patron made the decisions voluntarily after sensing the existence of Gaia. The alleged rules and disciplines in your eyes are just the realest reflection of our mind. We don't consider them as a bound; conversely, we take them as the true freedom. If you want to learn animal controlling skill, I can teach you some. However, it's uneasy to master this secret skill; it's harder to make an

achievement on it. As to how much you can master, it depends on you!"

Zhang Tie became thrilled immediately, "That's great..."

"If so, my 'Great Wild Sutra' would not be discovered. Because I learn how to control animals from a wild patron. No matter how rich the opponent's imagination was, they would not imagine that I'm the only disciple of the "Great Wild Sect" on Eastern Continent."

As he thought this, Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed. "My motive is not as pure as I've told you."

"Alright, I will help Crell find the culprit as a compensation..." Zhang Tie thought.

Chapter 424: A Discovery

Swaying flames brightened the mountain cave. Crell was sitting beside the bonfire and teaching Zhang Tie how to control animals. Zhang Tie looked very concentrated, at least from his look.

"Wild beasts are as same as humans; they also have moods and thoughts. Even tiny insects have moods and thoughts. If you want to learn how to control animals, you have to ignore their bodies and attempt to exchange with them from inside!" Crell explained it to Zhang Tie patiently.

After learning the "Great Wild Sutra", Zhang Tie became more curious about how other sects control wild animals. Actually, he did not want to learn them but to disguise the "Great Wild Sutra" with them. Therefore, Zhang Tie was very interested in Crell's words.

"I don't understand. Why do we have to ignore the bodies of those wild animals?"

"Because human's consciousness is the most mysterious domain in the universe. When you focus on the bodies of the wild animals, you are actually indicating yourself that their bodies are different from yours. Namely, you think they are different from you. If so, you will stop yourself from communicating with them. Because you take the different bodies as the obstacle of the communication, your thoughts could not reach their minds!"

"It sounds reasonable and a bit fantastic." After thinking it for a short while, Zhang Tie continued, "Do all the other animal controllers communicate with wild beasts like how you did?"

"No, this is only the secret skill of school of patron. Those inferior animal controllers control wild beasts through mandatory training and drugs; better ones could hypnotize animals; some could use magics; some are proficient in animal languages; a few senior animal controllers are excel at controlling wild beasts

through blood and soul contracts. In Eastern Continent, it's said that there are more mysterious and powerful animal controlling skills!" When talking about Eastern Continent, Crell slightly narrowed his eyes with a desiring look, "I was told that the most powerful animal controllers on Eastern Continent could even inject their souls in fierce beasts, enabling those beasts to be their incarnations!"

Hearing the last sentence, Zhang Tie's heart pounded at once. He knew what Crell was talking about. Zhang Tie really had not imagined that the "Great Wild Sect" was so well-known. With a shocking look, Zhang Tie sighed with emotions, "What powerful animal controllers! Those animal controllers who could take wild beasts as their incarnations must belong to the same unrivaled sect!"

"The sect was very powerful; however, it perished!"

"Perished, how come?"

"They perished rightly because of the greatness of their animal controlling skill. As a wise old eastern saying went, 'As long as you have a priceless treasure, even if you are not guilty, you will be guilty in the eyes of others due to their greed!' Crell explained."

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie finally understood what Crell meant. This was exactly what Zhang Tie was concerned about.

"Is there anyone else who had mastered the animal controlling skill of that sect?" Zhang Tie asked.

"As that sect has perished for a long time, all those who could master the core animal controlling skill of that sect have died!"

"What a pity!" thinking of that skeleton in the mountain cave, Zhang Tie sighed with his true mood. "Destiny is interesting! Even if one had mastered such a powerful animal controlling skill, he had to be alert every time. He had to stay with a swarm of demon

rats and finally died alone in a serene mountain cave in the wild."

"Perhaps this was the god's will!" Crell also let out a sigh.

In the following hours, Crell started to teach Zhang Tie about the animal controlling skill of wild patron. According to Crell, these contents were not the most profound ones, which could only be imparted after Zhang Tie has become an official clergy of the school of patron. However, if Zhang Tie had the potential to master these contents and practiced hard, he could easily command 3-5 wild beasts or find 1 or 2 powerful wild beasts as his pets.

The animal controlling skill imparted by Crell to Zhang Tie was a strange spiritual connection with wild beasts which developed on the basis of some secret prayers of Gaia, the mother of land which the school of patron believed. Zhang Tie's "heart of mother nature" was the medium and bridge of this connection. Crell considered this connection as the inner communication with wild beasts. However, in Zhang Tie's opinion, the animal controlling skill of wild patrons was more like a cooperation with wild beasts on the equal footing; instead of simply driving them away. The secret prayers of Gaia, the mother of land were certain cooperation contracts between the two parties.

By comparison, the animal controlling skills in Chinese "Great Wild Sutra" were completely filled with a domineering sense. Communication and prayers were nothing but bullsh*t for the "Great Wild Sutra". In this Sutra, people was the center of the universe, the most honorable controller in the universe and the incarnation of the universe and the universal laws. All the living beings, insects, fishes, birds or beasts had to follow the orders of humans. It was completely their great honor to satisfy humans' will.

"How come they control wild beasts in different ways?" Zhang Tie thought about this question for a while and finally realized that he could not get the answer based on his current intelligence and

comprehension. However, now that this phenomenon existed, it was reasonable and allowed by the universal laws. After matching the school of patron and the Great Wild Sect on their animal controlling skills, Zhang Tie felt that the secret skill in the 'Great Wild Sect' was more suitable to him.

Although having the all-spirits pagoda, Zhang Tie didn't know what was the heart of mother nature at all. Additionally, to be honest, Zhang Tie was still doubting whether the consciousness, the mother of land, that surpassed everything truly existed. In this case, Zhang Tie was really afraid that his secret was revealed by Crell.

Zhang Tie didn't remember the secret prayers of Gaia that Crell taught him until midnight.

...

On the next early morning, Zhang Tie was awakened by his biological clock while Crell was still sleeping. Unless emergencies, a wild patron would not wake up until the first ray of sunlight cast onto the ground. As was regulated by the doctrine of the school of patron, everything had to be in line with natural laws.

After waking up, Zhang Tie cleansed himself up at the riverside outside the mountain cave. After that, he sat on a stone outside the mountain cave and started to recite the secret prayers of Gaia, the mother of land that he had learned yesterday. Actually, he was injecting his spiritual energy into the body of the all-spirits pagoda according to the secret laws and illusionary regulations recorded in the "Great Wild Sutra".

As Zhang Tie constantly injected his spiritual energy into the all-spirits pagoda, the 5 walls of the first storey gradually radiated colorful brilliance; meanwhile, a shiny jujube-seed shaped octahedron gradually came into being in the core of the first storey.

In the "Great Wild Sutra", this octahedron was called the Great

Wild Seal. It was the main carrier of the 5 animal controlling skills in the "Great Wild Sutra". If one wanted to apply different secret skills, one had to "print" different secret seals on the void Great Wild Seal. The function of this Great Wild Seal changed with different secret seals.

Based on Zhang Tie's current situation, he could only entered the 1st storey of the all-spirits pagoda, which could only hold 3 Great Wild Seals at most. The 3 seals on the 1st storey could only work on LV 0 animals such as common wild wolves.

When he was able to enter the 2nd storey, he would have 5 more seals; meanwhile, the upper limit of the animals that the Great Wild Seals could work on rose to LV 1. Senior Great Wild Seals could work on inferior animals; however, inferior animals could not work on senior animals.

Each level higher he reached, one more storey he would activate. As a result, he would have more Great Wild Seals and work on more senior animals. The interesting thing was that the number of Great Wild Seals in each storey of the all-spirits pagoda formed a Fibonacci sequence with 3 as the first number on the 1st storey. Zhang Tie praised how magical the creator was.

"Can I control LV 20 animals when I reach the highest storey?" Zhang Tie was startled by this question for quite a while. Even now, Zhang Tie had not seen any animal above LV 10, not to mention LV 20 animals. Zhang Tie even doubted about their existence like how he doubted Gaia, not to mention how to control them. However, according to the footnote in the "Great Wild Sutra", since the beginning of the "Great Wild Sutra", few people in the Great Wild Sect could reach the 16th storey. If they could, they must have been seniors of Great Wild Sect, not to mention to reach the 21th storey.

After succeeding the foundation, Zhang Tie could directly inject his spiritual energy into the 1st storey of the all-spirits pagoda, which indicated that he had reached LV 1 of the Great Wild Sutra.

If he wanted to enter the 2nd storey of the all-spirits pagoda, he had to recite the Great Wild true words for 50 times. Meanwhile, the number of Great Wild Seals also increased in the form of Fibonacci Sequence. The higher level he reached, the more times he needed to recite the Great Wild true words.

After learning the "Great Wild Sutra", Zhang Tie understood that there was no free lunch in the world. Even for holding a secret knowledge, without efforts, he could not be able to master it.

The only thing that made Zhang Tie reassured was that besides the first foundation that required 7 days of constant chant of the Great Wild true words, he didn't have to recite them constantly in the future. After the first foundation, he only needed to visualize and recite the true words according to the regulations of the "Great Wild Sutra" when he was free. When the accumulative number of chant times reached the corresponding standards, it would open the corresponding storey for Zhang Tie.

Besides, Zhang Tie understood that everything in the world was finite. Nothing was limitless. All the disciples of the Great Wild Sect could apply the 5 secret skills for finite times. The total number of the Great Wild Seals in all the storeys that you could activate was also the summation of the times that you could apply the 5 secret skills in your life. If you used up all the Great Wild Seals, you would not be able to apply the secret skills.

Given this point, Zhang Tie felt that the number of Great Wild Seals was similar to the number of bolts, which could not be collected after being shot out. Once you used them up, you would have nothing more unless you could enter a higher storey.

Because of this reason, how to use those Great Wild Seals after forming them in the storeys became a common problem.

The 5 sections "Summon", "Amulet", "Increase", "Drive" and "Incarnation" had their special functions respectively. They could respond to different situations and help you reach your targets. It

depended on you as which seal to use and how. If you waste one of them, you will have to regret.

As how to use the first Great Wild Seal, Zhang Tie really had considered seriously about it for a long time.

The secret skill in the section "Summon" was a bit sophisticated. Besides Great Wild Seal, it also required other conditions; additionally, Zhang Tie didn't know what kind of animal he needed to summon on Grey Hill and what he used that animal for? As it was rational to waste a Great Wild Seal for an unknown reason, Zhang Tie directly passed the Great Wild Seal in the Section "Summon".

Almost due to the same reason, Zhang Tie also passed the Great Wild seals in Sections "Amulet" and "Increase", leaving the Sections "Drive" and "Incarnation".

As Cloud Crane warned that the soul-based animal controlling skill in the Section "Incarnation" consumed a lot of Qi, blood and the essence of soul and spiritual energy of the user, even Zhang Tie wanted to try this top secret skill of the Great Wild Sect very much, he still finally gave up this whim after thinking for a while.

Then, he could only try the seal in the Section "Drive".

"Perhaps I can find a pet for myself." thinking of this, Zhang Tie formed some strange green patterns on the octahedron-shaped Great Wild Seal on the 1st storey. Those fantastic patterns were carved on the 8 sides of the Great Wild Seal like grains. At this moment, the Great Wild Seal became a shiny green item as it was floating quietly in the air on the 1st storey.

...

After forming the 1st Great Wild Seal, Zhang Tie finally saw the first ray of sunlight casting on the ground. At this moment, Crell walked out of the mountain cave. Watching Zhang Tie practicing the animal controlling skill that he had taught Zhang Tie hardly,

Crell nodded inside.

Realizing that Crell had walked out, Zhang Tie stopped pretending. Actually, he was just doing this to leave a hard-practicing impression on Crell. With this impression, Crell would not be too startled about what Zhang Tie did in the next days. With this cover, Zhang Tie could gradually make improvements in the "Great Wild Sutra" in case of being suspected.

Zhang Tie opened his eyes as he saw Crell standing in front of him. Crell was staring at west with a solemn look.

"What's up?"

"I feel a powerful brutal Qi. It's destroying the tranquility on this land. It is very similar to the Qi waves that powerful animal controllers cause when they apply the animal controlling skills!"

"He's over there?" Zhang Tie's heart slightly pounded, "Are you sure about the concrete position?"

"No, I am not!" Crell waved his head, "As a wild patron who believes in Gaia, I could only sense the general direction of that Qi. I'm only sure that he's in the west!"

Hearing Crell's explanation, Zhang Tie also looked towards the boundless hill in the west...

The first ray of sunlight in the east had not reached the land in the west yet. As a result, the west hill was still covered by the thin darkness like a monster, which was forcefully resisting the arrival of sunshine...

"We are closer to him. He won't escape this time!" Zhang Tie jumped off the stones, rushed into the mountain cave before running out with his 2 short javelins.

When Zhang Tie ran out of the mountain cave, the huge black eagle who was resting on a huge tree not far from the mountain cave instantly flapped its wings and flew towards west in advance.

"Like before, keep 10 km away from each other. If I find him, I will call you!" Zhang Tie patted the bone whistle over his neck as Crell nodded.

That bone whistle was a gift from Crell. Although Zhang Tie could not hear any sound by his ears when he blew it, he could use it to call Crell. Only Crell could hear it as it was an infrasonic whistle made by him. If Crell wanted to call Zhang Tie, he could have his black eagle lead Zhang Tie.

In the past days, they moved separately in the daytime head by head; in the evening, they gathered and talked about the plan for the next day.

In this way, they could have a greater chance in finding their target.

Zhang Tie ran towards the west hill ahead of Crell as fast as a wild wolf...

Chapter 425: The Culprit

Zhang Tie flashed across the ranges of the Grey Hill like wind. He didn't feel fatigued at all. After eating 9 seven-strength fruits of demon rats, Zhang Tie found that his explosiveness and resistance had greatly increased. As a result, he could now run almost for a day at a cruising speed of 30 km/h and still maintain a powerful fighting strength.

At this speed, Zhang Tie had run over 60 km on the undulant hill in 2 hours since he left Crell.

The huge black eagle had long disappeared in the air. It could reach a very great height like Crell's eye in the sky. Crell said that he could sense whatever the huge eagle could see through his spiritual energy, which really made Zhang Tie admirable.

With that huge eagle, Zhang Tie and Crell greatly improved their working efficiency on Grey Hill. As they've agreed to transfer message through that huge eagle, the moment Zhang Tie raised his head and watched the flying trace of the huge eagle in the air, little did he know what Crell was going to express.

The wind blowing over the Grey Hill brought some strange sound, hearing which, Zhang Tie slightly changed his moving direction. After running another 2 km, Zhang Tie encountered the first huge pack of iron-teeth hyenas today.

60-70 iron-teeth hyenas were surrounding a team of people on a hillside while over 10 dead iron-teeth hyenas were lying on the ground sparsely. Some people were covered with blood stains; some were heavily wounded. After losing their consciousness, they had to be carried by others.

Those cunning iron-teeth hyenas were circling around those people. Seeing people moving back or standing still, those iron-teeth hyenas followed up instantly. Seeing people moving forward, those iron-teeth hyenas moved back immediately. In this course,

as long as anyone became careless, some iron-teeth hyenas would instantly charge towards him and gave him a fierce bite.

In the wild, nobody could survive the "wheel war" of a huge pack of iron-teeth hyenas.

Zhang Tie didn't know how long those iron-teeth hyenas had chased after these people. At the sight of these people, Zhang Tie knew that they might be too exhausted. Many people could barely wave their weapons.

Facing this situation, Zhang Tie instantly rushed forward with 2 short javelins like seeing a feast.

The moment Zhang Tie appeared, he had seen some exterior iron-teeth hyenas pouncing towards him.

Zhang Tie only used one action with his short javelins——poke!

In a split second, 2 shadows of short javelins flashed by the air, causing an air-breaking shrill sound, "Hugh". In only 2 minutes, the 7-8 iron-teeth hyenas had already fallen down the ground with bloody holes on each of their bodies. Each hole passed through the heart. What a sharp counterattack!

Seeing what Zhang Tie had done, those people being surrounded finally became spirited as they knew that a powerhouse, their savior, had arrived.

"Brothers, hold on, someone has arrived to save us!" A head-like guy raised his arm and screamed loudly as he poked his long sword into an iron-teeth hyena's body.

Zhang Tie moved so fast that he moved close to those people in a wink. However, he didn't dash into the circle right away; instead, he just slaughtered those iron-teeth hyenas outside the circle.

Iron-teeth Hyenas were surrounding those people while Zhang Tie was surrounding around those iron-teeth hyenas.

In a blink of eye, over 10 iron-teeth hyenas had fallen down the

ground as their hearts were poked through by Zhang Tie with his sharp, short javelins.

Iron-teeth hyenas were smart. Realizing that Zhang Tie's fighting strength was irresistible, they escaped in all directions at once. Zhang Tie chased after them for a few steps and killed some more before stopping and walking towards those people.

In a couple of minutes, Zhang Tie had made another iron-teeth hyena half-ripe. Therefore, he felt pretty good. Actually, Zhang Tie had slowed his speed just now. Considering the benefit of the seven-strength fruit of the king demon rat and that there were only 3 seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth fruits available, Zhang Tie wanted to wait for the seven-strength fruit of the king iron-teeth hyena. If possible, a seven-strength fruit of the king iron-teeth hyena was more beneficial than some seven-strength fruits of common iron-teeth hyenas.

This was also one reason for him to stay with Crell. If he wanted to find the king iron-teeth hyena, he had to depend on fortune; however, if he stayed with a wild patron, he would have a greater chance to meet a king iron-teeth hyena.

The wild patron wanted to find the culprit of the animal tide who could control so many iron-teeth hyenas; according to the knowledge about animal controller that Zhang Tie had learned from the "Great Wild Sutra", if there was a king among the iron-teeth hyenas, that king iron-teeth hyena was probably staying with that animal controller.

After realizing that he could solve many problems if he stayed with Crell, Zhang Tie became utilitarian. Of course, although he was utilitarian, his deeds were also useful to counter the culprits. As for those culprits who aroused troubles everywhere at the arrival of the 3rd holy war, Zhang Tie always hated them deeply, not to mention that those culprits might be related to demons.

Therefore, strictly, although Zhang Tie was selfish to stay with

Crell, he was also doing this for the world to a certain degree. Zhang Tie had not felt how great he was; after all, based on his status and his relationship with grandma Teresa, he was not qualified to be a devoted follower of the Patron School of Gaia. He was half a devoted follower at most.

Being covered with the blood of the hearts of iron-teeth hyenas, Zhang Tie walked towards those people who were attacked just now. Watching the blood dripping off Zhang Tie's short javelins, those people became awful and nervous.

There were 12-13 people in total. Based on Zhang Tie's fighting strength, he could easily kill them all. As it was in the wild, they had to be meticulous about Zhang Tie.

"Hoy!" Before Zhang Tie moved closer, one of them had shouted towards Zhang Tie.

Hearing this strange name, Zhang Tie became slightly stunned. He then glanced over those people carefully. This time, he found some familiar, fatigued looks although being covered with dust and blood stains. What a coincidence! They were low-level soldiers of Adelais Business Group.

Hearing this sound, some became perplexed; some changed their faces greatly. They were not watching Zhang Tie with amazing, surprising or shocking looks; instead, they looked fearsome. Although they had slightly loosened their grips, they instantly became nervous once again as they held fast their weapons like how they were facing those iron-teeth hyenas.

Seeing their response, Zhang Tie understood it right away. His public status as a criminal might have been exposed by Dawson or that barber in Eschyle City soon after he left Adelais Business Group. But Zhang Tie didn't care about that.

In order to ease off their tension, Zhang Tie stood still 10 steps away from them. He inserted his short javelins into the ground and held them by hands.

"I think we should call you Peter Hamplester!" When the others were in a panic, a 60 years old man with a wound on his leg walked out of the crowd in clothes which were remarkably different from that of other soldiers. He took off his luggage from his back and intended to give it to Zhang Tie by 2 hands, "Thanks for your help, you've saved our lives. Here's our compensation. There are more than 700 gold coins inside and some previous herbal medicines which are worth about 2000 gold coins! Our Adelais Business Group always appreciate our helpers! Of course, we will not forgive our enemies!"

Zhang Tie responded with a smile. What an interesting old man! Given from his neutral attitude, Zhang Tie knew that he was an influential figure in Adelais Business Group, "What's your name? What's your position in Adelais Business Group?"

"I'm Marney, the charger of Adelais Business Group's herbal medicine collection center on Grey Hill!"

"When I was in Eschyle City, I truly killed a person. But he was a lackey from Demon Snake Island. As I've bred enmity with people from Demon Snake Island, I have been traced by them the moment I disembarked. That b*stard wanted to kill me; therefore, I killed him. Thanks to your business group, I exited the Eschyle City in case of many troubles. We're squared up!" Zhang Tie smiled, "Put away your luggage. I'm neither a honorable person nor a bandit!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, although they didn't know whether Zhang Tie was telling the truth, they became relaxed evidently. They knew that if Peter was going to kill them, none of them could survive the next sunrise, even if Adelais Business Group would revenge for their death. Given Peter's fighting strength, they knew that he was at least LV 8 or LV 9. By contrast, they were only LV 2-LV 5. Additionally, they were too fatigued and covered with wounds. Zhang Tie could easily kill them all like slaughtering animals.

Marney let out a sigh evidently as he carried his luggage once

again, "For that you are wanted, we cannot help you; but we can relate your words to the police station in Eschyle City!"

"Thanks!" Zhang Tie shrugged. As long as he left Eschyle City, he would not care about that he was wanted or not, "Why are you here? Adelais Business Group should not dispatch the director of their herbal medicine collection center on Grey Hill to pick up herbal medicines here!"

"We escaped from our base on the lakeside of Huyрто Lake!" Marney sighed.

"You escaped from the Maple Leaf Castle on the lake side off Huyрто Lake?" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes with a surprising look, "Can you tell me why?"

"It's the animal tide, a powerful animal tide!" Marney's face turned pale once again while the others also looked panic, "At the beginning, we had over 40 people; but now, we are only left with these!"

"You mean iron-teeth hyenas could destroy your base?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

Marney let out a long sigh...

...

In the next few minutes, Zhang Tie figured out what happened.

Huyрто Lake was in deep Grey Hill. In order to collect the precious herbal medicines and other specialties on Grey Hill, some chambers of commerce and business groups in Eschyle City founded Maple Leaf Castle there as their common material warehouse and personnel transfer center.

The Maple Leaf Castle was safe in the previous animal tides. However, the Maple Leaf Castle was broke in by the animals this time.

Marney and Adelais Business Group didn't know why. When they

were sleeping soundly several hours before dawn, their Maple Leaf Castle had been covered by iron-teeth hyenas. They were awakened by those people's shrill cries in the base. Being flurried, they fought those wild beasts right away.

Because there were too many iron-teeth hyenas, the Maple Leaf Castle was lost. Therefore, they chose to break out. As a result, over half of the 40-odd people had been killed on the way here. If not Zhang Tie, they might also be eaten soon by those iron-teeth hyenas.

"Aren't there any senior fighters in Maple Leaf Castle? With a couple of senior fighters, even a wooden camp could not be broken by those iron-teeth hyenas!" Zhang Tie replied.

"In order to deal with the animal tide on Grey Hill, Eschyle City has dispatched a small team of bear-killing fighters to sweep those iron-teeth hyenas on the Grey Hill. Each chamber of commerce had dispatched some fighters above LV 6 in the base. However, when the animal tide broke out, these people had disappeared. Even those who could fight with their weapons, they became very flurried. In a wink, they had been covered by those iron-teeth hyenas!"

Hearing this reply, Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes at once, "Where's the Maple Leaf Castle?"

"It's 50 km away. There's a lake over there, which is easily identified!" Marney said as he pointed at northwest.

"You'd better leave here as fast as possible. Walk towards east from here. As I've cleaned the iron-teeth hyenas on my way here, there is only few left. As to whether you can return to Eschyle City, it depends on you!" After saying this, Zhang Tie drew his short javelins out of the ground and dashed towards northwest. In a wink, he had been 100 m away.

Seeing Zhang Tie disappearing, the remaining people of Adelais Business Group exchanged glances with each other and hurriedly

escaped towards east.

After running dozens of minutes, Zhang Tie saw some columns of heavy smoke in the far. The huge eagle was hovering above there, which looked like a black spot in the far...

Zhang Tie also noticed Crell who was leaping between twigs like a leopard at a very amazing speed. Needless to say Zhang Tie also rushed over there.

...

10 minutes later, Zhang Tie and Crell almost arrived at Maple Leaf Castle at the same time.

The Maple Leaf Castle was a camp circled by 3-m high wooden barriers. All the rooms inside were made of wood. They found the ground of the castle was covered with incomplete human bodies and many times more dead iron-teeth hyenas. Besides, those rooms were burning ferociously.

Nobody was alive in Maple Leaf Castle. Numerous iron-teeth hyenas were still wandering across the castle, tearing apart those dead human bodies and eating them. At the sight of Zhang Tie and Crell, many iron-teeth hyenas slowly surrounded them.

"In the name of Gaia, the mother of land, please drive away all the wild beasts on the wildness!" Crell roared as his hair moved slightly; meanwhile, a 30-cm long deadwood-like eccentric walking stick slid into his hand from his sleeve. He inserted that small walking stick into the ground at once. In a split second, the great pack of iron-teeth hyenas which were going to surround them with red eyes shrieked miserably like flurried rabbits and escaped with lowering tails. As a result, all the iron-teeth hyenas inside the base were driven away.

Crell's deed really broadened Zhang Tie's vision. This method was very similar to that of the Section "Amulet" in the "Great Wild Sutra". If Zhang Tie wanted to drive away these LV 1 iron-teeth

hyenas, he should at least enter the 2nd storey of the "Great Wild Sutra". As Zhang Tie didn't reach this level, he could not compare which secret animal controlling skill was sharper. Zhang Tie thought that the "Great Wild Sutra" would take him less time; however the effective range of the Section "Amulet" on the 2nd storey was not as large as that of Crell.

Seeing so many iron-teeth hyenas, Zhang Tie really wanted to slaughter them all.

They then went inside the Maple Leaf Castle.

Soon after they entered, Zhang Tie had seen a broken defense. He walked over there and took a careful look. After that, he made a conclusion, the defense was broke in by people forcefully.

Crell also noticed that as his eyes turned gloomy, "I smell the odor of that animal controller!"

...

Chapter 426: Prodding the Culprit

Although Zhang Tie had not sensed the existence of the animal controller like Crell but he sensed the weirdness in the Maple Leaf Castle.

Iron-teeth hyenas were only LV 1 living beings. They could never break in a wild base which was guarded by powerhouses above LV 6 no matter how many there were. According to Marney, someone was behind this attack.

Zhang Tie looked around and found the whole Maple Leaf Castle was like a slaughterhouse. It was smokey and covered with dead bodies. With a casual glance, Zhang Tie had found more than 200 victims. Those human bodies were heavily gnawed by iron-teeth hyenas whose faces could not even be identified. If someone came to make the investigation, they could never reach any conclusion from the scene.

All the dead bodies were incomplete which destroyed the evidence of artificial factors. Even a LV 6 fighter could barely survive the attack of thousands of iron-teeth hyenas.

After a couple of days, this event would be a puzzle in this animal tide before gradually fading away from others' memories.

Zhang Tie and Crell circled around the Maple Leaf Castle meticulously and didn't find any evidence.

They finally came to the open center of the base where airships could take off and touch down. This was the last safe place for those people in the base. Finally, nobody survived here after a bloody battle with those iron-teeth hyenas, making this place the most ferocious one.

Humans' fresh blood mixed with that of iron-teeth hyenas on that place, forming numerous dark-red blood ponds which looked like puddles on the ground after heavy rains. Zhang Tie had to

dodge away from the fresh blood in each step.

Arriving at this place, Crell closed his eyes once again. After a short while, he opened his eyes and glanced at Zhang Tie, "That person must be in the neighborhood. He must be close to many iron-teeth hyenas. However, I cannot lock his precise position!"

Zhang Tie looked around and found that a lot of iron-teeth hyenas were still wandering among the grasses and woods within 1 square kilometers. Crell just drove those iron-teeth hyenas out of Maple Leaf Castle. He didn't force them far away. If that person was hiding in this area, he could be barely identified even if he was very close to Zhang Tie and Crell.

"How can we force him out?" Zhang Tie asked.

"It's very difficult. That person is a powerhouse. Unless he wants to show himself up, we could hardly force him out. I know that he's observing us!" Crell frowned his forehead.

"Can he hear our words?" Zhang Tie rolled his eyes before asking.

"He could if we talk louder!"

"Now that he's seen us, why don't he escape?"

"What do you mean?" Crell stared at Zhang Tie.

"I mean only when he's very confident that he could not escape at the sight of us. However, confident ones are always proud and have strong self-esteem, especially those who always hide in the darkness. As they could not do anything in the public, they care more about their self-respect! If we want to force such a person out, we might not have to use great secret skills!"

When Zhang Tie explained, he was thinking about those rules which were taught by Donder. Usually, the darker the working environment was, the more they care about their faces and honors. Take those intelligence agents of countries as an example, in their circle, they cared about their faces and honors more than armies. "Eye for eye" was almost their motto. Sometimes, they might spend

dozens of years in doing a very boring thing in commoners' eyes. Conversely, those politicians who always showed themselves up under spotlights on high platforms didn't have their moral bottom-lines at all. Although they were always at the most honorable and remarkable positions, they had the least sense of honor. Donder said this was a funny psychological phenomenon.

"If not use great secret skills, how can we force him out?" Crell asked out of curiosity.

"Someone told me that the greatest secret skill in the world was language. We can reach people's heart directly by language. We can turn language into sharp blades and lightning bolts. Nothing else could have such a great strength!" Zhang Tie revealed a confident smile. Seeing a high wooden platform with a pulley crane on the empty land, Zhang Tie walked onto it.

Crell faintly narrowed his eyes as he didn't understand what Zhang Tie was going to do.

After arriving at the high platform, Zhang Tie took a deep breath. He then recalled the obscene smile of Donder and thought what harsh and vicious words would Donder say if he was here; after that, he recalled how those vixens swore 3 hours for a copper coin or a green leaf in the vegetable market of Blackhot City. After warming up, he entered the right state right now.

"You b*stard in the darkness, you slow-witted idiot..." the moment Zhang Tie shouted, Crell was startled at once. Crell thought that Zhang Tie would have some special performance; however, it was really out of his imagination that Zhang Tie started by swearing.

"...Get out, you b*stard. This father is swearing you; this father knows that you could hear me. Do you feel that you're senior by hiding in the darkness to manipulate a pack of iron-teeth hyenas to attack others. Do you have a sense of achievement by doing that? F*ck you. Even iron-teeth hyenas dare to take a walk outside, you

the motherf*cker cannot even match an iron-teeth hyena. You cannot even match iron-teeth hyena's sh*t. Even their sh*t dare to expose themselves under the sunshine, you young worm in the sh*t of iron-teeth hyena!"

"I know b*stards like you who lack love in the youth and calcium in growth are always self-abased. I really wonder whether you chose to be an animal controller because you found that you lack confidence. Whether do you have a bit superiority feeling only by staying with beasts? In order to satisfy your humble vanity. If so, I'm really shameful about you for your mom. If I was your father, I would have shot you on the wall; instead of shooting you in the close-stool..."

Zhang Tie became more and more excited. He directly inserted the 2 short javelins onto the wooden poles on his side and supported his waist with his hands. Even Crell became dumbfounded about that.

"I know you can see me. I'm swearing you. So what? Dare you come out and bit off my ass..." Zhang Tie raised his butt and forcefully patted it by hands like how the rogues at the bottom of the society provoked, "Dare you show your head, this father will fart you away. Have you seen the uncle on my side? He could foist your head into your asshole. Do you know whom this uncle is? You coward worm. Listen, this uncle is Crell, the famous wild patron of school of patron. He's called wild shield in the school of patron and the killer of all the animal controllers. How about that? Are you scared? Crell can drown you b*stard with only one mouth of saliva. Crell can casually teach an idiot a couple of days, then you will be scared away like a rat. You must have been scared to be idiot by Crell's talent, ha...ha..."

Watching Zhang Tie's exaggeratedly laughing look and the nicknames such as "wild shield" and "the killer of all the animal controllers" that Zhang Tie fabricated, standing on one side, Crell faintly swept off his cold sweat as he felt shameful about that.

"If you are afraid of that and insist on hiding there, it's okay. However, in order to avoid this father from being disgusted about your obscene look, you'd better dodge far away and kowtow towards this father loudly for 3 times. As this father has a sharp 6th sense, as long as I sense your piety, I will not find you trouble anymore. Piss away after kowtowing. No need to show up yourself. As Crell ate some of my roasted wild potatoes these days, he owes me; therefore, for the potatoes' sake, I will let Crell save your life. As long as you roll out of the Ice and Snow Wilderness, he will not chase after you anymore. For the sake of your poor childhood, I will keep you alive. From then on, you need to praise me. I count 3, 2 and 1, you kowtow 3 times and piss off, 3...2...1, well, Crell, I've sensed his sincerity. Let's go. I've already wasted my time several days on Grey Hill for such a trivial figure. I have to go to Haidela Glacier Crack to see the star of god. I don't want to waste time here anymore. If this d**chebag is not docile, you can pat him to death like how you treat a fly. Then we're squared away!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie's heart raced while Crell changed his look at the same time...

In a split second, Zhang Tie had charged down from that platform like a demon rat being burned by hot water. When Zhang Tie was still in the air, he had heard the cracking sound of the high wooden platform. The broken wood dregs flew everywhere, breaking Zhang Tie's coat.

After that, Zhang Tie heard a air-breaking sound.

Sonic boom!

After landing on the ground, Zhang Tie looked at a hillside in the north at the same time with Crell. A figure with full killing intent was slowly standing up from a low bush over 600 m away while glaring at Zhang Tie with his bloody eyes...

...

Chapter 427: The Collision

That person and Zhang Tie glared at each other. Precisely, Zhang Tie was glaring at an iron-teeth hyena on that man's side who was taller and ferocious than common iron-teeth hyenas.

Being different from common iron-teeth hyenas, that iron-teeth hyena on that man's side was black all over. Its fur was like black silks and satin. Since that iron-teeth hyena appeared on that man's side, all the other iron-teeth hyenas within dozens of meters had ran away . Some were even quivering all over.

That black iron-teeth hyena then raised his head and roared. In a split second, all the other iron-teeth hyenas in the surroundings became restless.

Crell's face turned gloomy at once.

"Is that the king iron-teeth hyena?" Zhang Tie asked Crell in a low voice.

"Yes!" Crell nodded as he warned Zhang Tie, "This man is very powerful, take care!"

"I know!" Zhang Tie smiled as he gazed at that special iron-teeth hyena with his narrowing eyes.

At this moment, Zhang Tie really appreciated Donder. When he worked as an apprentice in Donder's grocery store, he really learnt a lot from Donder. Those knowledge could always have a special effect at the critical moment, such as helping Zhang Tie to identify that b*stard of Zhen Clan in Dragon Cave.

However, the reality was always out of one's imagination. Soon after Zhang Tie became excited about his plan, his dream had been killed ruthlessly.

"You both have to die today!" Although being hundreds of meters away, that man's icy and sharp voice still drifted into the ears of Zhang Tie and Crell, "I'd like to see how powerful the wild patron's

animal controlling skill is..."

After saying this, that man had already broken the head of that king iron-teeth hyena by his hand like poking into a piece of bean curd.

Almost at the same time, all the iron-teeth hyenas over the hill started to wail as they rushed towards that man like mad dogs...

Even Zhang Tie almost started to wail. "F*ck!" Zhang Tie had never imagined that b*stard would kill that king iron-teeth hyena in front of him.

"D**chebag! Do you know how much have you made me lose? This father made so many efforts for that seven-strength fruit of king iron-teeth hyena!"

In a wink, that king iron-teeth hyena deflated like a balloon. Meanwhile, its satin-like fur turned dark and became a piece of rag.

It seemed that the king iron-teeth hyena not only lost his life, but also his vitality.

That man drew his hand out of its head. At this moment, a vital ball-sized fresh bloody item was rotating in his hand. That man instantly threw the bloody ball into the air. When Zhang Tie was still puzzled about that, he saw that bloody ball exploding in the air and flowing towards all directions in the form of blood drops. They fell on the heads of those iron-teeth hyenas. Before those blood drops fell down, those iron-teeth hyenas had already jumped in the air and caught them.

Although Zhang Tie didn't know the effect of this skill, given the amazing scene, he knew it was great.

Right then, thousands of iron-teeth hyenas started to roar in the wild. In a few breaths, the eyes of those iron-teeth hyenas being sprayed by the blood or having engulfed the blood drops turned red; meanwhile, they exposed their buckteeth. Flowing out

mucilage from their mouth corners, they turned around and stared at Zhang Tie and Crell who were standing in the Maple Leaf Castle...

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt that Crell and him were like 2 performers on the arena of a super large theater. Those iron-teeth hyenas who were staring at him and Crell were audience.

There were really too many iron-teeth hyenas. Even Zhang Tie felt goosebumps all over this time. Although dozens of iron-teeth hyenas was a dish for him, hundreds of iron-teeth hyenas was a feast; thousands of iron-teeth hyenas became tricky...

"Dark Blood Sacrifice!" seeing this, even Crell changed his face. He turned over his head and told Zhang Tie, "I will deal with that man, you pay attention to those iron-teeth hyenas. Attention! Those iron-teeth hyenas have improved their fighting strength greatly. They might be close to LV 2 now. It's very difficult to deal with them!"

"Will they break your protective circle that you've released just now?"

"They will, they are totally different from before!"

After replying to Zhang Tie, Crell rapidly drew some patterns on his body with that short, wooden walking stick. Meanwhile, he read sutras. In a wink, Zhang Tie felt that the thing being similar to battle Qi over Crell brightening up. In the brilliance, a hazy figure of a sacred female was embracing Crell.

When the brilliance disappeared, Crell seemed being different than before.

"What's this?"

"It's the land mother's guardianship. With its bliss, those iron-teeth hyenas will not attack me anymore!"

"That's great. I want one too!" Zhang Tie became so excited as he finally let out a deep sigh inside.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Crell glanced at Zhang Tie with a calm look, "I'm sorry, I could only apply this skill on myself!"

Zhang Tie...

Hearing Crell's reply, Zhang Tie glanced over the thousands of iron-teeth hyenas with greatly increasing strength who wanted to tear him into pieces, Zhang Tie rapidly took out that pair of dark tore gloves from the leather bag at his waist and grabbed the two short javelins before heading for a relatively complete architectural complex in the Maple Leaf Castle.

At this moment, those iron-teeth hyenas had been rushing towards him from all directions like wild ox's. In a wink, the front ones had already jumped over the wooden defense of the Maple Leaf Castle. Some iron-teeth hyenas showed a great potential in jumping ability. After jumping over the defense, they caught the exterior wall with their sharp claws. They then thrust against the wall and jumped over it, even faster than cats. Closely after that, they rushed into the base...

When the iron-teeth hyenas rushed over, Crell also dashed towards that man like a leopard.

That man remained still on the hillside in the far.

When the iron-teeth hyenas were close to Crell, they crashed onto land mother's guardianship like how grey sea waves crashed on rocks. As a result, they all changed their directions when they were several meters away from Crell. They didn't attack Crell or prevent Crell from dashing towards that man. At the sight of this scene, that man in the far slightly changed his face like how Crell changed his look at the sight of the dark blood sacrifice. That man knew that he was facing a powerful enemy.

The collisions broke out almost at the same time, one in Maple Leaf Castle, the other on the hillside. They were over 500 m away from each other.

The moment Crell collided with that man, he had swiftly moved together with that man at a speed which was barely caught by human eyes. In a wink, consecutive loud explosions sounded on that hillside...

If possible, Zhang Tie also wanted to rush towards that man; however, if he left Maple Leaf Castle, he had to face at least two times more iron-teeth hyenas at the same time. In that case, even a LV 10 would be killed under so many iron-teeth hyenas' endless attack, not to mention Zhang Tie.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't want to be killed by those iron-teeth hyenas. He knew it was not worthwhile to be that risky.

Soon, the fastest iron-teeth hyenas had already come in front of Zhang Tie. Without any hesitation, they pounced at Zhang Tie at the same time.

After fighting iron-teeth hyenas for a few days, Zhang Tie immediately realized that these hyenas were moving at least 30% faster than those he met before. Besides, these hyenas were ferocious and more fearless.

"Damn it! That b*stard killed your boss, why do you come for me?" Zhang Tie swore loudly as he launched a counterattack.

Zhang Tie poked his short javelins and penetrated through some iron-teeth hyenas' hearts at once, sending them flying back in the air. Zhang Tie felt that these iron-teeth hyenas' collision forces were at least 50% greater than that he met before.

Thankfully, wearing the dark tore gloves, Zhang Tie felt that he could wave and stab short spears faster than before. Therefore, Zhang Tie slightly became reassured.

The following iron-teeth hyenas charged at Zhang Tie from all directions. Even Zhang Tie was standing against a cabin, he was still attacked by the iron-teeth hyenas from the window behind or from the roof of the cabin.

At this moment, Zhang Tie really felt being surrounded by thousands of dare-to-die corps members. He could only run back and forth between those cabins. Sometimes, he directly jumped onto the roofs of the cabins to counterattack those iron-teeth hyenas...

Chapter 428: Being Shocked Three Times

Zhang Tie didn't know how many iron-teeth hyenas had he killed.

All the iron-teeth hyenas were very crazy. Additionally, their fighting strength had been greatly increased. Although a few LV 2 living beings could not pose any threat to Zhang Tie, but this time too many iron-teeth hyenas were surrounding him. Zhang Tie felt that he could not kill them all.

Each second, at least 3 iron-teeth hyenas were attacking him. Not until those dead iron-teeth hyenas piled up in front of him did Zhang Tie change his place. If not, those iron-teeth hyenas would step on their partners' dead bodies and charge at Zhang Tie; in that case, it would be more tricky.

Zhang Tie didn't know how the battle was going between Crell and that culprit. Being hundreds of meters away, Zhang Tie could only hear the consecutive loud explosions and collisions of their battle Qi's.

Sparing a half second, Zhang Tie peered at where they were fighting, which really shocked him.

On that hillside, Zhang Tie saw two high battle-Qi totems colliding with each other. One battle Qi was green, the other was black. Each of them were over 20 m in height. The two totems were rolling and biting in the shape of two huge crocodiles. Compared to the totem of a fighter below LV 9, a LV 10 strong fighter's battle-Qi totem was not only a simple light and shadow effect formed by the battle Qi; instead, it was more like a spiritual creature which reflected the releaser's will and thought.

This was Zhang Tie's first time to see the real battle fire made by LV 10 powerhouses, which really shocked him.

The battle-Qi totem of LV 10 powerhouses was demon crocodile,

a powerful living being in the deep earth. Zhang Tie heard about it before; however, he had not seen demon crocodiles. This time, he finally knew how demon crocodiles looked. The largest difference between demon crocodile and common crocodile was that demon crocodile had a row of erecting sharp-sword like dorsal fins from spine to tail.

With a glance, Zhang Tie had already known the real fighting strength of Crell and that person.

Their fighting strength surpassed that of both Dawson and that b*stard of Zhen Clan who chased after Zhang Tie in Dragon Cave.

Zhang Tie knew that Dawson and that Zhen b*stard was respectively 1 star and 2 stars of LV 10 fighter. However, Zhang Tie estimated that Crell almost reached 4 stars or 5 stars.

Starting from LV 10, each level higher would require lighting more surging points. Therefore, from LV 10, each level higher was further divided into more ranks. According to the Fibonacci Sequence, one needed to light another 34 surging points before rising from LV 10 to LV 11 which required to light 89 surging points in total. This was as difficult as rising from LV 1 to LV 9. 34 was a number of Fibonacci Sequence—1,5,8,13,21,34; therefore, LV 10 was further divided into 5 ranks. Even fighting master, great fighting master, fighting general, fighting demon and fighting spirit were also divided into 5 stars respectively.'

Zhang Tie learned this from Crell. Commoners didn't know about it at all. Similarly, in Blackhot City, even teachers didn't know what was going on above LV 10; in Hidden Dragon Palace, only those above LV 8 were qualified to inquire about this.

Previously, when in Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie didn't know why this knowledge about LV 10 was forbidden to know as it was not a secret knowledge. Now, he understood it.

Zhang Tie estimated that the main reason was that Hidden Dragon Palace was afraid of those young men getting disappointed

when they knew this knowledge. For many people, if they knew that what they did before LV 9 in the past 10-20 years was as difficult as improving one level higher in the future, they would be heavily struck. Not each young people could bear such a great stress on the way of cultivation.

...

In a ceaselessly fierce fight with iron-teeth hyenas, even a bit negligence or a slow movement or a smaller strength would leave a chance for an iron-teeth hyena to move closer. As a result, the person would be in a miserable situation as those iron-teeth hyenas would charge at him like a surging tide at once, leaving him no time to regret.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie had great physique and spiritual energy. After more than 10 minutes of fight, Zhang Tie still responded precisely and fiercely like machines. One blow, one iron-teeth hyena; sparing no chance for those iron-teeth hyenas to counterattack at all.

After losing the desire for the seven-strength fruit of king iron-teeth hyena, Zhang Tie launched a counterattack immediately.

Zhang Tie kept running with those buildings and the special terrain as his cover. He estimated that he had killed at least 300 iron-teeth hyenas. When he moved behind a cabin's wall and caught sight of a bloody, steel shield in the shape of diamond, Zhang Tie's eyes gleamed.

After stabbing 2 more iron-teeth hyenas and sending them flying back in the air with his short javelins, Zhang Tie rushed in front of that shield. After waving his short javelins to kill another 2 iron-teeth hyenas in a wink, Zhang Tie threw out his left short javelin which penetrated through 4 iron-teeth hyenas in front of him; meanwhile, he raised that shield of 70-80 kgs with his foot and grabbed it in his left hand at once.

Given its look, that shield was suitable to tall fighters. Holding it,

Zhang Tie looked short. However, he was very happy. After holding the shield, he burst out laughter's as he dragged it and drew a curve in the air, blocking away a group of iron-teeth hyenas and sending them flying back in the air at the same time.

Zhang Tie had a talent of using shield. When in Hidden Dragon Palace, he passed his shield defense class firstly. Plus his terrifying strength, holding that shield, Zhang Tie felt having one powerful helper on his side immediately.

Waving the shield several times, Zhang Tie broke the heads and bones of those iron-teeth hyenas and sent them flying back in the air. A shield in hand, Zhang Tie was like a steel tortoise. Although those iron-teeth hyenas were fierce, they could not break in Zhang Tie's defense line.

Hearing the boom-sound of the battle Qi's in the far, Zhang Tie shouted loudly. Thrusting his feet against the ground, he started to rush towards a great, dense pack of iron-teeth hyenas with his shield. Like an armored vehicle entering on the sidewalk at the highest speed, Zhang Tie knocked down all the iron-teeth hyenas in front of him like how a fairy strewed flowers.

The iron-teeth hyenas were as thick as 100 m. However, with the shield, Zhang Tie still opened a bloody path from those iron-teeth hyenas like a chisel.

Thousands of iron-teeth hyenas chased after Zhang Tie in a flurried way.

Zhang Tie rushed towards that place where Crell was fighting that guy.

Although it was 500-600 m away, it only took Zhang Tie a few seconds to break in the fight circle of 200 m.

Now, Zhang Tie could see that guy clearly. Both that guy and Crell had not imagined that Zhang Tie could break out the siege of so many iron-teeth hyenas.

When two well-matched powerhouses fought each other, the result always lay in a few key seconds.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, that guy was slightly shocked. That guy realized that if the opponent had one helper, he would be in danger.

Therefore, when that guy was about 200 away from Zhang Tie, he did the same thing as Zhang Tie——Sonic boom!

Zhang Tie threw out his right short javelin. After dodging away from Crell's battle-Qi boom, that guy threw out an iron-snake shaped secret weapon from his waist.

Facing a LV 10 powerhouse who was much greater than Dawson in this distance, Zhang Tie was not sure whether his short javelin could work or not. However, he was sure that Crell would take advantage of this chance to attack that guy.

The 2 sonic booms arrived in front of the opponent at the same time...

That guy barely dodged away from Zhang Tie's javelin...

At the same time, Zhang Tie's shield was broken into pieces...

Thankfully, Crell moved closer to that guy by this chance...

Zhang Tie just used that shield to attract the opponent's attention. When the shield was broken into pieces, Zhang Tie rushed out from the shield safe and sound...

Realizing that he didn't strike Zhang Tie, that guy became shocked once again. In a flurried way, he was boomed by Crell and was sent flying back in the direction where Zhang Tie rushed towards him, sprouting a mouthful of fresh blood.

Although it was still 200 m away, Zhang Tie had arrived there as short as a few winks.

Although that guy was not injured, he still launched a battle-Qi boom towards Zhang Tie in the air, intending to kill Zhang Tie

first.

Facing the black battle-Qi boom, Zhang Tie shouted loudly as he caught it with Heavens-shocking Punch, a fierce gesture in iron-blood fist. After that, he sped up towards that man in a split second once again...

That guy was shocked for the 3rd time. Pitifully, he cannot dodge away this time as he was in the air. When Zhang Tie passed him in the air, he released a sword Qi from his waist 5 m away, which flashed by that guy's neck...

Chapter 429: The Sacred Beast's Bone

As for fight between powerhouses, a trivial mistake would always cause a severe outcome...

Since Zhang Tie rushed out of the Maple Leaf Castle, he had caused that guy miss his attacks 4 times in an extremely short period.

Firstly, Zhang Tie used his shield to attract the opponent's sonic boom; it was out of that guy's imagination that Zhang Tie could hide himself behind the shield and make his sonic boom ineffective. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie's javelin could threaten his life.

Secondly, it was out of that guy's imagination that Zhang Tie would dare to catch his battle-Qi boom by hand and break in...

Thirdly, he was shocked that Zhang Tie had already activated his rapid moving skill when rushing towards him. Although Zhang Tie looked exhausted, benefited from the rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie could increase his moving speed by 2 times.

Fourthly, although Zhang Tie had no weapons but a pair of dark tore gloves, he had one more sharper weapon. The lethal radius of that weapon was completely out of his expectation. The moment the sharp sword blades were released from 5 m away, they had already reached him, sparing him no chance to escape.

Therefore, he had to die!

Before he died, he turned around and stared at Zhang Tie with a resentful look.

Zhang Tie was also spitting blood. However, that guy was spurting blood 2 m away from his neck. After that, he fell down on the ground forever.

Not until then did the army of iron-teeth hyenas break in 100 m away from the fight. The moment that guy fell down, the crazy

iron-teeth hyenas stopped their attack.

The glows in the eyes of those iron-teeth hyenas gradually disappeared. After that, those iron-teeth hyenas exchanged glances with each other. Then, an iron-teeth hyena wailed, hearing which, all the iron-teeth hyenas escaped away while lowering their tails.

The whole hillside soon recovered its tranquility. If not the black smokes and bloody scene in the Maple Leaf Castle, people would not believe that a fierce fight had happened here.

At first, iron-teeth hyenas attacked humans; then, humans counterattacked iron-teeth hyenas. Besides fresh blood and corpses, nothing was left.

After coughing out blood 3 times, Zhang Tie felt a bit better. He finally believed that even wearing the pair of dark tore gloves, he could barely stand a LV 10 strong fighter's battle-Qi boom. If that guy had not missed his judgment several times in an extremely short period, Zhang Tie would not have killed him so easily.

At least, Zhang Tie was not confident to kill this guy when facing him alone. If he encountered this guy alone today, Zhang Tie estimated that he would definitely have used his rapid moving skill to escape instead of taking this guy by storm.

After wiping the blood stains off his mouth corners while kneeling down the ground with one knee, Zhang Tie slowly stood up. The moment he stood up, he caught Crell's amazed look.

"Peter, you are amazing!" What you performed was really surprising. This was my first time to see a fighter below LV 9 to catch a 4-star strong fighter's battle-Qi boom!"

"That guy was a 4-star strong fighter?" Zhang Tie nodded inside like he had already known that.

"This pair of gloves is a rune equipment. It could protect me from being injured by the battle-Qi booms of powerhouses below great fighter master!" Saying this, Zhang Tie patted his hands with a

smile. He tried to briefly introduce it, "I have to appreciate Demon Snake Island for this gift!"

"Even though the glove is a rune equipment, how did you move so fast just now? If it was me, I couldn't even respond to it in such a short distance!" Crell continued with a curious look. Realizing that Zhang Tie was going to explain, Crell hurriedly waved his hand, "No need to explain to me. Each one has his secret. Actually, I feel that you're not a pioneer; instead, an elite of a big clan. You are here to cultivate yourself."

Zhang Tie was slightly stunned, "How do you know that?"

"Besides elites of big clans, I've not seen anybody else in any country of Blackson Human Corridor who could reach such a high level of iron-blood fist at such a young age . Don't tell me that you were not using iron-blood fist movements when you killed iron-teeth hyenas with your short javelins. Additionally, I know that you were using Heavens-Shocking Punch to break that guy's battle Qi. Wasn't that sword movement the extension of sword palm?" Saying that, Crell imitated Zhang Tie's movement sharply, causing a wuthering sound. It really looked like iron-blood fist, "Although the secret knowledge of iron-blood fist is the top secret knowledge that could be easily obtained, it's most difficult to practice it. When I was young, I also practiced iron-blood fist. However, as I could not form iron-blood battle Qi, I finally gave it up!"

Hearing Crell's explanation, Zhang Tie rolled his eyes and laughed, "The country must be Norman Empire. Haha, Crell takes me as an elite of a big clan in Norman Empire who cultivates himself in the wild!"

"It's reasonable for him to think this way. Blackhot City has just been annexed by Norman Empire. I know grandma Teresa in Blackhot City and has a special talent in iron-blood fist that could not be matched by commoners. After concluding these conditions, he could easily speculate my background. Certainly, only some elites of big clans on Waii Sub-Continent could meet such

conditions. Otherwise, based on my high level of iron-blood fist, I can enjoy whatever I want in Norman Empire, food or respect, instead of being a pioneer who has to live poor in the wild. Am I sick?"

Crell had a sharp judgment. Pitifully, he was not completely right unless he changed big clan into Huaiyuan Palace. However, it was not possible for him to hit that.

Now that Crell thought so, Zhang Tie didn't make any explanation.

They then came to the side of that dead guy and started to collect their booty.

That guy was lying on the ground, face down. His blood had sprayed all over. The moment Zhang Tie wanted to turn over that guy's body, he was hurriedly stopped by Crell, "Hold on, each powerful animal controller has many evil tactics, especially those above LV 9. Even they are dead, their bodies could still not be easily touched!"

Hearing Crell's words, Zhang Tie didn't move; instead, he watched how would Crell do.

Zhang Tie and Crell then stood 10 steps away. At this moment, Crell waved his hand to release his green battle Qi towards that guy.

As it was not in fight, Zhang Tie felt that Crell didn't use too much strength.

When the battle Qi struck that body, it turned it over from the ground.

Soon after that body was turned over, a black thing had bounced up from that corpse's chest and flashed towards Zhang Tie.

Although having long prepared for that, Zhang Tie was still startled by it's high speed. At the same time, Zhang Tie shot out his silver carp sword and cut that thing into 3 sections in the air from

about 2 m away.

Not until that thing fell down on the ground did Zhang Tie realize that it was a weird black snake. It had a pair of terrifying blue eyes. On both sides of that weird snake were 2 thin wing-like flesh films by which it could fly. Although having been cut into 3 sections, it still didn't die right away; instead, it struggled and spat out its tongue while twisting its head on the ground towards Zhang Tie.

"F*ck, what's this?" seeing its blood spraying over the grass on his side, withering the grass right away, Zhang Tie realized that it had a severe toxicity. This thing looked terrifying and disgusting. If Zhang Tie really turned over the dead body by hands, he probably had been bitten by this thing.

"It's black wing snake!" answering Zhang Tie, Crell punched onto the ground, smashing the remains of the snake, "It's one of the most poisonous living beings. It has no antidote. Once being bitten by it, you would die in 5 seconds!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie took a deep breath.

With this experience, Zhang Tie started to move closer to the dead body carefully.

"Is there something else on his body?" Zhang Tie asked Crell.

"No, otherwise, it had jumped out of there!"

...

Zhang Tie moved closer and glanced at that guy on the ground carefully. As he had lost a lot of blood, his skin had turned off-white. Plus the insidious and gloomy face, the rising hooknose and the dark robe, Zhang Tie almost mistook him as a dark magician in fairy tales. Although magicians didn't exist in this age, what this dead body applied just now could not even be matched by magics.

This dead body was soon cleaned by Zhang Tie and Crell.

After searching out those items from that guy, Zhang Tie and Crell gathered them into a small pile on the ground. After that, they started to share their booty. Previously, Zhang Tie thought that Crell would feel reluctant to do this; amazingly, Crell did this so adroitly that he looked like a guest performer of some special profession.

"This is a special throwing weapon. It's made of a special plant's root. This plant's root was ordinarily similar to that of common wood; however, after being injected with battle Qi, this root would turn as firm as iron and have a great penetrability; additionally, it would have some features of that battle Qi. It's a very rare throwing weapon. Your throwing skill looks good, it seems that this item is suitable to you!" Crell explained as he threw the 3 snake-shaped items from that guy's waist to Zhang Tie.

After glancing at them, Zhang Tie put them away at once. Just now, Zhang Tie was almost injured by that guy's two sonic booms. That guy's battle Qi easily exploded. After being filled with that guy's battle Qi, the moment this item hit something, it would explode. Although not being as fierce and powerful as bombs, its lethality could not be ignored in a small range. When it exploded, it was similar to the explosion of mini domestic steam boilers.

After leaving them to Zhang Tie, Crell took 2 vials which had a weird odor. He said the drugs in the vials could help him control animals. Zhang Tie agreed with his choice.

Besides, that guy had a purse, a small box and a finger ring.

There were only a few gold notes and some gold coins, over 400 gold coins in total. At the sight of this, Crell waved his hand immediately, "One person, one half".

"Do you wild patrons need money?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity after he put over 200 gold coins into his pocket. Although it was not a great amount of money, it was a part of the booty from a powerful enemy. Therefore, Crell felt pretty comfortable to have

them.

Crell trembled his eyebrows as he replied with a serious tone, "Do you think that I have my clothes out of air? Even in the wild, we always need to exchange others' items with money." There's a proverb in Eastern Continent, "With gold coins, even demons would like to pull the millstone for grounding grains. It is a truth!"

Zhang Tie smirked as he knew that proverb.

What were left were that finger ring and that small wooden box. After glancing at that finger ring for a short while, Crell threw it to Zhang Tie, "Take a look!"

Zhang Tie knew that such a powerful guy always had precious ornaments. Zhang Tie took it as he injected some spiritual energy into the finger ring.

"Finger Ring of Eagle's Eye——this item has the rune effect of eagle's eye. After injecting some spiritual energy into it, you can activate its rune effect one time per natural day; each time would last for 2 hours."

Zhang Tie had not seen a rune equipment with fixed effect before. As this rune equipment was not marked with the rune manufacturer's name, its background could not be identified. However, after staying in Huaiyuan Palace for a period, Zhang Tie knew the world about rune manufacturers more or less. He knew that all the rune equipment with fixed special rune effects were top goods. Such equipment were even rarely seen in auction houses. They were basically customized.

Zhang Tie then glanced at Crell.

"You might know about its value. We have 2 items left, a finger ring of eagle's eye, a small box. Now that he takes this box with him, it indicates that the item inside is special. It might value more or less than that finger ring. As you killed him, for the sake of fairness, you can choose one, leaving the rest one to me!"

Having not imagined that Crell was that serious, Zhang Tie burst out laughter's as he opened that box.

It was an animal's bone in the box, yes, a bone. However, it was as transparent as crystal. No matter from which angle, it looked as profound as a cat's eye.

At the sight of that bone, Crell's eyes had gleamed. Zhang Tie noticed that Crell's hand slightly shook. Before seeing that finger ring of eagle's eye, Crell looked very calm; however, at the sight of this crystal-like bone, Crell became disgraceful at once. He instantly understood the value of this crystal-like bone.

Crell took a deep breath as he glanced at that bone once again. He then reached his hand out to take that ring. Seeing his movement, Zhang Tie burst out laughter's. He then took up the box along with the bone and put them onto Crell's hand. After that, he put on the finger ring himself.

Crell shook all over as he stared at Zhang Tie, "You..."

"I opened it to let you make the choice first. Now that you like the item in this box, I will take the ring!" Zhang Tie casually said.

"Do you know what's this? You will regret!" Crell fixed his eyes on Zhang Tie as his hands had started to quiver due to excitement.

"I don't care. I only know that this item is more useful to you than me. So what even if it is worth millions of gold coins? Aren't we comrades-in-arms?" Zhang Tie shrugged. Zhang Tie also knew that the item in the box might be very expensive; however, as long as he took one person as his real friend, he would never make his friend suffer a loss.

"This is sacred beast's bone, the supreme treasure of animal controllers. When you have it, you will have no obstacle on the way of cultivating animal controlling skills. Additionally, it has other marvelous effects. It might be worth more than millions of gold coins. Actually, nobody would like to sell it in the auction

house, unless he's insane. Have you made your decision?"

"I would not auction my roasted potatoes, unless I'm insane; but I gave my roasted potatoes to you!"

After gazing at Zhang Tie for a short while, Crell laughed suddenly, "Do you know that you made a mistake today?"

"What mistake?" Zhang Tie became stunned.

"You should not call me uncle. I'm not that old. Actually, I'm only 27!"

Staring at Crell's whiskers, Zhang Tie asked with a dubious look, "27? Are you kidding me? Are you sure it's not 47? You...You look really old."

"If you also stay in the wild for 10 years in which period you are not allowed to shave your beard before promoting to great fighting master, I'm sure that you will be as same as me in a decade!" Crell said with a blank face.

"F*ck, being not allowed to shave beard. What a motherf*cking rule!"

"This is the rule of school of patron. As a wild patron, if you don't see a lion asking to shave his hair, you're also not allowed to shave your beard, either!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie almost showed the white of his eyes; however, Crell continued.

"Additionally, I want to apologize to you; because I also lied to you just now!"

"When did you lie to me?" Zhang Tie was dumbfounded once again.

"When those iron-teeth hyenas were rushing over, actually, I could also apply the land mother's guardianship on you. If I did that to you, you would not have been attacked by those iron-teeth hyenas anymore! However, as you made me unhappy, I wanted to

punish you for what you've done to me." Saying this, Crell's swarthy face faintly blushed.

"I made you unhappy? But why?"

"Because you called me Uncle. I'm not that old!" Crell looked serious once again as he erected 3 fingers with a solemn look, "You called me Uncle 3 times!"

Recalling thousands of iron-teeth hyenas drooling towards him with red eyes, Zhang Tie twitched his mouth corners. After that, he sprung up from the ground and swore Crell loudly while pointing at Crell's nose.

"F*ck! Do you know that If I was negligent or didn't have enough strength, I would have been torn into parts by those iron-teeth hyenas. Do you know how it feels when you face a regiment of dare-to-death corps? You b*stard! How can you set me up for that bullsh*t reason?"

"Actually, you were looking well. Those iron-teeth hyenas couldn't even hurt you at all!"

"B*stard. Give me my sacred beast's bone. This father prefers to feed dogs with it, instead of giving it to you!"

At this moment, Crell looked very gloomy. Facing Zhang Tie's fury, he slowly put that odd-looking sacred beast's bone into his coat, "I'm sorry, this sacred beast's bone belongs to me now. If you want it back, you have to find a dog which could be able to gnaw it!"

After glaring at each other for a few seconds, they burst out laughters at the same time...

Chapter 430: The Hiding Effect

The Maple Leaf Castle was still smoking. Zhang Tie and Crell then carried that animal controller's body back to a suspending platform of the heliport in the middle of that base. After that, they tied that body onto a wood pile.

"Is this useful?" Seeing Crell writing a line of blood words on one side of the dead body, Zhang Tie asked in a casual way.

"As Eschyle City is not too far away from here. If something happened in this base, Both the chambers of commerce and urban administrators of Eschyle City would dispatch people here for an investigation. We'd better give them some warning by this chance!" While explaining to Zhang Tie, Crell left the symbol of school of patron below the line of words. For school of patron, violating nature laws by driving animal tide artificially is very hateful; the school of patron doubted that this animal tide was related to demons.

Since the airlines above Waii Sub-Continent suffered from many raptors' attacks last year, the school of patron had already dispatched people to investigate this event. The result was targeting at a mysterious animal controlling group. In the past year, after many parties' concerted efforts, some animal controllers of that mysterious group were killed, some escaped and disappeared, some arouse troubles in other places. However, not a single alive one was caught. Therefore, nobody knew about the reason. Whereas, given what bad behaviors these people had done, it was undoubted that they were demons' lackeys and b*stards.

When Zhang Tie heard the words "Three-Eye Association" from Crell, Zhang Tie sighed with full moods. These demons' lackeys really have a deep root in the continent. They almost existed everywhere, including Huaiyuan Prefecture, Heavens Cold City and Ice and Snow Wildness. When the 3rd holy war between human race and demons was going to break out, these people

started to move more frequently.

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't care about their backgrounds. If they were demons' lackeys, they deserved to be killed. What Zhang Tie concerned most was his personal fighting strength, especially after this fight. As the world was becoming more chaotic, one's fighting strength would always determine whether he could survive or not.

Take this fight as an example. If that guy was not LV 10, but LV 11, a powerful great fighting master who was excel at sonic booms, Zhang Tie would have been killed by the first sonic boom. Similarly, if Zhang Tie was a bit more powerful, he would not have to fight that guy in such a close distance. As long as he threw out his javelin, he would have ended up the fight. Sometimes, life or death was just a matter of one's fighting strength.

Considering it, Zhang Tie felt that he was a bit lucky today.

"Where are you going then?" Zhang Tie asked Crell.

"There are demon-rat tides in some northern regions of Ice and Snow Wildness. I'm heading for north, what about you?"

Having eaten 9 seven-strength fruits of demon rats, Zhang Tie would not obtain any more seven-strength fruits of demon rats no matter how many he killed. Hearing Crell's reply, Zhang Tie considered it for a short while before replying, "I'm going to the south of Ice and Snow Wildness. I want to try my fortune!"

"Going for relics and star of god?" Crell smiled.

Zhang Tie also responded with a smile. He didn't explain it. "Now that Crell thought I was an elite of a big clan in Norman Empire, I don't have to explain. Haidela Glacier Crack is indeed in the south of Ice and Snow Wildness. It must be very boisterous over there. However, according to my knowledge, besides relics of human civilizations and the pieces of star of god, there's another attractive thing in the wildness where the Haidela Glacier Crack is located —Wild Huge Wolf."

"I was told that tide of Wild Huge Wolves was breaking out in some southern places of Ice and Snow Wildness. Why not take a look over there?"

"I've been there before. The tide of Wild Huge Wolves was not driven by humans. For such an animal tide, we wild patrons would not intervene them as the mother nature has its own way to deal with it!"

Zhang Tie shrugged. It seemed that they had to separate from here, "Take care of yourself. In front of powerhouses, don't feel shameful to escape!"

"Haha, it's not that dangerous. No matter what, Ice and Snow Wildness is the territory of bear tribes, which had the heaviest awareness of territory. Those powerful figures and priests in those bear tribes would not stand outsiders making troubles in their territory. If someone was behind the demon-rat tide, that guy might have been killed by powerhouses on the way towards north!" Crell answered.

"But why nobody care about the animal tide on Grey Hill?" Zhang Tie became dubious. Honestly, he didn't know too much about Iron and Snow Wildness. Previously, he only learned its knowledge from some books. When he arrived at this place, he put all of his efforts on seven-strength fruits, sparing not time and spiritual energy to learn about other things here.

Crell responded with a smile, "This place is close to Eschyle City, the territory of iron bear tribe. I was told that many powerful figures and priests of iron bear tribe pilgrimaged to Erqida Mountain several days ago. They've not returned yet. Additionally, in the eyes of the rulers of iron bear tribe, the iron-teeth hyenas over the Grey Hill only caused a bit loss to some chambers of commerce and some wild villages, which was not enough to arouse their attention. At this moment, they might pay more attention to the relic and piece of star of god in Haidela Glacier Crack. Even something happened here, in those guys' eyes, it was nothing but

some animal controllers aroused some small troubles in Ice and Snow Wilderness! Even those chambers of commerce themselves could solve this problem."

Zhang Tie knew that Crell was telling the truth. This was the difference between big figures and small figures. Even the biggest problem in the eyes of big figures was a piece of cake. Similarly, a couple of gold coins in the eyes of poor guys was definitely not as valuable as that in the eyes of nouveau-rich.

Zhang Tie and Crell were both straightforward. After making their own decisions, they directly separated like getting off the same carriage of a train.

Zhang Tie saw Crell off. When Crell walked 10 steps away, he turned around, "I forgot to tell you. If you really find a dog which could gnaw the saint beast's bone one day and want to get that bone back, you can come for me. You can visit any church of school of patron which has a priest and tell him that you want to see me; that priest would ask you about my emblem in the school of patron. You tell him that my emblem is locust."

Zhang Tie nodded as he recalled something, "Oh, what's the saint beast's bone? You've not mentioned that before!"

"Ha...ha...you will know it when you are an official animal controller!" Crell made a joke.

"Perhaps when I see you next time, my animal controlling skill has surpassed you. I feel that I'm talented in learning this skill. Only after practicing those secret prayers over one night, I feel that I've been able to control a low-level pet!" Zhang Tie said like it was true.

"It's impossible. When I saw you for the first time, I already knew that you've not used animal controlling skill or had any pet before. It's already late to learn animal controlling skill at your age. Therefore, you can hardly reach the supreme level of animal controlling skill!"

"Maybe I'm the exception!"

"Unless you're the baby nephew of Gaia, the mother of land or the the incarnation of legendary beast god!" Crell burst out laughing; meanwhile, he waved towards Zhang Tie and left, leaving Zhang Tie alone.

Standing on the hillside, Zhang Tie saw Crell and that huge black eagle in the sky disappearing in the far. Then, he revealed a smile as he slightly waved his head and muttered, "You missed a possibility!"

Zhang Tie turned around. After identifying the direction, he ran towards southwest.

...

Zhang Tie knew that after he and Crell left, someone from Eschyle would definitely come here for an investigation. However, Zhang Tie had not imagined that they could respond so fast. Only 2 hours after he left, they had arrived here from Eschyle City.

They were not common bear-killing fighters or powerhouses dispatched by those chambers of commerce and business firms from Eschyle City; instead, they were 2 terrifying wild reward hunters with strong killing intents.

After circling around Maple Leaf Castle for one time, they returned to the place below the suspending platform where Zhang Tie and Crell tied that animal controller on. Reading the line of words left by Crell, the 2 reward hunters frowned.

"Is school of patron involved with that guy?" The massive guy said firstly, "I've not imagined that someone is behind this animal tide. We have to report this to Eschyle City right now!"

"Don't worry, the airship of the Chamber of Commerce of Eschyle City will arrive here soon. They will bring this message back. They are just some clowns, humph..." the other reward hunter uttered an icy voice from behind a grim mask. Given the voice, it's a

female. Raising her face, she stood still while facing the sunshine calmly, seemingly identifying something.

"I feel that the 2 people were separated from here. The man of school of patron moved north while the b*stard called Peter moved southwest. Our task is to bring that Peter's head back and get the 5000 gold coins. With 5000 gold coins, our tribe could afford many items. We will not tide over this winter easily. We've not met such a good trade for a long time!"

"O' Laura, don't you feel it strange? Given the message from Kurgan or the description of those people who escaped from Maple Leaf Castle, that Peter seems not being that bad. Perhaps, something is wrong with the arrest order issued by the police station in Eschyle City?"

"There're two kinds of men in total. one that deserves to die, the other that is going to die. How do you know that Peter was not disguising himself in front of them. Haven't you met such crafty people before...", a sneer drifted from behind the metal mask, "Perhaps there's some problem with the arrest order issued by the police station in Eschyle City, but there's no problem on the bodies of the previous 2 wild reward hunters which were torn apart. They were here for Peter after receiving the arrest order. Weren't they dead because of that b*stard? If not because of this, why does the police station dispatch us here? The majesty of Eschyle City and bear tribes could not be weakened because of him. Even if Peter was not a murderer, the 2 wild reward hunters were killed because of him. Based on this point, he deserves to die!"

"However, we could not maintain the majesty of bear tribes by killing innocent people!" That strapping man warned.

"Setton, if you want to apply for altering the arrest order in Eschyle City and investigate the death cause of the 2 previous wild reward hunters, go back freely. I can deal with it myself! Unless you put a new arrest order in front of me, I swear to bring that man's head back!" after saying this icily, the female directly rushed

towards southwest without even glancing at Setton. Her moving speed could almost match that of Zhang Tie.

After glancing at that disappearing background with a concerned look, Setton let out a sigh before finally following up.

...

Zhang Tie ran so fast. At dusk, Zhang Tie had already arrived 400 km away from the Maple Leaf Castle and found a mountain cave in the wild, even though the the path was always tortuous. After that, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron that he had not entered for a few days.

...

At the sight of the 7 seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas hanging over the small tree, Zhang Tie realized that it might be his wisest decision to leave Huaiyuan Palace this time.

Besides the 7 seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas, there were 2 more fruits on the small tree, which made Zhang Tie smirk, one was fruit of brilliance, the other was fruit of judgment that he had been long expecting for...

——Fruit of Judgment. Fruit of Judgment has become ripe. It contains a god's rune effect——"Hiding". Usage: After picking it, paste it on your forehead; activate it with your spiritual energy. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

——Warrior, the one who waves his blades towards the darkness, the sun will not always hang over the sky. Because it knows that it's necessary to give the stage of the sky to stars so as to hide itself on the other side of the world. After that, it will be able to expect for the arrival of the next dawn after darkness.

Chapter 431: A Trouble from a Familiar Person

After digesting 7 seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas, a fruit of brilliance and a fruit of judgment, Zhang Tie came out of the Castle of Black Iron on the 7th day.

Seven-strength fruit of iron-teeth hyena was the most powerful seven-strength fruit that Zhang Tie had ever eaten. As a fruit of LV 1 living being, the total of its seven strengths were far more than that of wild-wolf seven-strength fruit and demon-rat seven-strength fruit. After completely digesting the 7 seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas, Zhang Tie felt that his explosiveness increased by more than 40%.

This was a huge, terrifying progress. Precisely, he could throw his javelin at a speed of 1024 m/s, which was 3 times more than the speed of sound transmission in the air, instead of 728 m/s, which was only greater than 2 times the speed of sound transmission in the air. Its maximal effective lethal range also surpassed 1000 m.

According to Heller, unless some top strong fighters who had special abilities, with such a high sound transmission speed Zhang Tie could absolutely stifle more than 98% of 4-star or 5-star strong fighters within 100-200 m.

From then on, most of the strong fighters could not pose any threat to Zhang Tie. For Zhang Tie, he could kill almost any strong fighters by throwing out his javelins. Zhang Tie asked himself, "If I met that animal controller at this moment, I would have ended the battle after throwing out only 1-3 javelins."

"That person might be able to dodge away from my first javelin; however, the consecutive javelins could easily penetrate through him. I can keep throwing javelins towards him endlessly; however, can he keep moving at that high speed? Of course, he cannot. Because it is absolutely out of the ability of a strong fighter."

Zhang Tie knew that it was a very terrifying ability. After the combination of this ancestral bloodline and seven-strength fruits, his precise throwing ability had already evolved into a terrifying and effective lethal skill.

What was the cost of a javelin? What was the cost of cultivating a LV 10 strong fighter? After realizing the difference, Zhang Tie knew how terrifying and powerful was his throwing skill.

This throwing skill reminded Zhang Tie of the thermal weapons before catastrophe which were featured by extremely high speed and precision, such as a sniper rifle. Zhang Tie felt like carrying a sniper rifle.

Before catastrophe, after a short-term training, a teenager would be able to kill many powerful people with those thermal weapons. So was Zhang Tie.

Perhaps in close battle, because of low level and weaker battle Qi, Zhang Tie might not be able to defeat some LV 10 strong fighters; like how a LV 10 strong fighter boomed Zhang Tie with his battle Qi in the air, as long as the distance was proper, Zhang Tie would be able to throw out his javelins and ended the battle right away. There was no such a regulation that javelins could not be used to counterattack while only allowing LV 10 strong fighters to boom him with battle Qi in the distance!

Zhang Tie knew it well that if he wanted to be powerful, he didn't have to do a good job on all aspects; instead, he needed to gradually improve his advantage until it was above that of everybody else. When he reached that level, he could even defeat 10000 enemies himself. Regardless of any powerhouse, even the legendary knight could be killed by throwing one javelin. If so, Zhang Tie would truly succeed.

Besides the greater strength brought by the 7 seven-strength fruits of iron-teeth hyenas, Zhang Tie obtained a new skill from the fruit of judgment—Hiding skill.

The preliminary hiding effect could weaken Zhang Tie's Qi field by 1 energy level. With this skill, Zhang Tie could hide himself in front of powerhouses. Being similar to the tactic——disguising oneself as a pig to eat tiger, he could always hide his real fighting strength so as to not arouse others' attention.

This effect would last 6 hours. When using it, Zhang Tie's overall fighting strength would not weaken. According to Heller, after using this hiding rune effect in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie felt like a senior warrior between LV 4 and LV 5 in the eyes of those powerhouses who had sharp insights.

Zhang Tie was very satisfied with this hiding skill. By now, Zhang Tie had already eaten 3 fruits of judgment and obtained three basic skills——attack, escape and hide. Therefore, Zhang Tie fully expected what other effects could the next fruit of judgment bring him.

The latest fruit of brilliance contained all the spiritual energy of Dawson and that secret animal controller. Soon after eating this fruit, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy had soared to 160 times of his original base. What a harvest!

Given the harvest, Zhang Tie had one question.

Previously, Zhang Tie felt that his growing spiritual energy seemingly reached a critical point. He felt that he could soon break that invisible ceiling after increasing his spiritual energy a bit. However, although he had increased his spiritual energy a lot during this period, especially in this couple of days, he could still not break that invisible obstacle. Therefore, Zhang Tie started to be perplexed about it.

Remarkably, he could not purely break that obstacle by increasing his spiritual energy. Zhang Tie wondered why would he have that obstacle, whether because each one would have such an obstacle when their spiritual energy reached a certain degree or his level was not high enough. He didn't know what was behind that

obstacle. On the way of individual cultivation, nobody would tell him why, including Heller. Although Heller could tell him the weight and size of each dust in Castle of Black Iron, he could not help Zhang Tie cultivate.

"Cultivation is the most important life experience. In the course of cultivation, each question is actually involved with numerous possibilities and results, which determine different choices as a part of casual chain. It guides you about the meaning of your life. If I tell you the answer, I'm actually determining your life's direction and kill all the other possibilities. If so, you will lose your freedom to make choice. This goes against the objective and meaning of my existence! If you've determined your life's direction, I can be your good helper; yet I cannot determine your life's direction!" Heller told Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie understood it. Therefore, he was not concerned about this question anymore. Given Zhang Tie's personality, if he could not find the answer, he would not waste time in seeking for the answer; instead, he owed this question to his low level.

However, the benefit of his soaring spiritual energy was remarkable.

In Zhang Tie's mind, the golden swirl of spiritual energy had further expanded. It was like the swirling galaxy in the sky. In the center of that swirl of spiritual energy were the 3 secret god's runes that Zhang Tie had obtained. Below the swirl of spiritual energy was the all-spirits pagoda.

In these days, Zhang Tie had formed the last 2 Wild Seals on the 1st storey of the all-spirits pagoda. Zhang Tie chose a "Summon" and a "Amulet". According to the standards of Great Wild Sect, Zhang Tie was already an indoor pupil of Great Wild Sect and was qualified to tell the outsiders that he was an animal controller.

The only difference between Zhang Tie and the animal controllers with the lowest rank was that Zhang Tie had no pet.

Previously, Zhang Tie wanted to try the effect of LV 0 soul-based animal controlling skill; however, after thinking about the warning of that skeleton in the mountain cave, Zhang Tie decided to try it when he would reach the 2nd storey of the all-spirits pagoda.

After forming the last 2 seals on the 1st storey, Zhang Tie changed his clothes and left Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie carried a leather container over his waist which contained 20 palm bolts. Although these palm bolts were a bit weaker than that of javelins and crossbows, Zhang Tie could still use them to easily kill a 2-star strong fighter and many opponents below this rank within 200 m.

Besides that container of palm bolts, Zhang Tie still held the 2 common short javelins.

From then on, Zhang Tie had made a decision, "I will never expose my javelin throwing ability unless critical moment. The alleged trump card should be amazing. I cannot carry javelins and wander everywhere everyday to let everybody know that I could easily kill a strong fighter; otherwise, if my opponent dispatches a fighting master or a great fighting master to kill me, it will be a tragedy! Even the sun would take a rest in the evening to keep long life, not to mention me."

A LV 7 fighter could easily kill a great batch of LV 10 strong fighters. What an amazing news! If it was spread out, Zhang Tie was not sure whether someone who disliked him would dispatch a powerhouse to kill him or not.

When Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron, he felt as refreshing as obtaining a new life. However, after being vigorous and ambitious for only 2 seconds, Zhang Tie had turned gloomy in the narrow mountain cave.

Arriving at the entrance of the mountain cave, Zhang Tie squatted to check the small pebbles and the dust on the ground.

His natural trace system had been completely destroyed by others. It indicated that someone had arrived here in these days.

"Is that a coincidence?" Zhang Tie asked himself before carefully observing the inside of the mountain cave. As there was no trace of fire, weeds or sleeping bags inside, Zhang Tie knew that the newcomers didn't stay here too long.

Of course, the newcomers might not sleep inside the cave at all. For many powerhouses, this was probable. They only needed to enter meditation and cultivate themselves over night. However, if they sat here for a long time, due to the long-term contact between their legs, butts and the ground, they would leave some traces. Pitifully, Zhang Tie found no clues in such a narrow space.

"In the wild, it was least possible if a person followed me in the mountain cave."

"Am I spotted by someone?" the moment this thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind, Zhang Tie became gloomy at once.

"Damn it!" Zhang Tie swore in a low voice. "Haven't I killed that b*stard from Demon Snake Island? Even though they dispatched some more here, it shouldn't be that quick. Additionally, how could those newcomers find me so precisely?"

"Are they partners of that animal controller?"

An icy light flashed across Zhang Tie's eyes. Zhang Tie thought a while before putting on the pair of dark tore gloves. Besides defending the battle Qi, this pair of gloves could also make Zhang Tie's hands more flexible...

After observing the situation outside the mountain cave carefully, Zhang Tie confirmed that no ambush was outside; therefore, he left the mountain cave quickly and sped up towards southwest.

Only after half an hour, in the valley 40 km away from that mountain cave, Zhang Tie finally knew who was chasing him.

Soon after Zhang Tie entered the valley, he had felt the finger ring of awareness on his hand warming up, which indicated that he was followed by someone. Heart racing, Zhang Tie stopped his foot right away.

The moment Zhang Tie stopped, he had seen 2 people standing 200 m away in the front and in the back of him respectively. They blocked his way.

Their Qi fields were very powerful, at least much more powerful than that of Dawson. The one in front of Zhang Tie wore a grim bronze mask. At the sight of this, Zhang Tie's heart slightly pounded before he let out a sigh. Knowing that they were not fighting masters or great fighting masters, Zhang Tie became confident.

"What do you want? Robbery?" asking this in a muffling sound, Zhang Tie instantly held fast his javelin, intending to defend.

"You're Peter Hamplester?" the man in front of Zhang Tie asked.

That man's question aroused Zhang Tie's whims at once. Zhang Tie then nodded, "Right, I'm Peter Hamplester!"

"We're wild reward hunters employed by Eschyle City. Your head is worth 5000 gold coins; therefore, we reserve it!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie became dumbfounded. Realizing the man was going to launch an attack, Zhang Tie hurriedly exclaimed, "Wait, I know I killed a person in Eschyle City and was wanted; but isn't it 1000 gold coins? Additionally, they don't want my life on the order for arrest. How come it becomes 5000 gold coins?"

"No more disguise!" the female with mask opened her mouth which startled Zhang Tie, "You killed 2 wild reward hunters who was going to arrest you on Grey Hill cruelly. Have you forgotten about that? Because of this event, the reward rose to 5000 gold coins!"

"What? I killed 2 wild reward hunters who came for me? No way!

Besides you two, I've not met any other reward hunters since I came to Grey Hill!" Zhang Tie explained seriously, "It must be a mistake!"

"Mistake?" The female in mask sneered as he watched Zhang Tie's gloves, "We've checked the reward hunters' bodies. Previously, I was curious about those wounds, at the sight of your gloves, I finally understood. You son of b*tch. Do you feel very cool by digging out others' hearts using your claws? Today, I will show you the color of your heart."

The moment Zhang Tie heard this, he understood it right away. "Those 2 hunters must have met Dawson on Grey Hill and were killed by the latter. That b*stard left me a big trouble even after death."

With a whim of killing the 2 reward hunters, Zhang Tie denied it at once as he recalled Crell's warning, our bear tribes are not easily provoked. "There are also many powerhouses here. Based on my current fighting strength, I'm not qualified to fight bear tribes. Although I can kill the 2 people, what then? Will the reward rise to 50000 gold coins? Then, 2 more powerful reward hunters will come for me, or I will escape away from Ice and Snow Wildness as the scapegoat for Demon Snake Island?

"What to do? The b*stard Dawson has been dead and already became the sh*t of those beasts on Grey Hill. I have no witness to clarify myself at all."

Various whims flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. However, Zhang Tie couldn't find a solution at all.

"F*ck!"

"Humph, you have no excuse, right?" the female's voice became merciless, "Then, go to hell!"

After saying this, the female rushed in front of Zhang Tie right away. At the same time, she clapped her hands, releasing a pair of

palm-sized silver battle Qi towards Zhang Tie from over 10 m away...

Chapter 432: Subduing the Opponents

People always had to face many things that they disliked, such as this time.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was like a dog, who wanted to bite a hedgehog but didn't know where to start.

"Close fights doesn't work, especially when the opponents want to kill me. It's not good to be surrounded by two LV 10 strong fighters; otherwise, I might lose my life."

"I should not kill them, either. Unless I don't want to stay in Ice and Snow Wildness anymore; otherwise, after killing these 2 wild reward hunters, I have to escape far away. But I don't want to die here. It's not worthwhile."

In a wink, the silver battle Qi had almost reached in front of Zhang Tie's chest. Zhang Tie made the decision right away.

"End it as fast as possible!"

What made Zhang Tie a bit reassured was that the man behind him didn't rush towards him together with that female in mask; instead, he just moved closer on one side.

"Perhaps, in that man's eyes, the female is enough to deal with me."

"This is a chance. I have to grasp it."

Zhang Tie roared as he activated a rapid moving rune at once; meanwhile, he poked his short javelins towards that silver palm-sized battle Qi ferociously. Zhang Tie only used 30% of his full strength. The moment he touched the battle Qi, Zhang Tie had been forced back like how a common LV 8 or LV 9 powerhouse was struck back by a battle Qi in the distance. Being shocked by that powerful battle Qi, Zhang Tie's javelins flew backwards in the air; meanwhile, Zhang Tie was boomed and sent flying back in the air by that silver battle Qi...

With the inertia, Zhang Tie seemed wanting to escape as he was accelerating backwards.

Realizing that Zhang Tie was going to escape, the man behind Zhang Tie adjusted his location while that female responded with a cold harrumph, "Do you think that you can escape away?"

Zhang Tie's performance was completely within the 2 peoples imagination. Therefore, they didn't feel strange about this. According to the judgment of the police station in Eschyle City from all aspects, Zhang Tie might be LV 9. If the two hunters fought Zhang Tie at the same time, they could definitely kill him.

Therefore, the two people were very confident that they didn't believe that Zhang Tie could play any tricks in front of them successfully.

However, Zhang Tie was not like any murderer that they had ever faced before.

When the female sped up towards Zhang Tie, the latter changed his movements at once. Zhang Tie instantly accelerated forward instead of backward. In a split second, the effect of the "One Step, One Scenery" situation was reflected by Zhang Tie.

Move backward or forward, each movement was a different scenery!

Feel free to move forward or backward!

Zhang Tie forcefully thrust against the ground as a stone was broken instantly. After that, he started to dart towards that female ferociously like a powerful bolt. He moved even faster and fiercer than that female in a mask.

Neither of the 2 hunters had found that Zhang Tie was doing a fake movement just now. Zhang Tie did that to draw that female closer.

Seeing Zhang Tie's completely different performance, that man who was watching and blocking Zhang Tie's way behind him

turned his face, "O'Laura, watch out!"

Almost at the same time, that man darted towards Zhang Tie.

However, as that man was 50 m away from Zhang Tie and that woman, the moment he started to move his foot, he had seen Zhang Tie colliding with that woman.

Zhang Tie was indeed too close to that woman. Additionally, they were speeding up towards each other. Therefore, the distance of 10-20 m was too short.

The moment Zhang Tie moved, he had already arrived in front of that woman in mask.

The woman didn't move backwards; instead, she boomed towards Zhang Tie's chest with icy eyes. Zhang Tie didn't move backwards either. He roared as he put forward one hand and broke her battle-Qi boom with his dark tore gloves. Meanwhile, he was 1 m away from that woman and started a real bloody close battle.

In such a short distance, Zhang Tie's javelin was useless, so was that woman's air-born battle Qi attack. Therefore, they could only attack each other by hands and feet. In such a case, the air-bore battle-Qi attack that couldn't be mastered until LV 10, became useless at once.

In this situation, they were matching nothing else but their physical quality, fighting skills and fighting wills.

Common LV 9 fighters could never match LV 10 strong fighters in such a case as they were widely different in all aspects, such as physical strength and responsive speed, except for Zhang Tie.

After eating so many seven-strength fruits and activating the rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie had obtained a blessing on swiftness and flexibility; his physical strength had completely surpassed that of a LV 10 strong fighter, so was his responsive speed. Plus the super powerful effect of iron-blood battle Qi and that pair of dark tore gloves, the gap between Zhang Tie and that woman on power

of battle Qi due to different levels was narrowed.

After the gap on aspects were offset, the two parties broke even. In less than 1 second, they had boomed more than 10 times by fists, palms and knees, causing consecutive muffles.

The woman in mask was vicious. Even then, that woman was still not flurried at all. Each of her movement was ferocious. She kept attacking Zhang Tie's eyes, throat, heart and crotch.

Zhang Tie sneered. Because he had cultivated himself in trouble-reappearance situations at the cost of too many lives and had obtained many bloody experiences, he had tempered each movement of iron-blood fist pretty well and could use each movement very briefly. As for close battle, although Zhang Tie was not sure whether he could defeat a fighting master or a great fighting master, he didn't fear about any strong fighters at all.

As for the strong fighters that he had met, Zhang Tie really didn't think that they could match his close fighting skills. Compared to common fighters below LV 9, strong fighters' physical qualities were improved in all aspects. Besides, strong fighters could release air-borne battle-Qi attack. However, air-borne battle-Qi attack could be ignored in a long distance or a very short distance.

The woman's movements were very vicious and sharp. Of course, Zhang Tie would not pity her at such a critical moment. Otherwise, he was seeking for death.

That man also arrived beside them in a wink. He wanted to join the battle. As a man, he should do that. However, at that moment, the man found that he couldn't make it.

The reason was simple. No matter how that woman moved, Zhang Tie still kept her between him and that man. If he dared to launch the attack, he would hurt his partner at first.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was like a shadow while that woman was a pole in the darkness and that man was the fire. He didn't

want to burn the pole as there was always a shadow between the fire and the pole.

The 3 people were all moving fast. The man was point A, the woman was point B. No matter how they moved, Zhang Tie would always stay on the extension line of straight line AB, preventing that man from joining the battle.

Each step forward or backward was a scenery.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie only blocked that man by staying at the relatively safe location; gradually, he enlightened the effect of "one step, one scenery" in this battle. He had a subtle feeling as he isolated that man as easy as moving his limbs.

The moment Zhang Tie moved, he would keep his opponents still.

His shadow moved with his body while his body moved with his heart. He might have seen through all the rules in the universe...

Zhang Tie seemed enlightening something in such a case. The 2 reward hunters completely changed their faces as they had not imagined that Zhang Tie could change a 2-1 battle into a 1-1 battle. How come such a powerful murderer only values 5000 gold coins?

"Damn it! Why did they tell us that this guy was LV 9 at the most?"

The man had tried 2 times to join the battle; however, considering that woman's safety, he failed as his forehead was oozing sweat all over. He realized that Zhang Tie's fighting skills in close battle were even better than O'Laura. Additionally, Zhang Tie had a very terrifying strength; plus that pair of weird gloves. O'Laura was not in the advantageous position after several times of close booms.

Finally, the battle came to an end with O'Laura's muffle as Zhang Tie pinched her neck fast by one hand...

Chapter 433: Hostage

"Let her go..." that man roared with fury as he wanted to charge at Zhang Tie. However, Zhang Tie slightly used his strength, causing that woman faintly groan. Hearing this, the man instantly stopped.

One's neck is the most fragile part. For commoners, when their necks were pinched, they might feel breathless; however, for powerhouses who cultivated battle Qi's, as long as fragile parts such as main arteries and central nerve vertebrae on their necks were pinched by others, they would be killed or lose their abilities to move or resist.

Neither did that man nor that woman imagine that result. In their opinions, the police station in Eschyle City made a fatal mistake on the intelligence that they provided to them. They made a major mistake on the level and real fighting strength of Peter. In their eyes, Zhang Tie was at least above LV 10 although he didn't reveal his battle Qi. To deal with such a sharp powerhouse, more powerful reward hunters were required.

"Se...tton...don't care about me, kill...him!" Although her neck was firmly pinched by Zhang Tie's hand, restricting her central nerve, she still raised her head as she squeezed out words through her teeth.

Not until then did Zhang Tie know that man's name. Zhang Tie then glanced at that woman. Although her face was hidden, her neck was elegant and slender with smooth skin. She must look beautiful. Being sharply compared to that pair of grim, dark tore gloves, Zhang Tie had an odd and cruel aesthetic feeling on her slender neck.

However, Zhang Tie had no time to appreciate beauty. Just now, he was almost killed by that woman for many times. If not having eaten a lot of iron-body fruits, his head might have been chopped

off.

Zhang Tie felt that he was like a negative character in knight novels. Only those negative characters would abduct women. But, if Setton and this woman didn't overreact at the beginning, I might have already escaped away, instead of staying here to play such a negative character.

Hearing the woman still urging to kill him at this moment, Zhang Tie directly punched her lower abdomen brutally, making her lower her body immediately.

Treat enemies mercilessly, men or women. This was what Donder had taught Zhang Tie.

"B*stard, stop, what're you doing? I'll kill you..." Setton roared on one side like a furious bull as his eyes turned red.

At the sight of that man's excited look, Zhang Tie wandered about the relationship between the man and the woman, a couple or siblings. "Why are they so nervous?"

"As a scapegoat, I don't feel very good. You'd better not stimulate me!" Zhang Tie sneered towards Setton and that woman, "What did you say? You want to kill me? Okay, come on!"

Setton truly wanted to pounce at Zhang Tie; however, after glancing at that woman, he became timid. Therefore, he could only pant heavily several meters away while glaring at Zhang Tie.

"If you let her go, we promise to not chase you anymore!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "Do you think that I'm that silly to trust a reward hunters' words? Don't be that naive!"

"What do you want?" Setton became a bit calm.

Hearing this question, Zhang Tie nodded inside, "This Setton is not silly; at least he knows I will not kill this woman right now; he knows I have demand." The moment Zhang Tie wanted to reply, he heard the voice of the female who had just recovered from that

punch.

"Setton, don't...believe in him, kill...him!" when the woman could breath smoothly, she started to whine once again. Additionally, she was glaring at Zhang Tie with a pair of hateful eyes, "I...I will kill you...you cannot escape...you b*stard!"

"Shut up, your life is in my hand. As long as I'm unhappy, I can kill you right now. Do you really think that I dare not to kill you?" Zhang Tie watched that woman carefully as he pretended to be very ferocious and gloomy.

"Ju...just...kill me. As you are in...ice and snow wildness, you cannot...escape" the woman urged.

"This woman was really strong-minded. Perhaps only such kind of woman could be a reward hunter. Given her voice, she was not too old; however, as she is LV 10, she must be unusual. Perhaps she had a deep background. Similarly, those women above LV 10 in Huaiyuan Palace were all came from Huaiyuan Palace or were closely related to Huaiyuan Palace. Such a figure could barely come out of an average family. Besides talent and great efforts, a person also required resources before becoming a powerhouse. In Huaiyuan Prefecture, it's not easy for a woman to reach above LV 10 with the resources of Huaiyuan Palace, not to mention those in the wild place like Ice and Snow Wildness. Even a man could hardly reach LV 10, not to mention a woman."

Considering for a short while, Zhang Tie got some ideas.

Seeing Zhang Tie becoming silent, the woman screamed, which was very jarring.

"Setton, kill...him!"

Of course that man didn't dare to move. However, Zhang Tie became furious at once. He drew out his dagger from his waist. Under the frightening look of Setton and that woman's scream, Zhang Tie skimmed over that woman's hair, causing a part of it fall

down the ground.

"D*mn it. From now on, if you dare to speak without my consent, this father will draw a wound for each sentence on your face. If you don't believe me, let's watch it! Women is not allowed to interrupt men's talk!" Zhang Tie said ferociously as he directly drew his dagger on the metal mask twice.

Hearing the jarring frictions between the sharp blade and the metal mask, the woman indeed shut up.

That b*stard Donder is right. Although some women were not afraid of death, none of them could accept their face being ruined. Even a very ugly woman would not like to be uglier.

The whole world became quiet.

Zhang Tie watched that man called Setton, "D*mn it, I almost forgot what I wanted to say after being interrupted by this woman!"

"I ask you what do you want?" Setton remarkably tried to control his anger.

"Oh, I get it!" Zhang Tie smirked weirdly, which even caused goosebumps all over him, "I want you to go back to Eschyle City to revoke my arrest order. After that, bring me the exemption document for this woman!"

"That's impossible!" Setton refused it right now.

Zhang Tie continued to skim his dagger on the woman's metal mask as he sneered, "There might be something impossible in this world, except for that revoking the arrest order of me! As long as it was done by people, it could be corrected!"

"Exemption is not that easy. Since the founding of Eschyle City, there's no exemption of arrest order at all. All the fugitives were finally caught or killed; only few of them had escaped away." Setton waved his head.

"The wanted circular was a mistake at the beginning. I truly have killed someone in Eschyle City. However, that man was a lackey of demon snake island. As I displeased demon snake island, I was chased by them. They wanted to kill me; I was doing that to defend myself. After killing that lackey, I was chased by Dawson, a round-table warrior from demon snake island. This pair of dark tore gloves belonged to him. After killing him several days ago, I took it. According to your description, the one who killed the previous 2 reward hunters with gloves must be Dawson. It's nothing to do with me!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the man changed his look.

"Do you have any evidence?"

"It's not difficult to find the evidence. That person being killed by me in Eschyle City was not coming out of air. If you survey that man's background, you will know his real status. I believe that Eschyle City could figure it out. As for the news about Dawson, the round-table warrior of demon snake island and this pair of black tore gloves, I think more people should have heard about them. You will know that I am telling the true after a simple investigation. Additionally, I met a wild patron of school of patron when I killed Dawson. He's Crell. He could tell you that I killed Dawson and got his gloves! He's heading for north to survey the animal tide of demon rats!"

Zhang Tie knew that the relationship between school of patron and bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wildness was harmonious. Because it was only an affidavit as a witness, it would not bring Crell any trouble. Therefore, Zhang Tie let them ask Crell. By contrast, Zhang Tie was in a big trouble; he needed help from Crell.

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Setton truly became silent as Zhang Tie had imagined.

"Now that you didn't do it, you can let go O'Laura first!"

"I'm sorry, I'm talking about the condition with you. I don't fully

trust you by releasing my hostage! Right a few minutes ago, you two even wanted to kill me. I don't know whether you are thinking about killing me now too. However, I would not test your credibility at the risk of my life. If you want me to set her free, you have to give me the exemption document..." Zhang Tie waved his head as he urged.

"You can go to Eschyle City with us to clarify what happened!"

"It's you who made the mistake. My time is very precious. I have no time to buy menu for your mistake at the cost of my time and my spiritual energy. Additionally, if I go back to Eschyle City at this moment, am I seeking for death? How come you 2 reward hunters protect me. My head values 5000 gold coins. You know that people could kill others even for 5 gold coins, not to mention 5000 gold coins!"

"What if I don't agree?" Setton narrowed his eyes right away.

"If not, I will kill this woman right now. After that, I will fight you. Perhaps, I can kill you. If so, you will see my name on the wanted circulars list in Eschyle City. Actually, I can leave Ice and Snow Wildness as I don't have any concerns here!" Zhang Tie's answer shattered Setton's last illusion. Setton was clear that all those who could reach such a high level in fighting skills were firm-minded. Those like Peter had been used to wander across the world. If he was Zhang Tie, he would also do the same as Zhang Tie. Nobody would like to be killed by others in such a case.

"Well, I promise you. But how do you protect O'Laura's safety?" Setton glanced at O'Laura.

"I can not protect her safety. But truly you have no other choices..." Zhang Tie glanced over that woman who wanted to kill him with a furious and hateful look before waving his head, "This woman has no plumpy butts or breasts. She doesn't look like a woman at all. I'm not interested in her either. As long as she doesn't threaten my life, I will not touch her!"

"Okay, I will go to Eschyle City right away. Hopefully, you can remember your words; otherwise, you will be regretful!" after glancing at Zhang Tie, Setton turned around and intended to leave.

"Hold on!" Zhang Tie stopped him as he pointed at that restrictive necklace over Setton's waist which was almost the symbol of reward hunters, "Give that thing to me, I cannot catch her all day long!"

Setton directly threw off the restrictive necklace before darting away...

Chapter 434: Zhang Tie's Pet

Zhang Tie watched Setton disappearing in the far. After that, he turned around and watched this woman.

The woman was still glaring at him; however, considering Zhang Tie's previous threat, she finally became quiet.

Zhang Tie stood there still; however, he didn't let the woman go. He kept this movement for 1 minute, 2 minutes to even about 10 minutes with a smile.

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard a roar from afar while Setton reappeared in the distance.

"Peter, you b*stard..."

"Remember, if you dare to play tricks on me, I will draw a wound on this woman's face!" Zhang Tie shouted towards him.

After losing his complaint towards Zhang Tie, Setton left once again. Zhang Tie knew that Setton truly left this time.

"How do you know that Setton didn't leave?" Being still caught, that woman gleamed her eyes behind her mask finally couldn't help but ask Zhang Tie.

"To be honest, I don't know about it either. I was just having a try. No matter what, I won't lose anything!" Zhang Tie shrugged casually.

Hearing this, the woman grit her teeth.

In the next few seconds, Zhang Tie caught that woman's neck with one hand while putting that restrictive rings over the woman's neck and wrists by another hand.

Restrictive necklace was a very senior metal restrictive tool. Although it seemed simple, it had a great power. As a combination of shackle and rune equipment, it could not be afforded by common policemen. However, for these senior reward hunters,

they always carried this regular equipment with them so that they could bring their targets back alive. Holding the restrictive rings, Zhang Tie smiled. Because the restrictive rings were made by Huaiyuan Palace, they were priceless. Zhang Tie had seen it in Hidden Dragon Island. It was really out of his imagination that he could apply it now.

The moment the restrictive rings were put on one's neck and wrist, its effect would combine with that of the rune effect on it. In this way, it could restrict one's movement and suppress one's fighting strength.

When being put on the restrictive rings, the woman started to struggle forcefully. However, Zhang Tie didn't care about that. He put them all on her neck and wrists brutally, causing some cracking sounds. After that, he drew the knob key out of the restrictive rings and started to grope blindly over that woman's body.

"What are you doing...argh!" The woman turned anxious as she screamed, thinking that Zhang Tie wanted to offend her.

"Of course I'm searching over your body. I don't want to be set up by your secret weapons. Considering that you're a captive, I have to search over your body before leaving!"

Zhang Tie didn't care about her response. He drew a dagger out of her waist. After that, he found a storage sac which contained various items, including another key of the restrictive rings. Of course Zhang Tie took away all of them.

Zhang Tie searched very carefully. After groping her waist, he started to grope her butts and thighs under her screams.

That woman was absolutely a female tiger. Seeing Zhang Tie squatting down to touch her thighs, she instantly raised her knee to attack Zhang Tie's face.

After wearing the restrictive rings, this woman's fighting

strength declined sharply. Her current fighting strength was only between LV 5 and LV 6. Seeing the woman's movement, Zhang Tie directly bumped against it with his elbow.

This time, the woman felt a pain. With a muffle, she almost felt down the ground.

Zhang Tie groped very fast and carefully. After colliding with that woman, he continued to grope from the woman's thighs to her insteps before moving upwards until her breast. Although Zhang Tie didn't mean to offend the woman, he had searched every place on her body, including her sensitive parts.

The woman slightly shook out of tension or fury; especially when Zhang Tie reached her breast, she became stiff all over at once.

Her clothes felt good. Although feeling a bit stimulative, Zhang Tie was not too selfish. After groping it over swiftly, Zhang Tie stopped. Realizing that he was just searching a person, the woman slightly recovered her composure. At least she didn't scream anymore. However, before Zhang Tie wanted to take off her mask, she screamed once again.

"If you dare to take off my mask, I swear to kill you no matter where you are!"

Seeing her firm will, Zhang Tie became stunned and he stopped. After glancing at that mask twice, he muttered, "Maybe she looks too ugly. Therefore she was afraid of exposing her real look to the public. Hmm, it's indeed possible. Those beautiful women always couldn't wait to show their looks to the public. If she hides her look, considering that no lethal weapon would be buried in the mask, it indicates that she has physical or mental problems more or less."

"Well, given that you're a woman, I will not take off your mask. Just take it as my special treatment. I will not offend you. After my wanted circular was exempted, I will let you go. Whereas, I have to warn you, if you want to play any tricks, I will not treat you that

politely anymore!" Zhang Tie became serious.

...

Zhang Tie then collected his two short javelins and left this valley with her.

Zhang Tie urged her to go southwest with him. Although she was unwilling to do that, the woman still followed Zhang Tie towards southwest.

Given her face, Zhang Tie didn't pull that alloy chain of the restrictive rings. If he pulled that chain, it was like pulling an indocile criminal. That woman also knew that Zhang Tie had left her with self-esteem. Therefore, she basically coordinated with Zhang Tie's plan no matter how hateful her eyes were.

After leaving the valley for a few kilometers at a medium speed, Zhang Tie forcefully scratched his head, "We cannot move at such a low speed. If I keep running at a cruising speed, I can run at least 400-500 km per day; but if I run at a high speed, I can move farther and arrive at the south region of Ice and Snow Wilderness in a couple of days; however, with this woman, my moving speed was greatly slowed."

Although the restrictive rings sealed the woman's abilities to a certain degree and stopped her from moving her Qi and body's blood fast, she didn't completely lose her ability to move. Zhang Tie wondered how fast could she run.

"How fast can you run now?" Zhang Tie asked that woman.

"How fast do you want?"

"As I want to reach the south of Ice and Snow Wilderness, at this speed, it would take us months to go there. Therefore, I want to speed up!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the woman gleamed her eyes, "Do you mean the Haidela Glacier Crack?"

"Right!" Zhang Tie was not afraid of telling her about his destiny; neither was he concerned about her tricks.

The woman slowed her tongue, "As long as you take off my restrictive rings, I can run as fast as you can!"

"You really take me as an idiot?" Zhang Tie sneered, "You know that's impossible as I'm not that silly. I know it restricts your abilities to a certain degree, but you could still match a LV 6 fighter. Additionally, you have not lost your resistance and basic physical strength! Therefore, I want to play a game with you!"

"What game?"

Zhang Tie revealed a evil smile. Glancing at her purple hair, Zhang Tie replied, "This game is called haircut. I will guide you in front. If you fall behind over 30 m from me, I will cut a lock of hair off your head until it's bald..."

Zhang Tie explained as he licked his lips in a very abnormal way. Meanwhile, his eyes became gleaming, "I like woman's bald head the most. Women with bald heads are very sexy. The round, smooth head is like a extra large breast; especially when their hair dropping off one lock after another. It was like how lovers drop tears. Heard that many women would like to have their hair cut for their favorite men. Heh...heh..." Zhang Tie revealed a strange smile, "If you slow me down, you have to compensate me for that!"

"Ah!" the woman screamed, "Stay away from me, you pervert!"

"It depends on your performance!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie started to run. The woman hurriedly followed him up. Zhang Tie was satisfied with such a game. However, he didn't notice the bright light that flashed across the woman's eyes after he turned around and started to run.

After cutting off her hair twice, Zhang Tie finally figured out her maximal moving speed. It was about 30 km to 35 km per hour. Although it was a bit slower, Zhang Tie was basically satisfied with

it.

Certainly, it was basically a joke for the woman to raid or escape.

...

Most of the paths were in woods. As they moved towards southwest, they saw more and more woods.

At dusk, they ran over 200 km. Finally, they found a small cabin at the foot of a mountain. At the sight of that cabin, Zhang Tie ran over there.

It seemed to be a temporary building made by neighboring hunters or lumbermen. Although it was not good, at least it was firm and could provide as a shelter. Some timber piers and a Chinese fireplace were in the middle of the cabin. Around the fireplace were some charred stones.

The floor was covered with a thick layer of dust. It seemed that it had not been visited for a long time. After a glance, Zhang Tie decided to take a rest here tonight.

"We will live here tonight!" Zhang Tie told her.

Although her face was hidden, but running after Zhang Tie for a whole day, her breast started to rise and fall. Remarkably, she was a bit tired. However, she didn't say it because of a strong self-esteem.

"I want to have a pee!" after a while, the woman finally posed it.

Zhang Tie smirked as he pointed at a bush over there, "You can go there; I promise to not peep it. You'd better clap your hands or sing a song, keeping the silent gap less than 10 seconds. Of course, you can attempt to escape; but I will catch you, and I will let you know the feeling of having a bald head!"

With a mask, the woman glared at Zhang Tie as she replied with a cold harrumph. After that, she walked towards that nearby bush. After watching her entering the bush, Zhang Tie indeed could hear

her clapping her hands.

After looking around, Zhang Tie smirked as he moved behind the cabin. In a wink, he took out some flesh of a dead demon rat from the underground iced cave of Castle of Black Iron.

If it had been stored in other iced places for a long time, it must be hard now. However, the iced cave in Castle of Black iron had been modified by Heller. The moisture and temperature inside the cave both reached the optimal critical points. Additionally, after consuming some aura values, this flesh would be as fresh as those having just been stored inside the iced cave.

The flesh of demon rat was still fresh. Zhang Tie washed it in a rivulet beside him. After that, he penetrated them with 2 sharp-pointed stick before taking them into the cabin. Zhang Tie then cleaved a small wood pier in the cabin and burned them in the fireplace.

The clapping sound behind the bush didn't stop. Zhang Tie understood that women were always troublesome. When she entered the cabin, she noticed the fire in the fireplace. Meanwhile, the flames were licking the demon-rat flesh on the 2 sticks in Zhang Tie's hands.

Although the flesh was not well cooked, it had already diffused aroma.

"Here is your supper!" Zhang Tie gave a kebab to her. Without any hesitation, the woman took it and continued to roast the demon-rat flesh on the opposite of Zhang Tie.

"Demon-rat flesh?" after roasting it for a few seconds, the woman sniffed twice behind the mask and identified the flesh on the stick at once.

"Heh, heh, what a sharp nose!" Zhang Tie smiled.

The woman gazed at Zhang Tie for a few seconds seriously, "Demon rats barely move outside alone; they only come out in the

deep night. How did you get this?"

Hearing the woman's question, Zhang Tie became faintly alert. He had not imagined that this woman was that deliberate. However, Zhang Tie still pretended to be cynical, "I forgot to tell you. Actually, I'm also a powerful animal controller!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the woman responded with a cold harrumph. Remarkably, she didn't believe in Zhang Tie at all. Zhang Tie didn't explain anymore; he only replied with a smirk.

"O'Laura, can you talk about you reward hunters? This profession sounds interesting!"

"It's nothing to talk about. We are paid to kill people!" the woman replied in a gloomy voice directly. It seemed that she had already frowned her forehead behind the mask, "I have to warn you, although I'm in your hand. As we are not familiar with each other, please don't call my name!"

After being refused, Zhang Tie rubbed his nose. As he had a thick hide, he was not embarrassed about that; instead he felt interesting, "Alright, I will not call you O'Laura. But I have to call you something. Especially gentlemen like me should not always call you "hi, there". I don't want to be that rude. Which one do you think is better, beauty or iron-face sister?"

After saying this, Zhang Tie watched that woman clutching that stick fast. Meanwhile, her breast rose and fell. After glaring at Zhang Tie, she turned over her head and became silent.

Although this beauty was terrifying when she lost her temper, Zhang Tie found that she was actually very cute.

"Now that you don't make any choice, I will help you choose. Given that you'd like to wear this mask and behave even more ferocious and cooler than men, I will call you iron-face younger sister!"

She didn't respond to Zhang Tie...

"Can you tell me something about Ice and Snow Wilderness?"

She still didn't respond to Zhang Tie...

"Tell me about your childhood! When did you start to wear this mask?"

The woman remained silence...

"Are you not satisfied with iron-face younger sister? I understand it. I'm afraid that you're older than me, it's not proper to call you younger sister. But it sounds good..."

The woman's breasts slowly started to rise and fall...

...

After a few minutes...

"Can I ask you a question? Do you wash your face with this mask?"

"Shut up!" the woman finally lost her temper while she stabbed that kebab towards Zhang Tie's chest fiercely. Zhang Tie burst out laughing as he moved backwards to dodge away.

...

After supper, the moon had already hung over the sky. Watching the increasingly darker sky, the woman leaned against the door-frame as she narrowed her eyes with a dubious look. Zhang Tie was kneeling down the ground outside the door with one knee in a pious way and muttering the prayers of school of patron.

However, Zhang Tie was activating the Great Wild Seal in Section "Summon" on the 1st storey of the All-Spirits Pagoda and pressed it into the mother land in front of him according to the steps in "Great Wild Sutra".

Mysteriously, when Zhang Tie pressed the Great Wild Seal into the mother land, he felt that it sunk in the ground like a stone was thrown into the pond, arousing ripples.

After a short while, In the woman's amazing eyes, a pair of green spotlights appeared in the bush. When they moved closer, O'Laura found that was a common wild wolf. It came in front of the cabin and stood there still, keeping its eyes on Zhang Tie...

Closely after the wild wolf, some more animals arrived, such as snakes, hedgehogs, pangolins, boars and leopard cats, causing low friction sounds. All the animals were standing quietly around the cabin and watching Zhang Tie.

Seeing more and more animals around the cabin, the woman in mask gradually showed a shocking look...

Zhang Tie was also shocked by this as he forcefully swallowed his saliva. He had not imagined that a great wild seal of section "Summon" was that effective. It had summoned so many LV 0 living beings.

With a series of sounds of flapping wings, a snow-white owl flew over here and fell on the roof of the cabin.

Zhang Tie really wondered what other animals will arrive if he kept waiting there. At the sight of that owl, Zhang Tie's eyes gleamed. While slightly raising his arm, Zhang Tie sent an order in his mind. Receiving his order, the owl flew off the roof of the cabin and fell on Zhang Tie's arm...

Zhang Tie activated the great wild seal in the section "drive" of the All-Spirits Pagoda once again, making it brighten up. When he fondled the owl, he pressed the great wild seal onto this owl. In a split second, Zhang Tie felt being connected to the owl spiritually.

"Is this my first pet?" Zhang Tie became very thrilled inside although his look remained unchanged. Although he used 2 great wild seals on the 1st storey of all-spirits pagoda, Zhang Tie didn't feel pitiful about that; instead, he became pretty thrilled, "What a great Great Wild Sutra!"

"Go! Go to the breast of the mother of land!" facing the woman,

Zhang Tie ordered those animals in a benign tongue. Of course, actually, he was just delivering an order from inside. Hearing his order, all the animals ran away at once.

Except for that snow-white owl, who was revolving and rubbing its head on Zhang Tie's arm in a very intimate way.

"Keep an eye on this woman for me. If she escapes in the midnight, don't forget to remind me about that. If someone else is coming, remind me too!" After saying that, Zhang Tie raised his arm, sending the snow-white owl flying in the air. However, it didn't fly far away; instead, it just rested on a big tree 20 m away from the cabin. After that, it kept gazing at that woman with its gleaming eyes.

The woman was completely stunned. Watching Zhang Tie, she asked in an unbelievable tone, "Are you really an animal controller?"

"I promise I'm real. How about the orthodox animal controlling skill of school of patron?" Zhang Tie revealed a smile, exposing his admirable white teeth...

Glancing at that owl, the woman became silent at once. With gleaming eyes, she was thinking about something...

Chapter 435: A Dangerous Night

On the 3rd evening, a snow-white owl flew around a small town Sciatta over 300 km away in the west of Eschyle City for a circle before flying towards a hill in the northeast of the small town.

The owl moved very fast. After a short while, it was already over 20 km away from the small town and disappeared in the woods. It finally fell on a person's arm.

Although owls were intellectual but they can never match humans. Therefore, they could not communicate with humans like how people communicate with each other. Even now, it could only communicate with Zhang Tie by flapping its wings.

Zhang Tie told it how to transfer information by flapping its wings. If someone was in front, the owl would raise its left wing; if it saw a building in front, it would raise its right wing. However, the well-behaved owl consecutively flapped its wings this time, which only carried one meaning.

——There were so many people and buildings in front...

Zhang Tie gained this message from the owl.

"Go, take a rest and eat something. Come back at night!" Zhang Tie raised his hand to drive the owl away.

After that, Zhang Tie took out a pioneering map and a compass. He started to study the map carefully.

"No need to check it anymore. It's town Sciatta in front. We've already arrived in the south region of Ice and Snow Wildness. If you walk towards west from here, you will see the Haidela Glacier Crack!" after being captured 3 days, the woman in mask finally opened her mouth as icily as before.

After putting away his map and compass, Zhang Tie watched this woman as he scratched his head, "I'm afraid that Setton has dropped you. How come there's no message in 3 days? I saw you

leaving many marks on the way here. Will he find us?"

Even Zhang Tie started to be perplexed. He was here for huge-wolf seven-strength fruits; instead of taking this weird woman to travel here. In the past days, the woman's look reminded Zhang Tie of being caught sight of running out of home without pulling on the zipper of the trousers by aunts in the neighborhoods. He didn't feel right, but he didn't know why.

Perhaps, this woman was too docile these days, which made Zhang Tie feel wrong.

Hearing Zhang Tie's questions, the woman behind the mask only responded with a cold harrumph.

As it was still early, Zhang Tie walked another 40 km towards west with that woman. Before dusk, they finally found a proper place to rest on the hillside.

He couldn't go to Sciatta together with this woman. This place was very close to Eschyle City. It was even already in the territory of Eschyle City. As this woman's mask and the restrictive rings were too eye-catching, Zhang Tie was afraid of having a big trouble if he was recognized to have captured a reward hunter.

Additionally, the road was gradually becoming populated. In less than 10 miles, They almost encountered several batches of pioneers.

Although they had awaited here for some time, Zhang Tie found that an increasing number of pioneers were pouring into Sciatta. Almost everybody was heading for the Haidela Glacier Crack. Zhang Tie wondered whether there were some new discoveries in the urban relics over there.

Standing on the hillside, Zhang Tie watched the vast field for a while before turned around, "We'll rest here tonight!"

...

They ate roasted potatoes in the evening. Last day, Zhang Tie

found some wild potatoes; therefore, he took some as today's grains.

In Ice and Snow Wildness, potatoes, which had an extremely strong adaptability, was a staple of the residents here. Additionally, cold-resistant wheat was also a grain here. The 2 crops were grown around many villages.

It gradually turned dark. Being reflected by the flames, Zhang Tie's face constantly loomed.

At the sight of a brook and a pond behind the mountain rocks, the woman insisted on taking a bath over there. Therefore, Zhang Tie let her go. Certainly, even if she was taking a bath, she still had to wear the restrictive rings. No matter what, the restrictive rings didn't influence her movement.

It took at least half an hour to roast potatoes, which could only be warmed up under ashes. While roasting it, Zhang Tie was thinking about his plan.

"If everything went well, after forming another 9 huge-wolf seven-strength fruits, I will return to Blackhot City to visit old friends such as Barley, Doug and those girls of Rose Association. If they like, I will pick them up and their family members and carry them to Jinwu Castle firstly. As for where they would go in the future, it's their choices. As the 3rd holy war between humans and demons was going to break out, Blackhot City was not a safe place.

For those girls of Rose Association, besides the gift that Zhang Tie presented them before leaving, he left nothing else to them. Although it was a bit ludicrous while being driven by sexual desire at that moment, without having to consider about the result, Zhang Tie was a bit sorry and concerned about those girls. No matter what, he was their first boyfriend.

When he recalled Blackhot City, Zhang Tie couldn't help remembering Miss Diana. Curiously, this time, he only missed her, instead of dreaming about the sophisticated, evil moments with

her.

Zhang Tie knew that he had grown up and finally walked out of the shadow of Miss Diana. The one who helped him grow up was another woman with cyan eyes. Zhang Tie fulfilled a ludicrous dream with her.

That woman knew that he had known whom she was. Zhang Tie also knew who was that woman. However, they both pretended that they knew nothing about the opponent's real status. By keeping this as a secret, they made it very interesting.

Ms. Olina's face was looming in Zhang Tie's mind like a waving fire.

"No matter what, the most important thing at the present is huge-wolf seven-strength fruit. However, if Setton doesn't show up, should I have to take that woman to travel around the wild?" Zhang Tie finally realized that the woman was like a princess. He could not kill her, beat her or leave her alone. Additionally, Zhang Tie had to provide her with food and drinks all day long.

As the old Chinese saying went, "Time reveals a man's heart". Perhaps he really could not treat the woman too viciously. His fake look as an evil person had been completely identified by that woman in less than 2 days. Therefore, the woman became increasingly bold. She even posed to take a bath herself. A man and a woman were in the wild while the woman was the man's captive. What did this mean? It was simply a defiance to the man.

"D*mn it. How low is the efficiency of Eschyle City. It's just an exemption order. How come it is still not solved until now!" Zhang Tie muttered as he turned over the potatoes under the ashes.

Right then, he heard a furious reproach, "Piss off...". It was the woman's voice. Zhang Tie immediately rushed over there with 2 short javelins.

When he arrived at the riverside, Zhang Tie saw 3 male pioneers.

They were smirking. The woman's clothes were piling on the stone. One of them even took up a black underwear of the woman obscenely and sniffed it, "How fragrant!" after saying this, the 3 men burst out laughing at the same time.

The woman was squatting in the brook while the flow had just covered her neck. Zhang Tie didn't know whether the 3 guys had seen her look or not. Actually, when Zhang Tie arrived here, he had seen her mask back on her face.

The woman was trembling in water. According to Zhang Tie's acknowledgement about that woman, he knew that was not due to fear, but fury.

"You 3, slap your own faces twice before rolling out of here!" at the sight of the situation here, Zhang Tie had already known what happened. The 3 pioneers passed by the riverside by accident or perhaps they were here to drink some water after hearing the water flow sound. However, they saw O'Laura taking bath in the brook.

The 3 pioneers were at their 30s or 40s. Given their looks, Zhang Tie knew that they were living poor. Although they were rude and obscene at the sight of a woman taking bath by accident, Zhang Tie didn't think that they should be killed because of this. Therefore, Zhang Tie planed to save their lives.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, although being in water, the woman still glared at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's intention was good; however, not everything in the world developed according to one's intention.

Seeing Zhang Tie running towards them, the 3 pioneers became slightly astonished as they prepared to defend. However, when they saw Zhang Tie's look clearly, they exchanged glances with each other before bursting out into laughter at the same time. They became relaxed right away.

Zhang Tie was like a 16-17 year old boy with some fine hair over his lips. In the wild, Zhang Tie's look was very tender! According to common sense, those who look tender always had poor fighting strength.

"Brat, you're really a playboy! Take a woman to play in the wild. Hah! judging from your tender skin and flesh, you really are hardcore. You put restrictive rings on such a enchanting beauty?" a taller one walked one step closer to Zhang Tie as he pointed at Zhang Tie with one finger in a contemptuous tone.

"Bolatti, I'm afraid that this brat is a young master of a rich family. He's here to play with his female servant! These rich babies must have been fed up with common women; they want different. I was told that these guys like to play rabbits, cats, dogs..." another pioneer added on one side as he narrowed his eyes and started to glance over Zhang Tie with weird, gleaming eyes.

"What rabbits, Ali, that's Bunny Girl. Average ones only require 10 silver coins; better ones require 20 silver coins. I've seen them in the inn of Kordy City. Amazingly, we have such a good fortune today..." another guy smirked.

The 3 guys exchanged their glances before revealing sinister smiles. A guy sent an order with his eyes. Receiving his order, the other 2 gradually left and started to surround Zhang Tie.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie was silent. However, the woman in water was so furious that she even trembled all over. Zhang Tie could even sense the fiery-eyes behind the mask.

Considering their looks, Zhang Tie realized that this event could not be easily solved today. As there were various pioneers, some of them could be Zhang Tie's friends such as Sam and Gerri whom Zhang Tie encountered on the Polar Light. Of course, there were also some craps and b*stards, such as the 3 guys in front of him. The moment they saw this woman taking bath here, they had remarkably revealed their evil nature. The existence of such

pioneers ruined the image of all the pioneers in someone's eyes to a certain degree. In someone's eyes, pioneers were all bandits, thieves and refugees. Pioneers were completely forbidden in some countries and cities on Waii Sub-Continent...

Zhang Tie waved his head as he slowly walked towards that tallest pioneer with his short javelins, "Now that you offend me, don't blame me then."

"Brat, if you're smart, you'd better..."

The moment that man finished his words, he had seen Zhang Tie stabbed his short javelin into his mouth and made it come out from the back of his head.

Zhang Tie moved as swiftly as lightning bolt. When he drew his short javelin out of that man's mouth, he saw the man standing still.

Seeing the most powerful one among them could not even insist on 1 second, the remaining 2 pioneers's legs paralyzed right away as they even started to pee. Realizing that they encountered a powerhouse, one of them became weak and knelt down the ground at once...

Before that last one moved 5 steps away, Zhang Tie instantly moved close to his back. Raising his short javelin, he immediately penetrated through that man's head with it.

When the 2nd one fell down the ground, the 1st one also fell down.

Zhang Tie then came to the front of the pioneer who was kneeling down the ground...

"Forgive me, forgive me please. I swear to not do that later..." that man kept kowtowing like pounding garlic into pulp. He dared not to raise his head at all. He was so scared that he even started to drop tears and run nose.

Standing in front of that man, Zhang Tie hesitated. Considering

that this guy was as timid as a rabbit, Zhang Tie planned to let him go.

However, at this moment, Zhang Tie heard the sound of water and a series of rapid rubbing sounds; however, he didn't turn around. A shadow with full killing intent had already arrived behind Zhang Tie. She picked up a pioneer's weapon before walking towards that guy kneeling down the ground. With a sharp slash, she chopped his head off. Zhang Tie hurriedly dodged one step aside in case of being sprayed by guy's fresh blood.

"Bang", the woman in mask dropped off her saber as she glared at Zhang Tie with fierce eyes. Meanwhile, she squeezed out some words, "None of your men were good things!"

"F*ck!" being involved out of no reason, Zhang Tie rubbed his face with a vacant look, "I didn't peek at you."

Before leaving her, Zhang Tie looked back. He found that the woman had already thrown her black underwear into the brook. Besides, 3 corpses were lying here. Given their looks, Zhang Tie knew that they only had a couple of gold coins at the most; therefore, he didn't feel like searching the booty at all. Waving his head, he returned to his fireplace.

Sitting beside the fireplace, the woman became silent. Seeing Zhang Tie walking towards her, she turned around and peered at Zhang Tie with a different look than that before.

"Why didn't you kill them at the beginning?"

"What if they saw you by accident? I think they didn't deserve death! I don't think that you will kill anybody who peek at you by accident!" Replying her, Zhang Tie walked back to his position. Meanwhile, he poked his short javelins into the mud, causing a sound of "Puff" and continued to roast his potatoes.

"I will kill anyone who see my naked body!" the woman answered seriously.

"What are you talking about, it's not big!" Zhang Tie muttered.

"What?" the woman raised her voice greatly as she became furious like a hedgehog who erected its spikes at once.

Zhang Tie also became irritated as he glared at her, "F*ck, this father means you have no good figure, plumpy butts or breasts. The 3 guys were idiots. As you also came to this world with naked butts, are you going to kill the doctor and the midwife?"

Panting heavily, the woman glared at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie glared at her too. When he thought that she was going to fight him, Zhang Tie found her gradually recovered her composure.

"I start to believe that you didn't kill the 2 wild bounty hunters!"

"Glad that you know it. If not being a scapegoat, nobody would like to stay with you all day long, except for idiots!"

The woman wanted to lose her temper again. After taking deep breaths several times, Zhang Tie found that the woman started to move the roasted potatoes in the ashes.

"What's going on? She's changed her mind?" Zhang Tie was a bit amazed as he became alert right away...

...

In the time after midnight, mist started to drift over the mountain. At the beginning, Zhang Tie didn't care about that. However, when he found something was wrong, Zhang Tie could not be able to move anymore. Although he struggled, he realized that his spiritual energy had been frozen by the weird mist. However, the woman who slept in the mountain cave was standing on his side. Along with that woman was a man with long beard, who was not Setton!

"Senior!" the woman lowered her head and greeted him.

"Is that him?"

"Yes! This man is a bit useful. He's an animal controller.

Additionally, he was polite to me these days. I suggest to keep him alive!"

Closely after the woman's words, Zhang Tie felt a headache as he lost his consciousness...

Chapter 436: The Grey Eagle Tribe

When Zhang Tie recovered his consciousness, he felt his head being cracked while his body was under a huge rock which weighed as heavy as 5000 kg.

He also recovered his memory. Zhang Tie knew that he was in others' hand. As for the weird mist, Zhang Tie was still confused about it even now.

He had recovered his spiritual energy. After sensing it, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh. As long as his spiritual energy was normal, he could protect himself at the critical moment.

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard a creaky sound. Meanwhile, his body was quivering. Therefore, Zhang Tie opened his eyes at once.

Zhang Tie saw a low, grayish black car roof which was covered with animal's hide and that woman in mask. The woman was sitting in the carriage with her back against him. She was crunching her legs and hugging her knees. Along with the carriage, she also quivered.

The moment Zhang Tie saw her, Zhang Tie felt that she was weak.

It seemed that the woman felt Zhang Tie's gaze. She turned around and stared at Zhang Tie.

Before Zhang Tie said anything, the woman had hurriedly adjusted herself to cross her legs once again.

"You woke up several hours earlier than what I expected!" The woman's voice was as icy as before.

"Well, actually, I think it's still too late. I don't even know when you started your plan!" Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile. The moment he wanted to pick himself up, he found one more thing over his neck and his wrists—the restrictive rings. Additionally, all of his items had been plundered, including his dark tore gloves,

purse, 2 rune rings and a double-carp swords.

"What a quick retribution! I've just confiscated her items several days ago, now it's my turn."

Zhang Tie struggled to sit up in the carriage; leaning against the wall, he panted heavily.

The moment he sat up, Zhang Tie's mind became clear. Although he still felt like getting up on the second day after being drunk, he knew that his basic moving ability was not weakened.

Zhang Tie saw the woman playing his "finger ring of eagle's eye" while his "finger ring of awareness" had been put on her left hand's middle finger.

The woman was staring at Zhang Tie with her gleaming eyes in a slightly joking and cool way.

The woman's eyes made Zhang Tie very uncomfortable. Therefore, Zhang Tie also prepared to make her uncomfortable, "If you put on my ring on your middle finger, it means that you're falling in love with me. I don't remember having agreed to accept you as my wife. My wife has to have a hot figure!"

Close after Zhang Tie's joke, he had known the outcome of teasing the woman. The woman stretched out her hand and punched onto Zhang Tie's lower abdomen at once. With a creaky sound, Zhang Tie had a churning stomach, causing him cough loudly.

Hearing this, Setton pulled open the curtain. As the carriage was heavily quaking just now, Setton thought something happened in the carriage; therefore, he checked it. At the sight of Zhang Tie's poor look, he understood it right away.

"O'Laura, we're 10 km away from the tribe!" after reminding O'Laura, Setton put down the curtain.

Because of the great strike-resistance ability brought by iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie recovered only after a few seconds. He then

gradually straightened up. "This woman was too vicious. That punch almost turned over my intestines. F*ck!"

"We're on even this time!" the woman said icily.

"On even?" this reminded Zhang Tie of the punch that he gave to that woman several days ago. "She still kept it in mind?"

Zhang Tie had a new recognition on women's narrow-mindedness.

"Alright, we're on even!" after taking deep breaths, he straightened up, "Can you tell me what happened? I want to know how I lost it!"

"What do you want to know?"

"All of it!"

"Setton didn't go back to Eschyle City; instead, he returned to the tribe. It's senior Merkel who helped us. He's also the priest of our tribe!"

"Tribe?" Zhang Tie widened his eyes.

"Of course, most of the bounty hunters above LV 10 in Eschyle City were powerhouses from surrounding tribes. After accepting the requests of the police station in Eschyle City, we will assist Eschyle City to chase those criminals in Ice and Snow Wilderness for rewards. This is our benefit from Eschyle City."

Zhang Tie finally knew his mistake. He was overconfident that he ignored an important message which looked trivial—the background of the senior bounty hunters in Eschyle City.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, now that these bounty hunters were dispatched by Eschyle City, of course they were under the jurisdiction of Eschyle City. However, actually, the backgrounds of these bounty hunters were more sophisticated. Although there were some bounty hunters in Eschyle City, the surrounding tribes around Eschyle City also had bounty hunters. Precisely, these

bounty hunters from surrounding tribes were not completely affiliated to Eschyle City; instead, their relationship was more like a collaboration.

If he had long known about the background of this woman and Setton, Zhang Tie would never have been that silly to send Setton to Eschyle City for the exemption of his wanted circular. The reason was only a matter of fact. In these people's eyes, it was just a matter of dignity, the dignity of their tribe.

A tribe which collaborated with Eschyle City dispatched bounty hunters to chase the escaped criminal; however, they were controlled by that criminal. Of course that bounty hunter was shameless to ask for exempting the criminal's wanted circular back in Eschyle City. If so, he would have been drowned by tribesman's saliva.

"Therefore, Setton did not go to Eschyle City at all. After realizing that he and this woman could not deal with me, Setton returned to his tribe to seek for relief force. However, I was still waiting for his news about the exemption of the wanted circular like a fool." Zhang Tie regretted.

"Where is your tribe?"

"It's in your target, the grey tribe in the south of Ice and Snow Wildness!" Zhang Tie could feel the sinister smile of the woman behind her mask.

"It turns out that I was entering her nest together with this woman."

Zhang Tie patted his forehead with a speechless and painful look, "If Donder knew that I could do such a silly thing, I'm sure he would jump and swear me 3 hours without repeating a sentence."

"This indicated the importance of the details. Because of the negligence of a detailed message, I deteriorate to others' prisoner. What an influential lesson and a high price!"

Zhang Tie sighed. He knew that it was his fault. "I'm really stupid!"

"What do you want to do with me now? If you want money, just let me go. I will give you 5000 gold coins as a payment..." Zhang Tie knew that human's greed was bottomless. Even though he could give them 50,000 gold coins at once, he would still be asked for more.

"I know that you're rich. You had 3 rune equipments and a non-rune elite equipment. Although I've been a bounty hunter for so many years, it's my first time to encounter such a rich man!" The woman sneered, "Do you think that you can buy everything with money? Or do you think I'm an idiot? Although our tribe is poor, I've seen 5000 gold coins. But you're much more valuable than 5000 gold coins!"

"Speaking of my items that you've collected..."

"Mine!" O'Laura in mask interrupted Zhang Tie before he finished his words. After that, he directly put the finger ring of eagle's eye on the other hand before declaring it righteously, "From now on, all of your belongings, including you are my personal properties. Do you know what is personal property? It means that from now on you are my slave according to the regulations of ice and snow wilderness!"

"Slave? F*ck!"

Zhang Tie was so infuriated that he was almost driven mad, "I can give you my belongings, but you should know that I'm wronged. I've not killed those 2 bounty hunters at all!"

"I know that you're wronged. But so what? Am I obliged to clarify it for you? Who're you?" O'Laura raised her face and stared at Zhang Tie proudly, "Don't forget that, you're still wanted now. You should appreciate me as I've not chopped off your head and go for the reward in Eschyle City. If you met another bounty hunter, you've already been a corpse. Do you think that you can still talk

with me like this?"

"What do you want?" Zhang Tie asked in a low voice.

"It's very simple. From now on, you should listen to my words and serve me. If you satisfy me one day, you might have your freedom back!"

Zhang Tie slightly narrowed his eyes...

"Never think about escaping, as senior Merkel has already planted a bone-exploding needles in your body. If you escape, you will explode. Don't blame me for not having warned you by then!" this woman seemed knowing what Zhang Tie was thinking about.

"Bone-exploding needles?" Zhang Tie was startled. He then checked his body carefully and found nothing was improper.

"You can try to run your battle Qi and check its effect."

Zhang Tie then tried to run his battle Qi; in a split second, he felt a sharp pain on all the joints and bones; meanwhile, he started to ooze big sweat drops over his forehead...

At this moment, Zhang Tie found that something weird was in his body. They felt like needles while lurking near his joints and bones. If not running his battle Qi, he would not find them at all. However, the moment he ran his battle Qi, he had driven them to swim all over his body. As a result, they stabbed into his bones, causing a sharp pain...

Because of the sharp pain, Zhang Tie panted heavily while widely opening his mouth. Although it was a transient period, Zhang Tie felt unbearable as being stabbed with over 10 nails.

"This is the unique skill of the priests in Ice and Snow Wildness. Only the performer could relieve it. As long as you don't run your battle Qi or escape, it would be okay. However, if you want to escape, the bone-exploding needles would lose its control and explode in your body. You are doomed to die then!" O'Laura said calmly.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie completely gave up his mind. "Restrictive rings plus bone-exploding needles. D*mn it! Am I that dangerous?"

Zhang Tie didn't know that in O'Laura's eyes, he definitely was the most dangerous person among all those O'Laura had met. Even facing a LV 10 strong fighter, O'Laura had not been that careful. Even the senior of her tribe could still not implement bone-exploding needles easily. However, O'Laura thought it was very necessary to implement it on Zhang Tie.

...

They arrived at their tribe in less than 1 hour after a 10-odd km travel.

When the vehicle parked, O'Laura pulled open the curtain of the carriage and jumped off firstly, followed by Zhang Tie.

The moment Zhang Tie got off the car, he had been pressed by Setton on his shoulders.

"Brat, if you want to survive a few days more, you'd better forget what happened that night. No matter who ask you about that, you only need to tell them you are caught by O'Laura. Besides me, you've seen nobody else. Am I clear? If I heard any rumors in the tribe, I will chop off your head..." Setton whispered to Zhang Tie. After the warning, he forcefully pinched Zhang Tie's shoulders.

"It seemed that Setton and O'Laura didn't want others to know that I was caught by the senior of their tribe." Zhang Tie understood it right away. However, he still had some doubts and was confused about the reason.

Although he was under their control, Zhang Tie was clear that he didn't need to suffer any loss for the alleged dignity.

"I'm clear!" Zhang Tie also replied in a low voice.

"O'Laura is not as bad as you've imagined. As you're smart, as long as you are not excessive, perhaps you will gain your freedom after some time!" Setton left a hope to Zhang Tie.

"May I know about my status..."

"Hasn't O'Laura told you about that?" You're her personal property. Precisely, you're her slave. This is the only status for those criminals being caught and kept alive!"

"D*mn it. I'm really a slave!" Zhang Tie swore inside with a bad look.

"Don't worry. Besides O'Laura, you don't have to follow the orders of anyone else!" Setton patted Zhang Tie's shoulders as he comforted him, "Follow me, we're entering the Grey Eagle Tribe. We have to walk on foot!"

...

Since he walked out of the back of the carriage, Zhang Tie finally saw the overall look of the vehicle which he was in. It was a simple animal drawn vehicle. The animal was like a yak, but bigger than yak. Besides, its horns were like that of deer's as they were fork-shaped.

"This is moose, which only lives in Ice and Snow Wildness. It's docile and features a strong resistance. However, it cannot move fast. After eating one meal, it could walk 2 days without rest and sleep. It's the best animal-drawn vehicle in Ice and Snow Wildness!" Noticing that Zhang Tie glanced at that animal several times, Setton explained to him.

Zhang Tie's vehicle was followed by a fleet of over 30 moose-drawn cars, which carried various items. After a glance, Zhang Tie found that the most of them were daily necessities. On a crate in the front, Zhang Tie saw the symbol of table salt. Besides, Zhang Tie saw clothes on other vehicles. Even a lot of items were piled on the top of the vehicle which Zhang Tie was in.

It was a wild-like prairie in the surroundings. The path in front was a small gentle slope, which was covered with vigorous weeds. There was a trace left by vehicles in the middle of the muddy path.

All the people of the fleet got off their vehicles from here. They started to push their vehicles. However, given their looks, they were very happy and energetic.

At this moment, O'Laura was ahead of the fleet. She was communicating with a senior.

Seeing them working so hard, Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed to walk with his arms crossed. Therefore, he also put his hands on the back of the animal-drawn vehicle which he was in just now and started to push it.

As the carriage of this vehicle was empty, the moose could easily draw the vehicle onto the top of the hill; therefore, Zhang Tie didn't use too much strength at all.

When he was on the top of the hill, he caught sight of a tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness which occupied about 1 square km and was covered with cooking smokes.

At the sight of the fleet, a long clarion sounded in the troop. Meanwhile, a squad of cavalries rushed towards them as they yelled.

Zhang Tie only put his eyes on that tribe and the cavalries for a short while before moving his eyes onto those huge canyons in the plain not far from here. Each of those cracks would be as wide as miles. They were like wrinkles on the face of the mother of land as they extended to the distance...

"Haidela Glacier Crack?" Zhang Tie finally knew where he was. He became spirited at once.

Those cavalries arrived in front of the fleet in a wink. When they were about 50 m away from the fleet, one of them screamed, "O'Laura, my dear cousin. I was told that you went out for business. I wonder whether you could help your Grey Eagle Tribe tide over this winter with the reward. Why do you work so hard? As long as you open your mouth, you can dispatch your men to

carry away whatever is in the warehouse of my tribe..."

Chapter 437: Weal and Woe

The voice was full of arrogance. It reminded Zhang Tie of those noble playboys in Blackhot City.

Soon after he finished his words, his cavalry had already rushed in front of the fleet and stopped over 10 m away. Zhang Tie saw no awe and hatred but mixed moods from the faces of those fleet members. Given this point, Zhang Tie knew that the relationship between the Grey Eagle Tribe and those cavalries was not tense.

The senior who was with O'Laura slightly lowered his body to greet him.

Most of the cavalries were riding a beast which was similar to the iron-horn beast of Norman Empire and rhinoceros, except for the one in the middle of the cavalries which looked pretty fierce and tall. It was about 2 m in height while a 1 m-long sharp sword-shaped tusk stretched out of its mouth. Its silver-grey silver had a eccentric texture of metal. Its gold eyes made people very repressive. The other beasts stayed away from it on purpose.

Sitting on the fierce beast was a tall man who was about 28 years old. The man looked complacent. Given his look, he should have a great fighting strength.

What caught Zhang Tie's attraction was that the most of the beasts were carrying a container. Each container contained a row of javelins. When in Kurgan Village, Zhang Tie knew that most fighters in Ice and Snow Wildness used javelins as a throwing weapon. However, at the sight of so many people carrying so many javelins for the first time, Zhang Tie became curious.

As a poor slave, Zhang Tie didn't speak; instead, he just stayed behind the crowd and observed what these guys wanted to do.

"Nurdo, what are you doing in the Grey Eagle Tribe?" O'Laura stared at those cavalries icily and asked straightforwardly.

"I have something to talk with you!" Nurdo replied casually.

"Talk about what?"

"Hah...hah..."

"I was told that the pioneers discovered an urban relic before catastrophe in the Haidela Glacier Crack. Pieces of star of god might also be discovered over there. Now, pioneers and powerhouses are heading for Haidela Glacier Crack from all directions for wealth. My darling cousin, facing such attractive wealth in front of our door, don't you have any plan?"

"I know very well about the real fighting strength of the Grey Eagle Tribe. We only do what we are able to do. If you want to find someone as your cannon fodder, you are finding the wrong person!" O'Laura sneered.

"Hold on, O'Laura..." Riding on the fierce beast, the man slightly straightened up and leaned forward while fixing his eyes on O'Laura, "Of course, it's impossible for us to strive for the pieces of star of god. When sword-sage-leveled powerhouses participate in it, it's nothing to do with us. However, do you know that something in the urban relics might be out of your imagination. Now that the relics were discovered in Ice and Snow Wildness, they should not be taken away by those pioneers from outside. Except for your Grey Eagle Tribe, all the other tribes in the south have already been prepared to organize people to take a look downside there. As your cousin, I'm especially here to notice you in case that you miss the opportunity!"

Hearing these words, O'Laura became silent...

Hearing that, Zhang Tie was also curious inside. He had not imagined that the discovery of the urban relics in Haidela Glacier Crack had gradually become such a hot topic. Even tribes here intended to take measures about it. However, relics were nothing but some antiques being buried under earth; especially the relics before catastrophe which was only less than 1000 years ago. People

could find nothing valuable but some scrap metals in the relics.

"O'Laura, if you want to participate in it, don't forget to take your bear-killing fighters to the estuary of Fitjar River 2 days later. As grey eagle tribe is a eagle-level tribe in the south of ice and snow wildness, you'd better not degrade your grey eagle tribe. If it turns into a grey mice tribe, it would be a laughing stock, hahahaha..." With arrogant laughter's, Nurdo flashed away with his cavalry.

After standing there quietly for a few seconds, O'Laura waved her hand, "Go back to tribe..."

...

It was only less than 2 km away from here to the grey eagle tribe. After a short while, the fleet had already arrived at the outside of the tribe.

This tribe was much larger than that of Kurgan village. However, there was no difference between the 2 villages on buildings, almost all of which were low cabins, except for a few tall and stony buildings. Based on the number and density of buildings, Zhang Tie estimated that this tribe contained about 30,000 to 50,000 villagers.

Seeing the fleet coming back, many kids ran out of the tribe to chase the fleet out of excitement.

"There's salt, I see it!"

"There's sugar, they're in the boxes!"

The kids screamed excitedly, especially after some guys of the fleet sprayed two hands of sugars towards them, they became more jubilant.

At this moment, O'Laura was like a super star. Walking in front of the fleet, she was greeted by others as she waved her hands towards those villagers.

Zhang Tie followed the fleet as he observed the surrounding

environment. Many villagers were breeding husbandries, most of which were moose, sheep, etc..

There were some simple processing workshops in the tribe, the most remarkable ones were processing Buckthorn wine. Zhang Tie had smelt the fragrance from afar. The ironware processing workshops were smoking heavily, causing tinkles. Some semi-finished sabers, swords, javelins and some daily products were hanging over the walls outside the ironware workshops.

Zhang Tie saw many women tanning hides, binding the well-tanned hides and piling them in the courtyard at the height of 2 m. After a glance, Zhang Tie almost sprung up, as he found that those hides were rightly of huge wolves. With off-white furs, they were bigger than common wolves.

If not so many people near him, Zhang Tie almost burst out laughing. The hides of huge wolves indicated that they could hunt huge wolves not far from here. "This means my huge-wolf seven-strength fruits are not far from me!"

"I was told that an animal tide broke out here, are there any huge wolves here?" Zhang Tie asked Setton casually.

"Hmm, there're so many huge wolves. However, we've been used to it. The tribe is safe. The priest of our tribe had implemented a bloody seal around the tribe. Therefore, huge wolves will not break in the tribe. Our grey eagle tribe has been living here for hundreds of years, we've long known how to deal with these beasts. Animal tide of huge wolves breaks out in every few years which would provide us extra gains. In the daytime, fighters in the tribe will take young men to hunt huge wolves; in this way, we can make money and practice them!", Setton didn't know why Zhang Tie asked him that; therefore, he didn't take any precautions about Zhang Tie and told him about the details.

"I heard the dialogue between that man and O'Laura, it seems that O'Laura is very influential in grey eagle tribe!"

"O'Laura's mom is the priest of grey eagle tribe; her father is the head of the tribe. O'Laura is doomed to be the head of our tribe. This tribe belongs to her. You tell me whether she's influential or not?" Setton muffled.

"Ah?" hearing this answer, Zhang Tie was really startled. He had not imagined that the woman in mask had such an influential position, "If so, why does she become a bounty hunter? This profession is very dangerous. Do her parents allow her to risk that?"

"Her parents have passed away..." Setton lowered his voice at once. He glanced at Zhang Tie with experienced and sympathetic eyes, "Human will always have to do something that they dislike, especially someone on the special position. Previously, when O'Laura's parents were alive, she was a naive, beautiful little girl. She didn't even kill an insect. I gifted her a rabbit when she was young, and when the rabbit died, she cried for 2 days..."

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie had realized what a woman, the successor of the tribe would face after losing her greatest dependence. It was like a kid who suddenly inherited a great sum of properties would always be robbed by some relatives. They might have already met one just now.

In a split second, Zhang Tie started to sympathize O'Laura.

"What about you? What's your position in the tribe?"

"I'm her head guard!" Setton replied. Hearing this answer, Zhang Tie finally understood why Setton became that nervous when he controlled O'Laura at that moment.

"Do you really want O'Laura to be the head of the tribe?"

"That's the meaning of my life. If not, I should have been dead 2 decades ago!" Setton explained.

Zhang Tie rolled his eyes, "If so, we need to discuss about it!"

"Don't play any tricks!" Setton looked around and warned Zhang

Tie in a low voice.

"Actually, I know that you and O'Laura are not bad guys!" Zhang Tie also lowered his voice, "If not because of the misunderstanding, I might not pose any threat to you. From the beginning, I didn't mean to offend you. Conversely, I really like to help my friends. Of course, not in the current status and condition..." Zhang Tie said as he raised his hands, showing the restrictive rings over his wrists to Setton.

"I will tell O'Laura about that!" Setton muffled. After that, he didn't speak to Zhang Tie anymore.

Zhang Tie nodded. He would like to try every possible way to change his current situation unless despair. Zhang Tie was not telling a lie just now. If it was advantageous to the cooperation between the two parties, the misunderstanding between him and O'Laura could really be dissolved.

After walking hundreds of meters in the tribe, Zhang Tie saw the tallest and most magnificent stony building in the center square of the tribe. It was built on a soil platform. Certainly, compared to those buildings in Yiyang City or Stars Viewing City, this building was shorter.

When the fleet was close to that place, 3 seniors walked out of the building at the same time. The one on the left was holding an odd-looking crutch with snow-white hair and beard. Although it was still a distance away from him, the moment Zhang Tie caught sight of that senior, he had a great sense of familiarity. Needless to say, Zhang Tie knew whom he was——senior Merkel, the priest of grey eagle tribe.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, senior Merkel triggered those bone-exploding needles right away. Zhang Tie immediately felt painful all over. Thankfully, the pains relieved right now, making Zhang Tie's heart pounded at once.

Senior Merkel was accompanied by two more people. Although

Zhang Tie didn't know about the other 2 people, he was sure they were also seniors of the tribe.

The fleet just parked in front of the soil platform.

O'Laura walked towards those 3 seniors directly. When she arrived there, she talked something to them. After that, the 3 seniors walked into that building. However, Zhang Tie felt that Merkel glanced at him before turning around.

Seeing people coming here to count and remove items off the vehicles, Setton took Zhang Tie away from here. After walking for a short distance, they arrived in front of a small cabin.

...

"You live here temporarily. Don't expect to escape. You can not bear the effect of bone-exploding needles. Do not take that as a joke at the risk of your life! At night, someone will send you food!" After saying that, Setton had one people keep an eye on Zhang Tie outside the cabin before leaving.

Watching this simple cabin and that young man who was standing outside the door, Zhang Tie became quiet. He then sat down on the wooden plate with crossing legs as he injected some spiritual energy into Castle of Black Iron.

"Heller, can you hear me?"

"Castle lord, Heller is waiting for your order at any time!"

"Do you know what I'm thinking about?"

"As long as castle lord enters Castle of Black Iron, I can help you take off the restrictive rings at once. However, there's a bit problem with the bone-exploding needles..."

Zhang Tie's heart pounded hearing Heller's reply.

"What's the matter with the bone-exploding needles?"

"You have to clean it off by yourself!"

"By myself? How can I clean it off?"

"Haven't you tried it just now?"

Zhang Tie thought about it for a short while, "Do you mean that I can clean off the bone-exploding needles after running my battle Qi?"

"You got it. Bone-exploding needles is a secret method used by priests in Ice and Snow Wildness. Those being planted into your body are not real needle-sized metal objects but an energy formed by priests' special battle Qi at the cost of their spiritual energy and cultivation. Essentially, the bone-exploding needles are a dynamic energy that could be controlled by human. When they bring you sharp pains and harms, they would decrease at the same time!"

"You mean each time I run my battle Qi I would be able to decrease the energy of the bone-exploding needles while being attacked by them?"

"Yes, when they hurt you, they weaken their own energy at the same time!"

"If bone-exploding needles could be cleaned off so easily, how could the priests in Ice and Snow Wildness control people by them? Won't each one clean it off by bearing the pains?" Zhang Tie hit the point. Now that this weapon could be dissolved so easily, it would be useless.

"Theoretically, it's true. However, people can not easily clean it off. Each time bone-exploding needles attacked a person, it would bring a sharp pain to him; although its energy declines, it won't weaken the pain. Am I clear? If each person could feel the same sharp pain when cleaning off the bone-exploding needles, how many times can he bear it? 1 times, 10 times or 100 times? As human, one prefers to stay far away from the same sharp pain!"

"You mean, the mechanism of action of the bone-exploding needles is like a erecting cone-shaped container, which is full of

water. And I connect water faucet to its bottom; each time I turn on the water faucet, I would have water flow out constantly. However, its flow remains unchanged. Although the water inside the container gradually decreases, I don't know when all the water flow out until the last moment!"

"Correct. Before all the water run out of the cone-shaped container, as long as you adjust the water faucet to a certain position, you will get constantly same pain. Additionally, I believe that those people being controlled by the bone-exploding needles might not know that they were consuming the energy of bone-exploding needles when they ran their battle Qi's. Being controlled by this secret skill, one would not see any hope of freedom! Even the priest who implements this secret skill might not know that the energy of bone-exploding needles could be consumed in this way."

"Will it harm my body?"

"This is the second point I want to say. After eating so many iron-body fruits, you can bear the great harm of bone-exploding needles. Additionally, with preliminary recovery body, you can recover quickly. Therefore, you might be able to dissolve the bone-exploding needles!"

"What about commoners?"

"Based on commoners' endurance capacity and recovery ability, 99% of them could not clean off the energy of bone-exploding needles as the accumulative effects of the bone-exploding needles could easily kill him by consuming all of one's essential Qi. O'Laura is right. Besides the priest himself, nobody else could clean off bone-exploding needles!"

Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh as he felt being free once again, "How long can I clean off these bone-exploding needles?"

"Based on your current maximal endurance ability, it will take you 5 days to clean them off, 5 times a day, 20 minutes per time.

But I need to warn you that the priest could sense it the moment you completely clean off the bone-exploding needles!"

"If I escape now, will the bone-exploding needles take effect and kill me right away?"

"Yes, they will!"

"What if I could run far away?"

"It's the same outcome. This weapon is like a remote-sensing crystal and electro-magnetic wave. Like many twins could sense each other's poor condition no matter how far they are from each other, as long as it is in the same space with you, its sensing distance will remain unchanged.

"Whether I could be easily killed by that old man if he wants?" Zhang Tie asked out of his concern. If it was true, it was nothing different than being waiting for death.

"Not as worse as you imagine. It takes some time to trigger their energy. Actually, it's not as sharp as real explosions. It takes 40-60 seconds to release its energy sharply. By then, you can enter Castle of Black Iron. After that, the space barrier could cut off that one's sense and manipulation to the bone-exploding needles!"

Hearing this explanation, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh. "If it truly comes to that worse situation, I have to clean off the bone-exploding needles in Castle of Black Iron before coming out. Hopefully, it doesn't come to that step. If not, since coming out of Castle of Black Iron, I have to change my look and leave Ice and Snow Wilderness at once in case of potential dangers. I've not imagined to encounter so many troubles for seven-strength fruits."

Knowing what Zhang Tie was thinking, after talking with him for a while, Heller finally gave Zhang Tie a surprise.

"Don't worry, Castle Lord, actually, you will have some benefits from these bone-exploding needles."

"Benefits? What benefits?"

"When you will consume the energy of bone-exploding needles, you will be bearing the attacks of bone-exploding needles. In this course, the growth of iron-body fruits will be accelerated. I've calculated that if Castle Lord could completely clean off those bone-exploding needles, you could obtain at least 3 iron-body fruits as a payment!"

"3 iron-body fruits?" after being stunned for a short while, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

"There's another good news."

"What good news?"

"We've got the 1st mutated and evolved Buckthorn seed!"

Chapter 438: Oh, I See

A wholly-new Buckthorn seed came into being in Castle of Black Iron!

This was the best news that Zhang Tie had ever heard in this period.

"What's the difference between the new Buckthorn seed and that of before?" Zhang Tie asked Heller in mind.

"New Buckthorn seed's adaptability to environment is 27% greater than that of the old ones. They have a greater viability. They could live in colder and dryer regions. Actually, the new seed could survive all the regions in Ice and Snow Wilderness whereas old Buckthorn seed could not."

"Besides, new Buckthorn seed could increase the fertility of soil by 12%. Soil with the new Buckthorn seed has higher activity. As a wholly-new species, new Buckthorn seed is different from the old one in many aspects. The size of new Buckthorn seed is 15%-20% bigger than that of the old one. Additionally, it tastes better; plus, a new Buckthorn tree's output is 8%-14% higher than that of the old Buckthorn tree. What's more is that new Buckthorn seeds and tree leaves contain some aura values!"

"New Buckthorn seeds and tree leaves contain some aura values?" Zhang Tie became slightly stunned.

"Right, original Buckthorn seeds and tree leaves contain few aura values; however, the aura values in new Buckthorn seeds and tree leaves has increased by over 300%!"

"How long do I need to wait until Castle of Black Iron provides these new Buckthorn seeds to me?"

"At least 1 month. By then, Castle of Black Iron could provide Castle Lord with about 15 kg of new Buckthorn seeds. From then on, the provision will remain unchanged in each month!"

"As most of the land in Castle of Black Iron has been used, there's few vacant land available. If we want more new Buckthorn seeds from Castle of Black Iron, we have to expand the arable land in it. Therefore, we need a great quantity of energy storage!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he finally came back to this problem, which was really annoying——no matter how many things he moved inside, he still could not cater to its demand.

"Do you have any good suggestions to solve this problem?"

"Unless Castle Lord returns back to the sea!"

"You mean this is the only method to increase the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron?"

"It depends on your personal ability. If you are able to lift a mountain, just drop it into the Pool of Chaos!"

"Alright, I will deal with this problem later. I'm already very happy to have obtained new Buckthorn seeds. I've got a lot of problems to deal with." thinking about this, Zhang Tie gradually recovered his composure.

"What's the name of the new Buckthorn seed?"

"It's waiting for you to name it!"

"Now that it appears in this age, just call it black-iron Buckthorn as a souvenir."

"Fine!"

After communicating with Heller, Zhang Tie started to consider about the current problem in the small cabin.

He could not consider other problems; but he had to clean off the bone-exploding needles as fast as possible as its threat to him was like worms gnawing his bones. It seemed that he had 2 methods to eliminate the threat of bone-exploding needles.

"The 1st method is that I have to seek a chance to escape right away. If I leave the grey eagle tribe, I have to find a remote place

and enter Castle of Black Iron. After that, it will take me a few days to remove the threat. Although this method was feasible but the moment the senior of the grey eagle tribe sensed that the bone-exploding needles disappeared in my body, he would find the secret of Castle of Black Iron. If this secret is exposed, whether there will be consecutive bigger troubles, whether could I still stay in Ice and Snow Wilderness to continue the plan to improve my fighting strength."

"The 2nd method is that I will continue to stay here. I will keep consuming the energy of bone-exploding needles in my body until there was only few left. By then, even though the bone-exploding needles are activated by the senior, they will not threaten my safety anymore. After that, I could take the remaining ineffective bone-exploding needles as a cover so that I could collect 9 huge-wolf seven-strength fruits. Soon after I reach my target, I will return to Blackhot City."

"The benefit of the second method is remarkable. However, as a slave in grey eagle tribe, I might not be able to move freely here. Therefore, I need to make a good plan for that."

When Zhang Tie was racking his mind, he saw a young man standing still just outside the door. After that, he revealed a smile. "As I'm new here, I'd better figure out the situation."

Zhang Tie got off the bed. The moment he opened the door, he saw the young man's head who was staring at Zhang Tie full of alert while putting his hand on the handle of the saber.

"You can not escape from here. Go back!" the young man told Zhang Tie with a cold face.

"Easy, buddy, I'm just taking a fresh breath; it's a bit stuffy inside!" Zhang Tie told a lie as he returned into the room.

Seeing Zhang Tie moving back, the young man moved his hand off the handle of the saber.

Zhang Tie then sat on the stool against the door. After that, he put his hand inside his pocket and took out 2 gold coins from Castle of Black Iron at once.

He started to flip the 2 gold coins. Soon after the 2 colliding gold coins caused several crispy sounds did that young man turn around once again. At the sight of the 2 brilliant golden coins in Zhang Tie's hands, he forcefully swallowed his saliva as his eyes gleamed.

What did Crell say? Gold coins could turn demons into donkeys who only knew about pulling the milestone for grounding grains. Even demons could not stand the allure of gold coins, not to mention mortals. Perhaps someone truly didn't like money, but there was few such people. At least from the look of this young man, he was a member of the mortals. He had not been as noble as treating money as feces.

"It's really boring to stay here alone. If you talk with me, you will have 1 of the 2 gold coins, how about that?" Zhang Tie started to allure him.

"Do not dream that I can let you go!" the young man became very alert. Although with eyes fixed on the 2 gold coins, he was still sensible.

"Look, how dare I escape. I'm just chatting with you. I swear to not walk out of this door!"

"Don't expect to get the secret of grey eagle tribe from me either!" the young man waved his head once again.

"You're wrong. I'm not a mole or detective. You don't need to tell me any secret. You just talk to me about the information that each villager knows. Look, I'm neither a subversive nor saboteur; otherwise, Setton would not allow me to keep my gold coins. Am I right?" Zhang Tie revealed an innocent smile.

"Is that...true? Only by chatting with you can I obtain 1 gold coin..." the young man became excited right away.

"Of course, O'Laura is too poor. She lost her parents 2 decades ago. If not Setton and senior Merkel, I don't even know how can she survive so many schemes!" Zhang Tie sighed like he knew well about the situation of grey eagle tribe, "Look, I just want to chat with someone!"

Zhang Tie's words dispelled the young man's final concern. In the next half an hour, Zhang Tie almost knew everything that he wanted to know from the young man. As a result, the details of the whole grey eagle tribe started to become clear in Zhang Tie's mind.

Before eight, O'Laura was living like a princess in the grey eagle tribe. She was very beautiful. What was more important is that she had showed an extremely high talent in cultivation since she started to learn how to walk. She was identified as a cultivation talent who would not appear in the grey eagle tribe for 100 years by the priest in the tribe. Her father was the head of the tribe while her mother was the most beautiful woman in the tribe. At that time, someone said that her mother was not only the most beautiful woman in the grey eagle tribe, but also the most beautiful one across Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Born in such a family, O'Laura should have lived a dreamlike life; however, the reality was cruel. When her mother's beautiful look became increasingly well-known in the south of Ice and Snow Wilderness, troubles arrived. A group of bandits which was influential across the south prairie of Ice and Snow Wilderness fixed their eyes on her mother. When O'Laura's parents made a cruise with a few fighters, they were raided by those bandits. As a result, O'Laura's mother was robbed away.

What was worse, O'Laura's father died in the raid. O'Laura's mother chose to commit suicide in order to resist those bandits's offense. From then on, O'Laura's life completely changed. Although those bandits were finally swept by the allied tribes in the south of Ice and Snow Wilderness, O'Laura couldn't return to her previous life anymore.

After the death of O'Laura's father, the other 2 seniors of the tribe who were docile previously started to have evil thoughts. After taking the power of the tribe, they didn't want to give it back to a girl. Additionally, many people were casting grey eyes on the fertile land of grey eagle tribe. They wanted take down the grey eagle tribe by controlling O'Laura.

Therefore, as was imagined, O'Laura was facing a pretty great stress in daily life.

Not to mention those outside the tribe, even Juventus and Ollier in the grey eagle tribe were definitely the biggest obstacle in O'Laura's way to take the power of the tribe. Now, Juventus was the financial minister of the tribe while Ollier controlled over 2/3 of the total armed forces of the tribe with the help of his sons and his trusted followers.

With the support of Setton and senior Merkel, although O'Laura was the official successor of grey eagle tribe, her force was limited.

Although there was a conflict between Juventus and Ollier, they had reached a tacit agreement on dealing with O'Laura and preventing O'Laura from taking the power of grey eagle tribe. Not only providing even 1 copper coin to O'Laura, Juventus even always asked a lot of money from her at the excuse of many improper reasons. Therefore, it became harder for O'Laura to establish her force and majesty in grey eagle tribe. Therefore, O'Laura chose to be a bounty hunter. On one hand, it indicated that she had a great fighting strength; on the other hand, she had no other choices. She had to make money.

Although Juventus was treating O'Laura by not providing her with money but still saved her face to a certain degree; however, Ollier was almost shameless.

Ollier always declared to the outside that the only condition for O'Laura to take the power of the tribe was that she had to marry one of his son. Only by this could the grey eagle tribe not be

annexed by other tribes.

After knowing the details, Zhang Tie finally understood why Setton told him to not reveal the message that senior Merkel helped him and O'Laura to deal with him. If not, it would be a great strike to O'Laura's dignity in the grey eagle tribe.

How come a woman being captured was qualified to be the head of a tribe? Zhang Tie understood the situation of O'Laura now. "I'm really a freak, maybe I'm the first one to defeat O'Laura since she became a bounty hunter!"

"Actually, for O'Laura, the safest way was to directly kill me on that night after I was controlled by that senior Merkel. After that, she could even take my head for bounty. However, she didn't do that. She kept me alive." Zhang Tie felt mixed moods immediately.

After learning that, Zhang Tie couldn't forget the scene when the slender woman hugged her knees alone in the carriage.

...

2 hours later, someone brought Zhang Tie with his supper. It was just a brown bread, fresh water and a cup of Buckthorn wine. When Zhang Tie was having them, he heard a noisy sound outside the cabin.

"What are you here for?" the young man asked.

"At the order of senior Ollier, we're here to execute the criminal that was brought back by O'Laura!" another arrogant voice sounded.

"None of you is allowed in!" the young man replied furiously at once.

What a pity! Zhang Tie heard a sneer, "Break in..."

...

Chapter 439: Being Bloody or Not

Hearing the sounds outside the door, Zhang Tie figured out 2 things right away. "Firstly, the news that I am in the grey eagle tribe had been spread; secondly, the other 2 seniors of the grey eagle tribe seem reluctant to let me survive here given that they want to ruin O'Laura's dignity or kill her possible helper in the future."

"Setton and O'Laura might not know what's happening here. These b*stards want to make it a vested fact before arguing it with O'laura. No matter what, I'm just a criminal, an outsider. O'Laura would not reach a deadlock with the other 2 seniors because of me. Therefore, they're not afraid of killing me first."

Hearing the sounds outside, an icy light flashed across Zhang Tie's eyes; for these b*stards who wanted to kill him, Zhang Tie didn't pity them at all.

"You're seeking for death!"

After the mutter, Zhang Tie bottomed up the remaining Buckthorn wine.

Only after a few seconds, the young man was down to the ground.

"Setton would not forgive you..." the young man still exclaimed.

"Clog his mouth!"

"Wuh...wuh..."

The moment the young man's voice disappeared, the door of the cabin boomed open by feet...

At the same time, Zhang Tie lifted the solid-wood table of over 200 kg in weight by the hands and threw it towards the door forcefully like patting a fly...

Being influenced by the restrictive rings, one could not run his Qi

and blood rapidly or move quickly. Also being influenced by the bone-exploding needles, one could not run his battle Qi; if it was anyone else then after being influenced by the 2 restrictive weapons, they could only have 20% of their overall fighting strength left.

However, Zhang Tie was different. Even though he could not run iron-blood battle qi, he had eaten a lot of seven-strength fruits, which granted him with brutal strength. Although the running speed of Qi and blood in his body had slowed down, Zhang Tie could still keep running dozens of km like a wild wolf without affecting his heart rates. The strenuous exercises of commoners were as easy as taking a walk in the courtyard for Zhang Tie. He could still exert 60-70% of his overall brutal strength; therefore, Zhang Tie was not afraid of the coming battle at all.

Additionally, his battle awareness would not decline due to the existence of restrictive rings and the bone-exploding needles.

The one who broke in first was miserable at once.

Before that one saw clearly the inside of the room, he had been pounded by a table which was longer than 2 m and wider than 1 m. Hearing a wuthering sound, he intended to resist it by hand, then...

Then...it came to an end...

With the terrifying sound of broken bones, the first one sprouted out fresh blood from his ears, eyes, nose and mouth like a tomato being struck by baseball. Meanwhile, he was sent flying back with a faster speed like a cannonball being launched.

A series of shrill cries sounded outside the door...

Zhang Tie patted his hands before moving the thick, heavy solid-wood table back to the original position. After that, he slowly walked out of the cabin and looked at what was going on outside.

7-8 people were lying on the ground in a row of over 20 m from

the door to the outside, some of which had been unconscious while the rest were groaning on ground.

Additionally, 10 more people were scattering nearby with weapons in hands. They all looked flurried.

The young man's mouth was clogged by cloth; meanwhile, he had been bound by rope. Lying on the ground, he was staring at Zhang Tie with widening eyes like watching a monster.

At the sight of such a scene, Zhang Tie revealed a cold smile. Crossing his arms, he glanced over those men, "Who wanted to kill me just now?"

"Kill him!" a man holding a broad axe screamed with red eyes. Receiving this order, the other men roared and rushed towards Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, the man with the broad axe emitted a battle-Qi totem of huge-centipede and joined the battle.

At this moment, Zhang Tie charged out like a leopard and thrust into one's chest like how a bear hit a tree.

The opponent's chest sunk instantly as he was sent flying back in the air while spurting fresh blood.

At the same time, another one hacked his machete towards Zhang Tie. Seeing it, Zhang Tie slightly moved his body to dodge it away. After that, he stretched out his hand and gripped the man's wrist before waving that man for a circle like waving a straw...

As a result, 2 more people were sent flying backwards. At the same time, 5 more weapons fell on that poor man. The guy with the broad axe even directly chopped off one of that man's leg...

"Ah..." the poor man uttered shrill cries. Zhang Tie then loosed his grip and sent him flying backwards at once. As a result, he hit another man before flying together with that man 10 m away after running down the wooden fence of the courtyard.

When the poor man flew away, his machete fell into Zhang Tie's hand. Almost at the same time, Zhang Tie raised his machete to

crash the LV 7 fighter's broad axe. The moment the collision happened, the parts between the opponent's thumbs and index fingers had been split, causing fresh blood flowing out. He could not hold fast the 40-50 kg broad axe anymore; instead, the axe flew out of his hands. Meanwhile, he was quaked 2 m away by the huge strength from Zhang Tie's machete.

Another 2 swords and sabers carried towards Zhang Tie at the same time. With a sharp sweep, Zhang Tie directly broke the blades of the 2 weapons. With another sweep, he sent 2 heads flying in the air...

...

In the stony building on the soil platform in the central plaza of grey eagle tribe, O'Laura was communicating with the 3 seniors. At this moment, a person trotted in and whispered at O'Laura's ears before leaving quickly.

"Senior Ollier, why are you doing this?" the moment O'Laura heard the report, she had stood up and smacked onto the wooden table, breaking it at once. She was so furious that she even started to quiver, "I caught Peter. He's my captive and my personal property. How can you send your men to execute him without my consent?"

"Are your sure..." Ollier smirked. He directly ignored O'Laura's fury. He picked his ear with a finger before blowing off the earwax. After that he explained briefly, "Probably my men misunderstood my order. I was told that Peter was a wanted criminal. He's very dangerous. I'm afraid that if he escapes, he might bring dangers to the tribe; therefore, I let Coca to take some men to assist the guard. I will punish Coca when he comes back. How silly he is!"

After saying this, Ollier glanced at the other senior at the table.

"I was told that Peter's head was worth 5000 gold coins. Although this was a misunderstanding, it's not bad to kill him. I suggest to punish him to guard the pasture for 1 month. With 5000 gold

coins, our grey eagle tribe could easily tide over this winter! We can store a lot of things!" Another old guy narrowed his eyes, "O'Laura, I've not imagined that you could lose your temper towards the senior of our tribe for an outsider. Do you think that the murderer being wanted by Eschyle City is more important than the well-being of tens of thousands people in the grey eagle tribe? How do you think, senior Merkel?"

Holding a walking stick, senior Merkel was expressionless, "As we are in grey eagle tribe, of course, the well-being of our clansmen counts the most. As the only successor of grey eagle tribe, the whole tribe is O'Laura's home. I think O'Laura knows it clearly without having to be warned by senior Juventus. I think that all the clansmen know clearly what O'Laura has done for the tribe over these years. Nobody would doubt about O'Laura's affection for the grey eagle tribe!"

Listening to senior Merkel's words, Juventus smirked. After glancing at Ollier, he also became quiet.

After glancing at Juventus and Ollier, O'Laura turned around and left the room immediately.

"Let's take a look over there. If O'Laura becomes too impulsive that she punishes Coca for a criminal, it would be bad..." Ollier stood up and followed O'Laura out of the room. He knew that Coca's group could not defeat O'Laura. As O'Laura is furious at the moment, he had to help Coca, "heh heh heh..."

After exchanging glances with each other, Juventus and Ollier also followed O'Laura out of the room.

...

In less than 3 minutes, Zhang Tie had almost killed all the opponents outside the cabin. The courtyard was covered with blood, broken limbs and heads. Over 10 people's corpses were scattering everywhere.

The LV 7 fighter was lying on the ground. With pale face, he looked pretty embarrassed. His clothes was covered with blood stains while his right hand was lost. Stepping on his chest, Zhang Tie was going to chop off his head...

"Stop..." a furious voice drifted over there. Zhang Tie then stopped his movement. After raising his head, Zhang Tie saw a lot of people trotting towards him.

Those in the middle of them were O'Laura and the 3 seniors of grey eagle tribe. At the sight of the current scene, besides O'Laura whose look was hidden behind the mask, all the others were shocked.

The one who stopped Zhang Tie looked especially bad. It looked like that he wanted to eat Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie remembered this long-face old guy as it was the very guy who glanced at him many more times when he left the fleet.

"Old man, who are you?" Zhang Tie squinted at that man.

"Audacious, I'm Ollier, the senior of grey eagle tribe...how dare you kill people in the grey eagle tribe. Let him go right now!" The old man pointed at Zhang Tie with quivering fingers.

"Ollier, who's Ollier?" Under the gaze of those people, Zhang Tie's voice was so loud that it could even be heard by people hundreds meters away. Zhang Tie pretended to rack his mind before finally waving his head, "I've stayed so long in Ice and Snow Wildness, but I've not heard about you at all. Are you a fake senior of the grey eagle tribe?"

"Audacious, this is the senior of our tribe!" hearing Zhang Tie's doubt, another one beside Ollier stood out and screamed right away.

"No way. I've only heard about a senior called Juventus in the grey eagle tribe in Eschyle City. He's well-known. I've not heard anyone called Ollier at all!" Zhang Tie replied loudly.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Juventus became a bit amazed as he peeped at Ollier who was so furious that even his face had turned purple. Juventus then asked Zhang Tie, "You've heard about me?"

"Are you senior Juventus of the grey eagle tribe?"

"Yup!" Juventus became a bit satisfied. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie knew about his name.

"No way!" Zhang Tie waved his head, "How come you're senior Juventus..."

"B*stard, I'm the real senior Juventus!"

"Even a barber in Eschyle City knows that the richest man in the south of Ice and Snow Wildness is senior Juventus of the grey eagle tribe. I was told that Juventus was very good at putting the tribe's wealth into his own pocket. His bank account in Eschyle had millions of gold coins. As a senior guest of bank, how come you look so poor. You're even less valuable than 1 gold coin!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Juventus' face turned red at once. He pointed at Zhang Tie with one finger, "You...you are talking nonsense!"

"Easy, I've not finished that. Don't be that flurried. Of course, senior Juventus' wealth is far more than that. I was told that he had many valuable mansions in Eschyle City. You have a lot of mistresses over there. They've delivered a lot of babies for you. You even have secret shares in some business groups in Eschyle City. They say that those business groups monopolize almost all the businesses of the grey eagle tribe. As the richest man in the south of Ice and Snow Wildness based on a small grey eagle tribe, senior Juventus is really the idol of many people!"

Zhang Tie's words were too lethal that even a greater part of people in the grey eagle tribe had heard about that.

"Who incites you to slander me?" listening to the whispers and feeling the weird eyes, Juventus asked loudly. He wanted to save

his image as fast as possible by transferring others attraction.

Pitifully, he encountered Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie's words were more terrifying than his fighting strength when in need.

"Incite?" Zhang Tie's voice was full of amazement, "Last year, senior Juventus' love child in Eschyle City was abducted by those in demon snake island. Those people in demon snake island blackmailed him 300,000 gold coins. Juventus instantly drew 300,000 gold coins out of the bank. Finally, this event was spread to Ewentra Archipelago. In some circle of Eschyle City, everybody knew it. It was round-table warrior Dawson who abducted his son. That guy even declared everywhere that it was too easy to rob senior Juventus of the grey eagle tribe. If you don't believe in me, you can ask Dawson, the round-table warrior of demon snake island. If I was telling a lie, I swear to be chased by demon snake island such as Dawson..."

Seeing Ollier glanced curiously, Juventus almost spurted out a mouthful of blood.

Zhang Tie's story was really attractive. Even though the audience didn't believe in it, they would doubt Juventus at least. Zhang Tie was sure that the guy who monopolized the fiscal affairs of grey eagle tribe for dozens of years must have dirty points. If this old guy was innocent, he should have supported O'Laura to take the power; instead of holding her back. He didn't care how much did this old guy have. He only needed to cloud the water.

O'Laura stared at Zhang Tie with gleaming eyes. Perhaps only she could identify whether Zhang Tie was talking the truth or not. Although she knew that Zhang Tie was fabricating a lie, O'Laura felt that he was talking the truth. Additionally, seeing Juventus' bad-look face, O'Laura felt carefree inside...

"Senior Juventus, is he telling true?" O'Laura asked icily in front of the public.

"He's definitely talking nonsense!" Remarkably Juventus became

completely flurried at this moment. He lost all of his majesty. He was glaring at Zhang Tie, "This person is a wanted criminal, how can you believe in his words?"

"It's very easy to test whether I'm telling true or not. As long as senior Juventus writes a letter, attaches your personal seal on it, has people carry it to the banks of Eschyle City and bring back the printed list of your account items, everything will be clear. Dare you do that, senior Juventus? Won't you tell us that you've not deposited a cent outside?"

"B*stard, it's not a criminal's turn to talk rubbish here!" senior Juventus was so furious that he almost could not utter a word.

"Of course, it's not an outsider's turn to talk rubbish about the grey eagle tribe. Because the affairs in grey eagle tribe have long been controlled by you, senior Juventus!" Zhang Tie continued, "I also heard that since the abduction event, senior Juventus had established a relationship with demon snake island and became their friend. Many outsiders said that senior Juventus wanted to purchase demon snake island's trust so as to clean off his obstacles in the grey eagle tribe based on the power of demon snake island. I was told that even your youngest love son had turned 13 years old. It seems that he will get married in a couple of years..."

"It's enough!" O'Laura stopped Zhang Tie in time, "Senior Juventus is not that kind of a person. Don't disturb our judgment by what you heard outside..." after saying this, O'Laura stared at Ollier who was thinking deeply with twinkling eyes, "Senior Ollier, you said it was a misunderstanding; but it's aroused by your men, will we just call it an end?"

If it was not told by Zhang Tie, it might not have such a remarkable effect. However, as O'Laura's captive, he didn't even have freedom of action. Being opposite to O'Laura, he was an objective "third party". Therefore, his words were more confusing. Additionally, this scene was not arranged by O'Laura; it was absolute an "accident". Furthermore, Zhang Tie's contents were

too reasonable; at least nobody could find any loophole from it.

After glancing over Zhang Tie, O'Laura, senior Merkel, Juventus and Ollier finally moved away his eyes, "Hmm...alright!"

Receiving Ollier's reply, Zhang Tie smirked as he dropped off his machete and walked towards O'Laura. Before moving his feet away from that man's chest, Zhang Tie slightly increased his strength on feet and sunk that man's chest.

At the sight of Ollier and his followers' furious eyes, Zhang Tie smirked, "I'm sorry. I've not imagined that this guy was so weak. With restrictive rings, I could not control my strength well. Therefore, I stamped him to death, hope you don't mind!"

Not until then did everybody recall that Zhang Tie was still wearing restrictive rings. He has such a great fighting strength with restrictive rings. What if he didn't wear them? Watching the corpses all over the ground, many people felt shivers inside. This was a squad led by a LV 7 bear-killing fighter, 4 of which were fighters above LV 6. However, he killed them all in a few minutes. What a freak...

At this moment, they seemed having no desire to communicate any more. After exchanging glances with each other, they all left, leaving someone cleaning up the battle field...

Among them, only senior Juventus seemingly wanted to tear Zhang Tie into pieces.

Although it seemed coming to an end, everybody knew that it was just a beginning.

...

As the door of the cabin had been broken, it was messy all over there. Zhang Tie could not stay there any more. Therefore, Zhang Tie followed O'Laura to a new place.

Although the new place was still a cabin, it was much more beautiful and spacious than the previous one. Some female

servants were serving in the new room.

O'Laura waved her hands to let those female servants leave.

Zhang Tie looked around here before staring at O'Laura who was silent and sighed, "It seems that you're really difficult here. According to your words, I'm your personal property at least. But others wanted to kill me without even your consent. They were evidently showing off their force to you. Even I could not stand it anymore. Don't stay still, open those rings over my wrists and neck. Do you still think that these things could bring you safety?"

Although O'Laura's look was still hidden behind the mask, after hesitating for a few seconds, she finally took out the key and opened the restrictive rings for Zhang Tie.

With those rings, he felt very inconvenient and uncomfortable. By contrast, after taking them off, Zhang Tie rubbed his wrists and neck as he felt free now, he became freer in fighting others.

"Perhaps we need to talk about the cooperation carefully."

"What can you give me?" O'Laura's voice had become a bit hoarse.

"What do you need most?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Money!" O'Laura answered straightforwardly.

Zhang Tie knew that she was talking true. With money, O'Laura could raise and enlarge her army and establish relationships with others so as to weaken the control of Juventus and Ollier and gain a greater right of speech. Finally, she could take back the power of grey eagle tribe. In this age, unless one's personal fighting strength was able to crack down everything, one needed money.

"I have a lot of money, given my belongings, you know that I don't lack money!" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly, "However, my money doesn't come out of the air. I can provide you with money, but you have to show me your value!"

"Value? Isn't it enough to keep you alive?" O'Laura threatened.

"O'Laura, honestly, if I truly died in the grey eagle tribe, I'm sure that the whole tribe will be swept for my death. Soon, your tribe will be cleaned overnight. Nobody will survive, even a chick or dog! Do you really treat me as a monkey coming out of the stone? Do you really think that I have no friends and relatives?" staring at O'Laura, Zhang Tie replied. He was not threatening O'Laura; he meant it. Although it was only a short contact between him and his master, Zhang Tie knew it clearly that based on the personality of his Zhao Yuan, his master, if he sensed that his only apprentice was killed by the grey eagle tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness, he would definitely destroy the grey eagle tribe. This time, O'Laura took away his soul crystal through which Zhao Yuan could sense Zhang Tie's location. If Zhao Yuan wanted to revenge, he only needed to find the soul crystal. No matter being involved could escape.

O'Laura became silent. She truly wouldn't believe it if Zhang Tie told her that he had no background, he studied the fighting skills himself while all the valuable items were picked in the wild.

"What's your opinion about value?"

"I don't need any privilege of your tribe or need you to do anything that you think unacceptable. You only need to take my money as a commercial investment or loan for pure economic benefits!" Zhang Tie replied.

"What do you mean?"

"I mean, you only need me to believe in that you can pay me my cost and interests!"

"That's it?" O'Laura winked.

"Hmm, that's it!"

"What about you? What do you want to do?"

"What I want to do might be very strange in your eyes."

"What's that?"

"To maintain the balance of the mother nature!" a solemn expression appeared on Zhang Tie's face. Zhang Tie raised his head, "I forgot to tell you that I'm actually a devoted follower of school of patron! I can sacrifice everything for my dream..."

O'Laura watched Zhang Tie carefully as she wanted to know whether Zhang Tie was joking or not. She wanted to know whether Zhang Tie was a hidden lunatic...

...

In the midnight, senior Juventus left Ollier's home with some followers after a half hour's talk. Juventus sensed something special in Ollier's eyes although the latter swore that he wouldn't believe in a criminal's gibberish.

When he left Ollier's home, senior Juventus was filled with bitterness. Because Ollier treated him much kinder tonight than usual, Juventus felt being estranged to a certain degree.

Sometimes, it was not always good for familiar people to be polite to each other suddenly.

On the way back, noticing that some clansmen were peeping at him with weird eyes, senior Juventus held fast his fists.

After returning to his residence, senior Juventus let everybody leave. He then came to his prayer room. After opening a hidden shelf on the wall of the prayer room, senior Juventus took out of his writing instrument and started to write a letter rapidly...

...

10 minutes later, an owl flapped its wings from Juventus's home and disappeared in the nightscape rapidly...

...

"Senior, soon after Juventus returned home, he had sent his owl flying out. The owl flew very fast. As it was near Juventus' home,

we didn't shoot it off..." a man reported to Ollier.

"As I've imagined, there are truly some problems with the old guy. I was almost cheated by him. How he has pretended to be docile before..." Ollier sneered...

Chapter 440: The Heroic Feeling

Honestly, Zhang Tie didn't care about how many secrets did Juventus have outside the tribe at all.

Neither did he care about who would take the power of grey eagle tribe in the future. At that moment, he clouded the water to only live a bit more comfortable; perhaps, there was another reason for that, which Zhang Tie would not admit——actually he sympathized O'Laura to a certain degree.

Zhang Tie was not actually very justified; however, he really could not stand the 2 old d**chebags bullying a woman.

Zhang Tie didn't care about how O'Laura and the other people in grey eagle tribe defined his current status, O'Laura's personal property, captive or slave. For Zhang Tie, these things were nothing different than a temporary nickname or appellation. They were meaningless.

In Zhang Tie's mind, the grey eagle tribe was just a small courier station. He knew that he would soon leave here.

Until this moment, the tour to Ice and Snow Wildness was like a fantastic adventure and travel for Zhang Tie. At that moment, Zhang Tie's ambition started to grow in this land although he always maintained a relaxed mentality.

After what happened last day, the relationship between Zhang Tie and O'Laura further developed. They were neither like friends nor enemies. "Out of blows friendship grows".

Although they had already known each other a little but they still wanted to learn more about each other.

Although O'Laura took off Zhang Tie's restrictive rings, she still didn't mention about the restrictive rings, neither did Zhang Tie mention it. Both of them knew that their relationship was far from being established.

Zhang Tie asked O'Laura to return his equipment so that he could at least protect himself. After thinking for a while, O'Laura returned the pair of dark tore gloves to him. As for his other weapons, O'Laura said it depended on Zhang Tie's sincerity.

Of course, Zhang Tie was not an idiot. He would not take out those gold coins out of air. Even though he could, he wouldn't give them to O'Laura. Before cleaning off the threat of bone-exploding needles and gaining the equal right of say, if Zhang Tie took out such a great amount of money, he was definitely seeking for death.

Thankfully, O'Laura seemed being not in hurry to gain something from Zhang Tie. She was putting all her efforts on that urban relics in Haidela Glacier Crack. O'Laura had already decided to take some people of the grey eagle tribe to attend the gathering of southern tribes at the estuary of Fitjar in a couple of days. She planned to share some benefits in the secret relics. No matter what, the other 3 seniors of grey eagle tribe agreed with this decision.

The moment Setton returned to the grey eagle tribe, he left right away. He was there to inquire the news about this gathering and the relics. When Setton returned to the grey eagle tribe to see O'Laura, it was already past midnight. When he was told about what happened after he left the tribe, he became extremely infuriated, dumbfounded and finally burst out laughing.

"O'Laura, Peter is fiercer than lions in fight and is smarter than foxes. If he's on our side, he can help you to take the power of grey eagle tribe!"

O'Laura then briefly told Setton about what Zhang Tie had told her and their current relationship.

"I feel that this brat has a deep background. Few people would have such great fighting strength and carry so many rune and elite equipment at such a young age even in those bigger tribes in Ice and Snow Wildness. If he doesn't have any special background, it

would be a marvel. He probably be an elite disciple of a big clan on the continent who comes out to cultivate himself. Therefore, he was not afraid of offending those in demon snake island. I heard that many elite disciples of those big clans on continent complied with this rule before growing up. Their achievements and performances in the survival training would determine their positions in their clans in the future!" That brat might be here for a survival training!"

"I also think so!" O'Laura nodded, "He's not too bad, he's too smart. But I don't even know which of his words were true!"

"Isn't it good? He's been in the grey eagle tribe for 1 day, yet he's already made the 2 old d**chebags too embarrassed. If he could stay here for some time, O'Laura, perhaps you might be not that tired!"

"What do you want to express, Setton?" O'Laura slightly frowned as she noticed that Setton was implying something.

"Look, as a toyboy, that brat has a great fighting strength and high intelligence. He also has a good family background. What's more, he's not gotten married yet. I've not met such a proper person at all. If you marry him, all the problems would be solved. Additionally, his clan would not move in Ice and Snow Wildness. Even though you marry him, you can still keep the power of grey eagle tribe. That guy can live here..." Setton ticked off the benefits that could be brought by Zhang Tie.

"Setton..." O'Laura screamed after being stunned for a while...

After realizing that O'Laura would lose her temper, Setton had long slipped outside the room, exposing a head outside the door-frame, "O'Laura, I mean it. You'd better consider it well. Based on my experience, such a guy is definitely a shopping-rush good in Ice and Snow Wildness. If you want that, you have to do that as soon as possible. Then what has done cannot be undone..."

In response to him, O'Laura smashed a bottle...

...

Zhang Tie had a good sleep last night.

Since he left Kurgan Village, it was Zhang Tie's 2nd time to sleep on bed. Although it was only a plank bed being paved with a straw mattress and a hide, it was still much more comfortable than sleeping on the ground.

Knowing that nobody would dare to cause him trouble after the fierce battle in the daytime, Zhang Tie slept pretty well over night.

On the 2nd day, when Zhang Tie was woken up by his biological clock, it was still dark outside.

After getting up, Zhang Tie firstly stretched his limbs in the narrow room. Then, he sat back on the bed with crossing legs and activated the trouble-reappearance situation where he met the huge deep-sea monster on the sea...

Only after 10 minutes, Zhang Tie's forehead had started to ooze sweat. After a few minutes, Zhang Tie's body quivered for a short while. He then opened his eyes as he started to look around this small room with a frightening look. Closely after that, he panted heavily. Although it only took him a few minutes, Zhang Tie was killed by that huge deep-sea monster once again.

This time, Zhang Tie was "killed" in a very miserable way. As he could not use his battle Qi, he could only cause some fetal wounds on the huge and terrifying monster. Finally, he was rolled by that monster's tentacle. After getting crushed most of his bones were broken, Zhang Tie was then put into the monster's mouth...

In the previous fights with that huge deep-sea monster, Zhang Tie didn't try to escape. Because he found that the huge deep-sea monster could only move 30% faster than the Polar Light which meant that It could not match him on moving speed at all. If he just escaped, it was nothing different than wasting his spiritual energy in the trouble-reappearance situation.

After being killed by the huge deep-sea monster, Zhang Tie changed a trouble-reappearance situation. This time, he chose the valley where he killed those demon rats. What appeared in the valley were not only demon rats, but also numerous wild wolves and iron-teeth hyenas. Zhang Tie was surrounded by thousands of wild beasts who were glaring at him with hateful eyes at the same time. The moment Zhang Tie appeared in the valley, he had seen those wild beasts charging at him like surging waves...

Those wild beasts knew how to coordinate with each other this time. Agile demon rats were hiding behind wild wolves and iron-teeth hyenas. They especially attacked the parts below Zhang Tie's knees...while wild wolves who were responsible for attracting Zhang Tie's attention always jumped high to bite Zhang Tie's neck and head...iron-teeth hyenas would not loose their grips the moment they bit Zhang Tie, even if it was his clothes and trousers...

He was pursuing for the maximal lethality and the greatest dodging speed and efficiency in the biggest space in the fight with the huge deep-sea monster just now, but this time he had to pay attention to the delicate secrets on fighting skills and movements in narrow space.

Since Zhang Tie killed the real huge deep-sea monster, he would practice hard at least twice in the above 2 different trouble-reappearance situations everyday so as to reach the 2 ultimate effects...

30 minutes later, oozing all over his forehead, Zhang Tie opened his eyes once again. He slightly waved his head as the king demon rat finally found a chance to revenge him this time...

In the next 50 minutes, Zhang Tie got off his bed. Standing on the ground, he started to consume the energy of the bone-exploding needles by running his iron-blood battle Qi twice, 20 minutes per time with only a 10-minutes break between them.

In the course of running his iron-blood battle Qi, Zhang Tie suffered an extremely physical pain. Meanwhile his blood vessels, Meridian and veins twisted under his skin; his muscles also quivered every now and then and turned as compact as iron and steel; big sweat drops oozed and rolled down like rains...

Gritting his teeth, Zhang Tie remained silence...

After running his iron-blood battle Qi twice, Zhang Tie opened his eyes. At this time, he felt his feet faint while the ground in front of his feet had been covered with sweat. It seemed like that the roof was leaking rain.

Zhang Tie could only stand separately at most 5 times per day. It was already his physical limit to run battle Qi twice consecutively. If he ran one more time, he would collapse, which meant that his self-protection mechanism would start to run. Simply, he would pass out. Honestly, Zhang Tie didn't want to be seen passing out in the room.

After resting for 10 minutes, when his vitality recovered a bit, Zhang Tie looked outside and found that the day had just broken.

Being naked, Zhang Tie came to the courtyard. He then lifted barrels of water from the well before taking a shower.

3 minutes later, Zhang Tie finished his shower. At this moment, he heard footsteps from behind.

He turned around and found it was Setton.

"Hehe, what a nice body, young man!"

Touching his beard, Setton watched Zhang Tie's naked body with a curious look. He looked like considering something.

At the sight of Setton, Zhang Tie who had intended to take two more barrels of water suddenly felt his asshole tightening as his body was covered with goosebumps. He then hurriedly put on his clothes.

In this course, Setton fixed his eyes on Zhang Tie, which made Zhang Tie more tense.

"Erm...so early, what's up?" Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva.

"O'Laura asked whether you would like to take a look at the animal tide of the huge wolves today?"

"Ah, great!"

"Let's go then."

"What? Doesn't O'Laura go there?" Zhang Tie asked curiously as he remembered that O'Laura wanted to go there together with him.

"O'Laura doesn't feel good today. Additionally, she has to deal with some things in the tribe. Therefore, she could not accompany you there!"

Actually, Setton didn't know why either. After saying that she didn't want to go out together with Zhang Tie this early morning, O'Laura could only dispatch Setton to do that on behalf of her.

"Alright!"

...

Setton had prepared it very well while the 2 tall beasts with stirrups had been waiting outside the courtyard.

The 2 beasts were those that Zhang Tie had seen the last day which looked like rhinoceros and iron-horn beasts. Such beasts seemed common in Ice and Snow Wildness. Zhang Tie walked around the 2 beasts for a circle as he looked at them carefully. The 2 beasts became impatient as they snorted and paced on the ground.

"What are they?"

"LV 1 rhino-horses. They're bad tempered. Can you ride them?"

"I've not even started the horsemanship lesson, one of the 6 compulsory courses in Hidden Dragon Palace. You tell me whether can I ride or not?" Zhang Tie retorted him inside although he answered, "I can have a try..."

Setton didn't speak as he directly rode on a rhino-horse on his side.

After seeing Setton's movements, Zhang Tie stood in front of his rhino-horse. Staring at its eyes, he started to touch its head with hand.

Although the rhino-horse was a bit whiny and pacing on the ground, it gradually calmed down. It started to sniff Zhang Tie and rub Zhang Tie's arms with its neck.

Setton watched that with a dumbfounded look. Although O'Laura told him that Zhang Tie was an animal controller, he didn't believe in her; however, at this moment, he believed in that. It was his first time to see a person being intimate to a rhino-horse in the tribe.

At the sight of the look of Setton, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. "It's just because of the All-Spirits Pagoda" Zhang Tie thought inside. However, he felt a bit pitiful. If he could enter the 2nd storey, he could form another great wild seal. If so, he could have a rhino-horse as his pet. If that really happened, I'm afraid that Setton might be more amazed.

"Hmm, as the All-Spirits Pagoda has endless fantastic functions. It seems that I have to enter the 2nd storey as soon as possible. I really want to try my soul-based incarnation."

Thinking this, Zhang Tie rode on the rhino-horse like Setton.

Setton shook his rein to make his rhino-horse trot. Zhang Tie imitated him and followed up...

When they left the grey eagle tribe, they encountered a great number of cavalries who were also leaving the village.

"You're Peter?" at the sight of Zhang Tie, those cavalries immediately stopped. Their equipment was simple, only few people wore metal armor. Most of them only wore simple leather armors and held average sabers and swords. Some of them carried javelins; however, they were all very strong. Riding hundreds of rhino-horses, they looked pretty powerful.

After a glance, Zhang Tie found the one who asked him was over 30 years old. He was strong whose look was similar to Ollier whom he saw last day. Given his look, Zhang Tie understood his status at once. This guy must be Ollier's son.

"Right. I'm Peter. What's up?" Zhang Tie asked as he and Setton stopped at the same time. After glancing over these cavalries, Zhang Tie yawned with a casual look.

Setton didn't speak; instead, he just watched these cavalries and Zhang Tie with slightly narrowed eyes.

After glancing at Setton, the one continued to ask Zhang Tie with a cold voice, "Did you kill Coca?"

"I don't know who's Coca. But I truly killed some guys who wanted to kill me yesterday. If you want to revenge for him, you can come for a duel with me at any time. I'm always waiting. But I have to warn you that if I'm really infuriated, I will not care who's your dad. In 10 movements, I will chop off your head!" Staring at that guy, Zhang Tie said casually. Zhang Tie felt that this guy was at most LV 8 or LV 9. Even if Zhang Tie didn't run his battle Qi, he could also kill him easily.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the cavalries became restless. Many of them even drew out of their weapons at once as they swore loudly.

"Sh*t up!" Zhang Tie roared as he released the invisible killing Qi that he had formed by numerous puppets' fresh blood in Heavens Cold City. Soon after the killing Qi was released, the rhino-horses in the opposite were frightened as they started to move backwards.

As a result, hundreds of cavalries were in a chaos at once. Many cavalries even fell down the rhino-horses. Even Setton's beast on Zhang Tie's side was greatly frightened as it kept moving backwards. It took Setton a lot of strength to rest it.

"What a heavy killing Qi!" many people were stunned inside. If not having experienced countless corpses and blood, he could not have such a heavy killing Qi. Although one's killing Qi was not directly related to one's level, it could well reflect one's real fighting strength and battle experiences.

"Salem, do you have to bully a stranger outside your home with these fighters of grey eagle tribe everyday to survive yourself?"

Closely after Setton's words, that guy's face turned worse; however, this served as an excuse to him. After glancing at Zhang Tie and Setton, he gritted his teeth and said, "Let's go..."

Receiving the order, all the cavalries left with Salem, causing a booming sound.

Seeing them off, Zhang Tie turned around and smiled at Setton, "Did you worry that I would kill them all?"

"Will you?" Setton asked.

"I'm not a murderer. I'm not here for killing people. Generally, I will not kill people unless my life is threatened!"

After considering Zhang Tie's words for a short while, Setton finally let out a sigh, "Let's go!"

They then moved forward.

"Setton, can I ask you a question?"

"Go ahead!"

"Although Ollier has a lot of followers, few of them is above LV 10. Juventus is just a fat worm. Actually, if you, O'Laura and senior Merkel could join hands, you could definitely kill Juventus and Ollier. After that, O'Laura will take the power of grey eagle tribe.

Why do you keep them alive?"

"Ollier and Juventus' clans are influential in the grey eagle tribe. Their powers are deep-rooted. If we determined to clean them, the grey eagle tribe would suffer a great loss. It might even split up. By then, the grey eagle tribe will not exist anymore. None of us would like to accept such a result, me, O'Laura or senior Merkel. Therefore, we try our best to avoid that!" Setton muffled.

"Therefore, the 2 old d**chebags just do whatever they want in the grey eagle tribe while you could only keep a relative balance with them?"

Hearing Setton's explanation, Zhang Tie directly showed the white of his eyes "they are definitely sparing the rat to save the dishes." LV 10 fighters were not cheap cabbages. Zhang Tie estimated that there were only 3 or 4 LV 10 powerhouses in the whole grey eagle tribe. Based on the scale of population of the grey eagle tribe, it was already a high proportion. O'Laura had been on an advantageous position, yet she was still afraid of taking the power. Zhang Tie couldn't understand it. If it was him, he would directly kill them instead of wasting time on the 2 old d**chebags, even if the power of grey eagle tribe was sharply weakened. In the worst scenario, they could establish the tribe from the beginning instead of being restricted and set up by those people.

"What would you do if it was you?" Setton asked Zhang Tie.

"Of course, I will kill all the b*stards. If they want to die, let them die!" Zhang Tie replied immediately.

...

Soon after they left the tribe, they heard a sound from the sky. Zhang Tie raised his head and saw a white owl flying towards him. Zhang Tie raised his arm to let the owl rest on it.

"Ha...ha..." Zhang Tie burst out laughing as it was his first pet.

After resting on Zhang Tie's arm for a second, the white owl flew

away once again as Zhang Tie delivered a order to it——follow me to search huge wolf packs in the Ice and Snow Wildness.

...

Rhino-horses moved faster than common horses. At the beginning, Zhang Tie was unfamiliar with riding it; however, after the rhino-horse started to run at full speed, Zhang Tie finally mastered the skills to gallop his rhino-horse in the wildness; namely balance, rhythm and coordination.

He had to keep balance by foot and adapt to the rise and fall of the rhino-horse; the most important was the coordination between him and his rhino-horse.

Because of the All-Spirits Pagoda, Zhang Tie clearly understood how could he make the rhino-horse feel comfortable and free.

After a short adjustment, Zhang Tie had been able to drive the rhino-horse. In less than half an hour, he had been able to gallop his rhino-horse neck and neck with Setton.

To tell truth, it was Zhang Tie' first time to ride a beast since he was born. It was completely different from driving a car or running. When the rhino-horse tided over the river or jumped over high obstacles in gallop, Zhang Tie felt very thrilled like being a hero. Zhang Tie finally knew why real men or brave warriors liked to drive beasts...

...

Guided by Setton, they drove their rhino-horses over 3 hours. After being over 300 km away from the grey eagle tribe, they finally arrived at a lakeside.

"This is snow wolf lake. Most of huge wolves stay in 25 km around this place. Not only huge wolves, even many other animals in the neighborhood like to drink water here. Therefore, huge wolves could easily hunt preys here. When there's no animal tide, this place would be a nice pasture. Each year..."

Before Setton finished his words, he had found Zhang Tie jumped off his rhino-horse and rushed towards the lakeside 100 m away. Some huge wolves which were obviously larger than common wild wolves were drinking water over there...

At the sight of those huge wolves, Zhang Tie felt like seeing his huge wolf seven-strength fruits. It made him more thrilled than seeing a pile of gold coins.

A huge wolf's strength was far greater than that of a common wolf, a demon rat or an iron-teeth hyena. Of course, Zhang Tie was very excited at the sight of them.

"With 9 huge wolf seven-strength fruits, I will be able to break 4-time the speed of sonic speed. Even my explosive strength would reach a terrifying level. By then, even without running battle Qi, I would also be able to conquer all the average fighters."

"If one exerts his strength to the utmost, he would be close to the most powerful one. I really dream about that day..."

Huge wolves moved very swiftly. At the sight of Zhang Tie rushing towards them, some huge wolves revealed their canines as they darted towards Zhang Tie.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's heroic feeling and growing ambition broke the depressive resentment at once and turned into a spring-thunder like roar.

"Boom!"

The tranquil lake quaked, causing micro waves. Along with this roar, Zhang Tie jumped up and punched his fist while breaking the air. Meanwhile, the 4 wild huge wolves became blood drops and fine fleshes as they sprayed over the ground in a wink...

At the sight of Zhang Tie's punch, even Setton changed his face from afar. Setton didn't know what Zhang Tie roared just now, but he felt that Zhang Tie's fighting strength instantly intensified after that roar. Zhang Tie was very overwhelming. Given Zhang Tie's

fierce punch, Setton even doubted that the bone-exploding needles in Zhang Tie's body did work at all. Given such a shocking effect, Setton was clear that Zhang Tie had a terrifying strength.

"Does he hate huge wolves or he's a devoted disciple of school of patron?"

Setton became perplexed at once. A powerhouse traveled so far to kill some worthless huge wolves? Only lunatics would be that ludicrous.

...

Zhang Tie wandered nearby the snow wolf lake for about 1 day. With the help of his owl, his hunting efficiency greatly increased. In only 1 day, Zhang Tie killed 117 wild huge wolves.

This number of wild huge wolves meant 2 huge wolf seven-strength fruits. "What a big harvest!"

Finally, being urged by Setton, Zhang Tie felt reluctant to leave snow wolf lake.

Zhang Tie even wanted to escape away and freely hunt huge wolves for a few more days here. However, after considering the situation of grey eagle tribe, he left and finally gave up this idea.

"Patience is virtue!" Zhang Tie told himself.

Setton's words further confirmed Zhang Tie's mind.

"O'Laura will take the fighters of grey eagle tribe to converge with other tribes at the tributary of Fitjar River. We will talk about how to march towards the urban relics. The tributary of Fitjar is also the heavily-stricken area of wild huge wolves."

...

Chapter 441: The Team

The estuary of Fitjar was more than 400 km away from the grey eagle tribe...

When the day broke, Zhang Tie set out with the team of grey eagle tribe. After 6-7 hours of travel, they finally arrived at the estuary of Fitjar at about 14:00.

The estuary of Fitjar was in the northwest of grey eagle tribe while the snow wolf lake was in the northeast of grey eagle tribe. Estuary of Fitjar was about 500 away from snow wolf lake.

This time, Zhang Tie really enjoyed riding a rhino-horse for a long distance as a cavalry. After over 400 kms of coordination, he further improved his equestrian skill. He could drive rhino-horse purely by his feet instead of having to draw the rein by hand.

For any cavalry, it was the first step to have fighting strength by setting free their hands.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could practice riding skills, one of the six compulsory courses in Hidden Dragon Palace through this travel in Ice and Snow Wildness. Therefore, he felt very good. Zhang Tie knew that horsemanship course in Hidden Dragon Palace could not be passed so easily. In Hidden Dragon Palace, horsemanship must include many fighting skills, riding movements and standard training of cavalries. However, Zhang Tie didn't need to learn all of them in such a short period. He didn't think that he could not drive a rhino-horse well as the only successor of the Great Wild Sect...

Therefore, Zhang Tie kept galloping his rhino-horse! For others, this was a rapid march; however, for Zhang Tie, it was almost like a tour.

After running his battle Qi for 5-6 times during the past 2 days and this early morning, Zhang Tie had almost consumed 1/3 of the

bone-exploding needles in his body. It would take him 3-4 days more to completely clean off the bone-exploding needles. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not concerned about them at all.

Additionally, Zhang Tie estimated that he could have 1 more iron-body fruit to eat after 2 days of painstaking consumption of the energy of bone-exploding needles. Wherever he was, Zhang Tie was always sunny like how he was in the iron-thorn fighting club in Blackhot City as a flesh bag. As long as he changed his mind, everything would change.

Zhang Tie rode his rhino-horse back and forth joyfully as he stretched out his arms like a bird. At the sight of his movements, 2 people in the grey eagle tribe gritted their teeth.

The 1st one was O'Laura. She wondered how come a guy who had almost lost his freedom after being planted with the bone-exploding needles became so happy. Since that night when she heard Setton's suggestion, she had been very unpleasant the moment she saw Zhang Tie in recent days.

"Did you just hunt wild huge wolves last night?" Riding on a snowwhite rhino-horse, O'Laura asked Setton while gritting her teeth. Based on her terribly precise intuition as a woman, O'Laura would never believe in Zhang Tie's reason no matter how devoted he looked.

"This guy was really doing nothing else but hunting wild huge wolves!" Setton lowered his voice. At this moment, even Setton began to admire about Zhang Tie's broad mind, "Actually, this guy is really talented at learning horsemanship. Very few people could reach his level only after 2 days of practice." Setton owed all these to Zhang Tie's "secret background" and the influence of Zhang Tie's family education. "Perhaps Peter has ridden horse or something before; therefore, he could adapt to rhino-horse so fast. If Peter could ride any beast in the childhood, he must have a good family. However, Setton would be the last person who believed that Zhang Tie was riding a transformed mini tricycle to carry

goods when he was a child."

"This guy is too smart. I always feel that he's cheating us. Don't be cheated by his look!" O'Laura warned Setton.

Scratching his head, Setton smirked as he glanced at O'Laura's rhino-horse, "Speaking of the look, have you found that the color of your rhino-horse is completely as same as his owl? They really match with each other. But I remember that you always ride black rhino-horse..."

Soon after saying that, Setton had kicked his rhino-horse and rushed ahead before O'Laura lost her temper.

O'Laura didn't lose her temper; instead, she became stunned for a short while...

...

Another one who gritted his teeth among the team of grey eagle tribe was Salem who was provoking Zhang Tie outside the tribe last day.

Salem was the eldest son of senior Ollier and the head of the largest armed force in grey eagle tribe. Among all the sons of Ollier, Salem's fighting strength was the highest as a LV 9 fighter.

Without war mobilization, the grey eagle tribe contained more than 900 professional fighters who were the most powerful military forces in the tribe. 600 of them were led by Salem while only 300 fighters were under the leadership of Setton, being loyal to O'Laura.

Of course, fighters had to eat. Given the population size and economic strength of the grey eagle tribe, it was already a bit difficult to maintain the regular fighting strength of 900 fighters.

As professional fighters didn't attend productive labor of the tribe, they could not bring a single cent to the tribe; additionally, their weapons, armors, daily training and supplies were definitely not a small expenditure. Especially in Ice and Snow Wildness, each

fighter should be matched with a rhino-horse so as to form mechanomotive force. In this way, it required at least 50 gold coins to maintain an average fighter's one year's expenditure. This meant tens of thousands of gold coins per year. For smaller tribes like the grey eagle tribe which had no powerful economic pillar, it was indeed a huge expenditure.

Because of the same reason, O'Laura needed money urgently. With money, she could train powerful fighters. With more fighters, she could take the power of the tribe without having to arouse a bloody war. In the tribe, the number of fighters represented the number of families. The more fighters you had, the more families would support you and the more influential you would be in the tribe.

This time, O'Laura took 400 fighters, 200 of them were hers, 200 of them were Salem's. O'Laura was the head of this team while Salem was the vice head. The reason that senior Ollier supported O'Laura to take so many people out of the grey eagle tribe to gather at the estuary of Fitjar was that he wanted half of the achievements...

Chapter 442: The Mermaid

Senior Ollier's request was indeed a bit excessive, because everybody knew that O'Laura's team was far more powerful than the fighters led by his son because of the existence of O'Laura and Setton. However, O'Laura still agreed with the request. This made Zhang Tie a bit puzzled. According to Setton's explanation, O'Laura did this to avoid the grey eagle tribe from being sneered as lacking cohesive force.

After knowing that, Zhang Tie became speechless.

On the way, Zhang Tie encountered many pioneers, who were heading for the estuary of Fitjar in a group of three or four. These pioneers were coming from Sciatta. Among them, some pioneers drove traffic tools drawn by moose; some directly walked on foot.

When they caught sight of the cavalries, almost all the pioneers became a bit tense. Many of them even directly escaped towards other directions in case of encountering the cavalries of the grey eagle tribe.

In wild, if the head of the team of cavalries was brutal, he might kill all the pioneers. Nobody would like to revenge for these poor pioneers at all. Therefore, these weak pioneers were a bit afraid at the sight of so many cavalries.

Watching Zhang Tie galloping his rhino-horse jubilantly, many people disliked him. However, nobody uttered a voice. As long as they wanted to stir up trouble, they would recall how Coca and his men died that day.

...

The estuary of Fitjar was in a open plain area. Some rivers converged here and finally flew into a huge glacier crack...

When they were miles away from the estuary of Fitjar, Zhang Tie had already heard a huge thunder-like boom from afar. Hearing it,

everybody sped up while screaming.

The cavalries in the team who hefted the banner of the grey eagle tribe became more spirited. They raised high their big banners and rushed ahead.

The estuary of Fitjar ahead of Zhang Tie was so boisterous that it was completely out of his expectation. Zhang Tie looked ahead and saw the continuous camps and different banners that flew in the air above the center of each camp. Those camps could be clearly identified. It looked absolutely like arranging arms and embattling.

Based on the quantity of camps, tens of thousands of fighters were gathering here.

In the central part of those camps, Zhang Tie saw a bear totem of a camp which occupied the biggest area. That banner was outstanding.

At the sight of that banner, Zhang Tie had known that some big tribes had attended this gathering.

"Wild bear tribe!" Setton remarkably frowned and became amazed as he caught sight of that banner in the central area.

"What? Is that tribe special?" Zhang Tie asked Setton out of curiosity.

"All the members of this tribe are lunatics. They can do whatever they want. You'd better not stir up them!" Setton warned Zhang Tie, "It's your great honor if you can be their friend; however, if they treat you as their enemy, you'd better pray to have a disgraceful death. If those lunatics want to kill you, they can chase you for decades endlessly. 3 decades ago, a powerhouse coming from the continent stirred up the wild bear tribe. Therefore, the wild bear tribe dispatched people to chase after him for more than 2 decades, even though that guy escaped away from Ice and Snow Wilderness. In over 2 decades, wild bear tribe lost over 2000 people;

however, finally, they brought back that guy's head. It was told that the guy was not killed by wild bear tribe, but was driven mad by wild bear tribe endlessly and finally committed suicide! "

Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth, "F*ck, how come they dispatched so many fighters to chase an enemy for decades at the cost of thousands of people? These guys are really stubborn."

A lunatic was already terrifying; however, a tribe full of lunatics like wild bear tribe was more terrifying!

Zhang Tie put Setton's words in mind deeply. Meanwhile, he warned him to not stir up with lunatics like them.

When the grey eagle tribe arrived there, they were stationed on a 20-m wide riverside where they started to set fire to cook grains. Everybody only took 2 dried fruits. Therefore, they didn't have to worry about food at the present.

As a member of the grey eagle tribe, Zhang Tie also started to build his individual tent. According to Zhang Tie's customs, he built his tent close to the riverside so that when necessary he could roll into the river. The river was very clean. Although Zhang Tie had not tried its depth, he could not see its bottom directly. But, it was okay for him to escape at critical moment.

The moment the grey eagle tribe settled down, someone had visited their camp to invite O'Laura to discuss about something in the commander's tent of the wild bear tribe. Without saying anything, O'Laura directly went there with Setton and Salem.

As it was nothing to do with Zhang Tie, he was pleased to be free.

It was the hottest period in the afternoon. The sun was hanging above head while the river was sparkling. Many fighters from different camps were taking bath and cleansing their rhino-horses in the river. After building his individual tent, Zhang Tie came across a thought. He then took off his clothes except his shorts and walked out of his tent. Without warming up his body, he directly

dived into the river.

When he entered the river, Zhang Tie swam with his head above water for a while, pretending to take a bath. However, when he was a short distance away from the camp area of the grey eagle tribe and found that nobody cared about his movement, Zhang Tie smirked as he buried his head into the water. He started to dive towards the upper reach. At the beginning, he would control his diving speed under water; however, after swimming a few minutes when he was gradually far away from the camps, Zhang Tie sped up.

Remembering Setton said this area was the heavily-stricken area of wild huge wolves, Zhang Tie just wanted to try his fortune and explore the way over there.

This river was deeper than 10 m. It flowed slowly while the bottom was covered with stones and few aquatic plants. As the lower reach of this river was the convergence of three rivers and a waterfall, Zhang Tie could only dive towards the upper reach.

Although the bone-exploding needles curbed his battle Qi, they didn't restrict his spiritual energy. Therefore, Zhang Tie could still open the teleportation channel on his hands at the bottom of the river to absorb water into Castle of Black Iron, in such way he could still adjust his moving speed and become as flexible as a big fish.

Only after 20 minutes, Zhang Tie had been about 30 km away from the camp area of the grey eagle tribe.

Although Zhang Tie was here for wild huge wolves, he found a mermaid ahead of a huge wolf.

Zhang Tie swam so fast under water with a good vision. When he saw someone else swimming in front of him, Zhang Tie slowed down immediately.

That was a graceful female who was naked in water. From the

angle of Zhang Tie, he could rightly see her breathtaking snowwhite thighs and beautiful black hair.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could encounter someone swimming here after being so far away from the camp area. Therefore, he stayed at the bottom, being over 30 m away from that figure. He was thinking about the next plan.

"If I pass by her from the bottom as fast as possible...I'm sure I will be discovered. Besides exposing my super great diving ability, I might even be taken as a lady-killer!"

"If I come out of water and reveal the identity of the woman that wants to hunt huge wolves, nobody would believe in that, unless they're an idiot."

"If I turn back and go ashore to another place, it might be a bit troublesome. But she's just a swimming woman. Nothing to be afraid of."

Because of a strong self-esteem, Zhang Tie denied the 3rd plan at once.

"Then, hold on here for a few minutes. I will pass by when she goes ashore..."

"Hmm, this idea sounds great."

Zhang Tie then waited under water as he enjoyed the naked woman swimming in water.

"Honestly, her figure is pretty good. Each of her movement is sexy."

Zhang Tie smirked inside...

However, only after enjoying the scene for 2 minutes, Zhang Tie felt his heart pacing immediately as he rolled towards one side as fast as a lightning bolt in water.

Meanwhile, a steel short javelin was thrown downside from outside, which directly inserted into those broken stones where

Zhang Tie was standing on just now.

"Someone is down side there!" Someone shouted...

Hearing this sound, the figure who was swimming in water hurriedly swam towards the riverside. Meanwhile, 4 people jumped in water, causing the sound of "Puff" while arousing some sprays. Holding weapons, they swam towards Zhang Tie.

The 4 women were all good at diving. The moment they entered river, they had surrounded Zhang Tie.

At this time, another short javelin was thrown towards Zhang Tie from riverside. However, Zhang Tie dodged away from it too. At the sight of the 4 women diving towards him, Zhang Tie knew that if he didn't go ashore at this moment, he had to kill them in water. Otherwise, he had to expose his diving ability.

Seeing the 1st woman stabbing towards him, Zhang Tie stretched out his hand to knock at her wrist before grabbing away her saber. Under her screams, Zhang Tie swam to her side. Embracing her waist, he drew her wrist as he exerted his strength and threw the woman onto the riverside immediately.

Although these women had great fighting strength and good diving abilities, they were still sharply dwarfed by Zhang Tie in all aspects.

Only after 10 seconds, the 4 women had been disarmed by Zhang Tie and thrown back onto the riverside.

None of the 4 women were injured. When they were thrown onto the riverside, Zhang Tie heard sounds of amazement from the riverside. It seemed that they had not imagined that someone could throw them back on riverside. If not with great diving ability and strength, one could never do that.

After a loud order "stop", they stopped throwing javelins in water. Knowing that they had understood his intention, Zhang Tie finally exposed his head out of water before going ashore rapidly.

Dozens of women were glaring at him with sharp killing intents. They all drew their saber out of their sheaths while raising their eyebrows. Some of them were holding javelins and crossbows.

Given Zhang Tie's look, he was just a 17-18 year old teenager. Without weapons, he looked handsome while his wet hair fell naturally. Many women were startled about what they saw. As a result, many of them lowered their weapons.

In most girls' eyes, those younger handsome men were always not too bad.

Almost all the women were elder than Zhang Tie. Even the youngest one was a bit elder than 20. After glancing over these women, Zhang Tie knew that he must have encountered an influential woman. Their cordon was very long along the riverside; however, they couldn't imagine that he reached here in water from dozens of km away. Additionally, as he was at the bottom of river, he could not see those people on the riverside; therefore, such a misunderstanding was aroused.

"Dear sisters. It must be a misunderstanding. As I was diving here from the lower reach, I didn't know that you've surrounded this place. Look, I've been out of river now. Please, don't point your weapons at me anymore; otherwise, others would think that I'm doing something bad here!"

Perhaps because of Zhang Tie's sincere smile, many women exchanged glances with each other before further lowering their weapons towards Zhang Tie.

"Didn't you do anything bad?" A tall woman with long legs walked towards him from behind the crowd, water drops on her hair. However, she had already put on her handsome purple leather armor. At the sight of her black hair and long legs, Zhang Tie finally knew whom she was.

The woman was over 20 or 30 years old; with a pair of blue eyes, plumpy lips and straight and raised nose, she was full of feminine

charm. She looked like a well-ripe honey peach which, with a bite, could spray sweet juice. However, that purple leather armor reminded Zhang Tie that she was not a vase which could only be used for admiration.

"Truly not!" seeing her walking towards him, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "When I found that you were swimming in front of me, it was rude to directly swim across you in case of misunderstanding. It was timid to swim back; therefore, I just stayed there and planned to swim across there after you went ashore. I've not imagined that you could find me!"

"What did you see?" with a solemn face, the woman stared at Zhang Tie with her beautiful eyes.

There was a second that Zhang Tie wanted to say that he didn't see anything; however, he forcefully swallowed it back. Zhang Tie recalled First Lieutenant Freo. If Freo encountered such a sexy woman, he would have started to seduce her. Freo insisted that real men should be straightforward and dauntless.

"Your legs are beautiful and white. Flowing over the glittering water, your black hair was like a black lotus flower!"

"Black lotus flower!" The woman carefully tasted Zhang Tie's words before revealing a smile, "If you said you didn't see anything, it indicated that you were hypocritical; soon after you said that, I would have them kill you. If my naked body was spotted by such a person, I would feel as disgusting as eating a fly. But now, I changed my mind. Your answer satisfies me very much. Even though my naked body was spotted by you, I would not feel bad. Women indeed show their bodies and looks to men. Otherwise, they would not treasure themselves so much. Am I right?"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that this woman was so open minded, "You're right. There's an old saying in Eastern Continent, "A woman would make herself up for her beloved man while a

fighter would sacrifice himself for the woman who knows him best!"

Actually the original old saying was "A woman would make herself up for her beloved man while a fighter would sacrifice himself for the one who knows him best!" Of course the one who knew the fighter best was not definitely a woman. In most cases, it was a man. However, at this critical moment, Zhang Tie changed the one into the woman.

It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that after hearing his explanation, not only that woman in purple leather armor, even the other women's eyes gleamed. Many of them completely loosed their grips of weapons.

"Young man, may I know your name?" the woman walked towards Zhang Tie with a tender voice. Meanwhile, she waved her hand towards her back, asking all the women to put down their weapons.

"I'm Peter, what about you?"

"Do you want to know my name?"

"Of course!"

"I'm Sabrina!" the woman walked towards him while swaying her slim body like a hot purple flame, "Did you come here from the camp area in the lower reach?"

"Yup, I'm from grey eagle tribe!"

"What a coincidence! I'm also from over there. Compared to that place which was full of smelly men. This place is a bit tranquil. However, I encountered you!" the woman staring at Zhang Tie with her beautiful eyes in an interested manner, making Zhang Tie's heart palpitate.

"Erm, I want to dive for a bit longer, can I leave now?"

"Go ahead, nobody would trouble you!" the woman smiled.

"Okay, see you then!" Zhang Tie burst out laughing as he waved his hands towards them. After that, he turned around and dove into the river once again. He knew that those people on riverside were watching him; therefore, he dove forward in a speed which could be accepted by those people.

"Young lady..." a woman appeared in front of Sabrina.

"Don't worry. I knew he was not telling a lie from his eyes. Additionally, I didn't sense his animosity. Let's go back. It's really pleasant to chat with such a fresh and sincere handsome boy!"

They then left...

Zhang Tie didn't know that when those women left, the news that his head was worth 5000 gold coins had been spread in the gathering center of tribes by someone. After hearing this news, many people's eyes started to radiate greedy green lights.

...

Chapter 443: Being Surrounded

When Zhang Tie returned to the camp of the grey eagle tribe, he saw bonfires.

Under the amazing gazes of the fighters of the grey eagle tribe, Zhang Tie slowly went ashore with an arm-long lively, fat fish. It was penetrated with a waterweed through its gill. After hanging the fat fish onto an armrack on the side of his tent, Zhang Tie slowly walked in his own tent. After putting on his clothes and socks, he saw Setton coming in.

"O'Laura thought you had escaped!"

"If I wanted to run, I had to put on my clothes, even if I'm a prisoner who want to break prison. How come escape with naked butts!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

"Watch out yourself these days!"

"Why?" Zhang Tie was preparing to take the fat fish to the riverside and clean it so as to cook it as his supper. After hearing Setton's words, he slowed down his movement at once.

"The news that your head is worth 5000 gold coins has been spread in this area!"

"Who did it? Salem?" Zhang Tie became infuriated immediately.

"Salem, I and O'Laura were communicating with directors of the other tribes in the main camp of the wild bear tribe. When I left there, I found someone was talking about you. Salem said he didn't know about this. Although O'Laura became infuriated, she couldn't find any evidence!"

Zhang Tie sneered, "What a smart guy. He made an evidence that he was not there at the present. But he only needed to order his fighters to do that. Considering that he had half of the fighters of the grey eagle tribe, of course O'Laura would not punish so many people at once. Therefore, that guy was not afraid of that."

"What should I do now? Wait for others to chop off my head?" Zhang Tie asked Setton.

"According to the rules in Ice and Snow Wildness, you're now the captive and personal property of O'Laura. Therefore, those people would not do that in the public; however, they might set you up in the dark. As long as they take your head to Eschyle City, they will obtain 5000 gold coins. For such a great amount of money, I'm afraid that someone would do that even at the risk of his own life! However, as long as you stay in the camp, you will be safe!"

"Do you think that the barrier of this camp could prevent the charm of 5000 gold coins? Perhaps many people in the camp of the grey eagle tribe want to chop off my head!"

"Don't worry about that. Through the general recommendation, the one who presides over this action of tribe alliance is Gangula of the wild bear tribe. Gangula is the 4th son of the head of wild bear tribe. As he's very crazy, his nickname is mad dog. However, he values the rules and regulations in Ice and Snow Wildness. When he presides over the action of all the tribes, if someone dares to attack you in the camp of the grey eagle tribe in the public, he would not only offend us, but also slap Gangula's face. Nobody would like to do this. If not, he would stir up the wild bear tribe, not to mention the 5000 gold coins! However, you have to take care of yourself in the wild, especially remote places..."

After hearing Setton's words, Zhang Tie felt a bit better; however, Zhang Tie was not used to wait for death or rescue. He recovered his composure as he considered for a short while before asking, "What if someone wants to kill me in the wild? Can I kill him? If I kill him, whether it would trouble you?"

He had to ask this question. Because Zhang Tie could not let other innocent people be involved.

"If someone wants to kill you, you can directly kill him! Nobody dare to trouble us with this!" Setton replied firmly.

"I see!" Zhang Tie nodded before asking another question, "What's the result of your negotiation on the relics?"

"The underground relics is in the glacier crack 25 km away. Our job is to block all the entrances of the glacier crack by setting passes. Those pioneers don't need to pay any copper coin to enter the crack; however, they have to leave half of their achievements when they exit. Otherwise, we cannot ensure their safety in Ice and Snow Wilderness."

Zhang Tie smiled, "It turns out you plan to collect road toll here!"

"The underground world is very dangerous. Although tens of thousands of fighters gather here, when they go inside, all of them might die in a wink. Therefore, we can gather at the entrances for benefits. Although many pioneers go there, they could not defeat us. Additionally, it's reasonable for us to share half of their achievements in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Even in those continental countries, they still need to pay taxes for mining!" Setton explained.

Zhang Tie nodded, "That's true!"

"We are here today to ascertain the way of cooperation. But we still have sharp different opinions on sharing our achievements. I'm afraid that we have to argue for one day. Well, take care of yourself!"

Seeing Setton off, Zhang Tie stood still and thought for a short while. After that, he cleaned that fat fish at the riverside...

After supper, Zhang Tie returned to his tent and started to polish the 18th surging point on his spine using his spiritual energy.

Zhang Tie had been in Ice and Snow Wilderness for about a month, in that period Zhang Tie had consecutively lit the 16th and the 17th surging points at the cost of 3 leak-less fruits. At this moment, Zhang Tie's 18th surging point had become bright orange. Additionally, there was a latest leak-less fruit on the small

tree. Zhang Tie thought that he was not far from becoming a LV 8 fighter after lighting 21 surging points.

"Whatever danger it is, as long as I have the strength, I will deal with it."

...

On the 2nd day, after doing the morning exercise in his tent, Zhang Tie took a bath in the river. He then came to the outside of O'Laura's tent.

As a nominal head of the grey eagle tribe, of course, O'Laura's tent was much bigger than the other tents.

"Can I talk with O'Laura? I've got something to tell her!" Zhang Tie asked one of the two female servants standing outside O'Laura's tent. The servant glanced at him before entering the tent. About half a minute later, the female servant walked out of the tent to call Zhang Tie in.

When Zhang Tie entered, he saw O'Laura's back. It seemed that O'Laura had just put on her mask.

"Ho...ho...I thought that you kept your mask even on bed. It would be very terrifying if a woman doesn't wash her face!" Zhang Tie joked.

O'Laura turned over and glared at Zhang Tie, "What's up?"

"Erm, can you clean off the bone-exploding needles for me? Senior Merkel should give you the antidote..." Zhang Tie revealed a big smile.

"No way, I have no antidote." hearing Zhang Tie's request, O'Laura refused right now.

"So many people want to kill me outside. If I don't run my battle Qi, my fighting strength would sharply decline. Perhaps I might be killed the moment I leave your tent!" Zhang Tie looked serious at once.

"As long as you are in the camp, you will be safe!" O'Laura glanced at Zhang Tie with a bad look. For some reason, as long as she caught sight of Zhang Tie's exaggerating look, she would feel uncomfortable.

"But I have to maintain the balance between species of the mother nature. There are so many huge wolves here. They've already destroyed the stability of the biosphere!" Zhang Tie raised his head towards the sky as he let out a sigh.

"Do you think I'm a kid? How come I believe in your craps!" O'Laura sneered.

"Can you give me my finger ring of awareness in case I can sense that I am followed by someone!" Zhang Tie really wanted this ring back as it was a gift from Olina. It was special for him. If he was forced to leave the grey eagle tribe, he had to take away the finger ring of awareness and the soul crystal gifted by his master Zhao Yuan, even if he could not get back his finger ring of eagle's eye and the double-carp swords. Zhang Tie asked O'Laura for this item in the excuse of what happened to him yesterday.

After considering Zhang Tie's words for 2 seconds, O'Laura directly took off the finger ring of awareness from her finger and threw it to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie caught it and put it on his finger. Immediately, he had a weird sense. He had not imagined that he could ask this back in such a method. "Of course, this is not because that I'm charming but because that O'Laura thought that she could control me."

"And my lucky stone, that common dark red crystal. Can you give it back to me too?"

The moment Zhang Tie mentioned it did O'Laura remember it. There was indeed such a small crystal. When she searched out this item from Zhang Tie, she and senior Merkel found nothing special with it. Therefore, she just put it away casually. Now that Zhang Tie wanted it, she directly found it out and threw it to Zhang Tie.

After getting back the finger rings and the soul crystal, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. Seemingly having greater sensing abilities after wearing the finger ring of awareness, Zhang Tie instantly sniffed the slight bloody smell. Comparatively, air flow in tent was a bit slower than that outside, therefore, some special smell could not scatter in a short period.

"You've got injured?" Zhang Tie watched O'Laura with a curious look.

"No!"

"That's strange. How come there's bloody smell in the tent?" Zhang Tie raised his nose and forcefully sniffed it...

O'Laura's body turned stiff at once.

"Are you really injured? May I check it for you? I've learned how to deal with wounds. Generally, if wounds don't ooze blood, it will be..."

"Roll out!" O'Laura roared toward Zhang Tie which really frightened him.

...

Zhang Tie escaped out of her tent in an embarrassed way at once. When he was outside the tent, he found many people were turning around and staring at him. O'Laura's roar was really frightening that many people outside the tent had heard it.

Looking at those people's amazing looks, Zhang Tie touched his nose in an embarrassed manner.

"What happened?" Setton ran towards him.

"Was O'Laura injured yesterday?" Zhang Tie asked Setton.

"No!"

"But..." the moment Zhang Tie wanted to say it, he shut up. He came across the reason. "F*ck, perhaps this woman is in the unrivaled state which is featured by flowing out blood safe and

sound. No wonder she lost her temper."

"What a mess!" Zhang Tie heavily patted his head. Without any explanation, he rapidly left the camp of the grey eagle tribe under the doubtful look of Setton.

When he left, Zhang Tie caught sight of Salem and his fighters. Salem was sneering at him.

"Idiot!" Zhang Tie glanced at him. Under Salem's changing face, Zhang Tie left.

Salem wanted to catch up with Zhang Tie. However, at the sight of Zhang Tie's back, he stood it as he swore ferociously, "I will see how many days can you survive!"

When Zhang Tie left the camp, he directly ran towards the wild. Only after leaving the camp for less than 1000 m, he had felt being followed by someone through his finger ring of awareness.

Raising his mouth corners, Zhang Tie sneered. As he was here for hunting wild huge wolves, if someone was behind, he didn't mind chopping off his head.

Zhang Tie trotted at a medium speed. He especially chose remote paths which were far away from the gathering center of tribes. If someone who was familiar with Zhang Tie's deed, they would definitely know that Zhang Tie was setting a trap. Pitifully, for those who were obsessed with benefits, at the sight of Zhang Tie's deed, they must be over pleasant and consider it as a pie in the sky.

2 hours later, Zhang Tie had been about 40 km away from the camps. At the sight of a small crack which was 1000 m in length, over 20 m in depth, dozens of meters in width in front of him, Zhang Tie immediately walked inside from one end.

Only after 10 minutes, he had arrived at a relatively open place. Zhang Tie stopped. After looking around, he revealed a sneer at his mouth corners.

"You've followed me so long, come out!"

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words, he had been surrounded by over 10 people.

At the sight of them, Zhang Tie ridiculed, "In order to hide their status, they covered a cloth on their face."

Chapter 444: A Special Invitation

Only after a few minutes, Zhang Tie had already walked out of that crack without losing a hair, while all those guys in the masks couldn't come out of that crack.

Zhang Tie started to run towards afar...

More than 10 minutes later, another figure rapidly drilled into that crack and came to the place where those people surrounded Zhang Tie. At this moment, this place was covered with corpses. All of them were covered with a cloth. Additionally, each one's neck had been broken. They were looking at their own backs. At the sight of this, the investigator was startled at once. The killer was definitely killing them like killing chicks.

"D*mn it!" the one drilling in the crack swore. Feeling a bit chilly, he looked around and found nobody was nearby; therefore, he turned around and ran out of here at once.

...

In the daytime, Zhang Tie hunted another 40 more wild huge wolves. Although it was not too many, it still satisfied Zhang Tie. Not until the dusk fell did Zhang Tie return to the camp of the grey eagle tribe.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming back to the camp, Salem and his lackeys looked a bit unhappy; however, at the sight of Zhang Tie, Setton remarkably let out a sigh.

"Are you okay?"

"Some masquers. I've killed them!"

"Glad to see that you're safe!" Setton didn't ask about the details as Zhang Tie just briefed it.

"What about your negotiation today?"

"Almost done. The materials being used for setting passes are

distributed according to the proportion of fighters of each tribe. However, if the fighters of each tribe would like to go in the underground relics, their achievements would belong to their own tribes. From tomorrow, we will set out from from here and head for the glacier crack 50 km away. Tonight, the wild bear tribe is going to invite all the heads of each tribes for a carnival. We have to bleed tomorrow!"

Zhang Tie knew what did "bleed" mean. If they wanted to collect half of those pioneers' achievements, they would definitely arouse their resistance. As for such a contention of interests, they could not carry it out without chopping off someone's heads. Because this could never be solved by words but fists and blades.

Perhaps, many people who should not die would die in the coming conflict; however, Zhang Tie could not come up with any other solution as it could not be transferred by his personal will. This was the game rule of this age.

When Zhang Tie talked with Setton, they saw O'Laura walking out of her tent. She was wearing a robe which was more magnificent than that Zhang Tie saw in the morning. Given her look, Zhang Tie knew that she was going to attend the banquet.

In well-dressed hair, Salem walked towards her as he glanced at Zhang Tie in a contemptuous way. He shouted loudly, "O'Laura, let's go. The banquet of the wild bear tribe is going to start. As it's a party held by the honorable Gangula, it's impolite to be late!"

"Setton!" O'Laura seemed having not seen Zhang Tie at all.

Setton then glanced at Zhang Tie in a bit embarrassed way, "Only 3 people in the grey eagle tribe are qualified to attend this banquet according to the rule, you know..."

"I see, enjoy yourselves!" Zhang Tie shrugged casually. Actually, based on his current status, he was really too trivial. Of course, he was not qualified to attend this banquet. Zhang Tie didn't feel disappointed about that. Actually, he could polish his surging

point or cultivate his iron-blood fist during this period.

Setton then left. Before leaving, Salem turned around and glanced at Zhang Tie. His eyes were undoubtedly expressing a message——No matter how great your fighting strength is, you are still a trivial person here.

Zhang Tie pointed his mouth towards Salem as he whispered a word——Idiot!

Salem glared at him before turning around.

Zhang Tie rubbed his face as he took out some dried meat and started to roast it on a bonfire. Tonight, all the camps became boisterous. It seemed that everybody had received the news that they were going to set out tomorrow. Therefore, they wanted to relax themselves tonight. All the camps were filled with noises, aroma of roasted meat and the fragrance of Buckthorn wine, which made them very relaxed.

Bonfires were burning high in the open land of each camp. The stars looked especially bright tonight. Many people ran outside to attend the carnival, leaving less than 1/4 of them in the camps.

In less than 10 minutes after O'Laura, Salem and Setton left, when Zhang Tie could smell the aroma of his dried meat, he heard a voice, "Is Peter here?"

Zhang Tie turned around and saw 2 women standing outside the gate of the grey eagle tribe's camp, one of whom was inquiring about a fighter of the grey eagle tribe who was on sentry duty.

They looked familiar. One of them was thrown onto the riverside by Zhang Tie yesterday.

"Are you looking for me?" Zhang Tie ate his dried meat as he walked over there.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the 2 women revealed a smile at the same time.

"Miss Sabrina dispatch us here to invite you to attend the banquet of the wild bear tribe!" the 20-year old women who had fought Zhang Tie last night put it straightforwardly.

"Invite me?" Zhang Tie pointed at his own nose as he blinked.

"Right, young lady ordered us to bind you there if you refuse to come!" another woman teased him, which indicated Sabrina's firm attitude.

"I will go there, why not? How interesting it is!" imagining about Salem's dumbfounded look at the sight of him in the banquet, Zhang Tie felt pretty good.

The 2 fighters who were on sentry duty both stared at Zhang Tie with dismay. At this moment, their eyes were full of amazement. They wondered how could Zhang Tie be involved with that well-known woman since he had only been here for 2 days and why he was invited by that woman to attend the banquet held by the wild bear tribe tonight?

Noticing the 2 fighters' dumbfounded looks, Zhang Tie threw his dried meat to them, "Come on, brothers, I invite you for supper!"

After catching Zhang Tie's dried meat, the fighters saw Zhang Tie and the 2 women leaving towards the camp of the wild bear tribe.

"Can you tell me about the status of Sabrina? It seems that average people could not attend the banquet of the wild bear tribe tonight, let alone inviting others!" on the way there, Zhang Tie asked them.

"Haven't you inquired about our young lady since you came back yesterday?" a woman became amazed.

"It was just an encounter. No need to be that thoughtful!" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly.

"You will know about that later!" a woman glanced at Zhang Tie as she smiled.

...

The camp of the wild bear tribe occupied the biggest area, which contained most population and tens of thousands of tents in different sizes which occupied about 1000 square meters. Under the guidance of the 2 women, Zhang Tie directly entered the camp of the wild bear tribe and walked towards the center of the camp without encountering any obstacles.

On the way here, Zhang Tie found that the atmosphere in the wild bear tribe was very relaxed tonight. Bonfires were burning everywhere. However, Zhang Tie still met patrols for more than 10 times in the camp. He could almost encounter 1 patrol in each dozens of meters.

The wild bear tribe had the most fighters, whose equipment was obviously more excellent than that of the grey eagle tribe and other tribes in Zhang Tie's eyes. The patrol fighters were simply wearing leather armors, but also half-body metal armors. Even average fighters of the wild bear tribe were matched with uniformed short sabers. By contrast, the equipment of the other tribes were instantly dwarfed. It was similar to the difference between regular army and guerrilla.

Additionally, although the wild bear tribe was stationed here temporarily, all of its facilities and barriers were set carefully, revealing a forbidding sense all over.

Everything here indicated that the wild bear tribe was indeed powerful enough to rule the other tribes here.

"No wonder all the tribes recommend Gangula of the wild bear tribe to be the commander of this tribe alliance." Zhang Tie sighed with emotions inside. "It seems that as long as it is, the game rule of this world remains unchanged; namely, the most powerful one will be the boss. All the other rules were nothing but sh*t."

After walking a few minutes in the camp of the wild bear tribe, the 3 people finally arrived outside a huge tent.

Occupying 1000 square meters, this tent was completely the tent of those large-scale cruising circus. Of course, this tent was much more luxurious than those tents.

Braziers were set outside the tent, which illuminated this place and made it as bright as daytime. Low voices drifted from the tent while lines of fighters were moving yummy food such as roasted sheep and barrels of Buckthorn wine into the huge tent. It seemed that the banquet had just started.

Guards were tightly surrounding this tent. Zhang Tie looked around and felt that these guards were more powerful than those patrols. Additionally, these guards wore combined full-body metal punching armors, which were more senior than those half-body metal armors.

The moment they were drawing close to the tent, a guard had stopped them. However, 1 of the 2 women easily forced him away with only one line.

"This is a guest invited by young lady!"

After hearing this words, nobody stopped them any more. Someone even opened the curtain for them when they entered the tent.

"Is Sabrina a member of the wild bear tribe? It seems that she has a great status in the wild bear tribe." At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie came across a thought. "What a coincidence!" Zhang Tie's mouth corners raised...

In the big tent, dozens of short tables were set on both sides of the tent while a line of taller tables were set in the main positions. Most of guests in brilliant costumes were sitting on both sides of the tent and whispering each other. The fighters of the wild bear tribe were constantly serving various food and wines on the tables.

Because the tables in the main positions were empty, nobody started to eat; instead, they were waiting for something.

When the 2 women guided Zhang Tie in, they didn't arouse the others' attention. As Zhang Tie wore common clothes among the fighters who were serving food constantly, some influential guys sitting at the tables close to the door only skimmed over Zhang Tie. Until the 2 women took Zhang Tie on the middle way and directed towards the line of tables in the main positions did everybody seemingly notice Zhang Tie. Along with the 3 people's footsteps, the humming sounds in the tent gradually slowed down. Eventually everybody fixed their eyes on the 3 people including Zhang Tie in the end.

Zhang Tie also caught sight of O'Laura, Setton and Salem, who were sitting in the positions closer to the door on both sides. Zhang Tie knew that it indicated that the position of the grey eagle tribe was not good if not the worst.

Nurdo, O'Laura's cousin whom Zhang Tie met when he was in grey eagle tribe at the beginning was sitting on O'Laura's side, which was a bit closer to the main positions.

This time, Nurdo was not as arrogant as before; instead, he looked kind with a smile. He was inclining his body and whispering to O'Laura while the latter just ignored him. Salem was sitting between them.

Salem liked O'Laura. However, another guy who liked O'Laura completely ignored his existence. This made Salem's face full of changes, such as fury, embarrassment and grievance; however, Salem couldn't lose temper at this moment. Because O'Laura and Nurdo were both sharper than him in the fighting strength; Nurdo's social position was even higher than him.

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie almost burst out into laughter. Zhang Tie felt that the ones who arranged seats in the wild bear tribe were really tacit with O'Laura. They must have reached an agreement on teasing Salem. How dramatic!

Setton, who was sitting on O'Laura's side also caught sight of

Zhang Tie. He then blinked his eyes with a dumbfounded look. It was really out of his imagination why Zhang Tie could appear here. Therefore, Setton touched O'Laura with his leg. When O'Laura turned her head around, she, Salem and Nurdo fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie at the same time.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Salem who was embarrassed just now looked like being slapped sharply as his face turned red and black. Even his mouth corners started to twitch slightly.

Although Nurdo still maintained his smile, he slightly frowned. He felt that he had seen Zhang Tie before; however, he could not recall the concrete whereabouts.

Although O'Laura's facial expression could not be seen, Zhang Tie could feel that her eyes were thrown onto him like needles. Being same to Setton, O'Laura's eyes were also full of doubts.

Only after a smile to O'Laura and Setton, Zhang Tie had walked towards the 3 main tables.

The whole tent became silent. Under everybody's gaze, Zhang Tie was taken to the left main table.

Zhang Tie found 2 seats were arranged for this table. He then chose the side one.

"Hold a second, young lady will arrive soon!"

"Thanks!"

Not until the 2 women left the tent did the tent recover its discussions.

Sitting on the main seat, Zhang Tie watched the guests on both sides as he forced a bitter smile. He knew that although these guys looked normal, they must be gazing at him secretly. Their eyes were full of curiosity and doubts. They seemed like peeling off Zhang Tie's clothes.

Actually, Zhang Tie found that there were also dozens of women

in the tent. Like those men, these women also glanced at Zhang Tie every then and now.

Among those tough Slav men, Zhang Tie was as remarkable as a crane in chickens, let alone he was at the main seat. Therefore, many women's eyes were filled with desires.

The power of the wild bear tribe was reflected on the tables once again. Zhang Tie found that, even exotic fruits were served on the tables while other tribes only had dried rations. These couple of days, Zhang Tie had traveled 100 square kilo meters in the surroundings. At the sight of the fruits, he had known that they were not picked off from the surroundings. Therefore, they must be taken there by the wild bear tribe.

Having not eaten for a whole day, Zhang Tie was a bit hungry. Therefore, regardless of the others' amazing gazes, Zhang Tie started to engulf food alone...

Chapter 445: Being Eye-catching

If one wanted to be distinctive, he only needed to act distinctively. The most distinctive way was to follow one's own mind, regardless of the others' views.

When the others were waiting for the head of the wild bear tribe, Zhang Tie's performance made the whole tent become quiet once again. Watching Zhang Tie eating so jubilantly, the audience were so shocked that they even wanted to count Zhang Tie's fine hair with their glittering eyes.

At this moment, Setton understood that no matter what, people like Zhang Tie would not stay in the grey eagle tribe. Even though Zhang Tie was a captive and slave at this moment, he still acted like a king. The grey eagle tribe could not keep such a person at all. Even if O'Laura married him, the grey eagle tribe would just be a courier station in his eyes.

However, O'Laura had a strange feeling, at the sight of Zhang Tie's performance, she felt excited and stimulative for some reason. However, O'Laura finally confirmed that even the bone-exploding needles were left in this guy's body by master Merkel, this guy was still uncontrollable.

As to Salem, besides a sharp sense of disappointment, he was expecting for the cool sense of revenge. Salem knew that not everybody could be distinctive in the banquet of the wild bear tribe. Although there was no fixed rule that guests could not start to eat before the arrival of the head, it had become a customary rule in Ice and Snow Wilderness. In Salem's eyes, Zhang Tie's performance was already close to rudeness and presumption.

"Hopefully, this b*stard could not survive tonight!" a vicious thought flashed by Salem's mind. "It will be a revenge for Coca."

Besides Setton, O'Laura and Salem, all the others only wondered whom the one was.

Someone might have already known Zhang Tie's status; therefore, they glanced at O'Laura's table.

The atmosphere in the tent became a bit weird.

"Why not eat? What are you staring at?" with a fruit in left hand, a roasted leg of lamb in right hand, Zhang Tie buried his head. After finding the tent recovered silence once again, Zhang Tie raised his head and greeted the others to eat while wiping the oil off his mouth.

All the dozens of people then exchanged glances with each other. None of them moved their hands.

Zhang Tie smirked as he continued to eat while smacking his lips.

In such a weird silence, a series of footsteps drifted from the curtain behind the main tables.

"Here's childe Gangula!" with a long, loud call, everybody in the tent stood up out of respect, including Zhang Tie.

In Ice and Snow Wilderness, all the rulers of tribes being crowned with the word "bear" were qualified as dukes according to the regulations on the division of classes of Slavs. Of course, the class duke could only be admitted in Ice and Snow Wilderness as a symbol of power. Strictly, duke was not a universal human noble in this age. Being different from Count Longwind in Huaiyuan Palace, if the head of the wild bear tribe left Ice and Snow Wilderness, nobody would call him duke at all.

Of course, sons of dukes were called childe. In this age, sons of kings were called princes; those who could succeed to the throne among princes were called crown prince. Sons of average princes and dukes were called childe's; those who could succeed to the throne of average princes were called royal highness. Those who could succeed to the throne of dukes enjoyed no special appellation. The three top classes were strictly hierarchical.

It was said that such regulations and appellations originated from

ancient Chinese etiquettes. Nowadays, with the growing power of Chinese, these etiquettes became widely accepted by the nobles and ruling classes in almost every country and region.

"I've not imagined that I could witness the great influence of Chinese in Ice and Snow Wilderness." a strange sense rose in Zhang Tie's mind.

After the call, a team of fighters who wore the same armors of the guards outside the gate pulled open the curtain of the side door before standing on both sides of the door solemnly. After that, a 20-year old man in black armor came in. He looked languid; however, he was especially attractive which could not be ignored at all.

Sabrina was close behind him. She was especially brilliant in a sumptuous black skirt, half exposing her plumpy breasts followed by some armored fighters who had sharp Qi fields.

When the man came in, he glimpsed at Zhang Tie's messy table. Although responding with a disgusting look, he was still silent. The armored fighters behind Sabrina also glanced over Zhang Tie. After that, they darted a look at Sabrina calmly. Nobody was happy at the sight of Zhang Tie's messy table except for Sabrina.

When he caught sight of Sabrina, Zhang Tie also grinned.

They headed for the main tables. The youth in black armor was Gangula, who was sitting at the middle main table. Sabrina and Zhang Tie were sitting on his left hand while the other 2 armored men were sitting on Gangula's right hand.

Not until Gangula took his seat did everybody else sit, causing a boom in the tent.

"Pah...pah..." sitting at the middle main table, Gangula clapped which attracted everybody's attention, "May I have your attention, please. Before banquet, I want to introduce my friends to you, these 2 friends are Roslav and Waajid from the huge bear tribe of

Mount Elzida. They visit us with a team of bear-killing fighters. After hearing that we're heading for urban relics, they come here with me!"

Gangula introduced them in a very casual way. When they heard "the huge bear tribe", all the other guests sprung up to show their respect to them.

Meanwhile, the 2 guests on Gangula's right side also stood up. However, they didn't speak. After slightly nodding, they sat down once again.

Zhang Tie noticed that many people looked excited when heard that people from the huge bear tribe would attend this action. Many people even sat up straight. It seemed that it was a great honor for them to work together with the huge bear tribe.

After having been in Ice and Snow Wilderness for so long, Zhang Tie had known something about the huge bear tribe: firstly, the huge bear tribe was the most powerful tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness which was guarding slava's saint mountain. It had a great influence in Ice and Snow Wilderness; secondly, this tribe was closely related to the other tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness. It was heard that hundreds of years ago, the huge bear tribe was the only tribe which migrated in Ice and Snow Wilderness. After constant reproduction, due to various reasons, the huge bear tribe finally separated into various tribes, small or big, which coexisted in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

After the main characters entered the tent, everybody started to enjoy themselves.

...

"What a foodie cat !" Sabrina murmured in a kind way as he noticed that Zhang Tie had eaten 1/3 of his food.

"Foodie cat?" Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile.

"As I've not eaten anything in the whole day, at the sight of so

many food in front of me, I couldn't stand but eat. I heard foodie cats always likes eating fish, especially mermaid!" Zhang Tie joked with Sabrina.

"If there's a mermaid in front of you, dare you eat it?" Sabrina showed the white of her eyes to Zhang Tie in an amorous way.

"I dare not!"

"Coward!" Sabrina harrumphed as she pretended to be angry.

"A great number of tigers were staring at you covetously. Of course, I dare not to eat!" Zhang Tie raved. Honestly, although they only met twice, they felt having known each other for a long time. Zhang Tie wondered inside, "Does it have such a side effect by watching a beauty taking bath by chance?."

Sabrina glanced over those people who were staring at them with covetous eyes as she revealed a smile, "Lena said you didn't know who I am until now?"

"Never mind!" Zhang Tie shrugged, "No matter what, I've been ready to be mauled by them after supper..."

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Sabrina chuckled at once as she quivered all over, making her more attractive. Sabrina's chuckles were too special that everybody fixed their eyes on her. At the sight of their intimate looks, many people's eyes were filled with admiration, jealousy and hatred.

"Gangula is my younger brother. We have the same father!" Sabrina moved her mouth close to Zhang Tie's ear.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie almost spurted the Buckthorn wine out of his mouth, "Gangula's elder sister. F*ck! No wonder dozens of people guarded her even when she took a bath in the river."

"Almost everybody know me in Ice and Snow Wilderness. I'm afraid that many people have taken you as another curtain guest of mine!"

This sentence contained a lot of information. It took Zhang Tie a few seconds to realize it. Although Sabrina's status was shocking, what made him more surprised was the term.

"Another curtain guest?" Zhang Tie accented the term.

"Yes. In some people's eyes, I have a bad reputation. It's said that those who had slept with me could queue up from here all the way to Eschyle City!" Sabrina explained calmly. It seems that she was talking about another woman instead of her for such an embarrassed thing, "Do you mind sitting close to me?"

Zhang Tie glanced over Sabrina from her head to her feet for a short while before waving his head.

"Do you feel pitiful about me after hearing this? Do you believe in your ears?" Sabrina raised her gorgeous face as she asked Zhang Tie in a slightly aggressive tone, "Or are you going to leave now?"

Zhang Tie instantly moved his head closer to Sabrina's ear while his lips could almost touch her auricle. He murmured, "I'm pitiful about those men. They're not just idiots, but also blind. Based on your current situation, you are even as pure as a nun who grows up in the monastery since young. Am I right? If you want me as your 1st curtain guest, I would not stand showing it off..."

At the beginning, Sabrina showed a slightly stunning look; finally, she turned around and stared at Zhang Tie with blush and widely opening eyes.

"How do you know that?" Sabrina asked in a lower voice.

"I just have a pair of sharp eyes which are good at discovering beauties!"

"You b*stard, don't you tell others about this!" Sabrina said decisively which sounded like a threat.

"What benefit can I get?" Zhang Tie asked shamelessly, "You have to pay for your secret!"

"What do you want?"

"As you invite me for a feast tonight, I will tell you later!"

"Don't be excessive!"

"Don't worry, I'm not a foodie cat. I'm sure my demand will not turn your secret into a past tense!"

After being silent for 2 seconds, Sabrina finally understood Zhang Tie's words. Therefore, she fiercely pinched Zhang Tie's thigh below the table, almost making Zhang Tie spring up.

As they didn't want their talk to be heard by others, they were very close to each other. In the eyes of the other guests, they were very intimate to each other.

At sight of this, O'Laura twisted her knife and fork while many men's eyes got burned.

"Childe Gangula, we should have a program to spice up this banquet. I'm told that there is a murderer who's wanted with the bounty of 5000 gold coins in Eschyle City. I heard he had killed 2 bounty hunters. My men dislike him and want to test his talent. Hopefully, Childe Gangula could agree with that!" A man suddenly stood up at a table and shouted.

Hearing that, Zhang Tie knew that the most concerned thing finally arrived...

"A murderer being wanted with the bounty of 5000 gold coins is here?" the moment he heard this, Gangula's face turned gloomy.

Chapter 446: The Death Game

As Gangula's face gradually turned gloomy, that guy fixed his eyes onto Zhang Tie. At the same time, more and more people stared at Zhang Tie. Even many people who were not clear about Zhang Tie's status understood it at once as they held their breaths.

Sitting at the main seat, Gangula also understood it as he turned around and stared at Zhang Tie with his wolf eyes.

Hearing that a wanted murderer who had killed bounty hunters is here, the 2 men from the huge bear tribe on the right seats of Gangula instantly put their hands on the handles of their swords.

Sabrina just stared at Zhang Tie with a smile. She seemingly wanted to see how Zhang Tie would deal with this situation.

The atmosphere in the tent gradually turned icy.

Under the gaze of everybody, Zhang Tie finally stood up from his seat and looked at that guy who stirred up trouble with a contemptuous smile.

"You're almost half-right. I truly killed a d**chebag from demon snake island in Eschyle City. Therefore, I was wanted by Eschyle City. As to the 2 bounty hunters who were dispatched by Eschyle City to kill me, they had been killed in the wild by someone else before they met me. Therefore, Eschyle City owed this case to me. No matter what, I will not be the scapegoat for the real killer!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Gangula's eyes glittered as the atmosphere in the tent became a bit relaxed.

"Harrumph...harrumph..." that guy sneered with crossing arms, "Why do you think we believe in you?"

"I believe in him!" O'Laura uttered at this moment. Under the gaze of everybody else, O'Laura stood up, "After receiving the wanted circular of Eschyle City, I found that the 2 bounty hunters were indeed not killed by him. It's someone else who had killed

them. Because of this, I chose to capture him and keep him as my personal property, instead of killing him!"

O'Laura's words were really out of Zhang Tie's expectation. However, her last words seemingly indicated something, especially when she said that Zhang Tie was her personal property, O'Laura slightly raised her face and glanced at Sabrina.

At this critical moment, of course O'Laura's words were more believable than Zhang Tie's own oral defense. Everybody in the present knew that O'Laura always earned money as a bounty hunter, she must have a more precise judgment on whether Zhang Tie was a murderer or not.

Hearing O'Laura's explanation, that guy was so embarrassed that he could not utter a word. Until several seconds later, that guy sneered, "No matter what, this guy is still wanted by Eschyle City with the bounty of 5000 gold coins. Nobody could change this fact. Now that O'Laura cares about him so much, I'm afraid there must be something between you and him!"

Hearing this, O'Laura didn't say anything; however, Setton directly pounded his table and charged at that person like a leopard. With a full killing intent, he wanted to directly smack that person to death.

The moment Setton moved, a person on one side of that guy also darted towards Setton. They started to fight in the air. In a split second, the tent was filled with strong winds and dense booming sounds. As so many influential people were in the tent, they didn't use remote battle-Qi attack in case of destroying this tent or injuring others...Otherwise, they would ruin this banquet...

However, for such powerhouses, it was much more dangerous for them to fight closely instead of using remote battle Qi attack.

"It's enough!" as Gangula sent the order calmly, a guard behind Gangula took a javelin and threw towards Setton and his opponent. After making a shrill sound, the javelin steadily inserted

into the ground between them, entering the ground for about 7 cm. Hearing the sound, Setton and his opponent fled backwards and returned to the front of their tables while glaring at each other.

Narrowing his eyes, Zhang Tie watched that guy who insulted O'Laura and Setton with icy eyes.

"As you want to spice up the banquet, how about playing a more stimulative game?" saying this, Gangula turned around and glanced at Sabrina, "What do you think, my dear sister. Can I invite your guest to play a death game with the fighter of Grojack so as to spice up the banquet?"

Sabrina then stared at Zhang Tie with an inquiring look.

"Can you tell me the rules about this death game?" Zhang Tie took a deep breath.

"It's very simple. As two parties of death game, you represent yourself while Grojack represent his bloody wolf tribe. Now that bloody wolf tribe chooses you as their opponent, you can also choose your opponent from bloody wolf tribe for a duel. The rules of duel are unlimited. However, only one party of the duel could survive in the end!" Gangula replied with dangerous glittering eyes.

"You mean my opponent is the bloody wolf tribe which attends this alliance action?"

"Yes. But according to the rule you are not the winner unless you survive the first round of duel!"

"Fine, I agree!" Zhang Tie smiled.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, everybody in the present looked strange. The guy called Grojack laughed at Zhang Tie. Many people were driven excited. They knew that something wonderful was doomed to happen soon.

...

After a few minutes, everybody walked out of the tent and came to an open place in the outside. As they were going to play the death game, the iron bear tribe directly dispatched a group of soldiers with heavy steel tower shields here. The soldiers inserted the heavy steel tower shields into the ground, forming a closed square territory of about 360 square meters as the playground of the death game.

The playground was surrounded by braziers. Various weapons were piled in the field which were provided by the wild bear tribe. They could choose their own weapons for the duel.

3 fighters of Grojack stood in a line in front of Zhang Tie, who were staring at Zhang Tie with killing intents.

According to the rule, Zhang Tie could choose one of them as his opponent. After glancing over them, Zhang Tie felt that all of them might be LV 9 fighters. Zhang Tie realized that the bloody wolf tribe was definitely more powerful than the grey eagle tribe. This could be further implied by the positions of their seats. Grojack sat close to the main positions while O'Laura and Setton sat close to the gate of the tent.

"If anyone of you could pick off this brat's head, you will obtain 2000 gold coins as a reward!" Grojack incited outside the ring. Hearing this, all the 3 fighters gasped heavily. They couldn't wait to tear Zhang Tie into pieces.

Under everybody's gaze, Zhang Tie watched them for a short while before waving his head. It seemed that he was not very dissatisfied about them.

"Brat, do you want to prolong time?" Someone started to be impatient outside the ring.

Under the reflection of the surrounding flames, Zhang Tie looked a bit dwarfed. Only from the perspective of height, Zhang Tie was poorer, as he was only 1.8 m while being not very strong. By contrast, all the 3 fighters of Grojack were higher than 2 m. Two

guys' arms were even sturdier than Zhang Tie's legs. Standing together with them, Zhang Tie was like a leopard cub in front of a pack of strong huge wolves.

Seeing Zhang Tie being hesitated, the onlookers started to buzz.

However, Zhang Tie ignored their buzz; instead, he turned around and stared at Gangula, "How many can I choose at once?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's question, all the buzz disappeared at once.

"Does this guy want to fight several fighters at once?" Everybody thought that Zhang Tie was insane.

"Whatever!" Gangula's eyes gleamed. He seemingly started to be interested in Zhang Tie.

"I have another question. How many people can be dispatched by the bloody wolf tribe to attend the death game?" Zhang Tie asked Grojack straightforwardly.

"Ha...ha...brat, our bloody wolf tribe has 1100 fighters here. Don't worry. I won't bully you by the advantageous number of fighters. If you're able to kill them, I will keep you alive tonight!" Grojack shouted.

After hearing Grojack's reply, Zhang Tie directly walked towards O'Laura under the gaze of everybody. O'Laura was also watching the duel outside the ring. Although Zhang Tie could not see her real facial expression but he could discover a mixed moods from her eyes, which included a bit concern. O'Laura didn't know whether Zhang Tie could pass this duel after his battle Qi was restricted.

"I will chop off that guy's head for you tonight!" coming to O'Laura, Zhang Tie only said one sentence before turning around and leaving O'Laura. After hearing Zhang Tie's words, O'Laura's eyes glittered; yet she didn't utter a word.

Setton opened his mouth with a dumbfounded look while Salem completely changed his face.

Zhang Tie then stopped 5 m away from the 3 fighters, "Come up together!"

"What?" hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the onlookers almost dropped off their eyes. The 3 fighters exchanged their glances with each other. They wondered whether they misheard Zhang Tie's words or not.

"Don't waste my time!" Zhang Tie became impatient.

"Kill him!" Grojack sent the order while his face turned pale out of fury. The moment they heard Grojack's order, 1 of the 3 LV 9 fighter charged towards Zhang Tie at once.

This indicated the official beginning of the death game.

Seeing him charging towards him, Zhang Tie didn't face him; instead, he dodged away like a lightning bolt.

When Zhang Tie moved, the other 2 fighters also launched their attacks. In their eyes, Zhang Tie was nothing but 2000 brilliant gold coins. Anyone who killed Zhang Tie would get 2000 gold coins as a reward.

Zhang Tie ran and dodged away while being chased by those fighters. At the sight of this, many people hushed while Grojack revealed a wisp of decisive smile.

"Dear sister, your guest is good at dodging. But it seems not possible to defeat 3 LV 9 fighters only by dodging. You probably could only sleep alone tonight!" Gangula turned around and spoke to Sabrina.

"Dear younger brother, you know, if you make me unhappy, who will be responsible for that? Additionally, it's just a beginning, I feel that it's too early for you to reach the conclusion!" Sabrina replied with a charming smile. Hearing Sabrina's words, Gangula slightly twitched his mouth corners.

...

For Zhang Tie, as he could not use his iron-blood battle Qi and didn't want to show his dark tore gloves, of course, he would not directly collide with the LV 9 fighters with bare fists. Although LV 9 fighters could not release battle Qi in the air, but their battle Qi could enter one's body the moment they touched one's skin. Their battle Qi's were very erosive and destructive, which could only be counteracted by battle Qi or dodging away.

Therefore, Zhang Tie chose to dodge away from their battle Qi. Actually, he was escaping while circling around the playground, especially when the 3 LV 9 fighters ran their battle Qi's and boomed their battle Qi-totems. It seemed that 3 huge black scorpions were chasing after Zhang Tie.

Of course, Zhang Tie was not really escaping; he was seeking for a proper weapon, which was about 40 m away from him. It was a pretty exaggerating metal battle hammer. From its look, Zhang Tie estimated that it was at least 600 kg.

Among those weapons, Zhang Tie caught sight of the biggest and exaggerated one.

Not until Zhang Tie reached in front of that terrifying battle hammer did any of the 3 LV 9 fighters realize that Zhang Tie's ultimate target was to draw close to that hammer. Of course, none of them believed that Zhang Tie could move the hammer at all.

However, everybody widened their eyes in the next second...

Zhang Tie easily lifted that super large battle hammer, a small part of whose sharp spines were buried in the ground, like holding a stick. After that, he waved it too fast, leaving no chance for one to dodge away. It directly pounded against the fist of the guy who rushed to the front of him.

With a sound "bang", that guy spurted blood mist like a broken watermelon and he broke into pieces.

Chapter 447: A Bloody Waltz

With a huge hammer in a hand, Zhang Tie reversed the situation right away...

Nobody could imagine that Zhang Tie boomed a LV 9 fighter into pieces by a hammer at once. The fact was really unbelievable.

One advantage was better than 10 average skills. When one exerted his strength to the utmost, he would drawf all the alleged skills and movements. Because the terrifying destructive power and elusive speed formed the unrivaled lethality, namely the most effective fighting skill.

Zhang Tie had eaten 27 seven-strength fruits, including 9 wild wolf seven-strength fruits, 9 iron-teeth hyena seven-strength fruits and 9 demon rat seven-strength fruits. Although a single seven-strength fruit could not make Zhang Tie so advantageous but the total of 27 seven-strength fruits did make Zhang Tie's strength terrifying.

Try to imagine how great the total strength of all the animals were!

A terrifying battle hammer in hand, Zhang Tie knew that it was heavier than the Man's Certificate that he once used in the Iron-Blood Camp. However, as his strength had increased, Zhang Tie felt even lighter than the Man's Certificate.

Even O'Laura and Setton had not imagined that Zhang Tie was that powerful as he didn't show it in front of them since the beginning.

Watching a LV 9 fighter being pounded into pieces by Zhang Tie's battle hammer, all the onlookers burst out noises after being quiet for 2 seconds.

"How come?" Grojack roared...

Even Gangula and the other 2 powerhouses of the huge bear tribe

also sat straight as their faces turned dignified.

Of course, powerhouses understood what did it mean. Even they did not dare to directly face the battle hammer in that high speed and with that terrifying strength.

"Is that humanoid demon beast?" Gangula muttered with an unbelievable look, "That's a 657 kg bear-killing hammer..."

Seeing Zhang Tie reversing the situation, Sabrina instantly looked bright...

...

The battle continued...

Seeing their partner being boomed into pieces by Zhang Tie's hammer, the other 2 LV 9 fighters instantly moved backwards to different directions.

As there were still a lot of weapons on the ground, a LV 9 fighter ran towards a super heavy machete while the other one darted towards some javelins. They were tacit as they knew well how to kill Zhang Tie in such a case.

As long as that guy who got the super heavy machete entangled with Zhang Tie for a second, the other guy could penetrate through Zhang Tie from afar.

They had a good plan; pitifully, they met Zhang Tie.

Seeing them moving backwards quickly, Zhang Tie rushed towards the nearest one. Although with a hammer of hundreds kg, Zhang Tie could still move fast.

Watching Zhang Tie still moving fast with that huge hammer, all the onlookers drew in their breath, "How powerful is this guy! How come he run that fast with the bear-killing hammer?"

It was also out of the 2 LV 9 fighters' imagination that Zhang Tie could still move so fast with that hammer.

The moment the fighter lifted his super heavy machete and held

fast its handle did he see Zhang Tie having reached in front of him.

"Kill..." Zhang Tie's eyes looked as glittering as lighting bolts as he rose high his battle hammer and pounded towards that guy overwhelmingly.

That guy changed his face instantly. Using his instincts, he moved back right away. However, he found that Zhang Tie followed him closely like his shadow. No matter how he changed his movements, he could still not enlarge the distance between them even a bit.

The battle hammer carried a strong wind. At the critical moment, that man directly grabbed the handle of the super heavy machete as he roared and lashed it towards the huge hammer...

With a huge sound of "bang...", all the onlookers' eardrums were heavily shaken. As a result, the 70-80 kg machete twisted ninety degrees and was sent flying high in the air. Additionally, the guy's hands were spurting fresh blood while the place between his thumb and his index finger was completely torn open. He was sent flying back in the air while spurting a mouth of blood.

Zhang Tie continued his attack...

"Bang", with another crispy sound, Zhang Tie pounded away the javelin which was flying towards him. Meanwhile, an air-breaking sound caused by the javelin was heard.

Sonic Boom! However, it was hit down by Zhang Tie successfully.

Since the very night when Zhang Tie saved Ms. Olin in Saint Herner Island, he had already updated his ancestral bloodline——precise throwing skill. Although Zhang Tie didn't know about the name of this new awakened skill in Huaiyuan Palace even now, he could still exert this talent granted by this bloodline at the critical moment.

This bloodline was also related to throwing. The new awakened bloodline granted Zhang Tie with a marvelous instinct——he could

sense the moving trace and route of that weapon so that he could prepare to dodge away from it. Zhang Tie could even force it to change its moving direction and release a counterattack with that weapon.

As he didn't know the name of the new awakened ancestral bloodline, Zhang Tie named it "throwing reflection".

The guy in the distance wanted to kill Zhang Tie with javelin. He was simply showing off his slight skill before an expert. If the opponents outnumbered him and threw javelins towards him at the same time, perhaps they could pose a threat to Zhang Tie's safety; however, if it was only one javelin, even if it was a sonic boom, it could still not threaten Zhang Tie at all especially when Zhang Tie had been preparing for that.

Seeing the javelin being hit down by Zhang Tie's bear-killing hammer, Gangula instantly hopped up from his chair while all the other onlookers drew in breath. "Am I dreaming? How could this guy hit down that sonic-boom javelin with such a heavy weapon..."

After pounding away the javelin, with the inertia, Zhang Tie directly pounded the battle hammer onto the ground. Closely after that, he supported the handle of the battle hammer with one hand as he flew horizontally in the air, kicking fiercely on the chest of the LV 9 fighter who had hacked him with the machete.

With a chilly sound of breaking bones on the chest of the LV 9 fighter who hacked him with the machete, Zhang Tie forced him to fly over 20 m away like a shell and roll on the ground for a short while .

When Zhang Tie landed, he instantly picked up the battle hammer and darted towards that guy who threw the javelin towards him.

It only took Zhang Tie less than 1 second from pounding down the javelin and killing the 2nd LV 9 fighter to darting towards the last alive guy. In such a short course, the last LV 9 fighter had not

even thrown out his 2nd javelin.

That guy was about 40 m away from Zhang Tie. He threw out the 2nd javelin when Zhang Tie had moved 7-8 m towards him.

"Bang...", the 2nd javelin was blocked away by Zhang Tie's battle hammer...

Zhang Tie rushed ahead about another 20 m in a split second...

"Bang...", the 3rd javelin was sent flying away by Zhang Tie's hammer.

At this moment, the opponent had no time to throw out the 4th javelin anymore. Because Zhang Tie was already close to him. When Zhang Tie was less than 10 m away from him, he directly threw his battle hammer towards his opponent.

With a wuthering sound, the 600 kg battle hammer rotated and flew towards that person. Although it was not as fast as javelins, its huge power and stress was 10 times greater than that of the opponent's javelins.

The opponent could only dodge away as he abandoned the plan to throw out the 4th javelin.

When the opponent thought that he had dodged away from Zhang Tie's attack and even many onlookers thought that he had dodged away, Zhang Tie flashed out from the wuthering, rotating battle hammer. Unimaginably, he caught the handle of the rotating battle hammer. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie turned right, with his right foot as the center of a circle, he directly rotated 180 degrees and drew a elegant half circle in the air with the hammer like an agile dance...

When Zhang Tie grabbed the handle of the battle hammer, he saw the LV 9 fighter standing 2 m away from the rotating battle hammer. He thought that he had already dodged away from Zhang Tie's attack...

The grim battle hammer directly fell onto the opponent.

Another blood mist was arisen from that person.

It was tranquil in the surroundings. At the beginning, Zhang Tie showed his great strength with his battle hammer; gradually he showed his great judgment and speed by pounding down the javelin with the hammer; finally, he showed his great fighting skill which could not just be described by great strength and speed but gorgeous! Terrifyingly gorgeous!

Under everybody's gaze, the 600-kg bear-killing hammer which symbolized ferocity became spiritual and danced a elegant yet pretty bloody waltz with Zhang Tie...

"Boom!" Zhang Tie put the bear-killing hammer on the ground, making a pit. Hearing this sound, everybody woke up.

Zhang Tie pressed the handle of the battle hammer with crossed hands, which gesture, although being very common, contained an unspoken arrogance and weird charm.

At this moment, both O'Laura's and Sabrina's eyes radiated marvelous brilliance.

However, someone's face turned pale...

"Who's the next?" narrowing his eyes, Zhang Tie gazed at Grojack and asked calmly...

...

Chapter 448: A Startling Javelin

It was quiet all over. Everybody turned their eyes towards Grojack, the director of the bloody wolf tribe's soldiers here, including Gangula and those soldiers of the wild bear tribe who watched Zhang Tie's performance,

Zhang Tie's meaning was clear——this death game had not come to an end!

At this moment, Grojack's face already turned pale. LV 9 fighters were not as average as huge wolves in Ice and Snow Wilderness. He only took 3 LV 9 fighters from the blood wolf tribe this time. All of the 3 fighters were the backbone of his troop. After losing 3 powerhouses at once, Grojack could not explain it to his tribe easily.

Besides having to face the blame and query from his tribe, he felt very pitiful about losing them as the 3 fighters were his henchmen. Previously, he prepared to ask for the source of madness from the tribe for the 3 LV 9 fighters at a high cost so that he could greatly improve their fighting strength. It was really out of his imagination that the 3 people would be killed here. This was nothing different than chopping off his arms, making him extremely distressed.

At this moment, Grojack still didn't think that he was wrong. He thought that it was reasonable for him to defy and insult others. In his opinion, those who were inferior than him should follow his order.

Glaring at Zhang Tie who was standing in the ring with his widely opened eyes. He hated Zhang Tie so much that he even wanted to peel off Zhang Tie's skin.

"According to the game rule, you've already won the battle. No need to pose challenge to the blood wolf tribe anymore. The blood wolf tribe has no other LV 9 powerhouses here. If you insist on,

you have to face LV 10 strong fighters of the blood wolf tribe!" Gangula stared at Zhang Tie with glittering eyes like he had found something very funny. Gangula was actually reminding Zhang Tie to stop.

"Is this the rule of death game?"

"Yes, as the death game is always held between fighters of the same level. If the opponent has no fighter of the same level any more, the winner has to challenge opponent of a higher level if he wants. You'd better considerate it!" Sabrina explained to Zhang Tie. As O'Laura was a LV 10 strong fighter, according to the hunting rule of bounty hunters, she might be taking inferior wanted criminals as the hunting targets; since Zhang Tie was O'Laura's captive, so everybody took it for granted that Zhang Tie was a LV 9 fighter.

Sabrina was also persuading Zhang Tie to stop. Because in everybody's mind, very few LV 9 fighters could defeat LV 10 strong fighters. Such a figure could be barely found in bear tribes. Some LV 9 fighters in the wild bear tribe could indeed kill LV 10 powerhouses. However, all of these kind of guys had the rare "madness" physical quality. After "madness", they could increase the power of the source of madness by 3 times.

Nobody thought that Zhang Tie could defeat a strong fighter. The reason was very simple. If he could win the battle, Zhang Tie would not have been captured by O'Laura. Just now, Setton was only on even with that LV 10 strong fighter in tent.

"Peter, it's enough..." Setton shouted towards Zhang Tie. Hopefully, Zhang Tie wouldn't be impulsive. After all, Setton liked Zhang Tie. He didn't want Zhang Tie to be killed in this way. As the blood wolf tribe had lost 3 LV 9 fighters, which had slapped Grojack's face out of blood.

Setton knew that Grojack would never feel good back in the blood wolf tribe after losing 3 LV 9 fighters. Bartel, the head of the

blood wolf tribe didn't just have one son. A fierce competition existed between Grojack and his brothers.

If Zhang Tie ran his battle Qi and wore his dark tore gloves, he might defeat a LV 10 strong fighter; however, at this moment, his battle Qi was locked by the bone-exploding needles...

O'Laura also slightly waved her head towards Zhang Tie.

Grojack glared at Zhang Tie with hateful eyes while his words made everybody despise him inside, "You are just a wanted criminal. Do you think that you are qualified to be proud after gaining a little bit benefit in such an inferior way? Do you know the outcome to fight a LV 10 strong fighter? It's enough to scare the sh*t out of you, ha...ha...brat. After today, I suggest you to hide in a rat hole or hide in the crotch of a woman who can protect you. Never let me meet you any more!"

Grojack was instigating Zhang Tie to receive the challenge. In this way, he could dispatch his LV 10 strong fighter to kill Zhang Tie. Such a result would be better than losing LV 9 fighters without hurting Zhang Tie at all. After all, 3:1 was absolutely different than 3:0.

All those at present were smart. Otherwise, they would not be able to lead their soldiers to attend this action. Everybody understood Grojack's plan at once.

"Shameless!" Sabrina swore towards Grojack while pointing at his nose, "Do it yourself!"

"Heh...heh...unless he could pass the following challenge, he's not qualified to fight me." Crossing his arms, Grojack said loudly.

Sabrina was so infuriated that she could not even utter a word...

"Show me your LV 10 strong fighter, I want to see how sharp is the LV 10 strong fighter of the blood wolf tribe!" Zhang Tie replied, which made all the onlookers become quiet. Fixing their eyes on Zhang Tie, everybody felt that he was insane. Many people slightly

waved their heads, some showed a pitiful look at Zhang Tie. "What a pitiful young man. How can you make such a crazy decision?"

In many people's opinions, they might not appreciate the gorgeous hammer strike anymore.

"A powerful fighter should not only have a great fighting strength, but also have a firm decision. Even a huge bear pup would also stand the humiliation of wild wolves and hyenas sometimes so as to grow up!" Gangula inclined his head towards the 2 powerhouses from the huge bear tribe.

The 2 powerhouses glanced at Zhang Tie before slightly waving their heads, "There are always gorgeous powerhouses and talents in this world; however, few powerhouses and talents could survive long."

"High priest Sarin said that the deposited snow on the top of Mount Elzida didn't thaw all the year round; however, the most white and dazzling snow easily melted. Although they are both at the high places, they have different fates. Therefore, when a person is at the highest position, he might easily lose his position." Roslav, a member of the huge bear tribe muffled.

Although in this scene, after hearing high priest Sarin, Gangula, who was on the main position slightly nodded respectively as he put his hand on his left chest, "High priest Sarin is indeed the most intelligent person in Ice and Snow Wilderness!"

"What a pity!"

"Yes, what a pity!"

...

Under the pitiful looks of the onlookers, the LV 10 strong fighter who fought Setton in tent slowly walked in the ring with a sneer. He stood still 40 m away from Zhang Tie. According to the game rule, if the opponents could release battle Qi in the air, they should stay 40 m away at the beginning without any buffering.

Zhang Tie just stared at his opponent without facial expression.

When a guard on Gangula's side declared the beginning of this duel, O'Laura, who was standing outside the ring suddenly screamed.

"Hold on, Peter is my personal property, I don't agree him to attend this duel!"

O'Laura's voice was sharp and a bit disgraceful. Zhang Tie turned around and found that she was slightly shaking her body and fixing her eyes at him. Not knowing whether it was because of the illusion in the flames, Zhang Tie felt that O'Laura's eyes were wet.

"O'Laura, according to the rule of death game, the individual wills of the 2 competitors could dominate everything. Nobody is allowed to interfere with them. I guess you must be painful for your toyboy for his coming death, heh...heh..." Grojack sneered with a grim look. After glancing at O'Laura, he turned around and looked at Gangula, "As Peter has already agreed to attend the duel, he could regret. Childe, please announce the start of this duel!"

"O'Laura, Grojack is right. You have no right to interfere with the duel!" Gangula replied after glancing at O'Laura.

O'Laura then became quiet as she kept her eyes on Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie just revealed a smile towards O'Laura.

"Let's start it!" Gangula told a guard on his side.

Soon after that, the guard stood up from Gangula's side. After that, he raised his saber and flipped it in the air...

In the ablaze flames, the saber drew several circles in the air. When it reached 7-8 m high in the air, it started to descend.

Everybody knew that the duel would start when the saber fell down the ground. Nobody cared how long this young man called Peter could stand in front of the LV 10 strong fighter. Because in their eyes, the result was already set.

The saber finally fell down and inserted vertically into the ground.

The moment the saber touched the ground, the 2 men had moved...

In the 1st 0.1 second, the LV 10 strong fighter released a 10 m high tiger-shaped battle-Qi totem...while Zhang Tie rapidly picked up a javelin from the ground and held it...

In the 2nd 0.1 s, the strong fighter darted towards Zhang Tie...

By contrast, Zhang Tie was ready to throw out his javelin...

In the 3rd 0.1 second, the strong fighter had forged ahead another 10 m towards Zhang Tie.

However, Zhang Tie revealed a smile...

"Go die, brat..." In the 4th 0.1 second, the strong fighter of the blood wolf tribe roared. Meanwhile, his battle Qi rolled while a huge battle-Qi punch had formed in his hand; he had reached 20 m away from Zhang Tie...

At this moment, Zhang Tie threw out his javelin...

In the 5th 0.1 second, almost all the people in the black bear tribe had heard the earsplitting explosion, including those onlookers at present and those fighters within 1 km.

Hearing this sound, many fighters of the black bear tribe were flurried out of confusion. They knew the sound originated from the commander tent of the camp; therefore, many fighters of the black bear tribe took up their weapons and rushed over there under the guidance of some military officers.

In a split second, the entire black bear tribe was in a chaos.

Nobody at present could figure out what happened. They could only see the tall battle Qi totem of that strong fighter of the blood wolf tribe dispersing in a second while the 20 m-long defense line of heavy steel tower shields which was fixed on the ground with

triangular wooden frames fully collapsed. Some of the steel tower shield even scattered into pieces. The huge sound was mostly the cracking sound of these heavy steel tower shields.

As this battle ended in less than 1 second, many low-level people could not even see clearly what happened. Only after a wink, everything had changed.

They were really shocked. As a result, nobody could utter a sound.

"What happened? Why doesn't the strong fighter move? What happens to the defense line of heavy tower shields? I know they could defend the attack of heavy armored cavalries. Was it a thunder?" A guy felt that his foot was stepped by someone; therefore, he lowered his head to check it. However, when he raised his head, he found the battle had come to an end. Everybody was like standing still as they were all gazing at the spot.

The guy beside him was just opening his mouth and goggling his eyes like an idiot, ignoring his question.

Right then, the booming and groundbreaking footsteps sounded while teams of the wild bear fighters held their torches and weapons and rushed towards here from all directions like tide.

"It's...safe here, let them back!" Gangula sent the order. Although he was always calm since the beginning of the banquet, his voice started to be a bit hoarse and quiver at this moment.

Receiving the order, the booming and groundbreaking footsteps disappeared and gradually faded away.

After those fighters went back, Gangula wanted to say something; however, at the sight of the fixed spot, Gangula felt his throat dry.

Gangula didn't notice that Roslav and Waajid of the huge bear tribe on his side had already stood up. Their faces both blushed while the big blood vessels on their hands and necks were jumping

madly. Meanwhile, their nostrils were expanding irregularly. It seemed that they were going to be driven mad right away.

Nobody could utter a word about what they saw. With their eyes fixed on the battle field, they just asked themselves, "Was that an illusion?"

...

The strong fighter of the blood wolf tribe was still standing over 20 m away from Zhang Tie. He lowered his head and saw a huge and tidy blood hole on his chest. He was curious why he was still alive. Full of confusion and doubts in eyes, he could not even feel the pain at all; instead, he could only feel that his senses and powerful vitality being invaded by weakness one second after another.

"What...what's that?" watching that young man standing 20 m away from him in a calm look, the strong fighter asked weakly.

"It's javelin!" Zhang Tie said calmly, "I don't want to kill you, but you should not serve that b*stard!"

"Javelin..." the strong fighter repeated. He instantly understood that the alleged strong fighter was nothing different than the low-grade wild beasts in Ice and Snow Wilderness in front of Zhang Tie's javelin. After thinking it through, the strong fighter's face turned bright. Eyes deadly on Zhang Tie, he uttered the last sentence, "I...am a member of the blood wolf tribe; Grojack...could not...represent...the entire...blood wolf tribe!"

"I don't hate the blood wolf tribe. I only want that guy's head!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's guarantee, the strong fighter revealed a wisp of smile before falling down, facing the sky.

Gazing at the dead strong fighter, Zhang Tie let out a long sigh. After that, he took up a heavy sword and a javelin before walking towards Grojack.

Seeing Zhang Tie drawing close to Gangula with his javelin,

Gangula's guards instantly formed a defense line in front of Gangula.

"Roll out of my vision. Do you think that your body is stronger than heavy steel tower shields..." Gangula roared as his eyes gleamed. He instantly showed his instinct—a mad dog. Some guards in front of him were instantly kicked flying back in the air.

Being speechless, Gangula's guards flashed away. However, at the sight of Zhang Tie's javelin, they did not dare to breathe smoothly.

Gangula stared at Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie stared at Grojack.

Like a salty fish which was dried in the air for a few days, seeing Zhang Tie walking towards him, Grojack could barely breathe. However, at the sight of Zhang Tie drawing closer, all the people besides Grojack hurriedly ran away. As a result, everybody stayed 10 m away from him.

Grojack also wanted to escape; however, at the sight of Zhang Tie's javelin, he felt his legs as heavy as being filled with lead.

Zhang Tie came to the front of him and stared at him with narrowed eyes...

Grojack uttered, "I'm blood wolf tribe's..."

Only with a slash of heavy sword, he chopped off Grojack's head. As a result, Grojack's blood spurted higher than 1 m which even sprayed over Zhang Tie's face.

After dropping off his javelin and heavy sword, Zhang Tie picked up Grojack's head as he mopped the fresh blood off his face. He then came to the front of O'Laura and dropped Grojack's head onto the ground in front of her.

Zhang Tie wanted to say something; however, seeing that O'Laura's eyes were filled with tears, which were dropping off from her delicate chin.

"Don't cry. As your personal property and...captive, I should revenge for you!" Zhang Tie smiled.

"You...are a liar!"

Zhang Tie knew what O'Laura referred to. Actually, even being restricted by the bone-exploding needles, he could still sweep the grey eagle tribe. However, he was always hiding his ability.

"I feel that our misunderstanding could be dissolved sooner or later. Additionally, this is not a trouble for me. As you didn't kill me that night, I didn't have to open a blood hole on your body!" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly. After saying that, Zhang Tie added a popular joke before Catastrophe which was told by Donder, "If I beat you, I would feel painful!"

Hearing this, O'Laura quivered. After glancing at Zhang Tie, she didn't say anything; instead, she directly turned around and left...

Being confused, Zhang Tie scratched his head...

Setton smirked as he erected a thumb towards Zhang Tie. However, seeing Zhang Tie gazing at him, Salem on Setton's side forced a bitter smile.

...

"Well, the death game ends, go back in tent for dinner!" Gangula's voice remained calm.

Zhang Tie turned around and found Gangula whose nickname was "mad dog" was revealing a big smile towards him. At that moment, Zhang Tie could see sincere smiles everywhere...

Except for the 2 guys from the huge bear tribe whose eyes made Zhang Tie feel goosebumps all over...

Chapter 449: Reputation

That night, Zhang Tie slept in Sabrina's tent.

On the second early morning, when he woke up, he was embracing Sabrina. It was Zhang Tie's first time to embrace a woman over night without making love with her.

Last night, Sabrina's female servants served Zhang Tie a bath in her tent. After that, lying on the bed with Sabrina, he started to chat with her before finally falling asleep.

Zhang Tie knew that nobody would believe that he did nothing with a woman but chat over night. He also felt it unimaginable; however, that was the fact.

In the eyes of many people of the wild bear tribe, Sabrina was a loose woman who had scandals with many men. Although Sabrina's bosom friends' tents always welcomed men, some men even slept on her bed, actually, Sabrina was still a virgin until now.

Sabrina's secret was a colorless and tasteless overpowering drug and her female servants. Those men, who thought that were favored by Sabrina, when came in her tent would breathe in that illusionary drug before being indulged with her female servants over night, contributing to the infamous loose woman.

Very few woman liked such a reputation, except for Sabrina. According to her saying, only by this could she predominate her own marriage. Otherwise, she had long been a victim of inter-marriages between the wild bear tribe and another powerful tribe and the 5th wife of a 50-odd old men.

None of her sisters in the wild bear tribe could escape from this destiny. Previously, people always proposed a marriage; her father, the head of the wild bear tribe also had a lot of choices. However, after her infamous reputation became loud across the entire Ice and Snow Wildness, nobody proposed a marriage anymore.

Therefore, her father gave up his mind to marry her with a man of other powerful tribe. If he married such a daughter to others, he was arousing hatred.

Although Slavs didn't have such a sharp traditional notion about virginity like Chinese, no men would like to marry a woman who had slept with various men; especially after getting married, men in Ice and Snow Wilderness valued the virginity of women very much. However, given her infamous reputation and dissolute stories, no men would believe that she could be a good wife and mother after getting married.

Sabrina could not determine her own destiny since she came to this world. Although she could gain rich food and honorable social status but she was responsible for sacrificing herself as a payment.

Sabrina was treacherous. Therefore, she chose a special way——seek freedom by destroying her own reputation.

This was Sabrina's biggest secret. Besides her henchwomen and her teacher, the saint priest of the wild bear tribe, Zhang Tie was the only man who knew this secret.

Of course, Zhang Tie was also the first man who embraced her.

Zhang Tie woke up on time. He found Sabrina was still sleeping well while the loose and soft night robe perfectly reflected her side curve, especially the sudden declination between her butt and her waist. What a beautiful scene.

As he was embracing her, the grim "javelin" pressed onto the groove between her soft butts with 2 layers of thick silk fabric in the middle.

The woman seemingly didn't notice it. At this moment, Zhang Tie felt a bit impulsive and stimulative.

Zhang Tie remembered the expression "not even match a wild beast" told by Donder. After forcing a bitter smile, he instantly sat up from his bed.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether there was pure friendship between man and woman. The relationship between him and Sabrina was a bit ambiguous since the beginning; however, the relationship developed greatly last night. Zhang Tie was not sure how their relationship would develop in the future. Actually, he felt very good by just embracing her over night, which made both him and Sabrina relaxed.

It was still a bit dark outside. Previously Zhang Tie wanted to leave at this moment; however, thinking that it was a bit weird to leave out of here at this time. If something really happened between him and Sabrina last night, it was a bit early to leave here at this moment. Additionally, he had no plan after leaving the grey eagle tribe at this moment.

Therefore, after throwing another glance at Sabrina's stimulative curve, Zhang Tie directly sat on the bed with legs crossed and started to consume the energy of the bone-exploding needles by running iron-blood battle Qi.

The process was very painful. Soon after Zhang Tie started, he oozed sweat all over. Although it was a short period, it increased Zhang Tie's ability to stand pains a lot...

After 20 minutes, Zhang Tie finished his 1st round of cultivation. After a few minutes' break, Zhang Tie felt having recovered a bit; therefore, he started the 2nd round.

Soon after the 2nd round, Zhang Tie entered the trouble-reappearance situation and started the regular "two deaths" cultivation. Although he could not see any improvement, he had formed a strong battle awareness and fighting skill at the critical moment at the cost of lives. Without the daily cultivation, he could have never performed that extremely gorgeous bloody dance by that super heavy battle hammer last night.

After doing all of this, Zhang Tie opened his eyes and noticed that Sabrina was gazing at him without a wink while supporting her

head with a hand on bed.

"I've not imagined that you're so diligent!"

"Have you heard about that talent is equal to 99% of efforts and 1% of aspiration!" Zhang Tie pretended to be serious.

Sabrina replied with a smile as she sat up from the bed. Poking Zhang Tie's chest with one finger, she said, "My genius, whether can we get off bed now? Over one night, I estimate that everybody across the camp has known that Sabrina the loose woman broke her record—to sleep with a teenager who's younger than 18 years old!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "I don't care. Actually, I'd like to give you a favor. If you need similar helps in the future, just let me know. I can accept it even if it's a bit more excessive!"

"Don't you mind O'Laura's feeling" Sabrina rolled her eyes.

"Her feeling?" Zhang Tie winked, "What're you thinking about? Nothing happened between me and her. I've not even seen her real look yet!"

"You liar! If nothing happened between you and her, why would like to be her captive? I was told that O'Laura was actually a big beauty. She's even more beautiful than her mother. As she didn't want to be influential in the grey eagle tribe only by her looks and avoid from being pursued by men, she wore that mask. I was told that she disliked men before. It seems now that it's not reliable!"

"Cough, cough" Zhang Tie rubbed his nose and felt confused.

"But no need to worry about that anymore. After the death game last night, few people would dare to pursue her anymore. Those who want to pursue her have to consider it well that a guy who could easily kill a LV 10 strong fighter with a javelin could not be easily stirred up!"

"He...he..." Zhang Tie smirked as he became speechless.

"You're also giving me a favor. As everybody knows that you're my curtain guest. As a loose women who has you as a lover, fewer people would like to marry me!" Sabrina became excited at once.

"Are you my lover?" Zhang Tie asked Sabrina.

"Guess!" Sabrina glanced at Zhang Tie in a charming look.

"I think so. After all, I'm the first man who slept with you. Heh...heh..." Zhang Tie replied shamelessly.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Sabrina's face blushed, "You little b*stard!"

"Young lady, we're ready for your bath!" a female servant of Sabrina walked to the side of the bed and reminded them while being isolated by a curtain.

"You want to take a bath?"

"I saw you oozing sweat just now. I prepare it for you!"

"Why not together? I found your bath barrel was huge when you took bath here. It would be a waste if I use it alone!"

"Humph, badass!"

...

As Zhang Tie's clothes were covered with too much fresh blood, Sabrina had thrown it away last night. After taking a bath in Sabrina's tent, Zhang Tie put on a whole set of blue Samurai clothes which were prepared for him by Sabrina. After that, Zhang Tie walked out of Sabrina's tent.

At this moment, the first wisp of sunlight had appeared in the horizon, everybody across the wild bear camp was preparing for the breakfast. After breakfast, they would set out to block the entrances of Haidela Glacier Crack.

Battles were doomed to happen today; perhaps someone would sacrifice their lives. Therefore, each fighter was preparing for that. Although the atmosphere in the camp was not stiff but it was

definitely not as relaxed as that of couple of days before. Nobody would like to waste time at this critical moment.

Like yesterday, Sabrina had a female servant accompany Zhang Tie out of the camp of the wild bear tribe. On the way, Zhang Tie found that every fighter was throwing their awed look at him.

Zhang Tie knew that his performance last night had been spread. In this world centered by fighting strength, his performance had already won him enough respect here.

As a man who could easily kill LV 9 fighters, a man who could kill a LV 10 strong fighter with a javelin in a split second, he was qualified to frankly face such awed looks wherever he was.

Actually, Zhang Tie felt pretty good by being awed in this way. His vanity was greatly satisfied.

...

"Is that the teenager from last night? He doesn't look like that strong. How can he lift the bear-killing hammer with such thin arms?"

When he passed by a tent, he heard some discussion, although in a low voice.

"You know what! Powerhouses are not judged by weight and age. I'm afraid that 100 of you could not defeat him!"

"I was told that he's a wanted criminal."

"He's a scapegoat. Childe Gangula had expressed last night that he would dispatch people to request the police station in Eschyle City to investigate his wanted circular once again!"

"What does that mean?"

"Stupid. By doing this, the grey eagle tribe would not be able to keep him. I was told that he had stayed over night in Sabrina's tent!"

"Oh, I see!" a soldier replied.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie just revealed a smile...

...

Outside the gate of the wild bear tribe's camp, a guard beside Gangula had long waited there with a strong and tall rhino-horse. On the back of the rhino-horse, there was a special armrack, where the terrifying battle hammer that Zhang Tie used last night was hung. On the other side of the rhino-horse's back was a container which contained over 20 metal javelins and a set of armor.

Gangula promised to gift Zhang Tie last night.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming out, Gangula's guard greeted him politely before giving the rein of the rhino-horse to Zhang Tie.

On the way to the camp of the grey eagle tribe with that rhino-horse, Zhang Tie found that many people were talking about him; however, nobody dared to stir up him.

After killing a tiger easily, Zhang Tie found that all the flies became quiet. At this moment, nobody felt that 5000 gold coins were attractive anymore.

When Zhang Tie returned to the camp of the grey eagle tribe, he found some fighters were standing outside the gate of the grey eagle tribe's camp. At the sight of Zhang Tie, they soon stood with respect and stared at Zhang Tie with awed and thrilled looks. Meanwhile, they punched the leather armors on their left chests.

Those fighters in the camp of the grey eagle tribe also heard about what happened in the camp of the wild bear tribe last night. Whatever Zhang Tie's status was, he was fighting for the reputation of the grey eagle tribe. As he chopped off the head of the people who insulted and despised the grey eagle tribe and put it in front of O'Laura, Zhang Tie was qualified to gain the sincere respect of all the fighters of the grey eagle tribe.

Salem became quiet completely. He did not dare to look into Zhang Tie's eyes.

For some reason, when O'Laura saw Zhang Tie this morning, she only humphed. Closely after that, she drilled into her own tent. This made Zhang Tie confused. He could not think it through why a woman who dropped tears in front of him could be as icy as an iceberg this morning.

"Woman's heart is really confusing!"

...

Two hours later, as fighters blew the horns, all the fighters who had finished their breakfast started to set out. After fastening bulged leather sacs onto the iron-chain frames at the riverside and paving wooden plates on them, they started to tide over the river. After that, tens of thousands of fighters forged towards the entrances of the relics like tide.

All the tribes tided over the river except for the blood wolf tribe. After losing the head and some powerhouses, the blood wolf tribe directly withdrew from the alliance action and returned to their base camp.

Seeing thousands of fighters of the blood wolf tribe leaving in another direction, Zhang Tie knew that it was not the end. The blood wolf tribe would definitely revenge him, "So what, I'm not afraid of them."

Riding a rhino-horse, Zhang Tie soon caught sight of a huge Haidela Glacier Crack and an increasing number of pioneers with flurried faces...

Therefore, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside...

Chapter 450: Being Kind-hearted

Haidela was the legendary god of ice and snow of Slavs. Of course, the land being named with the god of ice and snow had a sharp implication.

In the legends of Slavs, the south terrain of Ice and Snow Wilderness was caused by the fighter between god of ice and snow and some deity. After being eroded and carved by ice and snow for millions of years, it finally became this terrain.

With a bird-view from the sky, one would find that the Haidela Glacier Crack was like wrinkles and wounds on the mother land, in different depths. Due to long-term ice movement, the southern terrain of Ice and Snow Wilderness which was once plain became exotic.

Zhang Tie was standing before the entrance of the legendary underground relics, which was a bizarre existence.

This was a long and narrow French-bean shaped huge glacier crack, the highest point of which leveled with the ground. It was as wide as 2-3 km. Given its look, it was nothing different than average canyons. The only difference was the staged rock faults formed by ice movement from the ground to the bottom of the huge glacier crack on both sides.

As it was summer in Ice and Snow Wilderness, it was pretty verdant below the canyon. 1.7 m high lush weeds were growing everywhere.

At this moment, the rocky faults on both sides of the canyon was covered with dense personal tents. There were also smoke and fire in many places.

Hearing the groundbreaking sounds of the contingent of fighters, many pioneers drilled out of their tents and watched the army that appeared on the slopes of the canyon in the distance.

Many pioneers were rushing towards here from afar in a flurried way.

"Hurry up, escape right now. The allied army of Ice and Snow Wilderness has tens of thousands of soldiers..."

"Slavs are here to clean us..."

Hearing this, many pioneers changed their faces. They hurriedly put away their personal belongings and escaped. Some even screamed, "Don't worry, as long as we cooperate with each other, we don't have to fear them!"

"Yes, we found the relics first. Why do those Slavs chase us away?"

The canyon became chaotic right away. Someone prepared to escape while someone seemingly prepared to organize people so as to negotiate with Slavs. However, as pioneers' organizations were always loose, they could not form a cohesive force at such a critical moment at all.

Riding his rhino-horse, Zhang Tie followed the team of the grey eagle tribe. The terrifying scene of tens of thousands of cavalries was overwhelming.

The vanguards slowly opened the road in front of the army, following the troops. They entered the canyon from a wild slope on one end. After that, the following troops gradually extended and became as wide as 1000 m. They started to sweep across the entire canyon like a steel flood.

At this moment, Zhang Tie found that almost each fighter was born to be a cavalry. After entering the canyon, almost without any command, all the cavalries of tribes, including those of the grey eagle tribe had started to coordinate and cooperate with each other when forging ahead. They extended their own troops and formed an assault line which posed an intense stress to the pioneers.

Each one's rhino-horse was trotting while tens of thousands of rhino-horses's crispy hoofs formed a muffled, groundbreaking sound.

As the allied forces were here to occupy the place and gain benefits instead of killing people, they maintained such a slow speed so as to cause a great stress to the pioneers. In this way, those pioneers could escape in case of unnecessary losses because of counter-attack.

Only after a short while, tens of thousands of cavalries had already forged thousands of meters ahead. They encountered no counter-attacks on the way as all the pioneers in the canyon were escaping like how rabbits being chased by wolves.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had already rushed to the front of the troop. After glancing at those pioneers in vision, he recognized 2 pioneer friends, Sam and Gerri. Zhang Tie didn't expect that the 2 guys were killed out of no reason today.

As the terrain gradually widened in the canyon, some places became more sophisticated; therefore, the cavalries started to separate into different troops. When they moved close to a huge entrance which was 100-m wide, they saw the most pioneers. Based on the relatively sophisticated terrain, the pioneers finally launched a counter attack towards those allied forces.

Without any verbal warning, the pioneers lurking in the weeds had already shot out bolts towards the cavalries, causing some fighters fall down. After that, the allied forces rushed towards them as they chopped off all the pioneers in front of them as the short, fierce battle started at once.

Very soon, pioneers started to bleed and fell down in batches...

Personally, most of the pioneers could match fighters in the allied forces; however, facing such a well-organized attack, the team of pioneers was soon dispersed after a couple of minutes. The allied forces instantly gained an overwhelming advantage. All the

pioneers who dared to fight back were soon surrounded and killed.

As most of these pioneers were poor, of course, Zhang Tie would not hurt them. He didn't need to fight them at all. He only followed up the troops. In the fight, he only used his weapon once.

...

Hundreds of pioneers were gathering under a huge tree hundreds meters away. At the sight of this battle, someone instigated loudly. They seemingly wanted to rush towards here.

"These idiots!" seeing those pioneers, Zhang Tie swore inside. After kicking his rhino-horse, he rushed towards those people.

When he was over 100 m away from them, Zhang Tie drew out a javelin and threw it towards them.

The javelin didn't fall on anybody; instead on a huge tree beside them.

The luxuriant tree was over 30 m in height and over 1 m in width.

With a sonic boom, the trunk of the huge tree was penetrated and exploded, which was heard by everybody on the battle field.

The wood chips flew in all directions, causing another startling boom. The twigs and crown almost covered 100 square meters at once. As a result, all the pioneers who wanted to join the battle hurriedly dodged away. Many of them were bruised by wood chips. After glancing at the quivering twigs and the straight line over the weeds from Zhang Tie and them, all of them turned pale with dumbfounded looks. Some even loosed their grips of weapons.

Because this place was covered with 1 m high weeds, Zhang Tie's javelin pressed down the weeds due to its sharp wave and airflow. As a result, an over 100 m long line was left on the weeds like an invisible hand, which was really shocking.

The line started from Zhang Tie and ended at the huge tree.

"F*ck, is that a human?" many pioneers had not seen such a

person who could launch such a terrifying attack from 100 m away.

"Roll out of here, are you seeking for death?" Zhang Tie roared, scaring all the hundreds of pioneers away at once.

Not only some fighters of the allied forces behind Zhang Tie, even those pioneers in the distance had caught sight of such a shocking scene.

"Wula...", seeing Zhang Tie's performance, all the fighters of the allied forces uttered a groundbreaking sound in unison, rising the morale at once. It was completely different between hearing Zhang Tie's performance and seeing Zhang Tie's performance for those fighters. The moment they saw Zhang Tie's terrifying javelin, everybody became thrilled at once. It was their great pride to have such a powerful fighter on their side.

On such a battle field, gorgeous fighters who had super great fighting strength could always bring strong aspiration and confidence to the other fighters on the same side.

By contrast, those pioneers in the distance who were still watching the battle field became completely hopeless at this moment. As a result, they instantly turned around and escaped.

Riding on the rhino-horse, Zhang Tie didn't chase after them; instead watched them disappear from his vision rapidly. After that, his cavalries rushed over them like a tide.

Riding her white rhino-horse, O'Laura came to Zhang Tie's side. After putting away his bloody long sword, she turned around and stared at Zhang Tie, "I've not imagined that you're so kind-hearted!"

"As we have no deep hatred with them, we don't have to kill them. Many of them are not bad guys. They are just here to survive themselves. Additionally, it can reduce our casualties too!" Suddenly, Zhang Tie felt his heart racing. He turned around and found Roslav and Waajid of the huge bear tribe were gazing at him

from afar.

Realizing that they were noticed by Zhang Tie, they exchanged glances with each other before turning around like nothing had happened.

"F*ck, are they sick?" Zhang Tie muttered. He recalled that the 2 guys had been abnormal since he exposed the power of his javelin last night.

Therefore, Zhang Tie made a decision, "If the 2 guys dare to stir up me, they will try my javelins..."

Chapter 451: The Prophecy

After the morning, the allied forces had already occupied the whole canyon.

In this action, the allied forces suffered a casualty of over 110 people while the pioneers suffered a casualty of over 300 people. Almost all the pioneers in the canyon were driven out of the canyon.

After the pioneers were driven out of the canyon, the allied forces started to set passes and barriers to the ends of canyon and entrances of the underground relics.

In the morning, Zhang Tie had witnessed the survival of the fittest in this age.

For pioneers, the allied forces were like bandits; however, the pioneers in the eyes of the allied forces were like thieves. Zhang Tie found that each party had their own view on the opponent. Therefore, they had to deal with it through fists and blades.

As the allied forces' fists were more powerful than that of those pioneers, the allied forces set the regulations here.

...

At noon, when the sun was hanging high in the sky, Zhang Tie saw some fighters of the allied forces set a huge wooden notice board at the east entrance of the canyon.

——This entrance is administered by the southern allied forces in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

——Pioneers are welcome to discover treasures in relics from here.

——Pioneers have to submit 50% of their achievements from the underground relics to us. Meanwhile, we will ensure the security of the taxpayers and their personal belongings.

There were only 3 above lines in scarlet letters on the new wooden notice board. They were written using the fresh blood of the pioneers whose heads had been chopped off. Hundreds of meters away from there, hundreds of heads of pioneers were piled, forming a sharp contrast with this notice board.

"Relics discovery tax? Holy crap! When did these savages in Ice and Snow Wilderness learn how to collect taxes?"

"If incapable people wanted to rob others, they had to use their blades or javelins; however, if capable people wanted to rob others, they only needed to collect taxes." Donder told Zhang Tie. At this moment, at the sight of the funny notice board, Zhang Tie finally understood it that tax collection was just a changing form of robbery. The only difference between tax collection and robbery was that the prior form was more civil. Additionally, the fragile self-esteem of those being robbed were preserved.

Hearing the booming hoofs of rhino-horses from behind, Zhang Tie turned around and found Sabrina was galloping towards here followed by over 200 female fighters from the inside of the canyon.

She was wearing the purple leather armor which Zhang Tie saw at the first sight of her. Her black hair was dancing with the agile movements of the xiphodon, revealing a high vitality.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Sabrina revealed a smile. Meanwhile she rushed towards Zhang Tie with her contingent and stopped in front of Zhang Tie.

As Zhang Tie's rhino-horse was a bit afraid of that Sabrina's xiphodon, it started to wave its head and moved 2 steps aside.

"The grey eagle tribe said that you've already left. You're truly here!" Sabrina couldn't cover her excitement.

"How did you find me?" Zhang Tie asked her.

"It's too boring here. You told me you were going to hunt huge wolves. How about hunting them together. We can collect some

fleshes for our tribesmen. Gangula said that we might stay a bit longer than expected. If we run out of dried rations, we have to solve it ourselves. I'm afraid that each tribe would dispatch hunters to hunt beasts a few days later. We can go there first!"

After glancing at Sabrina's maiden army, Zhang Tie knew that Sabrina was not going to hunt; instead, she was going to play by chance. If the dried rations of the wild bear tribe had to depend on these women, Zhang Tie was afraid that all the fighters of the wild bear tribe would have to gnaw grass roots in 2 weeks.

"But it's not bad. This is in compliance with my target here. If I go out with these young ladies, my deed would not be that remarkable anymore."

"You only have so few people? You know, the pioneers are still gathering outside the canyon!"

"You're my bodyguard. Additionally, you'd better not belittle me as I'm already a LV 7 fighter!" Sabrina raised her breasts proudly.

Remembering the swimming scene in the river, Zhang Tie peeped at her 2 white bulbs and forcefully swallowed his saliva. He thought for a few seconds before replying, "Well, but you have to listen to me over there!"

"No problem. Are you familiar with the surrounding environment? I don't expect to hunt nothing after a long while!" Sabrina showed her whites of eyes to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie smiled and raised his arm. In a few seconds, with a flapping sound, a white owl flew towards here from afar and fell on Zhang Tie's arm. Meanwhile, its eyes kept rolling like the embrasures and gazing at Sabrina.

"Ah..." Sabrina watched Zhang Tie surprisingly, "Is this your pet?"

"Right, how's it?" Zhang Tie became a bit pleasant.

"A white owl, it's really beautiful!"

"With its help, you don't need to worry about the preys anymore!" soon after saying this, Zhang Tie touched its head as he sent an order to it. At the same time, he raised his arm, sending the owl in the air. After reaching hundreds of meters high, it hovered for a while before flying towards a direction.

"Jia..." Zhang Tie shook his rein and followed his owl.

Seeing Zhang Tie's back, Sabrina's eyes gleamed. Meanwhile, she also shook her rein and followed Zhang Tie. Her female cavalries hurriedly followed after Sabrina.

Although owl didn't have a sharp vision in the sky; no matter what, its vision was much sharper than humans. It was almost like a moving sentinel in the sky. Additionally, this kind of owl had a super great listening ability which could never be matched by any other animals. Its face as a whole was like a radar which could receive sound. In winter, it could hear the sound of rats moving under snow from 1 km away and point their positions precisely.

Zhang Tie learned this since he gradually collaborated with this owl these days. Because of the great wildness seal, a mysterious link was established between the owl and Zhang Tie, through which, Zhang Tie could gradually sense the special abilities of this animal. This was also one of the benefit of "Great Wildness Sutra".

Previously, Zhang Tie didn't know that this owl could have such great abilities.

Although the owl's level was very low, it was the best sentinel and detective.

...

After Zhang Tie left the canyon for less than 1 km, he encountered a problem. As long as Sabrina's xiphodon was close to his rhino-horse, it would scare Zhang Tie's rhino-horse several steps backwards. Zhang Tie was very depressed about this as he had to correct the rhino-horse's moving direction and speed every

now and then.

Noticing this, Sabrina chuckled, "Xiphodon is the best and most powerful animal in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Many animals are afraid of it. You have to cultivate bonding with it since it's young before being able to drive it else I would have gifted you one xiphodon!"

Recalling Nurdo, O'Laura's cousin's arrogant look on a xiphodon, Zhang Tie instantly became interested in such animal.

"Did you catch it from the wild? But I've not seen any xiphodon in the wild since I came to Ice and Snow Wilderness?"

"Almost all the xiphodons grow in the wild. But you could only see them in the northern region of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Only the huge bear tribe knows how to capture and tame them. Our xiphodons were all bought from the huge bear tribe..." Sabrina explained as she gently fumbled the golden fur of her xiphodon, "Lily has been over 20 years with me. My father gifted it to me since I was 7 years old!"

Zhang Tie stared at such a huge animal. He had not imagined that she was already over 20 years old. Zhang Tie realized that its lifespan was much longer than a horse. "When a horse is over 20 years old, it should be a senior; however, this xiphodon is still jubilant."

"Her lifespan is very long?"

"Of course, xiphodon is a standard LV 6 animal. A common xiphodon could live about 100 years like humans. In Ice and Snow Wilderness, each bear-killing fighter dreams to ride a xiphodon as their partner! In fight, the same number of xiphodon cavalries could easily curve 3 times more number of other kinds of cavalries. Additionally, xiphodon's endurance and speed could almost rank top 3 among all the animals that could be ridden by humans in a large scale. They could easily run 1000 km over night!"

Sabrina's words really startled Zhang Tie inside. "This animal is simply a powerful animal being born to ride. If they could be matched with fighters on the battle fields in a large scale, they are simply animal tanks on the battle fields. Additionally, given its figure and its high running speed, it could be matched with highly-protective armor."

"Haven't the wild bear tribe established a team of xiphodon cavalries?"

Sabrina showed the whites of her eyes, "We have one. Each tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness expects to have a team of xiphodon cavalries; however, xiphodons are difficult to catch. Additionally, the cost of breeding a xiphodon is very high. Since 3 years old, a xiphodon would eat at least 20 kg flesh a day. The entire wild bear tribe only has one team of 400 xiphodon cavalries. They were the forbidden guards of the head of the tribe. In the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness, only the huge bear tribe maintains a king regiment of 5000 xiphodon cavalries, which safeguard the tribe of Slavs."

"King regiment of cavalries?" Zhang Tie's curiosity was arisen by such a special name.

"They are lunatics. They're safeguarding a weird prophecy generations after generations. They are completely living in their illusions. You've already seen 2 of them just now!" Sabrina became thrilled.

Zhang Tie's heart raced, "You mean Roslav and Waajid?"

"Yup. They came to tell my father that the prophecy that they had safeguarded for hundreds of years was going to come true. The king of Slavs who will unify the Ice and Snow Wilderness has come. They're here to tell the wild bear tribe to prepare for the king's welcome!" when she said the last sentence, Sabrina remarkably revealed a contempt.

"Is it a plot?" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly. Because there

were so many similar events in the history like an idol was fabricated or a puppet was found to take the throne so that the real power behind them could rule the rest of the powers.

"Now, the bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness have long separated. How can they unify with each other so easily. How can they follow a stranger on Elzida and let him be their lord?" Sabrina waved her head, "Do you know what did my father think when he heard this?"

"What?"

"My father lets my young sisters to stay at home these days. If the huge bear tribe really find out such a guy, my father will directly marry my young sisters over there. Whether it was true or not, to be the guy's father-in-law was the best!"

Hearing this plan, Zhang Tie rolled his eyes, "These old guys are really smart. Facing this, without making any promise, they planned to have a son-in-law first so that they will be in a overwhelming position. D*mn it! It's really difficult to find a idiot in this age."

However, recalling how Roslav and Waajid peeped at him, Zhang Tie felt good once again. "Bad guys would always be troubled by bad guys. I will just stay away from them."

"Your father is shortsighted. If I was your father, I would marry you to the would-be king. Based on your ability, I believe that you could definitely conquer him!" Zhang Tie joked.

Sabrina replied with a laughter. She then suddenly pointed at the sky in the distance, "Look, your owl is swirling over there, what does that mean?"

The owl was drawing "8" in the sky. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "Ha...ha...here are our preys..."

"Will you come here, my Lily could ride 2 people easily!" Sabrina glanced at Zhang Tie.

Receiving the invitation, Zhang Tie directly flew onto the xiphodon from several meters away. He came to Sabrina's back. Among her screams, Zhang Tie kissed her face.

"Keep running, my little mare!"

"You little asshole!" Sabrina swore as she shook her rein, driving the xiphodon towards the place where the owl was heading for...

Only after a few seconds, Zhang Tie had started to move his hands upwards from her abdomen...

Chapter 452: Becoming a Butterfly

Five days later...

With a shrill air-breaking sound, a javelin penetrated through a huge wolf over 300 m away in a split second, spurting fresh blood over the weeds.

Being startled by the sonic boom, the pack of smart wolves which were lowering their heads to tear off their preys felt being threatened. Without even glancing at who had thrown out the javelin, they directly darted towards afar with their heads lowered.

The javelins constantly arrived from afar, one javelin for one wolf. After each sonic boom, there was always a huge wolf being struck while spurting fresh blood. In a wink, ten more huge wolves had been killed.

The remaining huge wolves escaped in all directions; however, thunder-like hoofs sounded in the distance at this moment while over 200 female cavalries chasing the huge wolves back from two sides.

Holding a long sword, Zhang Tie darted towards them and managed to kill the remaining 20-odd huge wolves in a split second.

Inserting his long sword onto the grassland, Zhang Tie glanced at those dead wolves as he finally let out a long sigh. After these days' efforts, he had killed about 500 huge wolves and obtained 9 huge wolf seven-strength fruits.

Zhang Tie finally sighed satisfactorily.

These days, Zhang Tie had been waiting for a king huge wolf; however, he failed to encounter it, which made him a bit regretful. Nevertheless, Zhang Tie knew that such a thing was an uncertainty; as he had already obtained 9 huge wolf seven-strength fruits, he knew that it was already almost a perfect result.

When he imagined about the skyrocketing physical strength after taking the 9 huge wolf seven-strength fruits, Zhang Tie would feel proud about himself.

A huge wolf's strength was much greater than that of a wild wolf or an iron-teeth hyena, not to mention demon rats. Therefore, Zhang Tie knew that after eating the 9 huge wolf seven-strength fruits, he would have nine huge wolves' strength more in his body. Zhang Tie knew that he would see an essential improvement in his fighting strength and power this time.

The sun turned into a beautiful afterglow in the distance in the west, which was reflecting the distant sky and the vacant wilderness and making them red. Glancing at that afterglow, Zhang Tie felt that it was like a butterfly which had just broken out of its cocoon.

The beautiful afterglow resonated with Zhang Tie's current mood. Gazing at the afterglow, Zhang Tie let out a long sigh.

"Although the worm is still far from being a dragon, at least it could become a butterfly now."

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard Sabrina's low exclamation from afar. He instantly rushed towards her with his long sword.

...

"What's up?" although it was over 200 m away, Zhang Tie had arrived there in about 10 seconds.

With a slightly pale face, Sabrina pointed at a brushwood on one side, "I was startled by something disgusting over there!"

Zhang Tie then walked over there. Before drawing close, he hurriedly held his breath due to the bloody and disgusting smell which made him feel like throwing up. He opened the weeds with his long sword and caught sight of an incomplete corpse which had been gnawed by the huge wolves.

Given its look, it should be a pioneer. Perhaps, more precisely, it

was a poor guy. This place was over 100 km away from the canyon where the relics' entrance lay. Zhang Tie didn't know whether this guy came from the canyon or was going there. But it was really not important.

For women, even if they had seen a lot of corpses, they might still be startled by disgusting things.

Even Zhang Tie hurriedly moved back after a glance, not to mention Sabrina. If he kept gazing at it, Zhang Tie's appetite would be influenced for sure tonight.

"Alright, it's just a pioneer's corpse. He must have encountered the pack of huge wolves!" Zhang Tie shook his head as he glanced at those female cavalries who were getting down from their xiphodons and were going to manage those dead huge wolves, "We'd better not take those dead huge wolves. We might eat something disgusting if we failed to get them out of their stomachs..."

"Stop, it's really disgusting..." Sabrina hurriedly shook her head while her face turned totally pale, "We'd better leave here as soon as possible!"

...

1 minute later, Zhang Tie rode the xiphodon together with Sabrina before leaving here with over 200 female cavalries. Facing the sunset, they prepared to return to the canyon where the relics was discovered.

Zhang Tie and Sabrina were dozens of meters ahead of the team. After a few days outside, those female cavalries had already realized to keep a "safe distance" from Zhang Tie and Sabrina in case of listening to or seeing something that they should not.

After her symbolic resistance was collapsed by Zhang Tie, Sabrina was indulged in Zhang Tie's demon hands once again.

"You look happy today!" the woman really had a very strong

instinct. Only after galloping for a short while with his hands around her breasts, Zhang Tie's exciting mood had been sensed by Sabrina.

"How do you know?"

"Woman's instinct!" sitting in front of Zhang Tie, Sabrina turned around.

A solemn and pious expression reappeared in Zhang Tie's face. On the slightly bumpy back of the xiphodon, Zhang Tie raised his head while he put his hands over Sabrina's quivering white breasts with a layer of cloth between them. He started to rub them slightly, "You're right. I'm truly very happy today. Because after these days of efforts, I feel that various species on this land have gradually recovered their ecological balance. This is the meaning of my efforts!"

"You liar!" being rubbed by Zhang Tie's weird hands, Sabrina's face slowly turned red. She twisted her body. After realizing that she could not escape from Zhang Tie's roguish hands, she glared at Zhang Tie and didn't struggle any more, "This tide has tens of thousands of huge wolves. You only killed hundreds of them. How could you recover their balance!"

"Everything has its own way. I only do my way best. This is the balance between them and I. If I feel balanced inside, everything will be balanced!" Zhang Tie continued to explain in a solemn look.

Sabrina was still considering about Zhang Tie's words with a slight frown while Zhang Tie instantly put his mouth on her lips...

Being raided by Zhang Tie once again, Sabrina just tightened her mouth. At the same time, she fiercely pinched Zhang Tie's thigh. Zhang Tie didn't care. He just pinched the enlarging and bulging buttons under his palms before pressing it down.

With a light groan "ah", Sabrina's body turned soft while her lips were opened by Zhang Tie's tongue...

...

Zhang Tie indeed felt very happy today. Besides completing the hunting action, he had cleaned off the threat of the bone-exploding needles this morning.

In order to not arouse senior Merkel's attention, Zhang Tie left a bit energy of the bone-exploding needles. It would only take him half a minute to clean all of it if he wanted to manage it. Such a bit energy could not prevent Zhang Tie from running his battle Qi at the critical moment, not to mention cause any unbearable destruction to his body.

Another reason that Zhang Tie kept that little energy of the bone-exploding needles was that he had not thought through what to do next. He was not sure whether to leave Ice and Snow Wilderness or continue to stay here to seek for other chances to intensify his fighting strength.

If he cleaned off all the energy of the bone-exploding needles, he had to leave Ice and Snow Wilderness right away.

According to his plan A, Zhang Tie intended to leave here when he would reach LV 8. Given his current situation, he only needed to light a bit more than 3 surging points; given the growth cycle of leakless fruits, he only needed to wait another 1.5 months here.

...

Two hours later, it turned dark completely when Zhang Tie and Sabrina's female cavalries returned to the canyon which was occupied by the allied forces.

At this moment, the canyon was full of bonfires and burning torches. Being less than 2 km away from the canyon was the pioneers' temporary camp. In the evening, the canyon was covered with flames, making it pretty splendid.

After knowing that the allied forces were not going to occupy the relics alone, but to cooperate with them, most of the pioneers

chose to stay here, except for a few pioneers who could not accept the condition. After all, most pioneers thought that a half of achievements was better than nothing. Although the allied forces were advantageous, at least they left a hope to the pioneers.

Even in the canyon, Zhang Tie was still riding behind Sabrina and hugging her.

A 18 year old teenager was riding on a fierce xiphodon while hugging a 30-odd mature beauty, followed by over 200 female cavalries. Such a great Qi field was enough to make them eye-catching wherever they were.

Zhang Tie revealed a wisp of smile while Sabrina's face blushed. In hot love, they just ignored the looks of the onlookers.

"Pe...Peter?" soon after he entered the canyon from hundreds of meters, Zhang Tie suddenly heard an exclamation.

Hearing the sound, the xiphodon stopped. Zhang Tie turned around and saw a very embarrassed guy among those shabby pioneers, whose face was pitch dark. That guy was widely opening his eyes and mouth while looking at Zhang Tie as if he was watching a ghost.

Although the guy was a bit sloppy, his purple hair and slightly fat figure could still be recognized.

"Sam?" Zhang Tie became stunned as he instantly jumped off the xiphodon and walked towards those pioneers. Zhang Tie didn't identify him when they were lowering heads with sad looks just now.

The female cavalries behind Zhang Tie also stopped, so did those pioneers who had just experienced that fierce fight. Zhang Tie and Sam were both dumbfounded as they had never imagined that they could see a friend from the two different groups of people.

"It's that you, Peter? Am I dreaming?" Gerri also walked out of those pioneers and stared at Zhang Tie while rubbing his eyes

forcefully.

"Ha...ha...you could keep an eye open even in dream, how can you mistake me for someone else?" Zhang Tie burst out laughing. Before Gerri could make any movement, Zhang Tie had already moved forward and hugged him forcefully.

"Ah, I'm a bit dirty..." glancing over Zhang Tie's clean and gorgeous uniformed clothes, Sam also walked towards Zhang Tie. Before uttering a word, he was also hugged by Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, Zhang Tie gave him a heavy punch on his shoulder.

"It's really too good to see you guys fine!" Zhang Tie glanced over them carefully.

Seeing Peter unchanged, Sam smirked with gleaming eyes.

"Peter, why are you here?" Gerri asked Zhang Tie out of his concern.

Before Zhang Tie answered Gerri, over 100 cavalries had rushed over here with heavy killing intents. Weapons in hands, fierce eyes on these pioneers. The moment they arrived, they had surrounded these pioneers, seemingly prepared to kill all these pioneers at any time.

Being surrounded by the cavalries, these pioneers became intense right away.

"Mr. Peter, have these pioneers offended you?" A military officer jumped off his xiphodon and came to Zhang Tie's side as he glanced at those pioneers with a heavy killing intent.

Zhang Tie's terrifying fighting strength and performance in the canyon had completely won him the respect of most of the soldiers and low-rank military officers of the allied forces; plus his scandal with Sabrina of the wild bear tribe these days, Zhang Tie had become an idol of many soldiers of the allied forces.

Zhang Tie knew that these on-duty patrols might be attracted by it when he stopped here. They might think that some conflict or

trouble happened between the two parties. Therefore, they were here to give a favor to Zhang Tie.

"Thanks, they're my friends. I stopped here to greet them!"

"Friends?" the military officer glanced over Zhang Tie, Gerri and Sam for a short while. Finally he waved his hand to order his cavalries to leave while giving a salute to Zhang Tie.

Seeing off the military officer, Zhang Tie turned around and revealed a smile to Sabrina with a curious look, "My little mare, you go back, I will come back to you tonight!"

Sabrina then replied with a smile as she led her female cavalries away.

Not until all the soldiers of the allied forces left did the other pioneers surround Zhang Tie, Sam and Gerri.

"Gerri...who's this man..." a 40-odd pioneer watched Zhang Tie carefully.

"This is Peter, a friend of mine and Sam!" Gerri raised his voice, "Peter is also a pioneer!"

Hearing the second half of Gerri's words, all the other pioneers were shocked greatly as they felt a row of crows flying by their eyes. Everybody stared at Zhang Tie with widely opened eyes which were full of surprises and doubts...

"He's a pioneer? Are you kidding me? If this young man is a pioneer, what are we? Are we beggars who come to Ice and Snow Wilderness from afar?"

"How come such a huge gap between pioneers?"

"Hugging a big beauty on a xiphodon, followed by hundreds of female cavalries; being protected by hundreds of cavalries of allied forces at any time. What did he call that beauty? My little mare? Look at this, I will never believe that he's a pioneer. This Peter is definitely a noble in a big tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness!"

Various whims flashed across their minds.

...

Hearing Gerri's words, everybody became dombfounded, not knowing what to say.

"Where are you heading for?" Zhang Tie asked.

"We've just come out of the underground relics. We were told that the other pioneers were above there, therefore, we're going to stay with them!" Sam explained.

"Have you eaten?"

Sam waved his head.

"This is not the place to talk, let's go up!"

Sam and Gerri exchanged glances with each other as they nodded.

Therefore, Zhang Tie went to the pioneers' camp together with them.

Compared to those pioneers, Zhang Tie was really eye-catching. At the sight of Zhang Tie, all the pioneers who had seen his terrifying performance that day changed their face, some even escaped right away.

When Zhang Tie's status as a pioneer was spread across the pioneers' camp, the whole camp was in a chaos.

However, Sam and Gerri thought that the other pioneers in the camp might be shocked by Zhang Tie's gorgeous clothes.

Zhang Tie took out his jerky meat and shared with them along Sam and Gerri. Sitting beside a bonfire, Sam and Gerri started to engulf the jerky as they described what they had experienced since they left Zhang Tie.

Sam and Gerri had not noticed that more and more pioneers were slowly gathering around them silently...

Chapter 453: Super Relics

When Sam and Gerri left Zhang Tie from Eschyle City, they came to the small town Sciatta. After staying there for a couple of days, they came here with the army of pioneers.

Their experience was not complex. After arriving here, they tried to enter the glacier crack to discover the urban relics with the other pioneers. Through constant attempts and exploration, they gradually figured out the underground situation. Therefore, after some preparations, Sam and Gerri entered the underground world 10 days ago, they came out of there today.

Although it was not very risky down there, they also encountered many dangers and setbacks, big or small. All of them had been tortured so much.

What made them depressed was that half of their achievements were robbed away when they exited the entrance. Facing that powerful fighting strength of the allied forces, they had no right to negotiate, to be killed and lose all the achievements or to submit half of their achievements. They had to make the final choice.

That was why Zhang Tie saw them lowering their heads in low spirits just now.

"You've gained something down there? I wonder what are they?" Zhang Tie asked out of pure curiosity, instead of greed.

Hearing Zhang Tie's question, Sam and Gerri exchanged glances with each other. Closely after that, they took out one item from their storage bag respectively and showed it to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie took it from Sam's hand. It was pretty heavy. Zhang Tie found it was a delicate metal fallow deer, an art work. Although its surface was a bit rusted, it still remained its metallic luster; additionally, it was very complete.

According to the current standards, this item was produced about

900 to 1000 years ago. It was remarkably a cultural relic before the Catastrophe. Before the Catastrophe, humans could produce a lot of things that could not be produced today, take this item as an example. It's processed with a metal coating technology, which could not be mastered by humans in this age. The moment he held it, Zhang Tie had realized it.

This item was very collectible. Many rich people would like to place some cultural relics before the Catastrophe in their homes.

As Zhang Tie had worked in Donder's grocery for a long time, he estimated that this item was worth at least 30 gold coins in the grocery in Blackhot City. Of course, if it was well packaged and met someone who really liked it, it might be worth higher than 70 gold coins.

"Nice, this item is at least worth your travel here. Besides, you can have some surplus!" Zhang Tie nodded.

With a sad look, Sam sighed, "It should have been a pair. When we exited the entrance, we were robbed by those b*stards of the allied forces, losing the other one!"

With a smile, Zhang Tie then took Gerri's item. It looked a bit weird. In the size of a palm, its surface had been heavily rusted. however, Zhang Tie could still identify the number buttons on its surface.

Zhang Tie didn't know what it was. He estimated that it was a product before the Catastrophe. The price of such a cultural relic which was obviously featured by human science and technology before the Catastrophe might range from a couple of silver coins to thousands of gold coins. As such items were involved with too many special professional knowledge, its value could not be identified by Zhang Tie.

After saying "Not bad", Zhang Tie returned that item to Gerri.

"Peter, why are you here? Why are you so close to those Slavs?"

Gerri found that so many pioneers had surrounded them at this moment. If they were curious about Zhang Tie at the beginning, they should have left at this moment. However, they all focused on Peter with a bit awe. Gerri slightly touched Sam. Sam then also noticed that.

Zhang Tie didn't care about those pioneers at all; he had already found them being surrounded by the other pioneers from the beginning. However, out of his confidence, he still acted calmly. In those pioneers' eyes, his calm act made him outstanding. Therefore, they did not dare to draw too close to them.

"After leaving you at the dock, I came to Eschyle City. I met an enemy over there and killed him. After that, I was wanted by the police station of Eschyle. Then, I escaped away from Eschyle City and wandered for some days in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Then, I was caught by bounty hunters. Therefore, my current status is actually their captive and...hmm...personal property!" scratching his head, Zhang Tie briefed.

Listening to this, Sam and Gerri both widely opened their eyes. Actually, if Zhang Tie said he was a son-in-law of Slavs, Sam and Gerri would never doubt it; given Zhang Tie's toyboy look, it was possible. However, Zhang Tie told them he was their captive, which really shocked them.

"You mean you're captive of those Slavs? F*ck, are you kidding me? Riding a xiphodon, hugging a big beauty, followed by a contingent of bodyguards, you tell me you're their captive? I saw them respect you very much. Is that a special treatment for captive? If so, please ask them whether do they need more captives or not?" Gerri instantly shouted.

Being embarrassed, Sam glanced at Zhang Tie with full of admiration, "The woman that you hugged...is really...really very beautiful. Additionally, she has huge breasts! I'm sure very few women like her could be found in Ice and Snow Wilderness!"

"Yes, the moment I saw you, I knew you might have slept with her. Are the Slavs used to gift their beauties to their captives?"

Watching Sam and Gerri's shocking looks, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Of course not. Firstly, I'm a special captive. I only killed a b*stard in Eschyle City. However, Eschyle City's wanted circular charged me with 3 lives by mistake. I became other's scapegoat. Actually I'm not as evil as that on the wanted circular. Secondly, they find me useful to them, therefore, they treat me well! As to the woman, it's an accident. She didn't know I was a captive at the beginning! Finally, she knew that; however, considering the above two reasons, she didn't care about it!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Sam and Gerri finally understood it. They then sighed with full emotions that Zhang Tie's experience in Ice and Snow Wilderness was really wonderful.

"What are you going to do?" Sam asked Zhang Tie.

"I've not had a plan yet. It's good to stay here. Perhaps, I will stay here for a couple of more days. After my wanted circular was cancelled, I will leave from here!" Zhang Tie answered after thinking for a short while. He then added, "What about you?"

"We will stay here for a few days!" Gerri glanced at Sam. After that, he moved his head closer to Zhang Tie. After looking around, Gerri whispered, "Sam and I found that the relics might be a huge treasure, a GSC."

Sam looked at Zhang Tie. When Gerri said this to Zhang Tie, Sam nodded solemnly.

"GSC?" Zhang Tie became stunned. Although he could always imitate pioneers vividly, he was not a real one as he didn't know too much about the secret language and inherited knowledge which were used by experienced pioneers. Therefore, Zhang Tie became curious about it.

"What's a GSC?" Zhang Tie asked Gerri in a low voice.

"Nobody have told you about this before?" Gerri glanced at Zhang Tie in an amazing look.

"No, as I'm a new pioneer and used to be alone, I don't know about this!" Zhang Tie waved his head.

"Do you know about the Star of God?"

"Yes!"

"GSC refers to the city which is well preserved after being destroyed by the pieces of star of god. Because of the odd energy of the star of god, its pieces would form a special time and space energy field wherever it fall. In this energy field, all the lifeless objects would remain unchanged no matter how long they stay there. GSC means the super relics caused by the pieces of the star of god. Do you know that?" Gerri gleamed his eyes.

Zhang Tie became dumbfounded as he seemed to not believe what he had heard. If this was true, it meant that there might be a complete GSC beneath the Ice and Snow Wilderness.

"How do you know that?"

"At the beginning, we just assumed it with a hope. Because this urban relics is too close to the legendary place of the pieces of star of god. Previously, although the pieces of star of god were discovered in other relics before the Catastrophe, those relics had been completely destroyed. Although the special energy field of the pieces of star of god could remain the relics unchanged, if the relics is heavily destroyed due to other reasons, the value of the items inside the relics would not be reduced!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he recalled the response of those pioneers in the Wilderness Bar when they heard that the relics and pieces of star of god were discovered. After that, he remembered why the allied forces suddenly blocked the entrance of the urban relics. He then instantly understood that the pioneers were excited by a wisp of hope. As for those southern tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness,

some big figures might have already got some information through special channels. Therefore, they couldn't wait to occupy the entrances of the relics by force. The items in a GSC might be 10 times more valuable than a common relic. Those big figures might not be interested in such a little money brought from a common relic; however, they would not mind occupying a GSC.

Realizing that Zhang Tie became silent, Sam stealthily foisted a small ball of things onto Zhang Tie's hand from the inside of his sleeve.

Zhang Tie found it was just a waste. However, its material was a bit weird as it looks like that of his military officer certificate in Norman Empire. It was red and touched ductile. It seemed like a package.

"What's this?"

"The ham package before the Catastrophe. It was called plastic before the Catastrophe. If not in the special energy field of the pieces of star of god, it would not have been preserved so well after such a long time. What counts most is that the ham inside might have just been eaten. Sam found it in an underground hidden corner 4 days ago!"

"You found this in the underground?" Zhang Tie looked solemn.

"Right. Although we don't know who dropped it, someone has already found something special down there. Additionally, those items preserved so well that it was out of people's imagination. The guy who dropped this item might be a pioneer. Pitifully, on the way back, he ate up his food; therefore, he had to eat the food that he collected from there! That guy might have left here with so many treasures, or he's still hiding somewhere and is preparing for a second discovery. Otherwise, he might have been killed!"

"You want a try?"

"Each pioneer dreams for such a precious chance. Why not have a

try?"

"Peter, join us!"

"Sam and I have already discovered the underground tunnel where we found this object. As long as we go down along that underground tunnel, we will reap something for sure!"

"Give me some time. As my status is a bit sensitive. If I act alone, I might bring some unknown dangers and troubles to you!" after considering it for a short while, Zhang Tie replied. What attracted Zhang Tie most was the super relics caused by the pieces of star of god, the GSC which remained the original look of the city before the Catastrophe, instead of the treasures inside.

...

After warning the two people about something and promising to give them some necessary help, Zhang Tie stood up and prepared to leave.

Seeing Zhang Tie leaving, after a short noise, a 60-odd pioneer walked towards Zhang Tie from the crowd.

"Mr. Peter, we appreciate what you've done for us today. You've saved a lot of people's lives. Because of you, many of our partners survived!" the senior paid his tribute to Zhang Tie while putting his hands on his shoulders and slightly lowering his head.

"Don't worry!" Zhang Tie nodded.

When Zhang Tie found all the pioneers became quiet, he knew that this senior must want to talk something to him.

"I was told that Your Excellency is also a pioneer?"

"Right! Just say it..."

After looking around, the old pioneer gritted his teeth, "After negotiating with all the other heads of our pioneers, we have a presumptuous request. We want Mr. Peter to be the commander of all the pioneers gathering in the Canyon! We expect you to lead us

to discover the relics."

Although pioneers were sloppy, many pioneers would also form temporary pioneering teams voluntarily. The leader of each team would be their commander. Although being always sloppy, once they formed teams, they would pay special attention to the unified strength of the team and the authority of the leader. As a result, leader of each team was granted with a great authority among the temporary team, which could almost match the power of military leaders.

As a result, the pioneering teams guided by some leaders fought the allied forces under the personal wills of the leaders.

"The commander of these pioneers?" it was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that these pioneers could pose such a request to him.

Actually, besides owning a great power, the commander of pioneers could also share 3% of the total wealth of the entire team. Realizing that there were about 8000 pioneers near the canyon, Zhang Tie understood the value of this title.

"Are you sure?" Zhang Tie smiled. Of course, he knew what they were thinking about. Ever since he was born, he had never met such a good thing.

The old guy and those in the surroundings nodded at the same time.

"Well, I accept it!"

The moment they revealed big smiles, their smiles froze as Zhang Tie sent the order,

"I order you to hug your heads and jump like a frog for 100 times!"

Watching their frozen looks, Zhang Tie sighed while his intelligent gleaming eyes became very aggressive "Actually, you've not determined your minds, right? The allied forces' condition

would not change just because of me!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie directly left the camp of the pioneers.

...

Zhang Tie was always thinking about the underground relics on the way back. However, when he heard O'Laura's words the moment he came back to the grey eagle tribe, Zhang Tie knew that he didn't need to make any plan anymore.

"You have a cool life these days, ha!" O'Laura sneered, "But, you'd better not forget that you're my personal property. You have to listen to my order. I now officially notice you to follow me in the underground world tomorrow!"

Chapter 454: The Arrival of Fury-Class Airship

The next morning, before dawn, a huge airship arrived at the relics canyon...

After being killed twice in trouble-reappearance situations and polishing his surging points for a while, Zhang Tie lowered his body and drilled out of his tent. Raising his head, he caught sight of that huge airship which was hovering above an open grassland in the canyon.

At the sight of it, Zhang Tie became stunned as he couldn't believe in his eyes. After carefully looking at the 400-m long airship, Zhang Tie realized that he was not dreaming. Therefore, his heart gradually paced while a whim flashed across his mind, "Is that from Huaiyuan Palace?"

That was truly a fury-class hard battle airship made in Huaiyuan Palace.

"Are they here to catch me?" this whim was soon abandoned by Zhang Tie. "I'm just a small figure in Huaiyuan Palace. Huaiyuan Palace don't need to catch me in such a magnificent way. Additionally, they could never know I'm here."

After checking it again, Zhang Tie found no symbol of Huaiyuan Palace at all. Therefore, he slightly recovered his composure.

The airship was truly a fury-class hard battle airship produced in Huaiyuan Palace. However, it doesn't belong to Huaiyuan Palace now. According to Zhang Tie's knowledge, fury-class hard battle airship was the urgently needed large-scale battle machine in Huaiyuan Palace. Its factory was in Yiyang City. It could be used for both military purposes and civil purposes. Besides being matched for Huaiyuan Palace's troops, it was also sold to other forces. When Zhang Tie left Huaiyuan Palace, he was told that new

buyers could only get fury-class hard battle airships at least after 5 years later. Huaiyuan Palace was planning to expand a new large-scale airship production base in Jinhai City.

Besides Zhang Tie, many people in the camp were watching that huge airship with dumbfounded looks. Such a huge battle airship posed a great impact to people's vision and mentality. Common airship were rarely seen in Ice and Snow Wilderness, not to mention such a huge airship.

...

Realizing so many people were watching the airship, Zhang Tie directly came to the flume and started to cleanse himself. Soon after cleansing himself, he saw Setton walking towards him. Setton's armor was sparkling, making him very spirited. Zhang Tie knew that it had been well cleaned.

"Peter, are you ready? We will go there after a short while." Setton pointed at that fury-class airship in the distance.

"That airship is so huge. Is it dispatched by some tribe?" Zhang Tie asked seriously.

"No, the airship belongs to Golden Roc Bank in Eschyle City. Golden Roc Bank is very powerful and is the partner of our allied forces. They are responsible for purchasing our achievements and providing us with some logistic support!"

Zhang Tie became stunned as he had not imagined that Golden Roc Bank was behind this action. However, the moment he recalled what Sam and Gerri told him last night, Zhang Tie understood it at once. Perhaps Golden Roc Bank already knew that a super relics existed here through some special channels. Therefore, they stood on the side of the allied forces so as to share the big cake.

Zhang Tie glanced at that huge airship again and felt the great ambition of Golden Roc Bank at once.

From Blackhot City to Huaiyuan Prefecture, from Ewentra Archipelago to Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie really sensed the omnipresent influence of Golden Roc Bank. He started to realize how terrifying the Chinese forces behind Golden Roc Bank was.

...

Over 10 minutes later, Zhang Tie left the camp of the grey eagle tribe together with Setton and O'Laura with rhino-horses, followed by Salem in a humble way. Salem was not as arrogant as he was several days ago anymore. Instead, he was always dodging from Zhang Tie's vision. Even though he encountered Zhang Tie, he would always forced a chrysanthemum-like smile, making Zhang Tie comfortable instantly. As long as he was docile, Zhang Tie didn't feel like finding him trouble.

Compared to Salem's "enthusiasm", O'Laura, who treated Zhang Tie kindly before suddenly turned cold to him. The two people's attitudes towards Zhang Tie seemed like a seesaw, making Zhang Tie sigh about the wonders of the world.

These days, the love affairs between Zhang Tie and Sabrina continuously heated. In others' eyes, Zhang Tie had long been Sabrina's curtain guest. However, they were just using their hands and mouths in most cases. In this course, Zhang Tie felt very funny and had an odd sense of conquering her. Gradually, Zhang Tie, as a 18 years old teenager was not satisfied by only doing this.

From last midnight to this morning, Zhang Tie's thing had always been as hard as an iron rod. It expanded so heavily that Zhang Tie felt that it was going to explode.

At this moment, at the sight of O'Laura riding on the rhino-horse, Zhang Tie fixed his eyes on her butts naturally. At the same time, he started to compare her butts with that of Sabrina's.

Sabrina's butt groove was really a lethal weapon. After hugging Sabrina in the wilderness for a few days, Zhang Tie had felt it

deeply. By comparison, the butts in his front were a bit smaller; however, they were plumpy and should feel good...

Seemingly feeling the hot eyes behind her, O'Laura turned around and noticed that Zhang Tie was gazing at her butts.

"B*stard, what're you looking at?" O'Laura in mask swore as she galloped his rhino-horse to enlarge the distance between her and Zhang Tie.

Salem didn't speak; instead, he just followed O'Laura. Seeing Setton's glance, Zhang Tie forced an embarrassed smile as he scratched his head, not knowing how to explain, "Erm...I've seen nothing!"

"O'Laura has a nice figure, right?"

Zhang Tie thought that Setton would scold him; however, he had never expected that Setton could ask him in that way. Therefore, Zhang Tie lowered his voice, "erm...not bad!"

"O'Laura is very beautiful; she's even more beautiful than her mother. Additionally, she doesn't have any boyfriend yet. Although she's a bit elder than you, she was almost like a girl on love affairs. She could be easily moved. Sometimes, she's very sentimental. Haven't you found that she's always losing temper when you stay with Sabrina these days?"

After saying this, Setton threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie. Soon after that, he rushed ahead and caught up with O'Laura.

Zhang Tie became perplexed for a short while as he was not sure what Setton's words mean, "Is Setton...imp..implying that O'Laura likes me?"

Zhang Tie recalled the episodes when he stayed with O'Laura, besides beating and being beaten, they just treated each other with cold words. In most cases, they were like enemies. They could barely speak kindly to each other...

"No way!" Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile, exposing his white

teeth before catching up with them.

...

Heads of each tribe were gathering in the main tent of the wild bear tribe. Zhang Tie found most of them were those attending the banquet that night. Seeing the arrival of Zhang Tie, O'Laura and Setton, many people greeted Zhang Tie enthusiastically. It seemed as if Zhang Tie was the leader of the grey eagle tribe.

O'Laura was silent while Setton became expressionless. By comparison, Zhang Tie nodded towards them with a smile. However, Salem was almost ignored.

Everybody sat in the tent, forming a circle. They were chatting about their achievements these days and that huge airship in low voices.

"O'Laura. I was told that you are going to enter the underground world with your assistant today?" Nurdo, O'Laura's cousin walked towards them with 3 people. He nodded towards Zhang Tie before talking to O'Laura.

"Mind you own business!" O'Laura still replied in an icy tone.

"Ha...ha...no matter what, you're my cousin. We're relatives..." Nurdo replied with a smile. He was not angry at all. Compared to his arrogant look when he said the same words before, Nurdo became kind this time due to different environments. This change warned Zhang Tie that he was a chameleon, a small figure, an idiot, or a vicious figure who was very shrewd. Remarkably Nurdo was not the first type.

O'Laura directly responded with a cold harrumph.

"I forgot to tell you that I'm also going down there with the wind wolf tribe today. Why not set off together. We can take care of each other on the way. In the underground world, it's safer if we unite with each other."

O'Laura then gazed at Nurdo with sharp eyes, "Who leads the

team, you or me?"

"As to the vanguards, we will provide half of our own forces respectively or by turns. In this way, we can lower the potential loss! As to the common discovery, we can share them. Individual discovery will belong to individuals respectively!"

After staring at Nurdo for a while, O'Laura finally nodded slowly.

When Nurdo was talking with O'Laura, his woman was giving a glad eye to Zhang Tie. She was about 19 years old in white skirt. She had plumpy breasts, a slim waist and a sweet oval face. She looked innocent, yet with attractive eyes.

"Oh, this is my friend, Elizabeth. She received my message a few days ago. He heard that it was interesting over here, therefore, she came here yesterday..." after talking with O'Laura, Nurdo had pulled this woman in front of Zhang Tie and started to introduce her, "Elizabeth, this is Peter who could wave over 600 kg huge hammer while performing a bloody, splendid dance. Additionally, Peter's javelin throwing skill is the best. I've seen that. If you're interested in that, you can chat with Peter after..."

Soon after saying these words, Nurdo left with his men before O'Laura's lost her temper. When Elizabeth left, she even turned around and revealed a sweet smile to seduce Zhang Tie once again.

"Is Nurdo here as a procurer..." a whim flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. "Although Elizabeth looked innocent, Zhang Tie always felt that innocence was only a part of her personality. Something might be hidden beneath her innocence. Now, everybody across the allied forces know that I'm staying with a dissolute woman everyday. I'm afraid that my reputation is not better than that of Nurdo. What does he mean by introducing me to this woman at this moment?"

Zhang Tie was thinking about it as he heard O'Laura's cold harrumph.

...

After a few minutes, they had seen Gangula, Sabrina and Roslav and Waajid of the huge bear tribe coming in the main tent.

Sabrina wore a black female battle clothes today, which made her breasts and butts more prominent. At the sight of Zhang Tie, Sabrina smiled towards him.

"The airship of Golden Roc Bank has already arrived. We can go there to check what they've brought us now!" Gangula put it straightforwardly. After saying this, he directly led the others out of the main tent. Zhang Tie purposely slowed down his footsteps so that he could walk together with Sabrina. All the others just pretended to have not seen that. O'Laura directly followed Gangula away with the big strides while whipping her hair. Only Elizabeth turned around and glanced at Zhang Tie and Sabrina.

"You look very beautiful today!" Zhang Tie moved closer to Sabrina's ear. Meanwhile, he couldn't help sniffing her alluring body fragrance as a mature woman. Instantly, Zhang Tie felt frantic inside.

"Oh, do you like my black clothes?" Sabrina was remarkably very happy about Zhang Tie's praise.

"Mature woman like you would always look very sexy in black clothes!" Seeing nobody behind them, Zhang Tie directly pinched her plumpy butts.

"You b*stard. You're growing audacious. If Gangula caught you teasing his elder sister in the public, he would chop off your head!"

"Hehe, I miss you so much the moment I think that I cannot see you in a very long period!"

"Do you want a piece of good news?" Sabrina's eyes gleamed.

"What good news?"

"I've decided to go down there too!"

"What? How can you go down there? It's too dangerous."

"So what? I'm with you. Additionally, Roslav and Waajid would also go down there with fighters of the huge bear tribe. Nothing to worry about it..."

"Underground is different than above ground. Without enough preparations, it would be very dangerous! Especially we have to stay there for a long time..." Zhang Tie explained solemnly.

"Do you mean the underground equipment? Don't worry. Are you going to select equipment now?" Sabrina urged.

The fury-class battle airship was only hundreds of meters away from this main tent; therefore, everybody went there on foot.

Only after a short while, they had already arrived below the airship under the guidance of Gangula. For those heads of the allied forces who had not been so close to a fury-class airship before, the 400-m longer body caused a great stress to them. As a result, they gradually slowed their breath in front of the airship.

"Welcome, childe Gangula!" A 50-odd Chinese senior was standing at the entrance of the airship with a smile, followed by a group of people...

At the sight of this 50-odd man, Gangula burst out laughing. Seemingly being very familiar with this senior, Gangula paced up and gave him a warm hug as they patted each other's back respectively.

"Your airship really startled me. I've never seen such a huge airship before." After hugging with that senior, Gangula raised his head as he stared at that huge triangular body, "If wild bear tribe wants one, how much will it take?"

"This is the latest fury-class hard battle airship produced in Huaiyuan Palace, Jinyun City. In Blackson Humans Clan, its performance ranks number one. If the wild bear tribe wants one, it will cost you 420,000 gold coins. You can get it in 5 years!"

Hearing the senior's words, everybody who followed Gangula here drew a cold breath. "420,000 gold coins? In 5 years?' Each of the 2 numbers shocked them. Many small tribes here could not even make 420,000 gold coins in 5 years. Take the grey eagle tribe as an example. If O'Laura only made money as a bounty hunter, she had to wait for a long time.

"How can it be so expensive and take such a long time?" Gangula frowned.

"Because of the demon north wind belt, we could only transport the parts of fury-class airship to Eschyle City for assembly. It required a huge freight. Additionally, due to the tense situation on continents, the orders of fury-class hard battle airships had been queued up to 5 years later. As Golden Roc Bank has a deep-rooted partnership with Huaiyuan Palace, we have the priority to purchase some. If not want to wait such a long time, you can increase 40,000 gold coins for a year in advance..."

"Then 5 years in advance means..."

"With 200,000 gold coins more, the wild bear tribe would be able to get a fury-class airship in 3 months!"

"620,000 gold coins!" muttering this number, even Gangula whose nickname was "mad dog" took a deep breath. After glancing at this giant once again, Gangula seemingly realized that he forgot something. He then turned around and introduced the senior to the public, "This is Xu Tao, the manager of Golden Roc Bank in Eschyle City..."

"Please come in and take a look at the weapons I've brought you!" Manager Xu lowered his body to invite them before walking in the hatch together with Gangula.

Seeing this familiar airship, Zhang Tie had mixed moods...

Chapter 455: Chaos and Freedom

"According to our agreement, I bring you 300 tons of dried rations this time as the supplement to the soldiers of the allied forces. If this could last over 1 month, we will transport another 300 tons here at the same time next month." The manager of Golden Roc Bank introduced to Gangula on his side as he walked.

They followed the manager in an open warehouse at the bottom of the airship. It was filled with military dried rations. At the sight of them, all the heads of the tribes nodded slightly. With these provisions, the soldiers of the allied forces could survive longer in the canyon.

"Very good. I will have my men carry away the food after a while. By the way, they will carry their achievements here for your assessment!" Gangula was also very satisfied.

"Childe Gangula, there's one point that I have to notice you in advance. Because of the potential dangers caused by demons, the situation in the western continent is growing intenser. As a result, the prices of common cultural relics before the Catastrophe have started to decline. But, please believe in us, we have the most professional cultural relics appraisers. We will pay you according to their appraised values. After offsetting the total price of this batch of food, we will pay you the surplus money in terms of your favorite pattern!"

"No problem!" Gangula nodded. At this moment, Gangula was the representative of the allied forces. Therefore, when he talked, nobody interrupted him. When in peaceful times, people would buy antiques; by contrast, in chaotic times, people would prefer gold. This law of value also suited to this age. As the 3rd holy war drew close, the values of common antiques declined sharply. However, the heads of tribes were not amazed about this, because the allied forces didn't target at those common relics.

"Is the situation in the continent really so tense now?"

Hearing this question, everybody's attention was attracted. As Ice and Snow Wilderness was far away from the continent, it was completely a desert place. Therefore, even Gangula could not receive the latest news timely. Relatively, Golden Roc Bank in Eschyle City became the most informative party in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Actually, many big tribes obtained their latest messages from Golden Roc Bank.

"It's very chaotic!" The manager lowered his voice as he walked, "Millions of demonized puppets in Heavenly Cold City have not been completely cleaned. An increasing number of demons were found in Hurricane Plateau in the west of Golan Empire, causing people of many western provinces of Golan Empire grow flurried and escape to the southern and eastern provinces of Golan Empire. As a result, all the provinces of Golan Empire are setting passes to prevent the entry of refugees. This also caused a lot of problems. Many conflicts have occurred between refugees and the army of Golan Empire, causing many casualties. As a result, many refugees turned roving bandits and the greater part of Golan Empire have been in chaos!"

Hearing this reply, Gangula became slightly shocked, "Is that so serious?"

"Even more. 3 days ago, the roving bandits of Golan Empire had occupied Gadiyani, a major city of Pearson Province of Golan Empire. As a result, all the officials of Gadiyani were killed. Now the entire Golan Empire is filled with riots. Someone even urged to overthrow the ruling of the imperial households. Additionally, as a chain reaction, some neighboring countries also became chaotic."

Nobody would feel comfortable while hearing this news, even though Golan Empire was far from Ice and Snow Wilderness with mountains and rivers between them. On the stance of humans, before the appearance of the army of demons, human countries had already been in chaos or collapsed. Of course, nobody would

like to hear it.

Zhang Tie felt blue. He recalled Zhang Su, his cousin, who had been to the Hurricane Plateau for over 3 months with the other students from Hidden Dragon Palace. Even when Zhang Tie left the Hidden Dragon Palace, he didn't see them return yet. Zhang Tie wondered what they had encountered. For such an organized military action, if its action time sharply increased, it would not be a good symbol.

"What's up?" Sabrina pinched Zhang Tie's hand.

"Nothing!" Zhang Tie forced a smile.

"You liar. I feel you were thinking about something just now. Do you have family members in the continent?"

Zhang Tie became a bit surprised about the woman's precise intuition, "My family members are very safe; but I recalled my friends. As it's growing worse in the continent, I'm concern about their safety!"

"Have you found that Ice and Snow Wilderness is a good place?" Sabrina winked.

"Oh?"

"As Elzida the greatest prophet and pontiff has seen the future, he knew that the holy war between humans and demons would not influence this place, he led the Slavs here and make it the territory of Slavs."

"How come?" Zhang Tie doubted.

"The devil north wind belt prevents airships from arriving here. The sea is the natural barrier. The northern iced land of Ice and Snow Wilderness is unpopulated as it could kill any living beings. Additionally, it's said that the periphery of the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness is surrounded by magma. Therefore, the demons could only arrive here by sea. However, if the demon fleets treat Ice and Snow Wilderness as their target, it means that the entire Blackson

Humans Corridor has been collapsed!"

Hearing Sabrina's explanation, some thoughts flashed Zhang Tie's mind. If it was true, Zhang Tie felt that perhaps he could manage something here so that he could take this place as a temporary asylum besides the oriental continent when the situation on the western continent became completely deteriorated.

...

After rising to one floor higher from the basement, everyone came to the place that Golden Roc Bank prepared for them.

This was a lobby in the airship, which was as magnificent as an imperial palace in the air. Zhang Tie found something different between its internal layout and that of those for military purpose that he had taken before. It seemed that the factory of Huaiyuan Palace could make special internal layouts according to the demands of the guests.

It was so luxurious and comfortable here, which broadened the vision of heads of the allied forces once again. Previously, none of them have expected to enjoy such a top service in the airship before.

There was even a small fountain in the middle of this lobby.

Watching such a gorgeous place, even Sabrina's eyes gleamed, "Wow, it's too awesome! If only I can have such an airship, I will travel everywhere above the Ice and Snow Wilderness everyday. How interesting it would be!"

Even Sabrina acted in this way at the sight of this lobby, not to mention the others. Many of them couldn't help to touch here and there like rustics. Even O'Laura in mask couldn't stand to look around.

When they were exclaiming, the staff on the airship had delivered the information about the airship to them.

This lobby was completely like a small commodity sales exhibition as it was surrounded by counters. Various medicament and special equipment were placed in the counters.

Zhang Tie was also surprised about this. He then started to take a look around while pulling Sabrina's hand. Although the dried rations down there could be divided by the number of people of each tribe. But the items here could only be purchased if they wanted. As each tribe would have their own achievements if they discovered anything underground, of course, they had to purchase their medicament and special equipment here.

For pioneers, they could enter underground with only one fluorite lamp as it was the most economical method. However, for these leaders, they would never do that like those pioneers. At least, they should prepare some night viewing medicament. Therefore, many people instantly surrounded the counters where night viewing medicament were placed in.

Various night viewing medicament were displayed in the counters, the duration of which varied from one day to one month. At the sight of the prices of these medicament, Zhang Tie had realized that the medicament in Hidden Dragon Island were too cheap.

Zhang Tie and Sabrina were studying a compacted composite jerky which contained super high heat and various nutrients. Sabrina was really interested in that and was going to buy some. Right then, a voice sounded, "Peter Hamplester!"

Hearing this sound, Zhang Tie turned around and found O'Laura, Setton, Gangula, Xu Tao, the manager of Golden Roc Bank, an uniformed man and a 40-year odd fat man standing in the distance.

The one who called his fake name was the man in the uniform, whose uniform reminded Zhang Tie of the police in Eschyle City. Therefore, Zhang Tie's eyebrows jumped.

When Zhang Tie turned around, everybody over there fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie with weird and amazing looks. Additionally, the 40-year odd fat man seemed to relieve a heavy burden at the sight of Zhang Tie's look, making Zhang Tie perplexed.

Zhang Tie walked over there calmly, "I'm Peter Hamplester. What's up?"

Before the man in the uniform finished his words, the 40-year odd man beside him had hurriedly opened his mouth with a big smile while striding forward for a few steps, "It's so nice to see you safe here!"

"Do we...know each other?" Zhang Tie stared at that fat man with a doubtful look as he racked his mind to remember this guy.

"Mr. Peter, I'm Paulson, the director of the branch of Seablue Castle Business Group in Eschyle City!"

"Seablue Castle Business Group?"

"Erm, you might not know that, Balas Business Group changed its name into Seablue Castle Business Group several days ago."

Glancing over this fat, who called himself the director of Seablue Castle Business Group in Eschyle City and that man whose uniform was like that of policemen in Eschyle City, Zhang Tie seemingly understood something; however, he was not sure about that.

"When you came to Ice and Snow Wilderness, Ms. Olina had ordered us to pay attention to your whereabouts and news. After you were wanted by the police station in Eschyle City, we reported your news to Ms. Olina right away. After knowing that, Ms. Olina was very concerned about you. Therefore, she ordered us to contact with you as soon as possible, later on..."

"Director Paulson, please let me say the following things!" the man in the uniform interrupted, "I'm Andrew, the inspector general of the police station in Eschyle City. After the police station in Eschyle City sent you the second wanted circular,

director Paulson had contacted with us and provided us necessary intelligence. According to the intelligence provided by director Eugene, we started the strictest review procedures for your wanted circular. Through review, we found that you were executing self-defense by killing that man from demon snake island. As to the death of the two bounty hunters, it was nothing to do with you. Based on the analysis of traces and intelligence, someone else had killed them. It might be Dawson, a round-table warrior from demon snake island. After confirming the two situations, the Eschyle City have already revoked your wanted circulars!"

Zhang Tie was stunned for a short while before asking in a doubtful look, "You mean I'm free now?"

"Yes, it was totally a misunderstanding. I show my sincere apology to you for the troubles brought by the two false wanted circulars delivered by the police station in Eschyle City!" After apologizing, Andrew bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie.

"It's Olina..." Zhang Tie recalled that Bluesea Castle Business Group must have paid a lot and pulled a lot of strings in the process of revoking the wanted circulars.

Standing on the side of Zhang Tie, Sabrina silently pinched him on his back...

"Thanks to O'Laura's prudence, Peter is safe!" Gangula opened his mouth. For some reason, Gangula seemed to be very happy at this moment as he started to glance over O'Laura and Sabrina. Not until being glared by Sabrina did he reveal a meaningful smile.

"After knowing that Mr. Peter was taken away by two bounty hunters, we came here by the airship of Golden Roc Bank!" Saying this, Paulson took out a gold note purse from his chest and passed it to O'Laura politely with two hands, "We know the rules of bounty hunters. Given that Eschyle City's reward was 5000 gold coins. Golden Roc Bank delivered gold notes of 500,000 gold coins to appreciate Miss O'Laura and the grey eagle tribe for taking care

of Mr. Peter and redemption of his items from you!"

In a split second, everybody focused their eyes on O'Laura...

Chapter 456: Conquer O'Laura

When Zhang Tie walked towards them, the talk had already arisen the attention of many people. The moment they heard about that amount of 500,000 gold coins, the lobby instantly became quiet while numerous eyes focused on the purse. It was 500,000 gold coins! The entire grey eagle tribe could at most gain 100,000 gold coins in a year.

Even Gangula's body quivered. Although he could afford it but he had to take a few days to collect so much money.

Setton stared at O'Laura with a slightly thrilled look. With this amount of money, O'Laura could instantly establish a team and gradually take back the ruling power of the grey eagle tribe...

Salem looked at O'Laura with a fearful look, then he moved his eyes on the purse with a greedy look. He understood what did the 500,000 gold coins mean to O'Laura and his father.

Nurdo was also watching O'Laura from afar with a slightly anxious look, "With 500,000 gold coins, she could do a lot of things in Ice and Snow Wilderness." He looked at O'Laura, then Zhang Tie, then O'Laura again with glittering eyes. Nobody knew what he was thinking about.

Some people gazed at Zhang Tie. Although it was not Zhang Tie who gave the money to O'Laura, it was more shocking while giving the money to her by someone else. Someone would like to pay that for Zhang Tie, made Zhang Tie more mysterious.

Zhang Tie peered at O'Laura. He could sense that O'Laura was a bit colder than before although she didn't say anything.

He knew that O'Laura needed money very much.

"Now that the wanted circular has been revoked, Peter is innocent. But I won't take this money..." O'Laura muffled from behind the mask, "From now on, Peter Hamplester is free. He's not

my captive and personal property anymore. The grey eagle tribe will return everything that belongs to him!"

After saying that, O'Laura turned around and left, leaving no chance for others to say anything.

Paulson opened his mouth as he had never imagined that O'Laura would not take the gold notes.

Only Zhang Tie seemingly understood something at the sight of O'Laura's stubborn back. Zhang Tie had mixed moods at once.

...

"Mr. Peter. According to our investigation, demon snake island dispatched Dawson, a round-table fighter to hunt you. Did you encounter him? Based on our analysis, the two bounty hunters probably be killed by Dawson. The bloody spot suited to Dawson's killing method very much. All the wounds on the two bounty hunters were lethal and were in consistent with the wounds caused by the weapons adopted by Dawson. Therefore Dawson is wanted by the police station in Eschyle City!"

Andrew explained to Zhang Tie politely. Additionally, he intended to restore the relationship between Zhang Tie and Eschyle City and obtain some useful intelligence from Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie glanced over and found O'Laura had already disappeared in the lobby only after a couple of minutes.

"Dawson did come after me in the Grey Hill; however, I've already killed him. I'm afraid that he's already became the feces of iron-teeth hyenas. You can revoke his wanted circular too. I have his dark tore gloves!" Zhang Tie briefed, "I'm sorry, supervisor general Andrew, I have something to manage, excuse me..."

Under Andrew's slight amazement, Zhang Tie patted Sabrina's hand before nodding to Paulson. Without saying anything, he directly walked towards Setton.

"Where's O'Laura?" Zhang Tie asked Setton.

"She left the things here to me. She said she wanted rest. I'm afraid that she's already returned to the camp!" Setton looked sophisticated. Looking at Zhang Tie, he wanted to say something, yet finally didn't say it.

Zhang Tie immediately turned around and left the lobby...

When Zhang Tie left the lobby, he heard manager Xu Tao's voice, "May I have your attention please. Now, I'm going to introduce you a marvelous medicament that you've all heard of but not have seen. Actually, since the age before the Catastrophe, in the human history of over 6000 years, this medicament appears for the first time. Compared to many expensive medicament, its price might not be high; yet it is absolutely qualified to be called rare and precious. This medicament is the bliss for all. We will not sell them today; instead, as Golden Roc Bank obtained a batch of them through special channel, we will gift a vial of this marvelous medicament to each guest..."

However, Zhang Tie had already left the airship before Xu Tao finished his words...

After exiting the airship, Zhang Tie directly ran towards the camp of grey eagle tribe. After a short while, he had already arrived there.

"Is O'Laura back?" Zhang Tie asked a sentry.

The sentry nodded. Zhang Tie then entered the camp and directly walked towards O'Laura's tent.

"You cannot go inside!" Two female servants standing outside O'Laura's tent instantly stopped Zhang Tie. Without saying anything, Zhang Tie slightly blocked them away before striding inside.

"You..." a female servant changed her face and wanted to stop Zhang Tie while another female servant instantly stopped her by pulling her arm, and waved her head, "Let him in..." the female

servant became perplexed at once before exchanging glances with the other female servant. She seemingly understood something. Therefore, she recovered her original gesture.

After passing by two curtains, Zhang Tie finally walked into O'Laura's boudoir.

The moment Zhang Tie entered, he had been noticed by O'Laura. O'Laura turned around in front of a cabinet with an item in hand.

"You cannot wait to get your freedom back?" O'Laura sneered while raising her face, "Although I'm a woman, I will never eat my words. I will return all your personal belongings to you. Here's the antidote of the bone-exploding needles in your body. Take it away together with the other items on the table!"

After saying that, O'Laura dropped a small vial of antidote onto a desk. Zhang Tie found his double-carps sword, dark tore gloves and finger ring of eagles' eye were also lying there.

He didn't ask O'Laura why she had the antidote of the bone-exploding needles. Neither did he stare at the items over the table anymore. Instead, he just looked into O'Laura's eyes and asked another question, "Why don't you take the 500,000 gold coins?"

"Does it have anything to do with you? You're free now. You can continue to screw around with that shameless woman. Nobody would stop you anymore. You can also live well in the wild bear tribe based on your ability. Oh, and that enchanting fox..." O'Laura's words were full of sarcasm and irony.

Zhang Tie pretended to have not heard it; he continued to force ahead and asked, "Why don't you take the 500,000 gold coins?"

"Mind your own business. Who are you? You're not qualified to care about me." O'Laura's breasts slightly rose and fell. It seemed that she was becoming thrilled.

"Why not take the 500,000 gold coins?" Zhang Tie continued while drawing closer to her.

"Take you items and roll out of here!" O'Laura roared.

"Because you like me. No matter how much that man paid, you would not take it. Because you don't want to replace your beloved man for anyone's compensation and gratitude. You won't trade your beloved man, right?" Zhang Tie asked as he moved closer to O'Laura. Gradually, he could touch her if he stretched out his arm.

Like being struck by lightning bolt, she started to quiver.

"Do you know how I know about your thoughts? Because if it was me, I would not trade my beloved woman for any items either!" Saying this, Zhang Tie had already pulled O'Laura's hand.

Having been staying with O'Laura for so long time, it was Zhang Tie's first time to hold her hand.

O'Laura's hand was cold. Although the back of her hand felt very delicate, her palm felt a bit crude. Zhang Tie knew that it was because she always cultivated fighting skills. Even O'Laura was talented but she still needed to practice hard.

"Let me go..." after quivering for a few seconds like being struck by lightning bolt, O'Laura intended to draw her hand back; however, Zhang Tie's strength was so great that she could not escape at all; therefore, O'Laura directly punched towards Zhang Tie.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not like to be struck by her. Along the direction of O'Laura's strength, he directly pulled O'Laura closer to him, making her lose her balance.

When Zhang Tie was going to hold her two hands, at the same time he found that O'Laura had kicked towards his forehead with one foot. As a LV 10 strong fighter, O'Laura's close fighting skills were also very sharp. If Zhang Tie was struck by O'Laura's kick, Zhang Tie was sure that his face would probably have been destroyed.

"F*ck, do you want to murder your man?" Zhang Tie teased her

as he instantly dodged away.

"B*stard!" the moment she landed, O'Laura had already rushed towards Zhang Tie again like a crazy leopardess...

...

Hearing the fighting sound from inside the tent, the two female servants looked weird. They became hesitated whether they would go inside or not. Right then, Setton was rushing back in a flurried manner. At the sight of Setton, the two female servants on O'Laura's side felt like seeing their savior.

"Has Peter come back?"

"Soon after Peter entered, the fight started..."

Setton raised his hand to stopped the two female servants. He stood outside the door and listened to the inside for a short while. After that, a smile flashed by Setton's face. At the sight of those soldiers who looked at this tent, Setton started to swear them with a serious look, "B*stards, mind your own business. Go carry your rations. As something important proceeds inside the main tent, from now on everybody has to stay 20 m away from the main tent!"

After saying that, Setton just stood outside the main tent while gazing at those soldiers. All the soldiers shrugged and dared not to glance at the main tent anymore.

...

O'Laura didn't run her battle Qi. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't wear his dark tore gloves either. After fighting several minutes, Zhang Tie finally conquered O'Laura, although being struck by O'Laura for some times.

However, this time, Zhang Tie's gesture was much warmer. Zhang Tie completely pressed O'Laura onto her bed, making her lose her moving ability.

Zhang Tie pressed O'Laura's hands by one hand while twisted her

legs with his legs. They just glared at each other.

"B*stard, let me go!" O'Laura swore in a low voice.

Zhang Tie didn't speak; instead, he reached his another hand towards O'Laura's face.

Realizing Zhang Tie's intention, O'Laura struggled more. However, it was in vain, except for some meaningless physical frictions.

Zhang Tie finally put his hand onto O'Laura's mask.

"If you dare to take off my mask, I will kill you..." O'Laura exclaimed.

Zhang Tie's hand remained still like a piece of iron. He only hesitated for less than 0.5 second about O'Laura's threat. After that, he picked off the mask.

Zhang Tie saw a 20-odd woman's face which was as icy as frost and as enchanting as rose.

The moment her mask was picked off, O'Laura recovered composure. She didn't oppose anymore.

Zhang Tie's face was about 3 cm away from the delicate face.

"Are you afraid of being killed?" O'Laura uttered an icy voice from her alluring lips.

"Your voice sounds better without the mask!" with a smile, Zhang Tie stared at O'Laura's face, "If I'm not brave enough to see the look of my beloved woman, am I qualified to be a man then?"

"You...hmm..."

Before O'Laura replied, Zhang Tie had already pressed his lips onto that of O'Laura and started to kiss her forcefully...

O'Laura's body started to be stiff, struggling and quivering; finally it became as hot as fire and as soft as water...

...

Over 10 minutes later, O'Laura, who had recovered her moving ability, instantly reverted the positions with Zhang Tie. Panting, blushing, they closely stared at each other.

After glaring at Zhang Tie for over 10 seconds, O'Laura suddenly lowered her body and kissed onto Zhang Tie's lips. At the same time, she instantly dug open Zhang Tie's lips with that flexible tongue and drilled into Zhang Tie's mouth with it...

O'Laura's kiss almost engulfed Zhang Tie.

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie felt being breathless by O'Laura...

Like a ice-covered volcano, O'Laura's eruption was really groundbreaking.

"Can I take a breath?" Zhang Tie spent a great effort to escape from O'Laura's lips. Inclining his head, Zhang Tie started to pant heavily. "Such a woman's eruption is too terrifying."

Although O'Laura panted through her nostrils, she kept her lips over Zhang Tie's body. She moved them downwards from Zhang Tie's lips to his chin, neck and finally, she pulled open Zhang Tie's coat and exposed Zhang Tie's firm chest.

When Zhang Tie's heart raced and he thought that O'Laura could bring him an unprecedented stimulation like those girls in Rose Association, O'Laura directly bit on Zhang Tie's left chest, which was closest to Zhang Tie's heart and pierced Zhang Tie's skin.

That was indeed stimulative!

Zhang Tie uttered a groundbreaking, miserable wail!

...

Frowning his forehead, Setton couldn't understood why it was Zhang Tie who uttered the miserable cry. "How can he feel more pain than O'Laura? That's not reasonable..."

Chapter 457: Underground Relics

On the same afternoon, the first batch of explorers of the allied forces had set out towards the underground relics.

Besides the 100 people dispatched by the grey eagle tribe, the other tribes dispatched over 2000 soldiers in total. Gangula didn't go there. However, the wild bear tribe also dispatched a team of 500 soldiers. Being led by the powerhouses of the tribe, they entered the entrance of the underground crack first.

Closely after the team of the wild bear tribe was a group of Golden Roc Bank. Although Golden Roc Bank only dispatched about 20 people but all of them were the best professionals in underground investigation and mapping. Therefore, they were very eye-catching. Compared to surface mapping, underground mapping was much more difficult and sophisticated. Because land surface map was a plain map while underground map was a three-dimensional perspective in a more sophisticated environment. In this age, one could buy any land surface map of the most populated places at a low cost. However, the maps of underground world were always in the hands of major powers as they were very strategic resources and were very valuable in military area and commerce.

There were professional courses in Hidden Dragon Palace. Students could learn how to identify and use underground maps. Pitifully, Zhang Tie had not touched this course until he left Hidden Dragon Palace. Zhang Tie knew that these knowledge could only be learned in the staff departments of corps of Huaiyuan Prefecture.

Standing in the distance, Zhang Tie saw the team of Golden Roc Bank disappearing at the entrance of the underground world.

Meanwhile Paulson, the director of Seablue Castle Business Group's branch in Eschyle City found a chance to talk with Zhang

Tie alone.

Zhang Tie listened to Paulson's introduction about the recent situation of Bluesea Castle Business Group and Olina. Finally he sighed, "Please tell Ms. Olina that I appreciate her concern about me very much. And I'm living well here!"

Given that Olina changed the name of Ballas Business Group into Bluesea Castle Business Group, Zhang Tie knew that Olina had finally cast off the shadow of Ballas clan that had troubled her for many years. Zhang Tie felt happy about that for Olina.

"Demon snake island now hates me the most, they would not cause any trouble to Olina anymore." Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh. After killing Dawson, Zhang Tie knew that demon snake island would be more cautious for sure. "It seemed that there were only 8 round-table fighters above LV 9 across the demon snake island. They all had their own things to deal with, they could not spend full time on me."

"Ms. Olina warned you to be cautious about the people of demon snake island. If you have any demands, Ms. Olina said you could mobilize all the resources in Ice and Snow Wilderness. If it's not enough here, the headquarter will further support you!"

"Fine, if I need something, I will find you in Eschyle City to tell you!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile. He felt really warm about the beauty's deep sentiment.

"These money..." Paulson took out of the gold notes again as he stared at Zhang Tie in an embarrassed way.

"Just take them back, I don't need it!" Zhang Tie felt that he had not been that degenerated to have to survive on a woman. Additionally, he didn't lack money at the present. He had not used the gold notes that he collected from Zhen Clan Mansion which were worth over 600,000 gold coins. If he needed, he could take them out at any time.

...

When Paulson was going to leave, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled something. Therefore, he stopped Paulson.

"I've got few words for Olina. I miss her very much. Perhaps, I will visit her after a few days!"

Paulson threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie as he bowed, "I will tell her all your words!".

...

Paulson left while O'Laura came to Zhang Tie's side.

"Humph, you really have a lot of women, including the well-known enchanting fox!" O'Laura's voice sounded not right.

At the sight of her, Zhang Tie's left chest ached once again. It was Zhang Tie's first time to encounter such a situation. He had planned to let O'Laura bleed; unexpectedly, O'Laura left a bloody mark on his left chest before driving him out of her main tent. When he recalled Setton's weird look outside the tent, Zhang Tie became extremely shameless and he even wanted to bury himself in the soil.

After that, Zhang Tie realized that it was because that he failed to answer O'Laura well.

Although Zhang Tie almost entered her body at that moment, O'Laura resisted him at the critical moment. Panting heavily, she asked Zhang Tie a question, "Which one do you like more, I or Sabrina?"

"Both!"

Closely after this answer, Zhang Tie was kicked off from O'Laura's body.

Sometimes, women changed their moods as fast as turning pages.

Zhang Tie didn't continue. Because he knew that some things could not be forced to do. Each one had their own respect and

hope. No matter whether they like it or love, it will not be the whole content of the communication between the two people. .

Perhaps, O'Laura seek for more sense of safety due to her experiences in the childhood. Besides, she had stronger sense of possession and desire for controlling others. Zhang Tie understood it very well. Like Alice, women were sentimental animals. However, it didn't mean that they had no personal persistence.

Certainly, they might change their persistence as women were all capricious. Given O'Laura's tone and enthusiasm just now, Zhang Tie knew that he still had a chance. Based on the experience that he had learned from those girls in Rose Association, if a woman would like to kiss you, it meant that she had fully accepted you inside as it was a shortcut for a woman to open her heart to you.

Zhang Tie glanced at the finger ring of eagle's eye on O'Laura's finger before revealing a smile, "Do you believe me if I told you that I've not seen her naked body?"

"You liar!" O'Laura sneered at Zhang Tie, "I found that you were a pervert. All the women you like are too much elder than you. The enchanting fox is already over 40 years old while Sabrina is almost 30."

"Including you, right?"

O'Laura became slightly stunned for a short while. Finally she looked in the distance, "Humph, the woman you like arrives!"

Zhang Tie looked around and found Sabrina was coming towards him with a team of female guards.

"I have to warn you that you'd better take the antidote of the bone-exploding needles as soon as possible. If you miss it, it would take a long time for senior Merkel to produce it once again."

"But you told me that there was no antidote for the bone-exploding needles and they could only be cleaned up by senior Merkel."

"You're too smart. We didn't know about your background at that moment. Therefore, I told you that to let you abandon the plan to escape. It was women's privilege to tell a lie!"

Zhang Tie became speechless. After glancing at his back, O'Laura turned around and left at once.

"Peter, I've already prepared well. I can go down there at any time. What about you?" Sabrina walked towards Zhang Tie with a big smile from his back...

...

One hour later, Zhang Tie, Sabrina and another 300 soldiers of the grey eagle tribe and the wind wolf tribe entered the entrance of the underground world. Sam and Gerri were also invited by Zhang Tie to join this team.

Sam and Gerri were very thrilled by the privilege that they didn't have to submit their "tax" if they followed Zhang Tie, not to mention that they could be safer after such a powerful team. Therefore, the moment Zhang Tie posed the invitation had they agreed.

...

Over 10 minutes after Zhang Tie's team entered the underground world did Roslav and Waajid of the huge bear tribe follow in with their fighters.

In the next few hours, some more teams followed in.

...

After entering the underground cave for a couple of minutes, they could not see any light anymore. Therefore, each team member took out their own fluorite lamps and hung them over their own waists.

Looking at them from the distance, over 200 fluorite lamps were like a green dragon as it twisted forward in the pitch-dark

underground world which was several miles in width.

Zhang Tie also carried a luggage weighing dozens of kilograms like others. He also took out a fluorite lamp and hung it over his waist at this moment.

"Peter, haven't you purchased night viewing medicament?" seeing Zhang Tie using fluorite lamp, Sabrina added, "I have a few night viewing medicament left. Each vial could last two weeks, do you want some?"

Hearing Sabrina's words, O'Laura who was walking together with Nurdo ahead of them raised her ears. Seeing this, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh, "Thanks, I don't use them. I'm allergic to night viewing medicament. If I used night viewing medicament, I could see nothing but white mist in front of me. O'Laura had given me some, but I returned them all to her. I remember that when I came to the underground world to form battle Qi for the first time, I used one which could last one day; however, I became blind for a whole day!"

"Ah? That's too pitiful!" Sabrina waved her head out of sympathy.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Actually, I feel good. Under such dim lamplight, I find you are much more beautiful than before!"

Sabrina stared at Zhang Tie with a big smile as she forcefully kissed Zhang Tie's face, "You cute small badass."

"Humph!" hearing Zhang Tie's talk with Sabrina, O'Laura who was walking ahead of them responded with a cold harrumph before pacing up.

As there was no sun or moon in the underground world, in order to not disturb their biological clocks and keep their energy, they just followed the work-rest schedule that they followed above the ground.

That day, Zhang Tie felt that they obliquely deepened into the

underground world for at least 30 km along a huge crack. After entering a huge underground cave, they started to move northeast. Totally they walked about 200 km. The underground terrain here was more evenly than that in the Dragon Cave. Additionally, the space here was more spacious.

On the first day since they entered the underground world, they walked for 10 hours. When the time was after 23:00, they started to pitch tents.

Their tents were close to each other, yet were clearly separated. After eating their own dried rations, they didn't feel like chatting at all. Therefore, after receiving their own tasks on sentry in the evening, they hung their fluorite lamps outside their tents. After that, all the men drilled into their own tents and slept. By contrast, women lifted clean water to their tents from nearby and cleanse themselves.

With so many eyes in the surroundings and a task in hand, Zhang Tie felt too shameless to drill in Sabrina's tent at this moment. If he did that, he was waving the overall morality. If it was in the army, he would have his head chopped off for sure. Of course, Zhang Tie was clear about that.

Therefore, Zhang Tie drilled in his own tent.

The moment he drilled in his tent did Zhang Tie take out the antidote of the bone-exploding needles given by O'Laura. After glancing at it, Zhang Tie didn't eat it; instead, he directly threw it in Castle of Black Iron.

"Heller, is there any problem with this antidote?"

Zhang Tie didn't believe in that senior Merkel, as old guys were usually shrewd. Even if he gave this antidote to O'Laura, Zhang Tie was not sure whether that old douchebag set him up or not through the antidote.

"It's safe. The pill contains some special herbal medicine and a

spiritual energy which will completely reverse the energy of your bone-exploding needles. It's harmless to human body. The only problem is that you might have loose bowels 5 minutes after eating it according to the analysis of pharmacological properties!"

Hearing Heller's reply, Zhang Tie didn't speak anymore. He started to run iron-blood battle Qi silently. After dozens of seconds, Zhang Tie's forehead started to ooze while the sense of discomfort and pains disappeared at once. At the same time, he could run iron-blood battle Qi smoothly; actually, he felt his iron-blood battle Qi was smoother than that before he was struck by the bone-exploding needles. Like all the reefs in the river course had disappeared at once, Zhang Tie felt pretty relaxed.

After consuming the last bit energy of the bone-exploding needles, Zhang Tie felt free once again.

Remembering the 3 iron-body fruits in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. After sitting in the tent silently for about 5 minutes, Zhang Tie instantly rushed out of the tent as he put his hand on the belly on purpose. Taking off the fluorite lamp from the tent, he instantly darted towards the temporary toilet in the distance.

"Peter, where are you going?" at the sight of Zhang Tie, Sam was going to drill into his tent asked loudly.

"Stomachache!" Zhang Tie shouted loudly. Almost everybody else could hear that, including O'Laura. Recalling how intimate was Zhang Tie to Sabrina in the daytime, O'Laura swore in a low voice, "You deserve it!".

The night flashed by...

Under the guidance of Sam and Gerri, Zhang Tie's team arrived at a ruined architectural complex on the 3rd day.

At the sight of it, Zhang Tie and everybody else became spirited...

For many of them, it was their first time to see such a

magnificent relics of historical civilization before the Catastrophe
in such a close distance.

Chapter 458: A Humanoid Excavator

This was a city. From the remains of the collapsed buildings, Zhang Tie realized that it was a medium-sized city.

As there was no road in front, they could barely access to it. The fluorite lamplight brightened up a part of the darkness. Through the indistinct mistiness, those ruined tall corridors were like a beast lurking in the darkness.

Some pioneers were seemingly wandering in the darkness. Holding green fluorite lamps, they looked like swaying [ghost fire](#), which terrified Zhang Tie's team for some reason.

Feeling the tense atmosphere behind him, Zhang Tie switched his dark vision with the common vision and found that this ruined city was absolutely like a graveyard. It brought a great stress to humans. However, in dark vision, Zhang Tie could only see the desolate wildness.

Seeing those remaining tall buildings, Zhang Tie could sense the development of human civilization before the Catastrophe.

Within his vision, Zhang Tie saw many collapsed skyscrapers. Zhang Tie saw numerous exposed steel bars and huge twisted steel structures at the intersections of skyscrapers, which looked like terrifying fish bones or skeleton of monsters.

At least in architectural field, the human achievements before the Catastrophe could not be matched by those today. After making a comparison between the cities that Zhang Tie had seen before and this city, Zhang Tie found that, even those tallest buildings in Yiyang City, which was the most prosperous city in Zhang Tie's eyes were dwarfed in front of the remains of this city.

When they moved inside, Zhang Tie's team was always obstructed by concrete blocks which fell down from those buildings. As a result, they had to make a detour.

On the roadsides, Zhang Tie also saw many traffic tools before the Catastrophe, which had already become nothing but rusty iron shells. Some were buses, some were like railed trains which contained a lot of carriages.

As to some eccentric remains, even Zhang Tie could not identify them.

For some reason, these remains suddenly reminded Zhang Tie of the old man, the teacher of his nature class in the No. 7 National Middle School in Blackhot City. It was the teacher's last dream to make an investigation in such a relics. However, pitifully, this was too unrealistic for a commoner.

"Ah..." a soldier uttered a miserable cry in front before falling down the ground. Hearing this, everybody else took out their weapons and formed a defense formation while looking around. They were afraid of being attacked.

Zhang Tie hurriedly walked over there. He found the warrior was hugging his foot while a sharp thing like a nail penetrated through his instep.

The soldier's wound was soon bound up. It was indeed a nail before the Catastrophe. One end of the nail touched a concrete block while its sharp end faced upwards. The soldier stepped onto it carelessly.

After the nail was drawn out of his foot and cleaned, Zhang Tie took a look at it. He found that the nail was still pitch-dark and bright, except for a bit rust. Undoubtedly, it could indicate the scientific and technological level of humans before the Catastrophe.

"Watch out your feet!" Someone warned loudly.

...

"We can find a place to settle down!" Zhang Tie said while looking at O'Laura. As they had already arrived at the relics, they

had already reached their first target. Even though O'Laura and Nurdo had other plans, unless they had already known the concrete location of the possible super relics, it would waste too much time to search for that place with so many people. If a powerhouse could find that super relics in one day, it would take so many people about 10 days to find the target.

O'Laura exchanged glances with Nurdo.

"As our team has walked for a few days, they indeed should take a rest. As we've already found the relics, if our soldiers don't search over here for a while, their morality will be shaken! If they're lucky, they can make some money here." Nurdo agreed with Zhang Tie firstly.

O'Laura glanced at those soldiers who were looking around with curious and excited looks before nodding, "Fine, let's find a place to pitch tents!"

"I can finally find a place to take a bath!" Sabrina revealed a smile. In these days, although women paid attention to their tidiness, men had already been smelly. The man who smelt best was Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie didn't know whether it was because of the fruits that he had eaten or the effect of the all-purpose medicament, although he also looked as dirty as other men and oozed sweat, he didn't smell sweaty. Sabrina said he smelt like the fresh grass under sunlight in the summer.

Now that the most influential 4 figures in the team had reached an agreement, the team chose to settle down after another few kilometers beside a collapsed skyscraper.

The skyscraper occupied over 6000 square meters. As it had collapsed, of course, it was safer. Zhang Tie's team chose to settle down in the relatively open spot between the collapsed part and the part that had not collapsed of that skyscraper. As it had barriers on two sides, it was relatively hidden and safer.

Soon after he pitched his tent did Zhang Tie see Sam and Gerri

walking towards him. After exchanging glances with each other, they left the camp. Finally they stopped at a hidden place hundreds of meters away.

"Sam and I found that ham package not far from here!" Gerri looked around and he told Zhang Tie in a low voice.

"Wuh, near here?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes, it was in a mountain cave on the east border of this city. It's less than 40 km away from here!" Sam added as he pointed at a direction.

"Given the allied forces' firm decision to enter the underground relics and the attendance of Golden Roc Bank, I'm afraid that they might have known the existence of the super relics. It could be said that wild bear tribe and our team were here for the super relics. Therefore, your intelligence would help them a lot; at least could shorten their time to find the super relics. As you two found the intelligence first, you have the full right to dispose it! If you decide to trade this intelligence with them, you will be safe under my protection; if not, I won't reveal your discovery to anyone else!"

Zhang Tie gazed at Sam and Gerri in a sincere look. Sam and Gerri had never imagined that Zhang Tie could say these words to them as they were slightly moved. At this moment, Zhang Tie could still restrain his temptation facing the allure of the super relics. This made Sam and Gerri feel lucky befriending Peter.

"I know, but Sam and I have well prepared this time. We plan to find a chance to go deeper into the cave. If it doesn't work, we will consider to trade them with the intelligence!"

Zhang Tie nodded. As Sam and Gerri were seeking for wealth here, their plan was reasonable. If they didn't try it, they were not real pioneers, "When do you plan to go there?"

"2 days later!" Gerri put it straightforward, "We can go there together!"

Zhang Tie nodded again, Gerri is indeed cunning. As it was still about 8 hours away from going to bed, it would be too eye-catching if they instantly rushed towards that place after pitching their tents. However, if they went there after wandering over here for 2 days, they would be not that noticeable.

"Actually, this city relics has a great potential to discover. If not the existence of that super relics, there may be a perfect treasure trove for pioneers!" Gerri added.

"Oh? You mean there's something precious yet not discovered here?"

"Of course, the bank vaults in this city have not been discovered yet. Additionally, there are something else which were very valuable, such as jewelries in the jewelry store which are still buried in the ruins, those items in the safes of rich families, even those top-class crystals which were used as common ornaments and ceiling lamps before the Catastrophe. Compared to those artworks before the Catastrophe, these items are more valuable!" Sam sighed with feeling.

"If there were some museums in this city, the items in the museums would be too valuable!" Gerri added, "The well-preserved books in libraries could also be sold at high prices!"

Zhang Tie had not imagined that so many valuable items could be discovered in this city. Looking around the city which occupied over 100 square kilometers, Zhang Tie started to believe in Gerri's words. However, at the sight of those big blocks of buildings that collapsed in the ruins, Zhang Tie realized that the great physical strength was demanded to excavate wealth out of there.

"Do you have a target now? Where is the most valuable in this city in your mind?"

"Generally, according to people's customs before the Catastrophe, tall architectural complex is always the prime commercial area in the city where we probably find high-end stores and banks.

Although common banks have no vaults, they have safe leasing service, which is also very profitable. By comparison, rich people always live in villas in the suburb where they could enjoy beautiful scenery, except for some special situations!"

Listening to Gerri's words, Zhang Tie glanced at the place in the far which was covered with most wandering fluorite lamps. "That must be the right place which gathered the most skyscrapers in the city, some have already collapsed while some 100-m higher skyscrapers are still standing there, making them very eye-catching. It seems that no pioneer is silly."

"Do you mean there? That place seems to have more fluorite lamps!" Zhang Tie pointed to that place which was only about 10 km away.

"I remember that the most prosperous commercial area in this city was over there when we came here last time!" Sam recalled for a short while as he nodded firmly.

"How about taking a look over there? It's still early now. It will not take us too much time to make a round trip over there!" thinking of that treasures that might be hidden in the relics, Zhang Tie became thrilled at once. No matter whether he could find wealth or not, at least it was a very interesting treasure-exploration experience for him.

After exchanging glances with each other, Gerri and Sam nodded at the same time.

Therefore, under the leadership of Zhang Tie, they trotted towards there.

...

Actually, Nurdo always had an eye on Zhang Tie. Seeing Zhang Tie running away with his friends, Nurdo instantly raised his arm, closely after that one of his subordinates appeared beside him. Without saying anything, Nurdo just raised his chin towards the

direction Zhang Tie was heading for. Seeing this, his subordinate instantly disappeared in the darkness.

...

After relieving the 80-kg luggage, Gerri and Sam's moving speed increased sharply. As a result, although having to detour a lot of ruins and obstacles, they only took about half an hour to reach there.

When arriving there, Zhang Tie saw many pioneers wandering over there. Many of them were striking something among the collapsed buildings using tools.

"Why don't they search over there. I feel something might be buried over there!" the moment Zhang Tie arrived, he had pointed at the debris—a relatively short building between two skyscrapers which were only about 20 m in height. The upper part of this building had collapsed while the greater part of it remained buried by some debris and concrete blocks of the ruined two skyscrapers.

"There might be something, might be nothing. However, it's really time and energy consuming to clean the debris around that short building. It might require 10 people to work over 1 week. Additionally, we are not sure what's buried inside. If we cannot find something valuable, we will suffer a great loss. It's not reasonable to waste time on uncertain spots like this." Gerri explained.

Zhang Tie found it was in the location of "waistband fengshui" which was always mentioned by Donder. In Eastern Continent, businessmen usually chose their stores in an obtuse angle or an arc at a road junction, which was called "waistband fengshui". According to Donder, stores at such locations usually had good fortunes. Donder's grocery was right at a location of "waistband fengshui" beside the railway station.

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't know the basis about "waistband

fengshui". However, at the sight of the debris in front, he knew that the location was a "bandwaist fengshui" using his instinct. Therefore, he wanted to have a try. Zhang Tie thought that the building at such a "waistband fengshui" location in the prosperous commercial district could never be a steamed bun store or a public toilet; otherwise, it would be a great waste and would not fit the principle of maximizing the commercial value of everything before the Catastrophe.

"If you want to have a look in other places, just do that. Remember to not leave far away from here. If you need any help, just let me know. I'm going to clean this debris, no matter what." Zhang Tie said casually. "Now that there's no target, it's better be here." Soon after saying that, Zhang Tie had rolled up his sleeves and started to work hard.

"Ah? Peter, are you crazy? Even if you work for half a month here..." the moment Gerri wanted to persuade Zhang Tie, his eyelids jumped heavily as he caught sight of Zhang Tie's movements.

The moment he arrived at the debris, Zhang Tie had grabbed a 600-kg concrete block with one hand and thrown it 30 m away like throwing a banana skin, causing a loud noise.

Sam and Gerri were dumbfounded by what they saw.

"Pinch me. Am I dreaming? I saw..."

In a wink, another piece of cement formwork of almost the equivalent weight was drawn out of the debris rudely by Zhang Tie and thrown aside casually.

After a short while, huge blocks were thrown out of the debris one after another.

Sam and Gerri were totally stunned. They saw the same doubt in the opponent's eyes, "Is this guy a humanoid steam-driven excavator? His efficiency is even higher than that of an excavator."

27 seven-strength fruits, plus his powerful strength as a LV 7 fighter and his flexible limbs as a human, making Zhang Tie's efficiency extremely higher at the moment.

The loud noises also attracted many pioneers from afar. The moment they saw Zhang Tie casually throwing away a 1-ton block, they all became completely shocked.

With the help of the dark tore gloves and his iron-blood battle Qi, Zhang Tie could easily break in stones with his hands and shatter them into pieces or lift them and throw them away.

Only after half an hour, a small part of the debris and the concrete blocks covering that short building had been cleaned.

Finally, an over 8-ton concrete block appeared in Zhang Tie's way.

Zhang Tie ran away...

When many people let out a sigh and thought that they could finally rest their hearts, they saw Zhang Tie running back with an over 3-m long flange steel. After that, Zhang Tie put another smaller block under that super heavy concrete block; he then used the flange steel to move away the block on the way.

In the next 5 hours, Zhang Tie kept digging. With the help of the pair of dark tore gloves and that super hard lever and under the unimaginable gaze of so many pioneers, he finally opened up a path which could allow one person to access to.

Finally, a wall of the low building was exposed...

Zhang Tie instantly pounded his flange steel onto the wall...

In the rising dust, a cave appeared...

Ghost fire, when humans or other animals die in the wild, the phosphor in their bones might react with water or alkali chemically, causing a fire. The fire would flow with wind. If you move, you might find being chased by them. In the wild, this is

very terrifying, just like being obsessed with a ghost. Therefore, it's called ghost fire. This always happens in the graveyard.

Chapter 459: Excavating Treasures

Honestly, Zhang Tie didn't think that he could find anything valuable in that debris; however, after disguising himself as a pioneer for so long, Zhang Tie indeed wanted to find something valuable here out of curiosity.

It's good if he could find something; if not, it's acceptable. Actually, the course of excavating treasures was more stimulative to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie remembered that Donder always sold items in terms of piles. He usually put one or two valuable goods inside the pile of items. By doing this, he could always obtain an unexpectedly better marketing result. Donder said this indicated the pleasure of excavating treasures.

You might not be interested in it if an item was directly put in front of you; however, if you found it in a hidden place or get it by chance, that kind of happiness might leave you with a very deep impression.

The profession of pioneer was thrilling. That was also why so many people would like to join in this action. They could experience the sense of stimulation brought by excavating treasures in the ruins. In the course, you might only find something that was a little valuable or you might become rich over night. Because of such an uncertainty, it became so attractive.

Someone had also considered to explore that ruins these days. However, it would take one person at least 1 month to clean it up while most people's personal supplies could not stand that long. If too many people joined, it would be not economical as that was only a small building between two skyscrapers. They were not sure whether they could find something inside it or not. Although some wanted to have a try but the others didn't want to risk too much. Therefore, there were different opinions between the pioneers.

What's more was that they could discover many valuable items without having to spend so much efforts. Additionally, as the bank vaults of this city had not been discovered yet, it was too silly for them to spend so much efforts in excavating a short building being buried in the ruins without knowing the potential benefits. Based on the pioneers' experience, bank vaults would never be in such a short building.

Later on, if they really could not gain any benefits from other places, some pioneers might work together to try this place. However, at this moment, nobody else would like to try here except for Zhang Tie.

Watching Zhang Tie excavating over there, Sam and Gerri stood still. They also wanted to give Zhang Tie a hand; however, it was completely out of their ability to move the huge blocks.

Additionally, Zhang Tie moved too fast. If they stood their, they would even slow Zhang Tie's working efficiency.

"Peh...peh...peh..." Zhang Tie spat out the dust while a lump of dust fell on his head. Meanwhile, he constantly patted off the dust from his hair, waiting for the cave to recover tranquility.

Dozens of seconds later, it finally recovered tranquility.

The wall with a hole was on the 2nd floor of the ruined building. All the floors above floor 2 had collapsed and turned into ruins. As a result, the building remains was completely buried by the debris of the floors above other wastes. Although floor 1 and floor 2 were also partially destroyed but almost half of its rooms were not completely covered. The items inside the rooms were well preserved.

Watching Zhang Tie opening the hole on one wall of this building in such a rude and barbarous pattern, all the surrounding pioneers were drawn one step forward by the great indescribable allure inside it.

"What? Do you want to pick off peaches at this moment?" Zhang Tie sneered at those pioneers as he inserted that 500-600 kg flange beam into the ruins in front of him like inserting a wood pile.

As a result, the 3-m long flange beam instantly entered the ground for about 1 m, causing a sound of "Puff".

Realizing the terrifying strength of Zhang Tie, all the pioneers were shocked as they stopped their footsteps.

Zhang Tie glanced at those pioneers' faces with a casual look. Many of the pioneers had stayed here for a long time. Therefore, they didn't know about Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie knew these pioneers clearly. In front of powerful person, they would be docile; while in front of weak ones, they might be as fierce as jackals and wolves.

"Sam and Gerri, come here. Let's take a look inside!" after frightening the others, Zhang Tie waved his hands towards Sam and Gerri.

Sam and Gerri then walked towards him with widely opened eyes. Although they had heard about Zhang Tie's amazing performance on the day when the allied forces occupied the relics canyon, they had not witnessed it themselves. Therefore, they were dubious about that more or less. On the way here, as they had not encountered anything special, they didn't have a chance to witness Zhang Tie's performance until now.

In their opinions, an enormous project which could not be completed in 4-5 hours was completed by Zhang Tie right in front of them. The moment they recalled Zhang Tie's amazing tyrannosaur-like strength, Gerri and Sam felt like dreaming, "Is this Peter? Is he the guy who lived in the sam hatch with me on Polar Light? But I didn't know that he had such a terrifying strength at that moment. Was he always hiding his real fighting strength..."

"What...what's your level on earth?"

When Gerri finally opened his mouth, Zhang Tie rolled his eyes. Zhang Tie had not imagined that his performance stimulated the "innocent souls" of Sam and Gerri so much.

"Is that important?" Zhang Tie glanced at those onlookers as he didn't want to be too outstanding here. Actually even in the allied forces, very less people knew his real level. Previously, O'Laura and Setton thought he was LV 9; however, since the death game, they were not sure about Zhang Tie's real level either. Many people considered Zhang Tie as a 5-star strong fighter. Some even thought Zhang Tie was a fighting master.

Zhang Tie's reply caused Sam and Gerri to exchange glances with each other before waving heads.

"We'll talk about it later. Now let's take a look inside!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

"According to the regulations of the pioneers, as you have opened it yourself, Gerri and I are not entitled to enter this place until you finish your discovery inside!" Sam replied honestly.

"What motherf*cking regulation? We're here together. Therefore I allow you to go in together with me. Nothing to worry about!"

"Fine, we will take a look inside in case you leave something!" Gerri was cleverer than Sam.

"Good, if there's something inside, each of you can select one. If there's nothing inside, we will just take it as a free travel!" Zhang Tie answered.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Sam and Gerri both nodded.

After glancing at those excited onlookers, Zhang Tie didn't say anything; instead, he just walked inside the hole with his fluorite lamp.

As that hole was about 1 m in height, they had to lower their bodies to access to it.

Under the green light of fluorite lamps, everything inside was coated with a weird green color. It was very disordered inside the room, being covered with dust all over. With the help of his dark vision, Zhang Tie could see everything inside the room. Besides some chairs and a broken desk, he saw nothing else. A small part of the big sharp block penetrated through the solid load-bearing floor, exposing some steel bars.

From the building material, Zhang Tie could imagine what happened here when the Catastrophe arrived. Thankfully, the quality of this building was not bad. Although the upper floors collapsed, the bottom two floors still remained complete.

With a sound of "Kacha", Zhang Tie lowered his head and found he broke the hands of a skeleton who was lying on the floor, facing the sky under the thick dust.

If he was timid, he might have been crying in fear. However, finding that skeleton was almost like an animal fossil, Zhang Tie looked as calm as before.

"Wait a second..." the moment Zhang Tie wanted to leave, he found Gerri walking towards him. Gerri started to fumble on the ground carefully.

After fumbling over the two hands of the skeleton for a short while, Gerri revealed a big smile as he took up a ring. He then cleaned the ring adroitly on his clothes and weighed it in his hand in front of his eyes.

"Platinum ring, with diamonds, ha...ha...good luck!" after saying this, Gerri passed the ring to Zhang Tie.

Before the Catastrophe, such jewelry was neither average nor precious. The same jewelry is worth 3 times in this age. Diamond was the most expensive jewelry before the Catastrophe; however, in this age, as humans intensify their exploration and development of the underground world, they discover a lot of diamonds, causing the sharp decline of diamond value. As a result, diamond was only

an average jewelry in this age.

"Take it first!" Zhang Tie smiled. He felt very happy although this ring was only worth about 100 gold coins.

After searching over this room carefully, they did not find anything valuable; therefore, they came to another room.

Only a metal framework was left on the door which connected the two rooms, leaving glass fragments over the floor.

Being similar to the last room, this room was also very concise in arrangement. With fewer furniture, it looked more like a senior business reception center or a conference room. Some paintings were hanging over the wall. However, they were already heavily degenerated like the sofas. Some ornaments and art works were scattering over the floor, most of them had been destroyed, except for some special metal art works.

"Peter, come over here..." Sam exclaimed with a remarkable sense of excitement.

Zhang Tie walked over there and found Sam was holding a 33 cm high pitch-black vase and was wiping it with his sleeves. As he accelerated his wiping speed, Sam became more thrilled.

"It seems...like a eastern good..." Sam forcefully swallowed his saliva before passing it to Gerri, "Take a look..."

"This pattern might be from the Eastern Continent. But I've not encountered such a precious eastern good before. Therefore..." Gerri revealed a solemn look, "Additionally, this vase is made of brass. The colors of the decorative patterns looked weird. They were not drawn on it; instead, they were inlaid on it. But why it's so plain? It seems like a special manufacturing process".

"Let me see..." Zhang Tie took the vase and started to wipe it with his sleeves forcefully like Sam. Gradually, the purple body became clearer. They saw a very vivid flower, above which was a Chinese character "福" which was coated with silver.

"This is indeed an art work from Eastern Continent..." Zhang Tie confirmed.

"How do you know that?"

"This is a Chinese character, which means luck, wealth and success. It's a propitious Chinese symbol!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Gerri and Sam both became thrilled.

"What?"

"We're rich!"

"This is just an art work. It should not be more valuable than that art work that you took out last time!" Zhang Tie said with a doubtful look.

"Don't you know that all the artworks from Eastern Chinese before the Catastrophe are very valuable. If it is a genuine one, many rich Chinese people would like to buy them at high prices. This is a best-seller in cultural relics market and auction houses for sure." Gerri told Zhang Tie while taking a deep breath.

"Let's search carefully, if we can search more items like this, each of you can take one..."

There were 6 more rooms on the 2nd floor. After searching over all the rooms, they only got 3 brass vases like that one in total. They found them in the same room. The 3 vases had same patterns. The only difference was the 3 Chinese characters, "福" which means luck, "禄" which meant wealth and "寿" which meant longevity. They should come from the whole set...

Zhang Tie was already very happy with the discovery of Chinese cultural relics before the Catastrophe here, even though they didn't know the value of these items. This was the pleasure through excavating treasures.

After searching over the 2nd floor, the 3 people came downstairs

to the 1st floor. It looked like a lobby on the 1st floor. It was much better than upstairs. Besides some dust, they saw few wastes. Rows of counters were placed in the four directions of the lobby. After about 900 years, those counters still remained unchanged and tightly closed.

Those counters reminded Zhang Tie of Donder's grocery. To be honest, after thousands of years, the counters and showcases which were used to display commodities in human stores had not experienced any change essentially.

Zhang Tie walked to the nearest counter and wiped off the thick dust over the counter. The moment he caught sight of those items inside the counter, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth...

When he caught sight of the 3 vases above stairs which were featured by Chinese cultures, Zhang Tie had already realized that the boss might be a Chinese or Chinese items seller.

Actually, Zhang Tie was right...

Chapter 460: Immortal Stones

When Zhang Tie wiped the dust off a counter and caught sight of the items beneath it, Gerri and Sam also cleaned up the dust off a counter on Zhang Tie's side out of curiosity and revealed the items inside.

Even after 1000 years, the items inside the counters were still as clean as before in the well-sealed counters.

Under the green light of their fluorite lamps, those items inside the counters became more shiny. They looked like a profound dreamland which had been buried for one millennium.

"These...these items are..." even Gerri and Sam became perplexed at once. Facing so many items in the counters, Gerri and Sam didn't even believe that they were in the real world as they were really shocked.

Like Sam and Gerri, Zhang Tie didn't believe that he could be that lucky either. Even in this age, there were still many liars such as in the flea market nearby the Blackhot city railway station. They usually counterfeited this special Eastern jewelries by green or deep-color glassworks so as to lure some idiots.

Such precious jewelries were the symbol of noble status among Chinese in the Eastern Continent before the Catastrophe. After the Catastrophe, such jewelries had more shocking meaning.

Such jewelries were called emeralds!

Unique emeralds!

In this age, such jewelries had another special name in the Eastern Continent—Immortal Stones.

Before the Catastrophe, such jewelries were very precious. However, emeralds were dwarfed by diamonds in that age.

"Who would sell counterfeit commodities here 900 years ago?" a

whim flashed across Zhang Tie's mind as he glanced at those green jewelries and pendants in the counters.

"Peter..."

Hearing Gerri's voice, Zhang Tie turned around and found they were looking at Zhang Tie with nervous looks. Remarkably, they had already guessed something.

"Let's take a look..." Zhang Tie smiled. Even though he didn't lack money at the present, he still felt his throat dry when he posed this suggestion.

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to open the counter in front of him, he saw Sam running upstairs, "You...stay downstairs, I will take a look upstairs!"

Zhang Tie knew that Sam was standing sentry upstairs for them. Although Zhang Tie didn't believe that someone would dare to rush in at the risk of their lives but he knew that it was necessary to be careful.

When Sam went upstairs, Gerri just stared at Zhang Tie.

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie directly punched onto a counter in front of him.

After causing a loud sound and shaking off some dust, he still could not break the counter. Therefore, Zhang Tie became stunned. Although he only used 30% of his full strength, it was already very shocking. Even if it was a steel plate in front of him, it would have been left with a fist mark. However, the counter remained unchanged.

"Before the Catastrophe, such counters for selling jewelries and valuables were not formed by average glasses, but a special glass like alloy. It was used to protect the items inside from being robbed away. Although it looked like glass, it was even harder than steel and iron!" Gerri explained.

Zhang Tie revealed a slightly embarrassed smile as he moved

behind the counter. He saw a movable drawer over there. After touching it for a short while, Zhang Tie forcefully tore away the lock on the drawer. After that, he casually took out an item from the counter.

That was a dark green bracelet. Based on Zhang Tie's experience in the grocery, he could identify that this bracelet was not a glasswork for sure. It was completely different than any other jewelries or stones that he had seen before.

The bracelet was clean and especially beautiful. Donder once told him how to simply identify emeralds. However, Donder added with a smile that Zhang Tie might barely have a chance to see a real immortal stone in his life. He told Zhang Tie that most of the immortal stones were monopolized by Chinese powers in the Eastern Continent. Few alchemists could have them. Those who could get immortal stones were not commoners for sure. At that time, Zhang Tie only had a few copper coins a day. He even had no surplus money to enjoy a bowl of rice brew which was worth a couple of copper coins. Of course, Donder didn't believe that Zhang Tie could have a chance to touch such jewelries in the future.

Zhang Tie put the bracelet onto his face slightly.

In a split second, he felt cool.

Taking out a lighter, Zhang Tie instantly burned that bracelet.

After over 10 seconds, Zhang Tie moved away the lighter. He then tried to wipe the place being burned with his sleeve. He found that the place was as new as before. No color changes at all.

As a pioneer, of course Gerri knew that it was the simplest way to identify whether this jewelry was real or not. Not to mention those low-grade green glasses in this age, even before the Catastrophe, there were still many counterfeited emeralds.

When Zhang Tie wiped the bracelet clean, he saw Gerri drawing close to him. Gerri even lifted his fluorite lamp to check it. Seeing

no color changes at all, Gerri held his breath. After looking around so many counters being covered with dust on the 1st floor, Gerri instantly felt bewildered as he shook his body.

The priority was to carry these items away without arousing the others' attention.

Chapter 461: A Trade

Seeing Zhang Tie leaving the camp, Nurdo, the cousin of O'Laura finally found a chance to talk with O'Laura in a quiet place.

O'Laura walked about 2 m ahead of Nurdo.

O'Laura's attitude towards Nurdo was always cold. Even now, she was still taking precautions against Nurdo.

"Right here. What do you want to say?" with her arms crossed, O'Laura looked around and said icily.

It was not far from the camp; additionally, O'Laura was very confident about her fighting strength as a LV 10 strong fighter. Therefore, she didn't fear that if Nurdo, a LV 9 fighter, played any tricks.

"Do you like Peter?" knowing her personalities, Nurdo put it straightforward.

"Mind your own business!" O'Laura sneered, "If you are here to talk about such a boring topic with me, I will go back right now!"

"Juventus is on my side. He has already told me everything about Peter in the tribe!" Nurdo said it with a calm look like saying something trivial.

Although Nurdo could not identify O'Laura's look under the mask in such a dark environment, he found that O'Laura's body quivered. Therefore, Nurdo revealed a wisp of smile at his mouth corners. Nurdo knew that he had to make her restless so as to reach his target.

"So what?" after a short while, O'Laura replied icily, "I don't care on which side is Juventus. As long as he's not on my side, his will in the grey eagle tribe has nothing to do with me. However, if he dares to betray the grey eagle tribe, the tribe won't mind chopping off a senior's head even at the risk of being split."

"I can make him support you so that you can take over the power of the grey eagle tribe as soon as possible. With his support, you can completely suppress Ollier and take over the power of the grey eagle tribe!"

O'Laura thought about Nurdo's words for a while. She knew that Nurdo's words were true. Based on the current situation in the grey eagle tribe, if she and senior Merkel could cooperate with Juventus, they would be able to suppress Ollier completely. The biggest trouble facing the grey eagle tribe was that the party of O'Laura and senior Merkel and the party of Ollier and Juventus were on even. Therefore, she did not dare to act rashly and blindly in the tribe. Additionally, her party was always restricted by the other party. If the alliance of Ollier and Juventus completely collapsed, the problem facing the grey eagle tribe would be solved. This was the perfect solution for the problem facing the grey eagle tribe...

After thinking for a short while, she finally agreed. She glanced at Nurdo. Although Nurdo was smiling, his slightly narrowed eyes were gleaming icily, making her heart race at once.

O'Laura knew that a grand didn't come for free.

"What's your condition?"

"It's very simple, marry me!" Nurdo revealed a wisp of smile at his mouth corners.

"No way!" O'Laura refused him immediately.

"Listen!" Nurdo looked confident, "I know you like that guy. But he cannot help you at all. He's just a high-level fighter. We also have fighters like him in our tribe. Additionally, the conflicts in the grey eagle tribe could not only be solved by fighting strength. I think you understand that!"

Seeing O'Laura becoming silent, Nurdo continued.

"Even if he accepted you, you have to understand that you are

only one of his beloved women. Given the hot relationship between him and Sabrina at the present, how much more advantageous do you think you are than Sabrina. Additionally, don't forget who revoked the wanted circular this time. It's said that the enchanting fox in Ewentra Archipelago is also an amorous woman!"

"That's why you bring Elizabeth here!" O'Laura replied with a strong irony in her tone.

However, Nurdo maintained his face unchanged, "I admit that I intended to seduce him with Elizabeth. It would be enough if a woman could let a powerhouse like Peter give me a favor at a critical moment in the future!"

O'Laura instantly recalled something as her eyes turned solemn at once, "Your father has determined to let your elder brother Mirba succeed to the throne of the wind wolf tribe last year..."

"Even if a woman like you wants to rule a tribe, how could I succumb to Mirba, the idiot. Besides having an old bitch mom, who's better than mine, Mirba can never match me!" Nurdo raised his head while his eyes were filled with flames, "My father didn't make the final decision yet. He could at least rule the wind wolf tribe for 10 years. I still have a chance in the decade. I will gain the support of the two seniors of the wind wolf tribe and I could lead the wind wolf tribe to become a leopard tribe..."

O'Laura understood Nurdo instantly. As long as Nurdo married her, he would annex the grey eagle tribe sooner or later. Plus the population and power of the grey eagle tribe, the wind wolf tribe would gradually develop to be a leopard tribe.

The tribes were divided by Slavs into mouse tribe, eagle tribe, wolf tribe, leopard tribe, fox tribe and bear tribe according to their forces.

It could be said that each Slav tribe's ruler had the mission and honor to develop the population and force of their tribe to the scale

of bear tribes. In order to reach this target, the rulers of all the Slav tribe would strive endlessly generation after generation. However, besides the natural growth in population and force of tribes, some powerful tribes also chose to expand their tribes by inter-marriage or wars.

The population base of the wind wolf tribe had already reached 350,000. If the population base of the grey eagle tribe was included, the whole population of the wind wolf might surpass 400,000, which just reached the minimum standard of leopard tribe.

"As long as you help me take the throne of the wind wolf tribe, I will let you rule the entire grey eagle tribe. It's a win-win situation!" Nurdo said full of ambition.

"Can a wolf spit out the flesh from his stomach?" O'Laura didn't believe in Nurdo's words at all.

"I don't want to restrict your freedom. I don't even care about whom you love and want to stay with. I only need a nominal marriage and the obedience of the grey eagle tribe. After taking the throne of the wind wolf tribe, I will not interfere with the affairs of the grey eagle tribe. You will still be the ruler of the grey eagle tribe. I feel this method is beneficial to both of us! What you need to pay is just some time and a nominal marriage!"

"Why are you telling me this? If you've long made this plan, I don't believe that you could wait until now!" O'Laura was still rational even Nurdo's words were alluring.

"I admit that this plan was a bit different than that I made before. In my earlier plan, I wanted to force you to marry me, by forcing instead of cooperating with you. Right because of this, you should believe in my sincerity!"

"Because of Peter?"

"A guy who could kill a LV 10 strong fighter with a javelin in a

blink of eye is only a powerful guarantee for the grey eagle tribe, nothing else!" Nurdo revealed a wisp of smile——sneer, "Do you know what is the most powerful in this world? It's money. If you accepted the 500,000 gold coins from Bluesea Castle Business Group, we would not stand here. If you did that, you would have taken control of the grey eagle tribe. You're too arrogant, O'Laura, you're beaten by your own arrogance!"

O'Laura replied with a cold harrumph as she raised her face.

"What's especially hilarious is that Peter also refused the assistance from Bluesea Castle Business Group. Although he knew that you needed money, he still refused the enchanting fox's money. Aren't you clear about your position in his heart? Perhaps he felt that you didn't worth him to do that. No matter what, it's 500,000 gold coins. Don't tell me that he could afford that amount of money himself. I know that his purse had been taken away by you and Setton when he was caught. He's now a poor guy..." Nurdo showed discord.

"If he gave her money to me, wound't he be taken as a toy boy? At least, Peter came down together with me. I believe that we will have a big harvest!" O'Laura urged.

"Don't comfort yourself anymore. Even if all the population of your tribe came down, how much could you gain in this action, 50,000 or 100,000 gold coins? Actually, you cannot completely depress Juventus and Ollier without at least 350,000 gold coins. Additionally, it's the wild bear tribe which hosts this action, how much do you think you could take away from here? That guy just accompanies Sabrina down here for exploration and travel; perhaps, he even wants to make some money. However, you only have one chance."

"Isn't the attraction of relics featured by the uncertainty of benefits. Why are you so sure that Peter and I cannot find enough wealth down there?"

"Do you really think that powerful ones are doomed to have good luck and become millionaires. Don't be naive. O'Laura, you've already passed the age of being naive. You'd better consider about my suggestion. Finally, I want to tell you, no matter which way do you choose, it won't influence this cooperation. The former appointment between us still works."

"No need to consider anymore. No way! No matter what, I have to take over the grey eagle tribe. Nobody could take it away from me!" O'Laura replied firmly.

"Good luck to you! I hope that the talk between you and me is not exposed to anyone else!"

"Humph..."

Knowing that he could not persuade O'Laura temporarily, Nurdo didn't continue as he knew that something would sprout sooner or later as long as it was sowed in her mind.

"A woman who gives up 500,000 gold coins for the illusory love and self-esteem of a toy boy wants to take over a tribe. Does she think it's a playing house?" Nurdo sneered inside. After glancing at O'Laura, he turned around and left.

This talk ended in discord.

Seeing Nurdo disappearing in the distance, O'Laura tightened her fist...

...

When O'Laura was separated from Nurdo, Zhang Tie, Sam and Gerri just came out of the entrance of the ruins.

At this moment, at least hundreds of people were surrounding the entrance. Those greedy pioneers who were curious about the items inside the entrance didn't leave; instead, they were just staying outside the entrance with glittering eyes. But nobody dared to go inside.

Based on the freak's strength, the first guy entering the hole would probably lose his life, not to mention finding something. Therefore, nobody would like to be that idiot.

When Zhang Tie, Sam and Gerri exited, they were stripped to the waists. They only wore pants. All the rest clothes had been tightly packed and carried on their back. Nobody could see what was inside.

Sam and Gerri both looked pale. Careful pioneers found that their legs were shaky while their hands on the package were trembling. Only the freak man looked unchanged.

"Is that okay?" Sam asked nervously.

"No problem, you two don't say a thing. Relax yourselves. I will deal with the rest!" Zhang Tie replied.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Sam forcefully swallowed his saliva as he nodded with a solemn look.

When they came out of the hole, those pioneers outside the hole moved one step forward. After being glanced by Zhang Tie's lightning-bolt eyes, everybody else stopped.

"What's inside?" Someone asked.

Zhang Tie only replied with a cold harrumph. After that, he took up that flange beam and walked aside. Under the gazes of everybody else, he immediately moved some 7-10 tons of blocks to the original places and blocked the hole.

At the sight of this, all the other pioneers started to swear inside. However, many people's eyes also brightened up. According to the rules of pioneers, as long as the discoverer left, the items inside the hole would have nothing to do with the discoverer anymore, irrespective of what it was. However, Zhang Tie's action remarkably reminded many people that something valuable was still buried inside.

Seeing Zhang Tie's movement, those who kept gazing at their

package also moved their gleaming eyes on the architectural wastes which were used to block the hole. Even if someone among them wanted to rob their package, after measuring Zhang Tie's strength and those architectural wastes, they changed their decisions.

The moment the three people left, many pioneers instantly swarmed up. Someone instantly found the flange beam and started to move that block on road with other people.

The spot became chaotic at once.

...

Seeing that they were not followed up, Sam and Gerri both let out a sigh, so did Zhang Tie.

"Peter, why did you block the hole once again?"

"Nothing. I just didn't want to kill anyone over there!" Zhang Tie said casually, "It's better to bring them hope than to kill them!"

Sam and Gerri exchanged glances with each other as if they didn't know Zhang Tie before.

...

As they had to move steadily, their speed was slower compared to when they came here. Even though, they still returned to their camp after about an hour.

What a coincidence, the moment they came back, they saw O'Laura walking towards here from afar.

Seeing their weird looks, O'Laura became stunned, "Where have you been?"

"We went for wealth!" Zhang Tie replied with a relaxed look while Sam and Gerri both looked very nervous at this moment. If not Zhang Tie who found these items, Sam and Gerri would never dare to return here anymore.

O'Laura glanced at Zhang Tie with a gloomy look. She ignored his

joke.

"Go to the tent, and when you come back to camp. I have something to tell you."

"What a coincidence, I've also got something to tell you!"

"What?"

"Let's talk about it later, it's just a few steps back!"

O'Laura nodded.

When they came back to the tent, they saw Sabrina and Nurdo who were still staying with some guests.

Those guests were dispatched by Golden Roc Bank and some heads of the wild bear tribe. As they came down here consecutively with a time interval of a few hours, it's normal for them to encounter each other here if they intended to.

Hearing Zhang Tie's arrival, they instantly turned around and became curious about Zhang Tie's weird look.

"Ha...ha..." Nurdo burst out into laughter first, "What? Have you already gone to discover relics after coming down here for a few hours? Look at you! You must have a big harvest!"

Although Nurdo's tone was not ironical but it was jeering. Indeed, nobody belived that Zhang Tie and his friends could find anything valuable in only a few hours.

However, at the sight of the staff from Golden Roc Bank, Zhang Tie let out a sigh as he knew that he didn't need to worry about these items anymore...

Zhang Tie fumbled in his trousers pockets and took out a thumb-sized item. He then flipped it towards a staff from Golden Roc Bank. That staff instantly grabbed it.

"Send your men down, we want to preserve a batch of relics!"

"Mr. Peter, our lowest limit of amount for entrustment service

is..." before he finished his words, he seemed being choked by something while he looked around that item carefully with widely opened eyes at once.

"We have 1674 pieces in total!" Zhang Tie told him a figure. Nobody else understood what did Zhang Tie mean. However, at the sight of Zhang Tie and his friends three package, the staff of Golden Roc Bank instantly took out a metal cylinder and triggered it towards the sky...

With a shrill soar, a huge symbol of Golden Roc Bank appeared in the sky which could be seen clearly by people within dozens of miles.

In a split second, various battle Qi's shined in the distance while many light spots started to fly towards here...

Nobody knew what was happening!

Chapter 462: Qiyun

Before they realized what happened, with a long roar from afar, a shadow had already arrived here like a lightning bolt.

He moved so fast. With a glittering battle Qi, he had already appeared in Zhang Tie's camp from miles away after a short while along with an air-breaking sound.

"What's up? Who sent the cloud-penetrating bolt?"

Closely after the boom was heard beside where they stood, a person fell down the ground like a shell, raising a lot of dust.

Zhang Tie admired him inside. Although he knew that there were powerhouses in the team of Golden Roc Bank for sure but he had not seen them before. Now, Zhang Tie found that the powerhouse was much sharper than that he imagined. At least this person's moving speed had already surpassed 100 m/s, which was much greater than that of Zhang Tie's. Even if he added himself with a rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie could not move so fast.

It was a 40-odd Chinese bald man who looked strong. When he asked the question, he fixed his eyes onto that person who sent the cloud-penetrating bolt, causing a great stress to that person.

"I received a entrustment service here..."

Hearing this, the bald man changed his face as he wanted to lose his temper...

"Someone found over 1000 pieces of emeralds!"

The moment the bald man heard the next words, he instantly relieved his fury; instead, he revealed a weird look as he asked repetitively, "Over 1000 pieces?"

"Yes, over 1000 pieces!" As he had not seen the items, he was afraid that Zhang Tie's number 1674 was not precise, therefore, he said a conservative number.

This number was indeed conservative!

Along the eyes of the speaker, the Chinese bald man moved his eyes on Zhang Tie, Sam and Gerri.

At this moment, Zhang Tie looked around and found that the looks of the others remained confused, except for Sabrina. What happened just now left them no time to think at all. Soon after Zhang Tie arrived here and threw that item to the staff of Golden Roc Bank did that person send a cloud-penetrating bolt. Closely after that, the bald man arrived.

As Zhang Tie could speak Hebrew, his words were understandable. However, the two men from Golden Roc Bank spoke Chinese. Therefore, all the others became flurried. They only knew that Zhang Tie discovered 1674 pieces of something from outside. As to what Zhang Tie had discovered, everybody else was confused.

Nurdo's eye corners were cramping. With his eyes on Zhang Tie's luggage, he didn't know how come they had such a big harvest only in a few hours. It seemed that all these items were valuable; otherwise, those people in Golden Roc Bank would not pay special attention to this.

"F*ck, has he discovered so many high-level crystals only after such a short period? What a lucky bastard!"

At this moment, many people in the camp had gathered here. They all gazed at Zhang Tie's luggage. Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he turned around and told Sam and Gerri, "Put down our achievements; show them to the public; by the way, we will count them here."

Gerri and Sam hesitated a little. As there were so many people here, they were a bit worried about the safety of these jewelries. However, seeing Zhang Tie putting down his luggage, Sam and Gerri did that too. They paved their clothes on the ground and opened the objects one package after another.

As they also found some relatively well-preserved black flannels in the counters, they wrapped all the objects with that soft material in case of losses in transportation. As to smaller items such as finger rings and ear rings, they packed over 100 pieces of them together. As to bigger items such as bracelets and jade chips, they packed them separately.

They also brought the three special metal vases. As to many jewelries and small objects, they wrapped them and directly put them in the vases.

Watching those objects being opened one package after another, all the onlookers stretched out their necks and became stunned. Compared with so many objects, the three vases became dwarfed. Everybody fixed their eyes on those green stones, large or small.

"Ah, so many jewelries!" exclamations sounded one after another.

"Peter became rich. Did they find them in the relics?"

"Sure, they went inside empty-handed. Of course, they found them in the relics!"

"What are they, emeralds or green crystals? They look valuable..."

"They look more like turquoise..."

"Turquoise are not that bright!"

"Those must be olivines!"

The onlookers started to discuss. Most of them had not seen these emeralds at all. Therefore, they could easily mix these objects with those they had ever known or heard about.

Only Nurdo and a few people slowly changed their faces at the sight of those objects.

With air-breaking sounds, powerhouses from Golden Roc Bank arrived here constantly with more and more onlookers. What Zhang Tie had not imagined was that Roslav and Waajid also led

the fighters of the huge bear tribe towards here.

Not knowing whether it was an illusion or not, Zhang Tie felt that Roslav and Waajid seemingly let out a sigh at the sight of him. After realizing that they were gazed by Zhang Tie, the two guys walked to the side of Sabrina like nothing had happened.

It was not strange to meet people from the huge bear tribe at all. But the huge bear tribe seemed to be too active. Therefore, Zhang Tie paid more attention to them.

Keeping silent, Zhang Tie just stood aside, watching those staff from Golden Roc Bank authenticating the values of those emeralds.

After checking over those objects on the ground carefully, a 30-odd man from Golden Roc Bank stood up as he nodded towards a 50-odd man while trying his best to relieve his excitement.

The 50-odd man was the head of this team of Golden Roc Bank. The bald man was his subordinate.

"Mr. Peter. I'm Zhu Zhen, the head of the expedition of Golden Roc Bank. I want to reconfirm it, are you sure that you want to entrust Golden Roc Bank to keep these immortal stones for you?"

Because he was talking with Zhang Tie, the 50-odd man didn't use Chinese anymore; instead, he spoke Hebrew. Hearing this question, all the onlookers who were discussing about these stones shut up at once. Everybody felt their necks being grabbed by hands. The spot became so quiet that even a needle falling down the ground could be heard.

Zhang Tie nodded with a smile, "Yup, I truly want to entrust these objects to Golden Roc Bank. I know your bank could provide such a service. But I don't know whether you can accept them here or I have to bring these objects to Eschyle City!"

"If it's a common business, you truly need to entrust a person to manage it in our branch in Eschyle City; but it's special now, we

can directly assign our ground crew here to receive this batch of immortal stones!"

"Fine, no problem!" Zhang Tie nodded.

Hearing Zhang Tie's promise, Zhu Zhen directly nodded towards a Chinese youth who was carrying a medium-sized box. The Chinese youth took out a clock-sized crystal remote sensing communication device from the box and started to communicate with their ground crew in the public.

Zhang Tie watched how did the Chinese youth manipulate the crystal remote sensing communication with an interested look, "When will your crew arrive here?"

"Our airship is still outside there. As long as they receive our message, the powerhouses of Golden Roc Bank will arrive here in 5 hours!" Zhu Zhen replied firmly.

Zhang Tie believed in his words. Zhang Tie knew that real powerhouses' moving speeds were very terrifying. Although it took them several days to be here, it only took real powerhouses a few hours. If not go down here with 200-300 people, Zhang Tie was also confident that he could arrive here from above ground in a few hours.

"Fine, you can keep them now!" after saying this, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Sam and Gerri. Then, the went in their own tents to put on clothes.

The moment the three people left did Zhu Zhen make a gesture. Seeing this, the other members of the expedition of Golden Roc Bank headed by the bald man walked towards him. After that, the 6 people surrounded the piles of jewelries.

Not until then did those onlookers become boisterous like a bowl of water being sprayed in the boiling water in a pot.

"Immortal stones? Are these objects immortal stones?"

"Peter found immortal stones?"

The entire camp boiled up.

Nurdo drew a cold breath. Even if he was always calm, at the sight of the solemn looks of the team of Golden Roc Bank, he was also driven crazy! His heart raced while his eyes turned red. However, in front of those people from Golden Roc Bank, Nurdo would never dare to rob those jewelries away.

After forcefully swallowing his saliva, Nurdo asked Zhu Zhen and the others, "May I...know the value of these immortal stones?"

Although many people had heard about immortal stones, few of them knew its price.

"Although these immortal stones have different qualities, they were not bad generally. If Mr. Peter entrusts our bank to preserve these for him, I think our bank would pay him more than 1.4 million gold coins!" Zhu Zhen answered seriously before letting out a sigh, "I've not imagined that Mr. Peter is so lucky. I was told that he had just been here for a few hours!"

Hearing this, some clever guys hurriedly ran towards the tent of Zhang Tie; the rest ones exchanged glances with each other as they could see amazement and admiration from the opponents' eyes, "Damn it. How come that guy be so lucky?"

Zhang Tie's good luck really made others jealous.

...

The moment he came out of his tent, Zhang Tie had seen a subordinate of O'Laura who was cringing outside his tent with a chrysanthemum-like smile.

"Mr. Peter, Can...can you..." face blushed, the man asked with a shameful look while rubbing his hands.

Only after glancing at this guy, Zhang Tie had already known what he wanted. Therefore, Zhang Tie briefly told him about the location where he found those jewelries. The moment the man received Zhang Tie's reply, he had turned around and ran away

without even thanking Zhang Tie. After running a few steps forward, he realized his rudeness; the moment he turned around and wanted to say something to Zhang Tie, he found Zhang Tie was smiling at him while waving his hand.

"It's okay. Hurry up, it depends on your luck!"

Zhang Tie didn't put on shelves in front of them. As the short building was collapsed, Zhang Tie didn't clean up there. Therefore, it was uncertain whether they could find some other valuables over there or not.

In a wink, over 200 members of Zhang Tie's camp ran over there with green eyes, except for the female army led by O'Laura, Nurdo and Sabrina.

The power of a good model was unrivaled.

Only after a few minutes, when Zhang Tie came back, he found O'Laura, Nurdo and Sabrina were already chatting with those staff of Golden Roc Bank. At the sight of Zhang Tie, they all fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie.

Perhaps someone among them also wanted to take a look in the place where Zhang Tie discovered these emeralds; however, given their status, they felt shameful to follow Zhang Tie's action.

"What are you talking about?" seeing their weird looks, Zhang Tie asked casually.

"We're talking about your amazing good luck!" Zhu Zhen smiled with a curious look, "We've participated in the excavation of many relics; however it's our first time to see someone like Mr. Peter to reap so much only after arriving here for a few hours!"

Zhang Tie shrugged and kept silent.

"Actually when someone's luck reaches the upper limit, we Chinese will not call it luck anymore!"

"What do you call it?" Nurdo asked.

"Qiyun!" Zhu Zhen called it in Chinese pinyin. There's no corresponding word with this in Hebrew. The moment they heard about this strange new term, everybody else looked different, "Mr. Peter really has a great qiyun!"

"What is qiyun? Can you explain it?" out of everybody's imagination, Roslav, a representative of the huge bear tribe asked while biting his tongue.

"In your words, qiyun means that a person is favored by God and could do great things!"

Hearing Zhu Zhen's words, the two powerhouses from the huge bear tribe exchanged glances with each other and kept silent.

Even Zhang Tie realized that his luck was pretty good these days. Although he had also suffered some dangers and setbacks, he could finally survive them. Remarkably, no matter what problems he encountered these days, he could always easily manage them, such as wanted circular and the bone-exploding needles...this formed a sharp contrast with Zhang Tie's experience in the previous 16 years. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt this sharp difference especially.

Especially the wanted circular, before he managed it, someone else had already revoked it for him. Even if he was captured at the risk of being chopped off his head, he could also survive that easily. Additionally, he was just trying to excavate the short building several hours ago; it was really out of his imagination that he could find so many immortal stones. "I've never been so lucky before, did something special happen to me?"

Zhang Tie instantly remembered the small tree. Besides providing him with fruits, the small tree also changed his mode of thinking. It told Zhang Tie that nothing in this world came without a reason. An object definitely existed or appeared due to some reason or logic.

Zhang Tie asked Heller in his mind at once.

"Heller, are you there? I also feel that my luck is pretty good these days. It's quite different from before. Do you know the reason? Is it related to the small tree..."

Only after a couple of seconds, Heller's voice had already reappeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

"Precisely, it's only related to yourself. The Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree is breeding a new fruit recently. In the course of its generation, your luck is pretty good. As long as you see that fruit, you will know why."

Zhang Tie became stunned, "What? A new fruit? But I've done nothing special these days..."

...

Chapter 463: The Most Valuable Thing

Undoubtedly, life itself was one of the most valuable things. That was why immortal stones were so expensive.

After being processed by an alchemist, the value of immortal stones would increase by 2 times. Although Zhang Tie's emeralds had not been processed by alchemists, they were still valuable. According to the authentication of the powerhouses from Golden Roc Bank, those emeralds were worth 1.64 million gold coins.

Although Golden Roc Bank sincerely expected to purchase these immortal stones, Zhang Tie didn't want to sell them.

For others, immortal stones were just gold coins; however, for Zhang Tie, those immortal stones had another meaning.

After the other powerhouses of Golden Roc Bank arrived here from above ground, Zhang Tie talked with one of them.

...

"Of course, immortal stones could not help people become immortal. However, they could increase one's life span. Actually, people strive for cultivation by lighting their own surging points was also to increase their life span. The average life span of commoners was about 90 years; however, if one could reach LV 9, he could increase his life span to 120 years as his physical potential was released. The higher one's level was, the longer would he or she live!"

"What about the life span of a knight?"

"Generally, a knight could live longer than 400 years!"

"400 years?" Zhang Tie was full of amazement.

"Of course, besides knights who could live even longer, the whole set of top-class immortal stones processed by alchemist masters in the Eastern Continent could also extend their life span to 200 more

years. A knight with a whole set of top-class immortal stones could live longer. As your immortal stones had been cut into smaller pieces in different levels, their values were sharply discounted; otherwise, they were worth a higher price!"

"Is the whole set of top-class immortal stones effective to commoners?"

"Of course, that's why the immortal stones are so expensive!"

"How much is one set of that thing?"

"Top-class immortal stones are rarely seen even in the Eastern Continent. They could barely be seen in the market. After collecting raw materials, big clans would entrust alchemist masters to process them. You cannot buy them even if you're rich!"

"Can people be really immortal?"

"In the Chinese legends, in the ancient times, humans could easily live longer than 10,000 years old. Dying at the age of 800 or 900 years would always be taken as an abnormal death at a young age. Human body is the most precious jewelry in this world!"

...

After signing a series of documents on entrustment service with Golden Roc Bank and promising to them that Golden Roc Bank had the priority to purchase these jewelries on equal conditions if he wanted to sell them, Zhang Tie saw them off with those immortal stones.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's heart raced because of that talk.

Not until then did Zhang Tie know that one could increase his or her life span after reaching a high level. Additionally, with a whole set of top-class immortal stones from an alchemist master, one's life span could increase by 200 years. Zhang Tie was really shocked by the two pieces of information. Previously, he knew that one could grow healthier and live longer through cultivation while immortal stones could extend one's life span. However, he didn't

know the details. Now he knew.

Zhang Tie knew that cannon fodder-class small figures who were educated to beat screws in the city like himself were born with limited knowledge structure and recognition in the world. Even though he had stayed in Hidden Dragon Island for a year, his limited vision was slightly made up; instead of being essentially changed. After the talk with that powerhouse from Golden Roc Bank, he reconfirmed about this point.

For some people, they could not touch such secret knowledge until they had reached a certain age, when they would extremely broaden their vision and mode of thinking. For Zhang Tie himself, unless he had the chance to touch them, he was isolated from a lot of information in this world.

Zhang Tie didn't sell those immortal stones immediately because he recalled his master Zhao Yuan. After the talk, Zhang Tie imagined about his parents' increasingly wrinkled faces. In a split second, a whim boiled up in Zhang Tie's mind. "No matter what, I have to let my dad and mom enjoy the benefits of immortal stones. I will help them to live longer. Because of various reasons, my dad and mom didn't have much knowledge on cultivation; therefore, they could not live long. This was also my biggest regret. If I could mend up this regret, I wouldn't care about the amount of money and immortal stones."

Zhang Tie experienced the power of alchemist once again. Therefore, he grew more ambitious about becoming an alchemist.

"Of course, if I want to help my dad and mom live longer, I have to achieve my first dream—to grow stronger." Zhang Tie finally understood why so many people were striving for higher levels at any cost. Because in addition to greater power, they could also gain longer longevity. They might live 5-6 times longer than commoners.

Zhang Tie had never imagined that he could live for hundreds of

years. At this moment, a whim flashed across his mind.

"Perhaps, I could also live 400-500 years old." Zhang Tie told himself as his heart started to pound. He could feel that a gate was pushed open in his mind which presented a splendid world which he had never imagined. Now Zhang Tie started to realize the significance of the hard course on cultivation and polishing surging points.

"Cultivation, cultivation, cultivation!"

Zhang Tie immediately acted like a machine being installed with a motor. He grew more desirable for cultivation.

...

Being stimulated by those immortal stones, in the next two days, the 200-odd guys in Zhang Tie's team kept cleaning up that short building where Zhang Tie discovered the immortal stones.

As was imagined, those pioneers who expected to discover some valuables here were chased away ruthlessly. At the beginning, many pioneers were inimical; however, after knowing that these people were in the same team with Peter, they all left and did not dare to bother.

After two days, the short building was cleaned up. Those guys really discovered a lot of valuables over there, dozens of pieces which were well-preserved and a few broken immortal stones and jewelries. They were worth 70,000-80,000 gold coins in total.

As a result, the morale of the team became spirited. This was a worthy travel for them. They could hardly make so much money above the ground.

In the two days, Zhang Tie also wandered with Sam and Gerri on this relics and in the neighborhood. Apparently, they were seeking for another chance to discover wealth; actually, they were just familiar with the surrounding environment and terrain so as to seek for the real super relics.

Zhang Tie's good luck seemed being used up. Although he also tried to excavate something, he didn't find anything valuable at all, except for some scrap metal.

Sam and Gerri found the place where they picked up the weird ham package before the Catastrophe. In these two days, they just passed by this place for one time. It was a deep and serene cave which extended to the distance. They didn't know where did it lead to. In case of arousing others' attention, they didn't go deep in it.

In the same period, Zhang Tie found many strange forces and unidentified individuals. They had long entered the underground world before the allied forces blocked the relics valley. Additionally, their fighting strength were above common pioneers and most of the fighters of the allied forces for sure.

Zhang Tie knew that not everybody in this world knew themselves well and could curb their greed about the pieces of star of god, except for powerhouses like star and moon sword sage. Somebody would always have a try with a fluky mind. Perhaps, the news of super relics had been spread through special channels. Therefore, besides the allied forces and Golden Roc Bank, the others had also known about this message.

In the two days, Zhang Tie had seen many corpses of pioneers and unidentified individuals who looked very miserable. Remarkably, their personal belongings had been taken away. At the sight of them, many people who came down here for a try would feel icy.

The situation in the underground world was much more sophisticated than that Zhang Tie had imagined. Even the vanguards of Zhang Tie's team had not imagined that. Facing the potential dangers, the separate vanguards of the allied forces gradually gathered together in these days. The cake of wealth being exposed in front of them was much larger than that they had imagined.

...

On the same evening when Zhang Tie discovered those immortal stones, Zhang Tie stood on the top of a 30-storey building which only had half of its steel and cement framework left. Looking down at those fluorite lamplights, Zhang Tie looked calm. Nobody knew what he was thinking about.

In the underground world, they judged time in consistent with the time above ground. Besides the weak light of a few fluorite materials and heat sources in the darkness, daytime and night could not be distinguished here. Therefore, one's biological clock could be easily disturbed.

"Thankfully, these dogskin plasters stopped following us!" Standing on Zhang Tie's side, Sam said furiously.

"No matter what, these guys are not silly. As this building has been searched by so many pioneers; nothing valuable could be discovered in it at all. If they continued to follow us up, they would find nothing else except for blush!" compared to Sam, Gerri looked a bit calm, "Have you found that the number of these dogskin plasters has decreased a lot after achieving nothing in two days?"

"It's true. Much fewer compared to yesterday!" Sam nodded.

Hearing their talk, Zhang Tie revealed with a smile. "Being similar to those gamblers who like to follow up those lucky gamblers, ever since the news that I made a fortune after discovering those immortal stones spread among the vanguards of the allied forces, Sam, Gerri and I had been followed up by a lot of people."

"In this couple of days, as long as I paid special attention to a certain place or moved my hands or stayed a bit longer somewhere, I would instantly be surrounded by some guys who started to excavate near me."

After achieving nothing for consecutive three days, Zhang Tie

knew that those guys' endurance might have ran up. Zhang Tie was that lucky gambler. However, after achieving nothing for three days, he had been not attractive to those guys who followed him. Therefore, this was a good symbol for Zhang Tie.

As those who followed him were just average warriors of the allied forces who expected to make a fortune, Zhang Tie was not disgusted about them. However, after being gazed by them constantly, Zhang Tie didn't even have a chance to eat fruits in Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, he grew pretty depressed about that.

Therefore, Zhang Tie could only let so many fruits hang over the small tree in Castle of Black Iron.

"For some reason, I feel that the process of seeking for the super relics would be very risky!" after considering it carefully, Zhang Tie told Gerri and Sam, "As you've already seen it these days, the situation in the underground world is very dangerous, besides the pioneers and allied forces, there are many unidentified forces and individuals. Some of them have died for some reasons. I hope you two think twice before deciding whether to seek for the super relics or not..."

Hearing Zhang Tie's suggestion, Sam and Gerri hesitated...

Chapter 464: A Hidden Force

After thinking for a while, Sam and Gerri did not feel enthusiastic about exploring the super relics the last few days.

Poor guys were always the most struggling. However, Sam and Gerri were not poor anymore. Because Zhang Tie had promised to gift two biggest and best jade chips to them. Although they felt shameful about that, they finally accepted Zhang Tie's "reward" under his passionate request.

According to the authentication of Golden Roc Bank, the two pieces of immortal stones were worth more than 40,000 gold coins. Therefore, they sold them to Golden Roc Bank at once. At this moment, with gold checks which were worth over 40,000 gold coins, which was out of their imagination, Sam and Gerri started to hesitate.

These two days, when they wandered with Zhang Tie, they also saw those dead pioneers. Being stimulated by that, they woke up as they realized the potential dangers hidden in this relics.

Sam and Gerri knew their real fighting strength. As they were lower than LV 6, if not had come down together with Zhang Tie, even if they discovered the immortal stones, they would not be able to take the immortal stones out. If they were found having a huge amount of money, any douchebag among the pioneers could eat them up, not to mention any powerhouses. Such things were too common among pioneers.

However, they had already gained more than their expectancy. Therefore, they hesitated.

Even if they discovered the super relics and found the well-preserved vaults in the super relics, were they able to carry one ton of golds out of the cave? Of course not. However, at this moment, they were already carrying gold checks which were worth more than 40,000 gold coins, which would be heavier than one ton of

golds, if being placed in front of them.

Actually, they already made a fortune. As long as they didn't want to live too luxuriously, they could live a dignified life in any place of Blackson Human Corridor. Wasn't it what many pioneers strive for their whole lives?

However, if Sam and Gerri insisted on exploring the super relics, they might have encountered potential dangers and had their lives threatened. If so, they might not get any chance to spend the 40,000 gold coins. The most anguished thing was not being able to spend all the money that one had made.

If they returned now, they would miss the chance to excavate the super relics. For pioneers, this was like how a lady killer missed a big beauty and how a fierce, hunter beast missed a grand dinner.

Sam and Gerri struggled between possible anguishes and regret. They didn't want to give it up; however, when pinching the hard gold checks which were sewed in corners of garments, they hesitated once again.

Only after glancing at their looks, Zhang Tie had already known what they were thinking about as he heavily patted on their shoulders.

"We are friends. Therefore, I respect your decisions. If you stick to your former decision, I will try my best to protect you!" Zhang Tie didn't promise to keep them safe. He knew his real fighting strength. Even if he could easily kill a LV 10 powerhouse, he still did not dare to be arrogant. After witnessing his master's power and how star and moon sword sage killed that huge deep-sea monster, Zhang Tie knew that he was just a trivial figure for sure. How dared he ensure others' safety in a spot where even knights and sword sages would attend.

Hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Sam and Gerri made their decision at once. After working with each other for such a long time, they had already known the other's decision only after a glance.

"The achievement has already been out of our imaginations. We were also negotiating about this a couple of days ago, yet we didn't make any decision by then. Now, after hearing your words, we make our final decision!"

"Oh? You've made your decision?"

"Actually, we've got another idea!" Gerri replied with a shameful look.

"Go ahead!" Zhang Tie asked with an interested look.

"If you plan to explore the super relics alone, Sam and I will give up going there in case of bringing you troubles and setting ourselves in dangers. However, if the allied forces followed you there, Sam and I will also go there along with them. As to the information about the super relics, its yours now, you can dispose it at your will!"

"He...he...you two guys are really..." Zhang Tie waved his head with a smile. He had not imagined that Sam and Gerri had such a plan, "he...he...they are really cunning. They directly handed over the disposal right of that information to me. If I lead the allied forces over there, they would stay with so many people. As a result, they would be safe. However, if I prepare to act alone, they would leave right away."

"Peter, what's your plan?" seeing Zhang Tie being not angry, Sam asked.

Zhang Tie touched his chin as O'Laura's and Sabrina's faces flashed across his mind, "I want to take a look over there first, if there's indeed a super relics over there, I will consider the next plan!"

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't feel that he had the obligation to the entire allied forces. Even if there was truly a super relics, Zhang Tie only intended to benefit O'Laura who always wanted to take over the Grey Eagle Tribe and Sabrina who always wanted to

dominate her fate. He didn't think that he had to benefit others. Additionally, Zhang Tie was very anxious to enter Castle of Black Iron at this moment. What Heller told him three days ago had almost driven him crazy. If not check inside, he could not even sleep well.

After exchanging glances with each other, Sam and Gerri nodded.

"Let's go back to the camp then!"

...

When Zhang Tie, Sam and Gerri returned to the camp, they saw that most people were already back.

The camp had been enlarged after three days. Almost all the vanguards of the allied forces were gathering inside.

The moment Zhang Tie returned to the camp, he found something abnormal as a great number of people were gathering in a narrow area. It seemed that they were looking at something.

Those people were standing at the roadside; therefore, Zhang Tie took a look over there by the way.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking over there, many people gave a way to him.

It was 20 corpses in the middle of the onlookers. They were laid in a row tidily. Under the green lamp light, those pale faces looked more gloomy.

These days, after sensing the hidden force in the relics, the camp had already delivered an order—all those who went for exploring the relics had to set off in terms of teams. A team was composed of 20 people. Therefore, the corpses lying on the ground implied that nobody of this team survived.

Those onlookers looked extremely furious.

"It must be the pioneers!"

"Summon our men, we will kill all the disgusting mice!"

"Yes, revenge, we want a revenge..."

Although some started to roar but some special figures among the vanguards were not idiots.

"Shut up!" hearing a roar from a head of the wild bear tribe, all the onlookers became silent as they fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie.

"This is really an unfair world. How could someone go out and bring back a huge amount of wealth while someone else lost their lives?" At this moment, the same thought flashed across many people's minds.

With a solemn look, Zhang Tie checked those corpses one after another carefully. Sometimes he squatted as his look grew gloomier.

All the wounds were on their necks. They were as tidy and smooth as red lines drawn by a red pen. The weapon might be a very sharp and fast sword.

"Where did you find these corpses?"

"In a mountain cave in the east of the relics. This team was dispatched over there to check the terrain. However, they didn't come back in time. Therefore we sent men to look for them but found their corpses in the cave!" A familiar head answered.

"You can contact with your higher authority with your remote sensing crystal, right?"

After being silent for a while, that person nodded.

"You can not manage this thing. If you want to revenge, you'd better contact with your higher authority. They will assign powerhouses down here!" Zhang Tie said in a low voice.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the onlookers slightly changed their looks, "Mr. Peter, do...do you also think so?"

"The killer is a sword master. He killed them all with only one movement. Look, they've not even drawn their weapons out of

their sabers even by one inch until death. You can not manage such a powerful enemy!" Zhang Tie waved his head.

"Even you..."

Zhang Tie glanced at him who swallowed his words back at once...

If the team of 20 people walked in a pitch-dark mountain cave, the length of the team would surpass 10 m. Zhang Tie knew that he could not manage so many people in such a short period.

Not knowing why, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled Sabrina.

"Did Sabrina come back?"

"No, we've dispatched people to find her!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie instantly changed his look as a bad premonition flashed across his mind.

Chapter 465: A Business

Zhang Tie had searched for Sabrina's cavalry for several hours; yet, he didn't find them. However, as Zhang Tie didn't see any miserable scene which he concerned most, he gradually recovered his composure.

As the old Chinese saying went, "the more concerned you were, the more chaotic it would be." After calming down, Zhang Tie returned to his camp.

There was still a repressive atmosphere in the camp. By then, almost everybody else had returned. They all knew what happened. Nobody had imagined that a vanguard of 20 people could be killed in this way. Therefore, many people felt uncomfortable while roars could be heard everywhere in the camp.

Zhang Tie didn't think that he should shoulder any responsibility towards the allied forces. Therefore, he was not infuriated and much painful for what happened today. In Zhang Tie's eyes, the downfallen vanguard was nothing different than those dead pioneers. All this just reminded him of the hidden force in the underground world.

"Did Sabrina's cavalry come back yet?" Zhang Tie asked a person.

"Yes, they did!"

The moment he heard this news, Zhang Tie instantly paced up towards the tents area of Sabrina and her female cavalries.

At the sight of Sabrina in her purple leather armor, Zhang Tie finally took a sigh of relief. Although Sabrina was fine, over 10 cavalries were injured. Thankfully, they were not heavily injured. Sabrina was binding up wounds for her cavalries.

"What's up?"

"We met some barbarous pioneers. They bullied us. Therefore, we fought them!" Sabrina stood up and walked towards Zhang Tie.

"What about those pioneers?"

"We killed them!" gazing at Zhang Tie's face, Sabrina suddenly burst out laughing and became very enchanting. She moved closer and drew circles on Zhang Tie's chest slightly, "I was told that you hurriedly went to search for me after you saw the dead vanguards."

Sabrina was wearing a verdant bracelet made of immortal stone, which was gifted by Zhang Tie.

When Zhang Tie found her just now, he didn't felt anything special; however, after being mentioned by Sabrina, facing her smile, Zhang Tie felt slightly embarrassed at once like being caught by the teacher when he was dating a girl in the campus, "Erm...I was indeed a bit worried about you. Thank god, you're safe!"

"You're not entirely shameless!" Sabrina was very satisfied with Zhang Tie's answer as she glanced at Zhang Tie with an enchanting look.

Zhang Tie knew that no matter how the love affairs between him and this woman started or how many jokes and flirtation were aroused, even taking advantage of each other, he truly started to fall in love with this "lousy girl". At least, he indeed could not treat her as same as the other members of the allied forces when he knew that she might be in danger. He could not just wait there for the possible worse news with a calm mentality.

By then, the two people who were the most intimate to Zhang Tie in Ice and Snow Wilderness were two women. Realizing this, Zhang Tie asked himself inside, "Am I really that lascivious?"

"Young lady, our vulnerary is not enough. Can we borrow some from the camp of the wild bear tribe?" Zora, one of Sabrina's trusted subordinate walked towards her in a low voice.

As the head of the female cavalries, Sabrina who always showed herself as a dissolute image in front of others, had not imagined that they could encounter such a great danger, either. Therefore, it

was possible that they would lack vulnerary. Before coming down, few people of the allied forces could predict that an entire vanguard of the allied forces would be killed. Because women were always scrupulous, Sabrina and her cavalries took some vulnerary and bandages; however, Zhang Tie knew that some female teams took nothing else except for some dried rations and necessary weapons.

"How much do we need?"

"Not too much! About two persons' demand!"

"No need, try this!" after saying this, Zhang Tie took out two vials of all-purpose medicament from his medicament container and gave it to Zora.

The moment he took them out, the green and golden solution and the brilliant individual symbol of manjusaka on the vials instantly attracted the attention of all the female cavalries.

In Ice and Snow Wilderness, variety of medicament were the rarest. As a barren land, Ice and Snow Wilderness lagged behind in all aspects. Its information and traffic were relatively isolated. Few pharmacists would like to develop here. The pharmacists of various tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness were remarkably dwarfed by those in continents from both population and ability. As a result, even the most common medicament could only be used by the high-ranking government officials of each tribe. As for most commoners and average warriors, they might not be able to use medicament even once in their whole lives. Therefore, at the sight of the two vials of medicament, all the female cavalries looked amazed.

But Sabrina was the most amazed one.

"All-purpose medicament?" Sabrina recognized it right away at the sight of the unique symbol on the vials.

Zhang Tie glanced at her with an amazing look, "You know that?"

"Manager Xu Tao of Golden Roc Bank officially introduced such medicament to us several days ago. You were also there that day. But you left ahead of us. Therefore, you didn't attend the promotion after..." Sabrina explained as she also took out an all-purpose medicament from his medicament container. After putting it together with Zhang Tie's two vials of medicament, she found they were completely the same, "Manager Xu Tao said this medicament was very popular in the outside. The price of each vial was around 30 gold coins. Compared to other kinds of medicament, although it was not very expensive, it could not be bought in the market at all. Even Golden Roc Bank could only obtain a small batch of such kind of medicament. They gifted me one. But how do you have them too?"

Staring at Sabrina's gleaming eyes, Zhang Tie remembered that he truly heard manager Xu Tao boosting some "marvelous medicament" when he left the fury wind-level airship of Golden Roc Bank. However, as he wanted to see O'Laura at that moment, he just left first. He had not imagined that Golden Roc Bank was boosting his all-purpose medicament.

Of course, Zhang Tie could not tell her that he was the producer of all-purpose medicament as it was nothing different than finding himself troubles. After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie had got the answer. Even Zhang Tie didn't feel like lying to her but he had to be a bit flexible at this moment.

"Do you know Armes, the mercenary empire? I have some influential friends in the Thor Mercenary Regiment. They got a batch of all-purpose medicament when they went to Jinyun City a few days ago. I got some from them!"

"Wuh!" Sabrina didn't doubt Zhang Tie.

Hearing the medicament being so precious, even Sabrina only had one, Zora instantly hesitated as she looked at the two vials of medicament in her hand.

"Young lady, this..."

"It's fine. Take them along with mine. I owe him. I was told that by using this kind of medicament, one would not have scars!" Sabrina generously gave her all-purpose medicament to Zora too.

All the female cavalries were watching Zhang Tie and Sabrina with grateful looks. Through this thing, Zhang Tie felt the intelligence of Sabrina. Although two vials of all-purpose medicament were nothing to Zhang Tie, hearing Sabrina's words, the female cavalries became more grateful and loyal to Sabrina.

"You don't mind it?" Sabrina whispered.

Zhang Tie smiled as he patted Sabrina's butts, "It's a bit chaotic in the underground recently. Many people and other forces were involved. They might not care about your status in the wild bear tribe. Therefore, you'd better not run around. If you're free, go back to the ground. It would be safer over there!"

"Not everybody could discover a pile of immortal stones for free like you. Even if you were wanted, you could still be bailed out by Bluesea Castle Business Group. Who else could be as lucky as you? Even I have to observe others' eyes before making any decision in the wild bear tribe. All the expenditure of my female cavalries was earned by myself. If not the belongings left by my mom, I could never be so free!"

"Actually, it is very easy to make money. You don't have to risk your life here!" Zhang Tie told her.

"What's your plan?"

"Your words reminded me just now. If the all-purpose medicament is so precious in Ice and Snow Wilderness, you can sell all-purpose medicament here!" Zhang Tie straighten out his mind, "I have some relationship with my friends in Thor Mercenary Regiment. I can help you inquire about it. If only I can bring you a batch of all-purpose medicament each year!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Sabrina's eyes brightened up immediately, "Are you sure?"

"Of course!"

"But I was told that it was hard to get all-purpose medicament. I'm afraid that even Thor Mercenary Regiment could not get too many of them!"

"If Thor Mercenary Regiment could get them, it means that the channel of distribution is not completely closed. As long as we can find the sellers and the manufacturers, we will get the all-purpose medicament!"

"Where's O'Laura? You petite lover seems to be needing money very much!" Sabrina rolled her beautiful eyes before asking him.

"How large do you think the market of all-purpose medicament in Ice and Snow Wilderness is?"

"If all-purpose medicament is really as good as described by manager Xu Tao, its demand will exceed with its supply for sure. No matter how many there are, as long as its price is not too high, they will be bought away!" Sabrina replied after considering it for a short while.

"That's it. If so, you and O'Laura will be responsible for this business. I'm sure each one of you can earn 100,000 to 200,000 gold coins a year!" Zhang Tie said confidently.

"If I can make 30,000 to 50,000 gold coins, I would have been satisfied, not to mention 100,000 to 200,000 gold coins. But I'm afraid that your petite lover won't agree!" Sabrina smiled.

"Don't worry about that. I will persuade her! If you've made the decision, you'd better go back in a couple of days!"

"What about you?"

"I might stay for a few more days here!"

"Well, after today's event, my cavalries and I indeed need to take

a rest for a couple of days here!"

...

Zhang Tie then left Sabrina and walked towards the tents area of the grey eagle tribe. On the way, he felt that his opinion was very marvelous. Sabrina was tricky but was good at making friends while O'Laura was powerful and ambitious. They complemented with each other on personalities and abilities. It was pretty suitable for them to work together as the agent of all-purpose medicament in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

As O'Laura had a strong self-respect and decisiveness, if he directly gave her gold coins, she might not accept it; however, if he introduced her with a business, Zhang Tie believed that she probably would not refuse it.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, being different than Sabrina's enthusiasm, O'Laura only gave him a cold harrumph before turning around and leaving.

Seeing O'Laura walking towards outside, Zhang Tie hurriedly caught up with her. When they came to a quiet corner outside the camp, Zhang Tie directly grabbed O'Laura's hand.

O'Laura forcefully shook her hand; yet she failed to shake off Zhang Tie's hand; plus Zhang Tie's grinning look, O'Laura could not lose her temper anymore.

"Let go off my hand, you rascal..."

"Are you angry? Tell me who stirred up with you. I will give him a lesson for you!" Zhang Tie pretended to be furious as he rolled up his sleeves.

"Don't pretend anymore. Didn't you head for that bitch just now? Why did you come for me?"

Zhang Tie became stunned for a short while. He had not imagined that O'Laura was jealous about Sabrina. Revealing a smile, Zhang Tie tightly hugged O'Laura. As they had touched each

other very closely, O'Laura was not that counteractive to Zhang Tie; instead, she just pushed him twice symbolically.

Zhang Tie then stretched out his hand to pick off O'Laura's mask. O'Laura just resisted him by inclining her head slightly. Zhang Tie finally picked off her mask.

That was a perfect and icy face. Each time Zhang Tie saw her face, he would appreciate it for quite a while. The tender skin, the rising nose, the watery pupils and the stubborn mouth were all like delicate artworks.

Under the shining eyes of Zhang Tie, plus Zhang Tie's weird hands which gradually slid onto her butts, O'Laura's face slightly blushed. She looked pretty like a petite girl, which made Zhang Tie feel dizzy.

No matter how great was O'Laura's fighting strength was, at least, Zhang Tie knew that she was nothing different than those petite girls who fell in love with someone for the first time. Each girl of Rose Association might know men much better than her.

In the past two decades, O'Laura actually locked her in a narrow circle. She didn't have any chance to move freely. Being different from Sabrina, who always wanted to escape from the iron cage of the wild bear tribe, O'Laura always wanted to drill into the iron cage of the grey bear tribe.

Seeing O'Laura's slightly shy look, Zhang Tie started to sympathize her. As his heart changed, his aggressive, shining eyes also turned mild. Under Zhang Tie's warm gazes, O'Laura's stiff body softened at once.

"Are you jealous?"

O'Laura tilted her head, ignoring him.

Zhang Tie smiled, "Have you seen the wounds of the 20 people?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's question, O'Laura turned around, "Yes, it's a powerhouse, a sword powerhouse. At least a 5-star strong fighter

or a fighting master above 1 star!"

"Do you have a chance to beat him?"

"No chance. But I can barely escape!" O'Laura put it straightforward, "What about you?"

"No chance in close fight. But I might beat him with javelin; otherwise, I can escape!"

O'Laura thought for a short while before looking at Zhang Tie, "You'd better go back, this is not the right place for you to stay!"

Zhang Tie thought for a second before hugging O'Laura tightly, "This is what I want to tell you!"

"This is a chance!" O'Laura waved her head stubbornly.

"Do you mean the super relics?"

O'Laura was shocked, "You know that?"

"Yes, I know. Those dead vanguards might be dispatched to search for the super relics by the allied forces. I'd be really stupid if I didn't know about the plan of the allied forces until now!" Zhang Tie smiled.

"That's why I have to seize the chance!" O'Laura glanced at Zhang Tie, "I know what you want to say. But, I would not take your money!"

Hearing O'Laura's words, Zhang Tie were forced to swallow his words back. He could only change his expression, "There are many ways to make money. I know you need money very much at the present. But you can make money faster by doing business than seeking for chance here!"

"Business, what business?" hearing that Zhang Tie was going to introduce a business to her, O'Laura became interested in it at once.

"A business of the all-purpose medicament!"

Zhang Tie repeated what he had told Sabrina to O'Laura.

"You want me to go back now?" knowing Zhang Tie's intention, O'Laura's voice also became tender.

"Yes, the faster, the better!"

"What about you?"

"I want to stay here for a few more days. But it won't take me too long!"

"What about that slut? Have you made the same promise to her?" O'Laura gazed at Zhang Tie without a wink.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that O'Laura could respond so fast.

"Yes, I made the same promise to her!" Zhang Tie answered after thinking for a short while. As this thing could never be buried, he put it straightforward, "Actually, she's not like how you imagine!"

O'Laura became silent. This made Zhang Tie worry about that she was going to lose her temper once again by refusing his good willingness.

After a few seconds, O'Laura finally let out a long sigh, "Fine, I agree!"

Hearing her reply, Zhang Tie was even happier than finding a pile of emeralds, "Do you agree?"

"Of course. Why would I give my share to that slut? Humph...humph...that woman cannot wait for me to disagree. I will not satisfy her! If she can do that, I can do it too." O'Laura looked like a disobedient kid at this moment.

With a smile, Zhang Tie found O'Laura's angry look was especially charming; therefore, soon after O'Laura finished her words had Zhang Tie kissed her lips...

After ten minutes, Zhang Tie almost exploded as his face blushed like pomegranate. Panting heavily, O'Laura instantly pushed Zhang Tie away while forcing apart Zhang Tie's weird hands from

her plumpy breasts.

"Which one do you prefer, me or that slut?"

At the critical moment, Zhang Tie became puzzled once again. After struggling for two seconds, Zhang Tie spoke frankly.

"I like both!"

Hearing this answer, O'Laura pushed Zhang Tie away once again. After putting on her mask, she directly walked towards the camp..

Seeing O'Laura's back and remembering the ecstasy, Zhang Tie lowered his head with a bitter smile. After that, he put his right hand into the trousers pocket and returned to the camp too.

...

The atmosphere in the camp was very weird today. Nobody was interested in why O'Laura and Zhang Tie came back to the camp one after another.

The moment O'Laura came back to the camp, she had been noticed to attend a meeting. As Zhang Tie was an outsider, he was certainly not qualified to attend the official meetings in the allied forces. He didn't care about that either. Therefore, he just drilled into his own tent and started to cultivate quietly.

No matter what, as long as O'Laura and Sabrina returned to the ground, he would not worry about what could happen in the underground.

Now that it was not as relaxed as journey and was full of unpredictable dangers in the underground, it'd better be managed by men.

Whereas, Zhang Tie didn't know that many things were out of his control!

Chapter 466: An Unexpected Thing

Only after one night, when Zhang Tie woke up early the next morning and walked out of his tent, he was amazed with what he saw.

Standing beside his tent, Zhang Tie looked at the distance. Under his dark vision, he immediately found too many people on the relics over there. After shifting his dark vision into normal vision, Zhang Tie found that those fluorite lamps over the waists of those pioneers were like flooding fireflies in the summer wild.

After been here for a few days, Zhang Tie had an estimation about the overall population of the pioneers and the other people in the relics. There were about 10,000 people in total in this area, over 3000 of which were vanguards dispatched by the allied forces. However, there were over 20,000 densely moving light spots in front of him.

"How come all of a sudden there are so many people?" a question flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

However, Zhang Tie's mentality could never be matched by those common youths anymore. Although he felt strange but after glancing at those light spots in the distance, Zhang Tie slightly sighed and left the camp. He started to cleanse up himself at a water source being not far from the camp.

In the underground, of course, water became especially important. Although one could take a month's dried rations down here but one could hardly bring a month's water down here.

The water was dropping from the top of a relics rock cave which was hundreds of meters in height like it was raining. They finally formed a small pond on the ground which covered about 3-5 square meters.

After checking the water quality of this pond and found it was

nontoxic, the vanguards of the allied forces occupied this water source first, which could barely afford the daily use of about 3000 people of the vanguards of the allied forces.

When cleansing himself, Zhang Tie suddenly came up with a problem, "If so many people suddenly appear in this relics area, water shortage would be a big problem. Although there are some other similar water sources in the surroundings, they are remarkably not sufficient for so many people. The rest people could only seek for other water sources in farther places..."

Zhang Tie remembered that there was a subterranean stream with abundant water on the way here. However, it was over 40 km away. "It seems that many people need to go to the distance to drink water."

After considering it for a second, Zhang Tie realized that it was not a problem. For these pioneers who dreamed for wealth, it was just a 4-5 hour travel. If not want to die out of thirst, they could spend a couple of days in seeking for the water.

After cleansing up himself, Zhang Tie returned to the camp and found Sam and Gerri were very flurried.

"What's up?"

"A great number of pioneers arrived here last night!" Sam said.

"I know, I've seen them this morning!"

"Do you know why they are here?"

"Why?"

"Gerri and I have inquired about it just now. They are all here for GSC!" Gerri said with an unimaginable look.

"Super relics?" Zhang Tie was stunned. "Shouldn't it only be known to a few people? How come it suddenly became such a popular information? Even common pioneers have known about it. Additionally, so many people swarmed in over night."

"How did they know that?"

"It's said that a team of pioneers carried a great amount of jewelries and valuables out of the entrance on the 3rd day since we came down here, which aroused a huge shock instantly. They declared that they had discovered the GSC in the underground. Hearing that, all the pioneers boiled up and swarmed in. It was said that some teams of pioneers even obtained the accurate map of the super relics from here."

"Just because of this?"

"Sure. At the sight of those wholly new jewelries, many people's eyes turned red. Because only the GSC being covered with the energy of the fragments of the star of god could prevent all the lifeless substances from being deteriorated. Except for this reason, any objects being excavated from this relics would not remain unchanged after 800-900 years!" Gerri confirmed.

Zhang Tie's heart raced as he didn't know what to say. Although one person could maintain his sense but over 10,000 people could barely be sensible at the same time. For those pioneers, as long as they saw someone taking jewelries out of the underground super relics, they would be driven mad for sure. As long as one of them couldn't stand to come down, all the others would followed in at once. This was determined by the feature of this group of people.

Even those pioneers couldn't stand to pour in, wouldn't the greater part of the allied forces above the ground know about the reason? As the allied forces could at least obtain half of the jewelries from the pioneers, they would know it for sure.

Not knowing why, the moment he thought about how they poured in the underground for the super relics, Zhang Tie felt bored.

Gerri and Sam became both disappointed and excited. They were disappointed because their secret about super relics was exposed to the public. They were excited because they would feel much safer

if they could follow so many pioneers over there.

Zhang Tie didn't discourage them; instead, after talking with them for a short while, he left.

Zhang Tie wanted to inquire O'Laura about the situation of the allied forces first. Unexpectedly, O'Laura had already left with her female cavalries and Nurdo in the early morning. Therefore, Zhang Tie went for Sabrina.

Only after one night, Sabrina's injured female guardians had been much better. At the sight of Zhang Tie, Sabrina and her female guardians became much more enthusiastic than before.

"It's good to see you. I was going to find you!" Sabrina revealed a smile before Zhang Tie opened his mouth, "I've never imagined that the all-purpose medicament was so effective. Only after one night, Zora's subordinates had almost been cured, leaving no scars at all!"

After witnessing the unusual effect of all-purpose medicament, Sabrina became more excited about the suggestion that Zhang Tie posed yesterday. However, she was not going to talk about that with Zhang Tie right now.

"I'm told that Gangula, my younger brother is going to be here..."

"GSC!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

"You also know that?" Sabrina became a bit surprised.

"I learned about it just now. I came to you here for this thing!" Zhang Tie said solemnly, "I want you leave out of here as soon as possible!"

"Why?"

"I don't know why. But I feel very bad about this thing. I will leave out of here as soon as possible. If you want to leave, I can escort you away!"

For Zhang Tie, the value of super relics would decline along with

its widening exposure. No matter what were inside the super relics, if over ten thousands of people poured in at the same time, even if there were 10,000 tons of golds in the super relics, each one could share at most 1 ton, which was equal to 40,000 gold coins.

This emergency completely disrupted Zhang Tie's plan. As the value of the super relics declined, Zhang Tie became increasingly more uncomfortable. Therefore, Zhang Tie decided to let Sabrina go back first so as to get rid of this swirl.

Sabrina's smile disappeared as she stared at Zhang Tie seriously. As a smart woman, she understood about Zhang Tie's meaning.

"You mean there might be a problem with this super relics?"

"There's no evidence about the existence of that super relics until now!" Zhang Tie lowered his voice as he stared at Sabrina with his gleaming eyes. It was already very strange for so many people to know about this piece of news since the first batch of vanguards of the allied forces came down!"

"However, it's said that they have obtained a great batch of wholly new jewelries from the underground. Where else could they obtain so many new objects besides the super relics?"

"What if those wholly new jewelries were brought down silently by someone else?" Zhang Tie asked when he recalled the "evidence" of the ham package which was presented to him by Gerri and Sam silently. He was just shocked at that moment but he had not thought more about it. Now, Zhang Tie realized that someone might set a trap over here by fabricating an "evidence". As super relics was not a new term, as long as they were able to carry some objects or fragments of the former super relics over there, nobody could identify them.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Sabrina finally changed his face, "You mean it's a plot?"

"I don't know. I only feel that this thing has been out of my

expectation and has become valueless!"

"Gangula is coming. I will tell him about this and ask him to take care of himself. Then, we will leave tomorrow, how about that?"

"Fine!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"Do you know that you're fascinating now?" Sabrina said with a tender voice.

"Fascinating?" Zhang Tie scratched his head.

"Yes, a real man, a real leader, who doesn't follow the mass at the critical moment and has his own decision. Such a man is very fascinating!"

Zhang Tie blushed.

...

Only after a day, the atmosphere across the camp had been utterly different than that of yesterday. Even many soldiers in the camp had already known the "existence" of the super relics. Additionally, the arrival of the greater part of the allied forces increased the morale of many soldiers in the camp.

To revenge for the loss of that vanguard or to make a fortune in the super relics, each of the two motives could make most of the commoners spirited and hopeful towards future.

According to those exaggerating words, that super relics became an open treasury to the public. In the treasury, all the valuable objects were displayed in the stores on both sides of the streets, where everyone could make a fortune.

Based on such an exaggerating description, that super relics became as charming as a naked beauty who was lying on bed and waiting for a lot of men to sleep with her.

Only after walking around the camp had Zhang Tie gotten some versions of maps from those pioneers.

Compared to others' ecstasy, Zhang Tie grew gloomier. For some

reason, watching at the constant light spots at the entrance of the relics in the distance, Zhang Tie only thought about those mice being induced into the cage by the aroma of cheese and flesh.

The only thing that made Zhang Tie comfortable today was that nobody followed him up.

After having no achievements for consecutive three days, Zhang Tie's halos had gradually faded away. Additionally, the news of the existence of the super relics was exposed. Therefore, all the guys who dreamed to make a fortune behind him finally lost their interests.

Even though his status as a wanted circular had been revoked before he entered this relics, Zhang Tie felt free just now.

After circling around the camp, Zhang Tie was sure that nobody was following him. Therefore, he ran away in the distance...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie had been over 40 km away from the camp and arrived in a wild underground cave at the border of the relics. Zhang Tie put down the cover of his fluorite lamp to die out the lamp. He then made some twists and finally arrived at a secret place. After taking a deep breath, he entered the Castle of Black Iron.

"Welcome back, Castle Lord..."

Heller's familiar voice sounded once again. Having not heard his voice for so long time, Zhang Tie felt warm at once.

After staying too long in the underground. When he entered Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes. After being adapted to the brightness in Castle of Black Iron for a few seconds, he nodded towards Heller before striding towards the small tree...

Chapter 467: Fruits

Since meeting O'Laura, Zhang Tie had not entered Castle of Black Iron for over 20 days. The moment he entered, Zhang Tie caught sight of the fruits over the small tree. Immediately, Zhang Tie felt happy inside.

Three iron-body fruits.

Nine huge wolf seven-strength fruits

Four leakless fruits, three of which had been ripe.

Zhang Tie knew that his real fighting strength would increase sharply for sure after eating the 16 fruits. Gazing at those fruits, Zhang Tie started to drool.

Besides, there were a lot of trouble-reappearance fruits over the small tree, most of which were obtained by hunting huge wolves and some other living beings. After eating these trouble-reappearance fruits, Zhang Tie could have more trouble-reappearance situations and living beings to choose, which indicated a higher soft power.

Beside the altar under the small tree, Heller watched Zhang Tie circling around the small tree with pounding heart.

"Fruit of Redemption——appreciation from sandscale fish" was still hanging over there. As the redemptive effect of a single living being could be accumulated, which, after reaching a certain degree, would show up. Zhang Tie checked it and found that his cold-resistance and water flow-sensitiveness could be further increased by 107% with this redemption fruit. After eating it, undoubtedly, Zhang Tie's ability and response in water could increase remarkably.

There was indeed a new fruit.

The new fruit was familiar. It reminded Zhang Tie of the redemption fruit——appreciation from earthworms. But this fruit

looked like two earthworms twisted with each other. It was like a golden fried dough twist.

With his eyes on it, Zhang Tie stretched out his hand and touched it.

Fruit of advancement——medium recovery body! As it's not ripe yet. You can not eat it.

——The energy of this fruit comes from the appreciation of the released earthworms. It's the extension of the fruit of redemption.

——In the early stage of its growth, this fruit could bring a good luck to Castle Lord. ([grey](#))

——You have to release 160000000 earthworms so as to update your preliminary recovery body to medium recovery body.

——The progress of the medium recovery body is :2158069/160000000.

This instantly reminded Zhang Tie of Hanna. He knew that Hanna's family had started to fulfill their promise by setting free earthworms in the nearby villages. There was a time when Zhang Tie thought that Hanna's family had already forgotten about this or didn't care about this thing at all. It was really out of his imagination that they still remembered it. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt pretty good.

Although it required them to set free 160 million earthworms so as to update preliminary recovery body to medium recovery body but Hanna's family had only released over 2 million earthworms by now, which was still far away from the ultimate target. However, Zhang Tie had been very satisfied with this. As it was a long-term plan, as long as Hanna's family stuck to that appointment, they would make the fruit ripe sooner or later.

What made Zhang Tie truly amazed was that this fruit could bring him good luck in the early stage of its growth. It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that even his luck could be

improved by this fruit.

The color of that line of words turned grey, which indicated that it had already passed its early stage of growth.

After realizing that the pile of immortal stones that he excavated several days ago might be influenced by this fruit, Zhang Tie's face turned strange.

"Is...this real, Heller?"

Seeing Heller standing aside, Zhang Tie didn't even know how to ask.

"It's real. One of the side effects of this fruit in its early stage of growth is to bring good luck to you. Actually, this is a benefit from releasing living beings!"

"By setting free living beings I can be lucky?" Zhang Tie goggled.

"Castle Lord, you should know that in the far ancient times, setting free living beings was actually the full contents and core of the secret knowledge cultivation of some powerful and mysterious sects. Its function even became deified in some people's eyes!"

Zhang Tie was shocked by Heller's words, "It's treated as the full contents and core of the secret knowledge cultivation of the entire sect. That's too powerful!"

"You mean even commoners could become lucky by setting free a lot of animals?"

"Of course!"

"Why?"

"Because all the animals have their spirits. Materially, the energy of appreciation formed by setting free animals is a powerful bliss, which could increase the frequency and energy level of one's soul and awareness and cause resonance and attraction between human and beautiful things. Benefited by this, you could make many correct and positive decisions. Actually, this had been clarified in

the mysterious and profound eastern Chinese cultures, such as the old Chinese saying, "Luck brings wisdom!"

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie found that it was real. When he excavated the small building, he became pretty clear-minded. Even in the urban ruins, he could faintly identify that the location of the short building was the "waistband fengshui". Being driven by this whim, he attempted and truly made a fortune.

After the secret was exposed, Zhang Tie deepened his understanding about the effect of setting free animals. Zhang Tie asked Heller another question, "Whether would I become lucky for a period after the appearance of each new fruit of advancement?"

"Yes. Your good luck would have different duration due to the different levels and functions of fruits of advancement. This fruit of advancement brought you about 17 days of good luck. You would have 25 days of good luck when the fruit of advancement could finally help you advance to senior recovery body from medium recovery body. As to other fruits of advancement, you would have different duration of good luck, which ranged from 3-5 days to even a month!" Heller stared at Zhang Tie with a solemn look, "As long as Castle Lord sticks to set free an increasing number of animals, I believe that Castle Lord would be in such a special situation for a few days in each year."

Touching his nose, Zhang Tie felt a bit strange. "Women would be in that unrivaled situation for a few days in each month. Will I enter such a special situation for a few days in each year? Damn it! That's weird!"

Zhang Tie then watched the small tree swaying its body, causing rustles. Meanwhile, he rubbed his hands in an excited way. The problem facing him was so many fruits to eat.

It would take him at least 1 week to completely digest the nine huge wolf seven-strength fruits. However, given the situation here, he did not have enough time to eat up all the fruits. He had to

leave out of here together with O'Laura and Sabrina as soon as possible. If he stayed here for a longer time, it would be more troublesome.

Therefore, Zhang Tie fixed his eyes on the three ripe leakless fruits. After thinking for a short while, he picked off one of them. After that, he sat under the small tree with crossed legs and put that leakless fruit in his mouth.

Having not eaten leakless fruit for a long time, the moment he broke it, the familiar sweet taste instantly slid into his esophagus. The effect of leakless fruit spread in Zhang Tie's chest at once...

After several hours, the 18th surging point on Zhang Tie's spine turned deep blue.

Zhang Tie stood up and moved his limbs for a while. He then picked off another leakless fruit.

...

The fire dragon formed by the energy of leakless fruit boomed the purple surging point into pieces. After numerous purple light spots disappeared, a bright sparkle gradually appeared in the darkness and finally became a raging flame...

After lighting the 18th surging point, Zhang Tie felt relaxed all over while some burdens were relieved. At the same time, the energy in his muscles and bones, Qi and blood also increased. His fighting strength grew higher like the mercury being heated in thermometer.

This feeling was very great.

The remained energy of the 2nd leakless fruit charged towards the 19th surging point on Zhang Tie's spine. Before the exhaustion of this energy, the 19th surging point on Zhang Tie's spine had already turned orange.

Zhang Tie then picked himself up and moved his limbs once again. Meanwhile, he revealed a big smile. After that, he picked off

the 3rd leakless fruit...

After eating the 3rd leakless fruit, the 19th surging point on his spine finally became blue.

Closely after the three leakless fruits, Zhang Tie ate a fruit of redemption which could improve his cold-resistance and water flow-sensitiveness. After the fruit of redemption, Zhang Tie ate an iron-body fruit.

Now, it took Zhang Tie more efforts to obtain a new iron-body fruit. It was a surprise for him to gain three iron-body fruits because of the bone-exploding needles.

After eating the latest iron-body fruit, Zhang Tie seemingly heard the sound of crashing metals and stones from his bones all over.

After eating five fruits, Zhang Tie's fighting strength increased sharply. He then exited Castle of Black Iron at once.

When Zhang Tie reappeared in the remote place of that dark cave, only after walking a few steps, he felt that the ground was shaking sharply while a boom drifted from the underground world...

The color grey meant that it was not in the early stage of its growth anymore.

Chapter 468: The Cage Was Closed

Along with the earthquake, dust and stones started to fall down from the top of the gloomy cave. Zhang Tie instantly turned to the fluorite lamp by opening its shade and ran out of the cave.

It was a huge underground space outside the cave which included the entire relics. The earthquake waves also reached outside there, making many people flurried.

"Is that an earthquake?" Zhang Tie became confused. Meanwhile, he had a bad premonition about the earthquake and the boom.

Zhang Tie immediately ran towards the camp of the allied forces.

Only after running for less than 20 km, another earthquake and boom happened. This time, Zhang Tie was sure that it was not a real earthquake, because its direction was different from the former one. The former one seemingly came from the underground; whereas, this time, it was definitely closer. It seemed to be coming from a place in the underground tunnel leading to the relics.

This was a faintly familiar sound to Zhang Tie.

After reflection in the relatively closed underground space, the boom could be heard across the entire relics.

When the 2nd boom arrived, Zhang Tie's face changed as he slightly changed his running direction. He didn't run towards the camp anymore; instead, he rushed towards the tunnel where it originated.

"Ah, what's up?"

"I heard two booms!"

"One was over there!"

On the way, Zhang Tie encountered some pioneers who were flurried and vacant. Some smart guys also ran towards the origin

of the second boom.

At this moment, without using his rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie's running speed had surpassed 80 km/h, which was much faster than that of a wild wolf. As a result, the fluorite lamp over his waist became a flying green ray in the darkness.

With a wind, those pioneers had seen Zhang Tie rushing ahead of them, leaving behind a gradually disappearing green light ray.

At such a speed, Zhang Tie soon rushed out of the relics and entered an underground tunnel.

After entering the tunnel for a few kilometers, Zhang Tie caught sight of the pile of scattered stones and conical stalactites which fell down from the top of the tunnel. After going deeper for a few more kilometers, Zhang Tie saw injured people in the tunnel.

A poor pioneer's leg was pressed by a huge stone. Lying on the roadside, he was wailing. Zhang Tie stopped and forcefully pushed the 1-ton stone aside.

The poor pioneer was at his 30s or 40s. His injured leg had been badly mutilated, which might have been crippled. When the huge stone was pushed away, he screeched loudly once again.

"What happened..." Zhang Tie put a hand on his shoulder and asked him loudly.

"Thanks...I don't know what happened. After...after a loud sound, I panicked. Then, the stone rolled down here and hit me..."

Only after saying only few words, the pioneer felt exhausted. Having not figured out the reason, Zhang Tie further rushed ahead.

The deeper he entered, the more scattered stones and wounded people Zhang Tie saw. At least dozens of people were killed by those huge stones.

Zhang Tie stopped at a place which was only dozens of meters in

width. According to his memory, this place was like the waist of a gourd.

The tunnel ahead disappeared, precisely, completely collapsed. What was in front of Zhang Tie was a 50-60 m high slope which was composed of huge stones, which were as large as house or millstone.

Zhang Tie felt icy in heart.

In a split second, Zhang Tie figured out what happened and why he felt the second boom was familiar, "the tunnel accessing to the relics has been destroyed by bomb."

"It's an alchemist's bomb, a powerful alchemist's bomb!"

After the mice entered the cage, someone closed the cage using an alchemist's bomb.

"But what about the first louder sound from a farther distance?"

Gazing at the collapsed underground tunnel, something chaotic flashed across his mind.

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard a sound from behind. He turned around and saw Roslav and Waajid rushing towards him at a speed which was faster than that of his.

At the sight of the scene in front of them, Roslav and Waajid changed their faces completely while standing on Zhang Tie's side.

"What's up?" Roslav, who was as strong as a huge bear opened his mouth first.

Although he didn't say Zhang Tie, remarkably, he was asking Zhang Tie who was the only one standing here.

"I don't know. I came here soon after the boom. It seems that it was destroyed by a powerful alchemist's bomb!"

Roslav and Waajid exchanged glances with each other with great amazement. Although they came from the most powerful tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness, they had not seen an alchemist's bomb.

They heard about it before; however, they had never imagined that they could encounter one. An alchemist's bomb was rarely seen in other places, not to mention in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

"Peter, how do you know it's caused by an alchemist's bomb?" Waajid, who was slightly well-balanced in figure, asked.

"Because I've seen the power of an alchemist's bomb before. Given that boom and its destructive power, I really cannot think of a second possibility!" Zhang Tie answered in a low voice.

Watching the collapsed tunnel, Roslav and Waajid also became silent. They were analyzing how worse the current situation was.

"Ah? How can that be...f*ck!"

A flurried sound drifted from behind. It was from Gangula.

Gangula, who looked blue, hurriedly led a lot of people here who was familiar to Zhang Tie. At the sight of this, all their faces froze, including that of Gangula.

"Now that Gangula was here, the greater part of the allied forces might have been attracted here by the illusory super relics." Zhang Tie sighed inside.

"Childe Gangula!" Zhang Tie turned around and greeted him.

"Ah, Peter, you're also here. What happened?"

Realizing that Gangula was still confused, Zhang Tie repeated what he told Roslav and Waajid. After that, watching the newcomers, Zhang Tie stood aside silently.

The moment they heard the "alchemist's bomb", those guys behind Gangula drew cold breath. Staring at the collapsed tunnel, they became despaired.

"Is this a plot? How come this tunnel was exploded the moment we arrived here?"

"Ah, sh*t, Can we go back?"

Some smart guys behind Gangula had guessed something. Hearing this question, many more people's faces turned pale.

Zhang Tie gazed at Gangula silently. Zhang Tie wanted to see how Gangula would manage it, as the leader of the allied forces.

Gangula didn't say anything. Panting heavily, he glared at the collapsed tunnel ahead. His face turned blue first, then slowly turned snowwhite, finally blushed. It seemed that he was gradually recovering his composure although his eyes looked more furious.

"Sh*t up!" after Gangula's roar, all the others following him here became quiet.

"Filking, take you men and occupy all the drinkable water sources near the ruins. If the pioneers dare to stop you, kill them all! Attention! Prevent them from destroying and polluting the water sources." an icy order was delivered.

Receiving this order, a subordinate behind Gangula moved one step forward as he punched onto his own chest armor. Soon after that, he turned around and left.

"Luca, take a team of elites and figure out the first boom!"

Another person left rapidly.

"Jyoba, find the prospecting team of Golden Roc Bank."

Another person left.

After delivering three orders consecutively, Gangula gazed at those heads of each tribe as he uttered a colder voice, "From now on, besides keeping three day's supplies for the soldiers, all the tribes should submit the rest rations. The allied forces will be responsible for distributing rations!"

Hearing Gangula's last order, those other heads of tribes started to discuss.

"Who doesn't agree?" Gangula glared at them all with his bloody

eyes. Hearing this, Gangula's subordinates put their hands on the sword handles.

The turmoil quieted down at once. Nobody dared to disagree with him.

Hearing Gangula's crazy orders in such a short period, Zhang Tie finally understood why this guy's nickname was "mad dog"...

...

Chapter 469: A Hopeless Situation

The moment the troop of the allied forces started to occupy the water sources nearby the relics, the chaos in the underground space started to spread like the ripples in pond. Whether those tens of thousands of pioneers who swarmed in like hornets or a few powerful individuals, nobody could resist the power of the allied forces which was like a bulldozer.

There were also powerhouses in the allied forces.

Given the types of organizations of most countries and armies in this age, the fighting strength of first-class military officers were generally in consistent with their positions. After two holy wars between humans and demons, for the sake of the guidance and co-ordinance in joint operations, most human countries' military establishments appeared to be similar on type of organization and hierarchy.

In the average troop establishment of most countries in the continent, there was a similar red line, which, although being not absolute, was referential.

A LV 6 fighter could be the leader of a platoon of about 30 soldiers and be awarded with the rank of second lieutenant.

A LV 7 fighter could be the commander of a company of about 100 soldiers or 3 platoons and be awarded with the rank of first lieutenant.

A LV 8 fighter could be the commander of a battalion of about 300-500 soldiers and be awarded with the rank of captain. For example, when Zhang Tie was in the Iron-Blood Camp of the 39th Division of Iron-Horn Army of Norman Empire, although Reinhardt, the commander of Iron-Blood Camp was a LV 8 fighter, because of the special establishment of Iron-Blood Camp and the great power of iron-blood fist, he had already been promoted to Lieutenant Colonel which was rarely seen across the Blackson

Humans Corridor.

A LV 9 fighter could be the colonel of 1000-2000 soldiers and be awarded with the rank of major. Concretely, although the difference of establishments between the armies of different countries and regions, any LV 9 fighter was qualified to be the middle-ranking military officer of any army in any place in this age.

A LV 10 strong fighter could be the commander of a brigade of 5000-10000 soldiers and be awarded with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel.

A LV 11 fighting master could be the commander of a regiment of at least 20000 soldiers and be awarded with the rank of colonel.

A LV 12 great fighting master could be the head of an army of 80,000 to 100,000 soldiers and be awarded with the rank of a brigadier general or a major general. Those at this level entered the high-ranking general officers officially.

Above the army was an army group which was composed of hundreds of thousands of soldiers. As the real terrifying organ of violence and the pillar of humans against demons, the army group was able to destroy cities and countries. Additionally, according to the regulation of the "Great Brilliance Charter" of humans, although a LV 12 great fighting master could be the head of an army, the core of an army group had to be a knight, instead of the pure accumulation of low-level soldiers in quantity.

Only knights were qualified to establish fighting units like army groups and be the leader of army groups. Although fighting spirit, fighting demon and fighting general below knight were not qualified to establish an army group but they could take important positions in the army group.

Certainly, even the army groups centered by knights were divided into different types. In different countries, the army groups were classified by different levels and ranks. However, the

division standards of army groups in most countries were divided into four levels according to the division standards of Chinese army groups; common army group, class B army group, class A army group and forbidden army group. The names of the four levels might be different in other countries. In some countries, it was divided into; class C army group, class B army group, class A army group and class S army group. Some countries divided it into; black iron army group, bronze army group, silver army group and gold army group. Although being different in names, they were basically same in division standards.

A common LV 6 fighter could be a platoon leader in a common army group; however, if he was in a class B army group, he could only be a monitor. Almost all the platoon leaders in class B army group were monitored by LV 7 fighters. It would be stricter in class A army group.

It was said that in the forbidden army group, the lowest limit to be platoon leader was LV 9 fighter. Even common soldiers in forbidden army group were LV 7 fighters. Given its fighting strength, a forbidden army group could easily crack down more than three class A army groups.

Such a forbidden army group was absolutely a legendary existence. There was not even one forbidden army group in Blackson Humans Corridor at all. It was said that such army groups only existed in Eastern Continent. In Blackson Humans Corridor, a country with class B army group was already a powerful one. As to the alleged class A army groups in a couple of countries, they were just some class B army groups being mixed with some regiments at most according to the standards of class A army groups. Such troops had been brand troops across Blackson Humans Corridor and the pride of a few countries.

Zhang Tie could never touch such knowledge when he was in Blackhot City. He learned some when he was in Hidden Dragon Palace. The Iron-Horn Army Group of Norman Empire which was

the most powerful force in Andaman Alliance was a black iron army group. The brilliance feathers of Sun Dynasty was also a black iron army group. Iron-Blood Camp was a special force under a division of an army group, which was actually a mixed unit.

In this age, the reason that Chinese were powerful, respectable and were called gold race was that only Chinese were able to establish the gold army groups. In the former two holy wars between humans and demons, Chinese gold army groups had made meritorious deeds to humans and became well known around the planet.

As tens of thousands of people were dispatched by the wild bear tribe, which already reached the scale of division, there must be many powerhouses like fighting masters and great fighting masters. Plus the bear-killing fighters who had unique ability to increase their fighting strength sharply, only after a few hours, the water sources nearby the relics had been taken over by the allied forces.

At the beginning, many pioneers were confused why the allied forces started to occupy the water sources nearby the relics. However, after ten more hours, they finally understood their current situation. Therefore, everybody became flurried. The turmoil broke out naturally.

After 50,000-60,000 people poured in, the water sources nearby the relics could not afford so many people at all. When the underground tunnel was smooth, this contradiction was not obvious. As long as they spent some time and walked dozens of miles, they would be able to get enough water. However, after the tunnel collapsed, the road back to the ground was blocked. What was more, the largest water source supply was cut off.

Even if they took enough dried rations but did not get enough drinking water, they could not stand too long underground, either.

In over ten hours, the allied forces intensified their camp under

the order of Gangula. They built a defense line around the camp. As a result, some water sources being occupied by the allied forces became the military forbidden zones. Any outsider being less than 100 m away from the water sources without consent would be killed!

Therefore, those pioneers who dreamed to make a fortune in the super relics instantly felt a great danger.

Zhang Tie caught sight of the prospecting team of Golden Roc Bank, half of which had lost. Most of the remaining team members were injured and looked bad.

O'Laura and Nurdo also came back with only 2/3 of their guards. O'Laura also saw Zhang Tie. However, before talking to him, O'Laura had been pulled away by Gangula's subordinate.

...

Sitting on the top of a ruined 5-storey building in the relics beside the camp, Zhang Tie was looking at the distance quietly.

At a place near a water source within Zhang Tie's vision, over 2000 soldiers of the allied forces were intensifying the defense over there. Meanwhile, those pioneers wandering in the neighborhood were glaring at those soldiers.

At this moment, the pioneers were a bit rational. None of them would like to drink water at the risk of their own lives. However, this was just the first day since their water sources had been taken over by the allied forces. Three days later, when most of the pioneers would run out of their own drinking water, Zhang Tie didn't know whether they would just look aside like today.

Hearing the footsteps from behind, Zhang Tie knew it was O'Laura without even turning around. Seeing Zhang Tie sitting on the ground while swinging his legs in the air, O'Laura became hesitated for a couple of seconds before sitting on Zhang Tie's side. Like Zhang Tie, she also suspended her feet in the air.

"It looks worse than my imagination!" Zhang Tie turned around and looked at O'Laura. O'Laura picked off her mask, allowing Zhang Tie to glance at her icy and delicate side face with unscrupulous eyes.

"You've not attended the conference, but how do you know that?" O'Laura asked calmly.

"Hehe, it's evident. If not going to tell me your last words, how could you just sit on the ground casually? When you walked towards here, you became a bit hesitated before sitting down. I guess that you might be thinking about your last words at that moment. Don't cover it anymore, am I right?"

"You b*stard!" O'Laura swore in a low voice before letting out a long sigh.

"Go ahead, what's going on there?"

"There's no star of god, no super relics. It's just a trap!"

"I'm afraid many people have realized it!"

"The first boom was also caused by an alchemist's bomb. Its explosive equivalent was especially large. We've confirmed that all the knights who wanted to grab the pieces of the star of god have been killed. According to our earlier investigation, there were four knights being involved with this trap, one from Ice and Snow Wilderness, the other three from outside, including Samaranth, the star and moon sword sage!"

Although birds died in pursuit of food, after hearing so many god-like powerhouses were gone at the same time, Zhang Tie was also shocked. Any knight was influential enough to threaten the safety of a region. Zhang Tie had not imagined that four of them were killed at the same time. Such a great loss was barely seen in one place in one day even at the most fierce period of the former two holy wars between humans and demons.

Recalling how Samaranth, the star and moon sword sage killed

the huge deep-sea monster, Zhang Tie felt very pitiful inside. Previously, Donder told Zhang Tie that no matter how high your fighting skills were, you would still be afraid of kitchen knives. At the beginning, Zhang Tie treated it as a joke; however, at this moment, he realized that it was not a joke at all. Alchemist's bomb was like a kitchen knife. After a pile of alchemist' bombs were detonated, even knights would be killed.

Zhang Tie thought that the first alchemist's bomb was at least 100 times more powerful than that he met in Blapei. Facing such a terrifying power, even steel and iron would be melted down.

"Do you know who did this?"

"Gangula doubted that it was done by Three Eyes Association!"

"Three Eyes Association? Three Eyes Association again?" Zhang Tie also realized that no other organizations could do this, except for Three Eyes Association. This trap seemingly targeted at the knights in humans since the beginning. The pioneers and the allied forces being trapped here were just a "plus". No matter what, for those b*stards of the Three Eyes Association, they could do whatever they could to weaken human's fighting strength and make human world more chaotic before the 3rd holy war.

What a shrewd trap! Nobody could imagine that there was such a trap behind the new relics. Although knights were confident that they could solve all the problems and plots; however, they had not imagined that what waited for them were not the pieces of star of god, but a death trap caused by alchemist's bombs.

Zhang Tie remembered the animal tide above the ground, which was full of plots and artificial traces. After considering it for a while, Zhang Tie instantly realized that the function of the animal tide was to attract the attention of the public. When those tribes across the Ice and Snow Wilderness and those who were alert about the plots of Three Eyes Association transferred their eyes to the outside, few of them could imagine that the trump card of

Three Eyes Association was down here.

Noticing that Zhang Tie became silent, O'Laura thought that Zhang Tie was digesting her words. Therefore, she didn't disturb him; instead, she just looked at the fluorite lamplight in the distance as she muttered.

"In the conference, we've already strictly deduced the current situation. The water supply from the water sources occupied by the allied forces could only afford about 30,000 people's daily use at most. However, our allied forces include 37000 people in total, which meant that 7000 of the the allied forces could not get enough water after 3 days, not to mention the pioneers."

"There are over 20,000 pioneers nearby the relics. Three days later, if so many pioneers don't want to be thirsty to death, they have to fight the allied forces for the limited water sources. However, the terrain of this relics is not convenient for the allied forces to spread. Therefore, the allied forces had to fight to death so as to clean all the pioneers. Even if we're the winner, the allied forces would also have to suffer a great loss. We will lose at least 10,000 soldiers!"

"The fierce battle will last over one week. After that, the dead bodies will cover each corner of this relics. As it's in the underground being surrounded with stones. The environment is relatively closed. Therefore the corpses could be hardly dealt with. The allied forces could deal with a batch of corpses by burying them beneath the relics or throwing them into the caves being far away from here. However, a lot of corpses could not be cleaned. As a result, they would decay very soon and probably cause diseases and plagues over here. The survivors would also be polluted."

"Now that there is no plague or disease, the dried rations could only afford us one month at the most. Even though there are sufficient water sources, everybody would be starved to death in the end!"

"Through the confirmation of the prospecting team of Golden Roc Bank, there's only one tunnel leading to the outside. However, it would require 40,000 people to work at least 2 months to break it through. Even though we could contact with the outside and ask for their relief, it would require 40,000 people to work in here for at least 45 days. In the current situation, this is impossible. Nobody could organize a project of 40,000 here. Even if the allied forces join hands with pioneers, we could not stand 45 days, either..." O'Laura then stopped for a second, before reaching the conclusion calmly and gloomily, "Therefore, we probably die here in 45 days!"

...

Chapter 470: My Brothers

At this moment, Zhang Tie held O'Laura's hand tightly as he stared at her with a solemn look, "I won't let you die here!"

O'Laura just revealed a smile as she purely took Zhang Tie's words as a comfort, "I know that but if not because of me, you might not be here. It's my fault!"

"Don't be silly. I chose to come down here. It's nothing to do with anybody else!"

"Although you're a bit bad, you're cute sometimes!" O'Laura looked at the distance, "Can I lean on your shoulder?"

Zhang Tie nodded. O'Laura then leaned her head on Zhang Tie's shoulder in a tender way.

They looked at the distance silently.

"Do you know what I was thinking about when I knew that I was going to die here in one month?"

O'Laura whispered in Zhang Tie's ear like how lovers usually did. However, the contents was very cruel.

"What are you thinking about?"

"I started to feel afraid of death. I realized the value of life for the first time. After that, I realized that I was very stupid. Actually, the problem in the grey eagle tribe was very simple, but I made it complicated. You're right. If only I can suppress Ollier, Juventus and their supporters and let them pledge allegiance to me by chopping off the heads of those who don't agree with me."

It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that O'Laura's mentality could change so much at this moment. But it was not bad, at least for the grey eagle tribe. Zhang Tie was sure that as long as senior Merkel agreed to chop off one or two heads, the rest would succumb to her for sure. As O'Laura was not brave enough

to be that cruel previously, those people didn't follow her orders.

Now, O'Laura became really mature.

Distress made people mature.

Remembering about Gangula's crazy eyes and his sharp decisions, Zhang Tie's heart raced suddenly. He then asked O'Laura, "Gangula is not going to just wait for death. What's his plan?"

Hearing this question, O'Laura's face turned pale instantly. She waved her head firmly and said decisively, "I bet you don't want to know that crazy dog's plan. I prefer to die than living like how he arranged!"

Zhang Tie closed his eyes. A few seconds later, he opened his eyes, "Did he plan to kill people? He planned to kill all the pioneers and collect all their dried rations in 3 days. Meanwhile, he planned to consume some soldiers of the allied forces through fighting pioneers. As a result, the remained supplies would be available to the survivors for a longer time. At least, the allied forces would not lack water supply in a short period."

O'Laura nodded in a solemn way. Although Zhang Tie had not attended the conference of the management of the allied forces, he could speculate the contents. Therefore, O'Laura became more admirable about Zhang Tie.

"That's it! Gangula even planned to carry out hierarchical allotment system and isolation system for sick and wounded people. Once soldiers of the allied forces were injured or affected with diseases, they would soon die because of insufficient supply and treatment!"

O'Laura's voice sounded very sorrowful, "Gangula thought that nobody else knew about his next plan. But actually, everybody knew that after exterminating those pioneers and eliminating those sick and wounded people of the allied forces, Gangula would definitely abandon or sweep all the other small and medium-sized

tribes except for the wild bear tribe so as to gain enough supplies and allow the rest people to live longer. Right because of this reason, the conference finally ended with a turmoil. All the other tribes could only join hands with each other so as to negotiate with Gangula!"

Through O'Laura, Zhang Tie knew what happened in the conference. At this critical moment, the small and medium-sized tribes of the allied forces didn't yield much; instead, they proposed to dispatch their own soldiers to fight according to the overall proportion of each tribe in the allied forces, to share supplies fairly and take over two water sources from the wild bear tribe. However, all these proposals were vetoed by Gangula.

If it was in the outside, those small and medium-sized tribes would never dare to propose such requests to Gangula at all. However, at this critical moment, they had to oppose. Although the wild bear tribe was powerful in fighting strength, as long as the wild bear tribe fought the other small and medium-sized tribes, they would force them to stand on side of the pioneers. If so, even the wild bear tribe and Gangula could not stand it.

Zhang Tie realized that the allied forces had started to split from inside. In order to survive, each person was making their full efforts.

"Setton is coming. I'm afraid he's here for me. I have to go now!"

Setton walked towards this building as he raised his face towards them. He had just converged with O'Laura with the soldiers of the grey eagle tribe. It was really out of his imagination that they were in dilemma right away. Zhang Tie found Setton was a bit solemn and sad.

O'Laura slightly kissed Zhang Tie's cheek. After that, she put on her mask before flying away from the roof of the building and leaving with Setton.

Seeing O'Laura off, Zhang Tie remained still. At this moment,

Zhang Tie became very vacant, which might be involved with the life or death of himself or tens of thousands of people here.

After 17 years of life experience, Zhang Tie had never been so perplexed before.

Whether he would just wait until the last moment with only a few people whom he was concerned about or stand out bravely and lead these people out of this trap facing a great risk...

Zhang Tie didn't know what to do!

He then asked Heller.

"Castle Lord, Castle of Black Iron could provide water for tens of thousands of people. The fleshes inside could also be available to them for over 3 months. Such an important decision could only be made by Castle Lord out of sincerity. I will support you no matter what decision you make!"

Heller's answer made Zhang Tie more confused. Zhang Tie didn't know what was deep in his mind.

"Why don't I know what is deep in my mind?"

"How come?"

Zhang Tie just considered about that question while sitting on the top of the ruined building. He gradually forgot himself...

...

In this state, Zhang Tie completely forgot about the existence of time. Not knowing how long had passed, one day or two days, Zhang Tie felt many people walking under the building and heard noises drifting from afar. O'Laura came to his side once again. After staring at him for a short while, she told him a message in a sad and ironical tone.

"Gangula has already reached a secret agreement with all the other heads of small and medium-sized tribes. As long as the heads of the other tribes support him, he could ensure that some major

figures in each tribe would survive to the end. According to Gangula's plan, about 200-300 people of the allied forces could survive for more than 3 months until the tunnel is broken through from outside!"

Hearing this news, Zhang Tie felt his back, which was lashed in Heavens Cold City, burning.

There was one sentence that could be used to describe Gangula's plan—Smaller figures had to die first so as to survive big figures. Therefore, all the big figures agreed.

"Tomorrow, the allied forces would start the massacre until the last pioneer is killed! In order to safeguard the soldiers of the grey eagle tribe, I will attend the battle with my soldiers at the risk of our lives!"

After saying this, O'Laura left.

Zhang Tie felt a heartache.

"Is that my heart?"

Zhang Tie became confused...

...

O'Laura left. After a while, Sabrina and two of her guardians arrived in front of this building.

"Young lady. What's wrong with Peter? I was told that since he had known that everybody would be trapped here, Peter had been scared too much and kept hiding here like an idiot!"

"Sh*t up!"

Zhang Tie heard the footsteps of Sabrina and her guardians. Although they were still below the building, their whisper had drifted to Zhang Tie's ears.

Not knowing why, Zhang Tie realized that his auditory sense became much sharper than before.

After coming to the front of Zhang Tie, Sabrina squatted and slightly touched the sluggish face of Zhang Tie who was staring at the distance without moving his eyes. She then let out a sigh and said in a tender voice, "My little man. You don't have to worry about that. We can still keep touch with outside. The relief of the wild bear tribe and the other tribes would arrive in a few days. We only need to wait for 3 months here. I'm sure they will get us out of here. As long as I can get out of here, I will take you out for sure!"

After saying this, Sabrina slightly kissed Zhang Tie's lips. She then left while her guardians left some water and food to him.

Smelling the food on his side, Zhang Tie realized that he was a bit hungry. Without reaching out his hand to take those food, he just sent an order in his mind; instantly, the sweat solution of all-purpose medicament appeared in Zhang Tie's mouth. Zhang Tie swallowed it right away.

...

Not knowing how long had passed, Sam and Gerri appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

"Peter, Sam and I are here to say goodbye to you. After a discussion, we've made the final decision. At this moment, we should go back to the team of pioneers. No matter what, nobody could leave out of here or stick to the day until the tunnel was broken through. If we have to die, Sam and I prefer to die as pioneers, which would be more respectful!" Gerri said.

"We are told that the pioneers have been gathered by some individual powerhouses. Yesterday, the action of the allied forces have not gained any effects; instead, two water sources of ours were grabbed away by the allied forces. Each party suffered a loss. O'Laura had promised to send us to the safe place. No matter what, you're our friend forever!" Sam said.

Sam and Gerri then left when Zhang Tie was moved once again.

They reminded Zhang Tie of his former friends in the wild wolf valley. Like those small figures in wild valley, Sam and Gerri were both born in average or poor families, who had no reliance at all. Each step he moved forward, he had to ooze sweat, bleed or drop tears. They were young, sincere and happy. Of course, they also had courage.

A series of pictures reappeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

...

In the deep and twisting underground tunnel, he was forging ahead quietly with a group of people while holding torches. That was a plot about Great Bless Skill. It was nothing but a joke. However, each one behind him were determined to create a new world.

...

Zhang Tie drew out of his dagger and cut open his own hand, followed by all the others. They sprayed the fresh blood into the stone pit.

...

"This is the blood of brothers. Before the completion of the sacred Great Bless Skill, how can you dry up?"

"Ah, no..."

"Use mine, use my blood..."

"What the hell..."

...

Those who walk in the dark. Your faces are covered with dust; you totter while your hands are tainted with filth. You walk in the dark, dirty land; however the brilliance and flame in your heart could never die out, which instead would finally become torches in the dark and brighten the road for your brothers so that they can clearly see the difficulties and obstacles on the road. Those who

take the torches, your torches are the best bless to this world. It is a bless of light which will brighten the road towards the ultimate sacred door. Hearing this, all the teenagers ahead of the team dropped off their tears.

...

Silly Potter, who had been the torch-holder, looked sacred, "I'd like to sacrifice for all of you!"

...

Hallan Wood jumped out of the team, "I'd like to sacrifice myself!"

Jack Jones jumped out, "I'd like to sacrifice myself!"

Dili Gandhi also jumped out, "I'd like to sacrifice myself!"

Francis Franca, the son of an average gardener jumped out, "I'd like to sacrifice myself!"

...

Zhang Tie almost forgot the frivolous things and jokes that he had made. Until this moment, Zhang Tie realized that all the details that he had experienced with his brothers were deeply imprinted in his bones and soul, including mixing fresh blood with each other, their voices and expressions, which could never be erased or forgotten at all.

Zhang Tie dropped off his tears naturally.

"My brothers, who'd like to cut open their palms by daggers, walk in the dark with torches and topple over this world with me, are you all ready?"

"I'm sorry, I almost have made you disappointed."

...

After a long time, the enshrouding bloody brilliance of iron-blood battle Qi gradually appeared on Zhang Tie, which shot up to the

sky like bloody waves and banners flying against the wind.

Standing on the top of the building, Zhang Tie looked in the distance, "Those brave guys, you sacrifice yourself to your brothers. How virtuous you are! This is the purest love...your names will be carved on the sacred arch door forever. If you can treat your brothers as yourself, you have already reached the supreme level. Although time will end, oceans will dry, high mountains will fall but your names will never fade away. Sacrifice is eternal. Finally, all of us will gather in the sacred eternal territory. Each of fulfillment that you have made for your brothers will come back for you. Your brothers will not abandon you and let you wander alone. You know that brilliance is right in your body. All the opportunities that you've created will be together with you like how you stay with the almighty god."

Soon after the voice in his mind, the rising huge centipede battle-Qi totem was torn into pieces in the fierce, rolling battle-Qi banner by his powerful spirit and superb willingness. Another thing started to swim in Zhang Tie's chest, which included trust, fearlessness, decisiveness, piety, grief, small figures' unyielding yells, teenagers' surging fresh blood and the lofty self sublimation for the brothers to sacrifice themselves.

Because of the sublimation, everything became lofty.

Being unable to sustain Zhang Tie's superb willingness, the huge centipede battle-Qi totem was finally shattered...

Among the pieces of the battle-Qi totem, a light spot started to brighten up in Zhang Tie's chest like a torch in the dark...

A wholly new, rare totem slowly rose from Zhang Tie's back and shot into the sky. Fresh blood drops sprayed all over the sky endlessly like a curtain in the sky. It was more like a doomsday flame which was descended by gods so as to judge everything like that in myths and legends. With a glance, everybody's heart pounded...

A sacred totem——Bloody and Fiery Curtain appeared in front of public for the first time.

In the distance, the soldiers of the allied forces were fighting pioneers along with ground-breaking roars...

...

Chapter 471: The God's Manifestation (I)

One hour before the bloody and fiery curtain, everything was developing towards that merciless track along the fixed cruel trace. In such a dilemma, everybody was exerting their full effort.

...

Sharba was holding tightly his short sword and following the other pioneers with stiff and tense footsteps onto the battle field.

The handle of his short sword was wrapped with a rough cloth strip. At this moment, the cloth strip had been soaked by Sharba's sweat. Therefore, it felt smooth in hand.

Before going to the battle field, Sharba drank up all of his drinking water.

Since this tunnel completely collapsed along with a terrifying earthquake last week, all the pioneers were sent in a terrifying and despairing situation.

Sharba was only 18 years old. Like how it was described in the popular story among many pioneers, because his father was a pioneer, he was then a pioneer. He didn't know whom his mom was. Since he was sensible, he joined the team of pioneers along with his father and wandered around the world.

His dad passed away two years ago. Before death, his dad's last wish was to see Sharba to settle down in a human city, find an average job, marry a woman and live like commoners...

He did not understand his dad's wish until last week. Although he understood it now but it was impossible for him to live it up this dream because Sharba knew that he was going to die. Even though he could survive today, he would die tomorrow.

The despairing mood had been spreading among the pioneers for one week. This relics was like a cage and a graveyard in the dark which was going to bury all the pioneers here.

Facing such powerful and well-trained army of the allied forces, only after 2 days of confusion, all the pioneers had realized that none of them could leave this graveyard...

The abyss-like despair made the pioneers suffocated. Therefore, they were driven mad for the last time.

One week ago, none of the pioneers could imagine about the outcome to fight the allied forces; but now, the pioneers not only fought the allied forces, but also launched a counterattack towards the allied forces and occupied two water sources.

At this moment, a coarse hand fell on Sharba's shoulder and slightly patted him.

"Sharba, just follow me; take it easy; we will be free after today..." said uncle Milan, the 50-year odd head of the small team of pioneers. In the past few days, uncle Milan's lips had cracked due to thirst. The brilliance in his eyes also faded away. He was now full of despair and frustration.

"Will...we die?" a hoarse voice sounded. Another partner in the team asked, who was 2 years elder than Sharba.

Uncle Milan smiled in a frustrated and weak manner, "In the legend of pioneers, such a relics is a place being cursed. Before Catastrophe, this place had already swallowed numerous spiritual beings and fresh blood. Now the tragedy started once again. Because those who come here to disturb the dead spiritual beings, all of them have to accompany these dead spiritual beings at the cost of their lives..."

"I...I don't want to die..." someone started to wail in a low voice.

"Don't worry, we're together with you. It will be okay for a short while. If we win, we can live some more days..." uncle Milan comforted himself, which was more like a hopeless sigh.

The pioneers moved in the battle field one team after another. They had no fixed formations; instead, they just followed their

familiar person and their head towards the death place.

If they joined the battle several days later, they would be too weak to fight. Therefore, no matter what, they had to solve the battle today. On the battle field, to be killed might be better than being thirsty and starved to death.

...

"This is a hopeless battle which is nothing about the sense of honor!" In a place being far away from the battle field, watching tens of thousands of pioneers gathering 1 km away from the allied forces like how moth charged towards flames, Roslav let out a sigh, "No morale exist in the two armies at all. No party will win the battle. They are all killing people for their own survival. I won't join such a battle!"

"What a pity!" Waajid also sighed as he turned around, looking at the camp of the allied forces over 5 km away and waved his head, "Previously, I thought that person might be the one we need, I've not imagined..."

"Not all the 17-18 year old teenagers could sustain the stress from the coming death and despair. Many geniuses finally could not grow up. Because they could not bear the huge stress. Even some soldiers in the allied forces could not bear that stress and would be driven mad!"

"Perhaps we have put too much unrealistic hopes on him. That's why we can barely accept the fact now!"

"Hopefully, he would recover his composure!"

"No matter what, we have to take our huge bear warriors back safe and sound. Their lives and missions belonged to our lord. They should not die here for no reason!" Waajid turned around and glanced at that team of the huge bear warriors behind him.

Roslav nodded in a solemn look.

...

"Pass my order, all the supplies and booty of each soldier in the fight don't have to be submitted!" Gangula's voice sounded in the main tent of the allied forces.

Hearing this order, all the heads and officials of other tribes in the main tent became thrilled. Many people ran out to pass the latest order to their own soldiers of each tribe.

Before the war, Gangula caught sight of the bear-killing hammer hanging over a weapon stand, he then instantly remembered Zhang Tie's handsome movements on waving that terrifying battle hammer. So he asked, "Where's Peter, what is he doing?"

"He's still sitting on that short building!" Nurdo replied in a calm voice.

"Oh!" Gangula peered at Sabrina who looked calm and O'Laura in mask who held her fist tightly when she heard about this question. After that, he revealed a smile, "Alright, remember to send some food to him after winning the war and bring a doctor to him. Don't let him be starved to death. No matter what, he's our guest!"

Hearing this, some heads of small and medium-sized tribes hurriedly responded with a sneer like having heard a joke from Gangula.

O'Laura responded with a cold harrumph as she turned around and walked out of the tent.

"What are you laughing at?" Gangula looked at those guys who mocked just now and asked icily with bloody eyes. Hearing this, those guys' sneers ceased at once like chicks whose necks were clutched.

...

A place far away from the battle field and close to the camp of the allied forces was not influenced by the tense atmosphere of the coming war in the distance. If this relics was a huge graveyard, that place would be the graveyard of the graveyard.

This was the wounded soldiers division of the allied forces, a more despairing place.

Not knowing how long had he slept. Maxim slowly woke up and gradually picked himself up from the rough bed on the ground. Feeling scorching in his throat, he took out his notebook and pen from his portable bag.

As a trivial logistical secretary in the small tribe of the allied forces, he was injured when he joined the action of the allied forces three days ago. After that, he was sent here for death like many other wounded soldiers after a simple treatment.

He was truly here for death. When they were sent here, their supplies was reduced by $\frac{2}{3}$ at once.

After holding the notebook and the pen, Maxim instantly felt hopeful. After dozens of years, his professional habit had already become his instincts and joys of life. As long as he held his notebook and pen and could write words, he would feel as safe and stable as a snail who carried its shell once again.

Maxim moved his body hardly. Finally, he found a corner being close to a fluorite lamp in the circled yard and was going to write something. Right then, a sneer drifted in his ears.

A soldier who was weakly leaning on the ground mocked Maxim at the sight of what he was doing at this moment.

"You're really diligent, ha. Are you writing your will? If you have time, you'd better check whether Sher on your side is still alive. If he's dead, call people here to carry him away right now; otherwise, those who are alive would die soon..."

Seeing a lot of wounded soldiers turning around and looking at him, Maxim kindly put down his notebook as he struggled to pick himself up from the ground and came to the side of a wounded soldier who was lying not far from him. He started to check the wounded soldier carefully.

Sher's lips had been covered with a layer of paste; thankfully, they were still quivering. Maxim lowered his body and drew his ears close to Sher's mouth. He heard a faint voice, "Water...water..."

There was a military flume in the yard; however, it was already dried inside and was covered with dust. A huge cheap average-looking tin water bottle was dropped on its side after being excavated out of the relics by a pioneer for the wounded soldiers. After struggling towards the flume, Maxim forcefully took up that water bottle and turned the bottle upside down. After a few seconds, a small water drop finally formed and suspended at the mouth of the water bottle.

"Sher wants water; however there's no water here..."

Everybody became silent when the despairing and frustrating atmosphere started to spread from that dried flume and the mouth of the water bottle. Even that wounded soldier who spoke with irony to Maxim also lowered his eyes...

After putting down the bottle in a frustrated manner, Maxim didn't say anything; instead, he struggled back to the corner. Sitting on the ground, he opened his notebook and wanted to write something on it; finally, he only left a paragraph on the paper.

—October 7th, 890th year of Black Iron Calendar. The shadow of death covers the wounded soldiers camp. This is the 5th day since we lacked water. I don't know how long can I survive...Nobody knows how many days can they survive whether they are in the wounded soldiers camp or not. In this place which could only be brightened by fluorite lamps, each one is breathing despair and fear about death...I know that I'm not pious, neither do I have any belief. However, at this moment, I would exert my full efforts to pray piously. If God really exists in the world, please save these people who are struggling here with despair and fear; please let the humble and mortal people see the manifestation of the God and bathe the honor of the God. Wish our mortals' awe to

the God could make us not that humble and fearful anymore.

The boom of the battle drums in the distance disrupted Maxim's moods. He stopped his pen, raising his head, he looked at the distance. He knew that many people would die there today. This relatively open wounded soldiers camp might be a crowded flesh and blood market by tomorrow...

...

Half an hour later...

The boom of battle drums and battle calls between the allied forces and the pioneers drifted from that battle field. Having determined to fight to death, those pioneers burst out great potential and were twining with the allied forces. As a result, the battle field was separated into hundreds or thousands smaller battle fields by the terrain of the relics...

Out of the battle field, Roslav, who had been watching the battle situation suddenly felt his heart pounding. He turned around and was stunned by what he saw in the direction of camp of the allied forces.

Several miles away, a huge, eccentric battle-Qi totem slowly appeared above the horizon like a burning banner. It was rising, which brightened the greater part of the sky like a sun in the dark underground.

"What's that?" after feeling that huge glow from his back, Waajid looked around and was stunned by what he saw.

Even those who were fighting on the battle fields noticed the glow and the burning bloody curtain which brightened the entire space. Facing such an eccentric and rare scene, everybody became shocked and didn't know what happened...

After receiving the notice, Gangula also walked out of his tent. He looked at the distance when an amazed look flashed across his eyes...

At the sight of this weird scene nearby their camp, all the heads of small and medium-sized tribes widely opened their mouths...

O'Laura looked around and found the place where the bloody and fiery curtain rose. "It seems...seems to be rising from where Peter was." O'Laura instantly darted towards there.

"That seems to come from where Peter was!" Sabrina muttered as Gangula's eyebrows kept jumping...

Being influenced by such a weird scene, the battle calls gradually disappeared. All the soldiers and pioneers looked around and watched that eccentric scene in the distance.

...

"Maxim, what's up? Is it burning outside?"

"Ah, that must be a big fire..."

"Impossible. There are no firewoods. How come it burns so heavily?" a wounded soldier asked restlessly while lying on the ground and watching the rising glow from the camp on his side. Those who could hardly move still struggled towards here to see what was happening.

At this moment, Maxim had long been flurried at the sight of the figure in the glow in the distance. He saw battle-Qi totem before; however, he could never connect the current scene with those battle-Qi totem he saw before. That felt like a sun rising from his side.

In Maxim's amazement, that figure slowly walked towards the wounded soldiers camp. Each of his step was full of a sacred sense and made Maxim's heart race...

...

Chapter 472: The God's Manifestation (II)

Earlier than O'Laura, Waajid and Roslav, thousands of soldiers residing in the camp of the allied forces rushed out of their camp under the leadership of the military officials and arrived at the small building where Zhang Tie was sitting on.

After seeing the 200-m high bloody and fiery curtain behind Zhang Tie from such a short distance, thousands of soldiers became quiet. Like a deity walking out of the blood and fire, Zhang Tie flew off the small building. After landing on the ground by feet, he walked towards the wounded soldiers camp which was not far from the small building.

Those soldiers didn't know what was happening to Zhang Tie at all. They didn't know what was that suffocating bloody and fiery curtain behind Zhang Tie. They were just awestruck about the unknown, powerful and sacred power. Besides, they also felt a bit afraid. After a glance at Zhang Tie's bloody and fiery curtain, everybody's face turned pale, not to mention to draw closer to it.

The burning fresh blood in the bloody and fiery curtain fell down the sky like thousands of burning bloody shooting stars. In the dark underground, the 200-m high curtain and the constantly burning fresh blood brightened up the area within almost 1 km from Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie just walked towards the wounded soldiers camp silently. Seeing him walking towards them, all the thousands of soldiers hurriedly gave a way to him.

Waajid and Roslav also came here with the team of soldiers of the huge bear tribe. At this moment, even if there was no glow of the bloody and fiery curtain, the faces of Waajid and Roslav along with the team of soldiers behind them had already turned red because of excitement.

At this moment, the exciting aria of Pontiff Sarlin started to

sound in the mind of all the soldiers of the huge bear tribe.

"My Lord, the Lord who's destined to conquer all the oceans in the world. You come from afar by sea. Under your foot, the surging waves are as plain as bright road..."

"My Lord, the creator of things who opened his immortal undertakings. You come from east and south. At this moment, you're on the ocean and in the sky..."

"The most powerful weapon of our Lord is that javelin in his hand. With the terrifying lightning-bolt like power, it could destroy all the enemies on our road ahead..."

"My Lord's look is his own, yet could not be identified by others..."

"When my Lord attends the battle, he will erect his great banner to summon all of his soldiers. All the soldiers following him could see that for sure..."

"He's the supreme one among all the gods; he ruled all the gods. He will bring the brilliance to the secular world from the heaven. He will return the original honor to each person, man or less, regardless of races!"

Javelin, banner, holiness. At the sight of this, all the soldiers from the huge bear tribe felt that their blood started to burn.

"That's right, that's right; that's him for sure; that's him for sure..."

Waaqid and Roslav exclaimed inside. Although they had faintly expected for that before arriving here. When they really saw what was happening in front of them, both Waaqid and Roslav felt their heart pounding. Their blood rushed to their heads at the same time, making them a bit dizzy. They really wanted to scream so as to present their excitement. However, at the sight of this scene, they could not even utter a single word.

Although some contents was confusing in pontiff Sarlin's

prophecy, Waajid and Roslav had already ascertained that Zhang Tie was that Lord.

All the soldiers of the huge bear tribe heavily panted with their nostrils. Widely opening their eyes, they were standing aside like the other soldiers of the allied forces. Meanwhile, they fixed their magma-like scorching eyes on Zhang Tie. Being afraid of illusion, they didn't even dare to blink their eyes.

Their fathers, grandpas, grandpa's grandpas had been waiting for the arrival of this day for hundreds of years in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

O'Laura also arrived. Her grim metal mask looked red under the brilliance of the bloody and fiery curtain, making it especially weird. With her eyes on Zhang Tie, she didn't believe that this man was that rascal whom he knew.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's face looked solemn, which became holiness under the reflection of the unyielding bloody and fiery curtain.

O'Laura wanted to say something; however, she swallowed her words back in front of the shocking scene.

"Tsa..."

"Tsa..."

Everybody could only hear the rustles of Zhang Tie's moving steps on the ground.

Zhang Tie walked into the wounded soldiers camp calmly. After a glance at those wounded sounders who were shocked too much and could not even utter a word, Zhang Tie walked to the side of the flume under the quiet gazes of thousands of people and slightly took up that empty tin kettle.

Zhang Tie's movement was very weird. Nobody knew what he was going to do.

As he took up that kettle, Zhang Tie took a deep breath. He knew that as long as he started this, he would have no way to regret. He had to stand whatever happened next.

At this moment, Zhang Tie glanced at those wounded soldiers. All those who could sit up had already sat up. Many wounded soldiers were gazing at him with widely opened eyes and mouth as they panted heavily. Many wounded soldiers were only 17-18 years old, who were at Zhang Tie's age like his brothers...

Zhang Tie finally opened his mouth.

His words were loud, slow and muffling. However, they spread over each inch of this wounded soldiers camp.

Everybody could hear it.

"Those who believe in me will be saved!"

After saying the first sentence, Zhang Tie lifted the kettle and bottomed it up; however, there was still not water inside...

Everybody watched him silently...

Hearing Zhang Tie's first sentence, Maxim instantly felt mouth parching and tongue scorching. He almost fell down the ground while his heart was palpitating heavily...

"Those who follow me, even if you walk in the desert, you will get sweet spring water from above stones..."

Soon after the second sentence, limpid water flew out of the empty tin kettle and entered the flume of the wounded soldiers camp...

Hearing the sound of water flow, thousands of people froze. Widely opening their eyes, they could not believe what they saw in front of their eyes just now...

Perhaps, there was water in the kettle; any average powerhouse could prevent it from flowing out——such a whim flashed across many people's minds. How, those who thought about this instantly

quivered as the water flew out of the kettle constantly. Its amount had been several times more than that of the kettle.

Waaqid and Roslav were quivering...

So was O'Laura...

Under the silent gaze of thousands of people, the water flowing out of the tin kettle had already filled the huge plume.

It was not a kettle any more; instead, it was an endless fountain.

Under the gaze of everybody else, an arm-injured soldier struggled to the side of the plume and scooped water from the plume with a military canteen in his left hand. After that, he raised his head and drank it...

Crystal water-drops dropped onto the ground from his beard...

"It...it's real...this is...this is...mysterious manifestation. We're saved!"

The soldier knelt down in front of Zhang Tie in the most pious way...

It's God's manifestation. Only God could create such a marvel under the gaze of everybody else...

All the wounded soldiers who could barely move knelt down in front of Zhang Tie with tears all over their faces. They knew that they were saved. They don't have to wait for death and struggle in the hopeless dark anymore...

Yes, it's God. They were saved by the God's incarnation!

"God's manifestation...God's manifestation..."

Someone exclaimed with high spirit outside the wounded soldiers camp.

At this moment, without any doubt or hesitation, Waaqid's and Roslav's eyes turned red and as they knelt down piously, followed by the team of soldiers behind them. Seeing the members of the

huge bear tribe kneeling down, all the thousands of people outside the wounded soldiers camp also knelt down piously with high spirits.

Many people witnessed the God's manifestation. Even some of them without faith also knelt down piously...

Those who could not sit up in the wounded soldiers camp also struggled to sit up at this moment...

Zhang Tie walked over there with holy words, "All the darkness is because of lack of light. All the guilt is because of lack of mercy. You're suffering from pains and fears because you're separated from me. If you want to have your traumas cured, you have to open your forbidden soul to me..."

Zhang Tie came to the front of those heavily wounded soldiers who could not sit up. After slightly touching their chests, he turned around and walked out of the wounded soldiers camp. Unexpectedly, when he walked out of the wounded soldiers camp, those wounded soldiers who could not move had already been able to pick themselves up from the ground...

Chapter 473: The God's Manifestation (III)

With that average-looking tin kettle, Zhang Tie walked towards the battle field in the distance under the reflection of the bloody and fiery curtain.

Thousands of people were still kneeling down the ground, including O'Laura. Everybody was stunned by this God's manifestation. At this moment, Zhang Tie was both familiar and strange to O'Laura. She showed her awe to Zhang Tie. Not until this moment did O'Laura realize that she didn't understand this man, whom she thought she understood very well and presented the God's Manifestation.

At this moment, Zhang Tie became too bright and holy that nobody dared to see him directly. O'Laura immediately felt dwarfed inside. She knew that the one in front of her was not that Peter whom she could hug and touch casually.

The kettle in Zhang Tie's hand formed an endless sweat spring which gurgled out the water constantly. He walked to those soldiers who were kneeling down in front of him and sprayed the water onto them from the kettle. The crowd started to be noisy while everybody pushed towards Zhang Tie. Kneeling down the ground, they raised their heads and stared at Zhang Tie with pious and desiring eyes. Meanwhile, they reached out their quivering hands, wanting to touch the God's manifestation.

Everybody touched it and realized that it was real water. Water was flowing out of the kettle constantly...

When the icy, sweet spring was sprayed on their hands, some could not wait to catch it with their hands and drink it while others piously daubed the spring water on their own faces and bodies...

At this moment, thousands of people shed tears along with the spring water...

Despaired ones wept as they saw hopes...

Sufferers cried as they felt relieved...

Pious ones dropped off tears as they were moved by the holy movement of Peter...

Those with no belief also sobbed due to shamelessness and self-accusation...

Numerous hands were striving to touch Zhang Tie's garment corners. However, no hand dared to directly touch Zhang Tie's body as they didn't want to profane him. Some even kissed Zhang Tie's footsteps.

Zhang Tie was a holy and solemn incarnation.

Zhang Tie came to the front of O'Laura. O'Laura also reached out of her hands. When the crystal spring water flew across her palms, O'Laura's last doubt disappeared. "This is a God's manifestation, a real God's manifestation." The one who presented this God's manifestation was that man in front of her.

"You're my mate; you don't have to kneel down in front of me!" Zhang Tie's voice drifted clearly as he held fast O'Laura's hand and pulled her up.

For some reason, although having been very intimate with Zhang Tie, O'Laura still felt very thrilled like being injected with a great power while Zhang Tie pulled her up by his hands.

Zhang Tie continued to walk forward with O'Laura on his side.

Zhang Tie caught sight of Roslav and Waajid as well as that team of soldiers of the huge bear tribe. If he was gazed by a team of men, who were kneeling down the ground and supporting their swords with hands which were inserted into the ground, with such hot and exciting eyes in usual days, Zhang Tie might have turned around and escaped away. But now, he had to bear it.

Zhang Tie knew that since he had started it, he had no route of

retreat now. He had to act like a god to the end.

Zhang Tie sprayed water on the soldiers of the huge bear tribe. All the soldiers looked as fascinated as experiencing a good rain after a long drought.

Roslav and Waajid were still kneeling down the ground. While being thrilled, their scorching eyes seemed desiring for something more. They were waiting for something...

Zhang Tie gritted his teeth...

When the onlookers saw Zhang Tie dipping water in the kettle and reached towards Roslav's forehead, they all held their breath and widened their eyes to witness the sacred moment.

Roslav and Waajid grew more thrilled. Keeping their eyes closed, they both raised high their heads.

With a calm look, Zhang Tie dipped water with his finger and drew three horizontal lines and one vertical line on the foreheads of Roslav and Waajid. It was a Chinese character "王". The whole process was like a mysterious baptism.

"My blessing to you comes from the brave warriors in Ice and Snow Wilderness. From today on, even if you're in the darkest and most hopeless situation, if you follow the brilliance, bravery and loyalty in your mind, you will always get the honorable road and never get lost!"

Closely after Zhang Tie's words, a brilliance appeared on Roslav and Waajid while numerous purple sparkles gathered into a huge bear. After a muffled roar, it slowly dispersed.

Zhang Tie didn't know what was that; however, he remained calm. Those who knew the meaning of the brilliance and the pattern on Roslav and Waajid were shocked once again...

"LV 2 sublimation; LV 2 sublimation..." someone cried...

Unexpectedly, soon after the mysterious baptism, Roslav and

Waajid had already broken through LV 2 sublimation.

Everybody owed this to Peter's mysterious baptism and his mysterious mark of blessing on the foreheads of Roslav and Waajid. At this moment, everybody was throwing their admiring eyes towards Roslav and Waajid. As a result, Roslav and Waajid were very excited.

Only Zhang Tie knew that Roslav and Waajid's LV 2 sublimation was nothing to do with him. He had no ability to let them break through at all. He didn't know what was LV 2 sublimation either. This breakthrough should be related to their changing mentality and spirits. The power of one's spirit and belief was marvelous. In special situations, if one was stimulated, one's potential would burst out. It was not strange for an average person to lift an object which weighed tons at critical moment.

Whereas, the two people realized their LV 2 sublimation at the very critical moment. What a coincidence! After glancing at the onlookers who were watching him, Zhang Tie knew that from now on nobody would doubt his words any more.

This was the power of belief and spirit!

This power would be kind in someone's hands which could nourish everything; however, in someone's hands, this power became very terrifying as it could destroy everything like storms and lightning bolts.

At his moment, Zhang Tie needed this power. Only with this power could he finally help everybody escape out of here.

Zhang Tie walked towards the battle field in the distance with a solemn look. At this moment, he didn't even need to say anything as everybody was following him firmly. Roslav, Waajid and their team of huge bear soldiers were walking on Zhang Tie's right hand. Roslav and Waajid looked solemn with a strong sense of mission. They were like Zhang Tie's guardians. O'Laura was walking on Zhang Tie's right hand.

...

When Zhang Tie's overwhelming bloody and fiery curtain drew close to the battle field, both parties, pioneers or soldiers of the allied forces became curious and nervous. For the sake of safety, both parties rapidly narrowed their front. Leaving their wounded soldiers on the battle field, they all looked around at the distance.

When the bloody and fiery curtain drew closer, its glow had almost covered the whole battle field, finally the soldiers clearly saw the bloody sparkles that dropped off the sky.

Like those people behind Zhang Tie, these people also became quiet at the sight of this scene.

Zhang Tie didn't speak; however, those behind him seemingly had reached an agreement with each other. 5000-6000 people roared what Zhang Tie had said just now. The sound was so loud that it resonated in the enclosed underground space. Everyone felt very holy inside.

"Those who believe in me will be saved!"

...

"Those who follow me, even if you walk in the desert, you will get sweet spring water from above stones..."

...

"All the darkness is because of lack of light; all the guilt is because of lack of mercy. You are suffering from pains and fears because you are separated from me!"

...

The sound grew closer and louder. Gradually, it started to resonate over the relics. As a result, all the soldiers and pioneers on the battle field changed their faces.

With a solemn sound, Zhang Tie appeared in the battle field with a tin kettle under the brilliance of his bloody and fiery curtain...

Spring water was flowing out of the tin kettle all the way here...

When encountering those wounded soldiers of the allied forces or pioneers, Zhang Tie would stop with mercy before slightly pressing their chests...

Closely after that, thirsty people had their powers back...

Those in coma woke up at once...

Wounds of those who were slightly injured started to recover...

Wounds of those who were heavily injured stopped deteriorating. They had a chance to survive on...

...

"Those who believe in me will be saved!"

...

"Those who follow me, even if you walk in the desert, you will get sweet spring water from above stones..."

...

"All the darkness is because of lack of light; all the guilt is because of lack of mercy. You are suffering from pains and fears because you are separated from me!"

...

Watching such an unimaginable scene and the kettle from where the water constantly flew out, uncle Milan dropped his weapon onto the ground, causing a sound "bang" as he muttered, "God's manifestation...God's manifestation...we're saved, we're saved...the God is coming to save us..." After that, he knelt down facing the one who brought the brilliance and started to cry like a kid...

On the battle field, rows of soldiers and pioneers dropped off their weapons and knelt down the ground. Although the firm-minded soldiers and pioneers didn't drop tears in battle just now,

they were all crying like babies at this moment...

Just because...

In the despair and dark...

The God's manifestation...is to save a humble person like me!

...

In the main tent of the allied forces, watching so many soldiers and pioneers joining that team behind that person and singing together, Gangula's face turned pale. He started to quiver. Watching the soldiers of the allied forces, even the soldiers of the wild bear tribe joined the team behind that person, they didn't even glance at him...

...

"Those who believe in me will be saved!"

...

"Those who follow me, even if you walk in the desert, you will get sweet spring from above stones..."

...

"All the darkness is because of lack of light; all the guilt is because of lack of mercy. You are suffering from pains and fears because you are separated from me!"

...

This sound almost made an earthquake.

At this moment, the so-called secular authority and personal dignity had become as humble as the dust on the ground.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking towards them with that sacred kettle, all the military officials and soldiers outside the main tent knelt down the ground. Even the heads of all the tribes hurriedly knelt down in front of that unimaginable God's manifestation. Although Gangula wanted to stick to his own willingness, he felt his feet

becoming week...

Sabrina also knelt down. When the others knelt down on her side, Sabrina also did that. On Gangula's side, she revealed a wisp of smile as she looked at that dignified man with a shocking and unspoken satisfaction, "My elder brother, do you stick to your dignity in front of such a God's manifestation?"

Although Gangula was a mad dog, he was not silly. He knew the outcome to be distinctive at this moment. If he acted distinctively, he would become a dead dog very soon!

Gangula was the last person who stood outside the main tent. He wanted to preserve his dignity for a longer time. However, he finally succumbed to Peter while oozing sweat over his forehead under the gaze of tens of thousands of people behind Zhang Tie. Even Roslav and Waajid who was over 50 m away from him had started to narrow their eyes on him.

...

Seeing Gangula kneeling down in front of him, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh as he knew that he had made it.

"Those who follow me, as long as you have a firm mind, you will be able to move the mountain and turn the abyss into a plain road. That's my promise to you..."

Chapter 474: Continue to Play as the God

As everyone had prepared one-month dried rations before entering the underground world to search for the super relics. Therefore, they didn't lack food now. However, they lacked clean water in the relics.

The moment the water problem was solved, all the soldiers and pioneers started to work on breaking through the tunnel under the leadership of Zhang Tie.

Over 60,000 people worked in shifts around the clock. Everyone could burst out huge energy and endless potential under the aspiration and guidance of powerful spiritual energy. Therefore, they worked faster and faster, which made Zhang Tie amazed.

By now, Zhang Tie had become the real spiritual leader and pillar of these people. Wherever he was, he could always see people bowing towards him.

Among the soldiers of the allied forces and those pioneers, many of them would throw themselves down at Zhang Tie's feet or kneel down the ground and stare at Zhang Tie with burning eyes the moment they saw him. After Zhang Tie passed by them, they would kiss Zhang Tie's footsteps in the most pious and humble gesture. It seemed that all the places that Zhang Tie passed by became sacred.

In such an atmosphere, more and more pious followers gathered around Zhang Tie, such as Roslav and Waajid. All the soldiers of huge bear tribe voluntarily became Zhang Tie's guardians. Roslav and Waajid would always follow Zhang Tie wherever he went.

O'Laura, Setton and the soldiers of the grey eagle tribe also closely followed Zhang Tie...

Sabrina and her female cavalries also joined in...

More and more people started to draw closer to Zhang Tie...

Although being tired to play as the God, Zhang Tie could only act like the God so as to lead all of them out of here with full morale and confidence by joining hands with each other.

What Zhang Tie needed to do everyday was to keep smiling and manifesting the God's will under their expectation...

The average-looking tin kettle had become a sacred object in everyone's eyes.

When it was not used, the tin kettle was put on a stone platform in an exclusive tent while being covered with a thick yellow cloth. Commoners could barely see that. The tent was guarded by soldiers around the clock. Besides Zhang Tie and O'Laura, nobody was qualified to touch it.

Zhang Tie handed the tin kettle to O'Laura. Each time Zhang Tie wanted to manifest the God's will, O'Laura would held that kettle and stood aside Zhang Tie in a solemn way. Because of this, O'Laura won a new name in a couple of days——Goddess Kettle!

Many people were staying with Zhang Tie, such as military craftsmen or those who had various expertise among the pioneers. Zhang Tie ordered some of them to make 7 huge stone vats using the huge stones which collapsed and blocked the tunnel and put them at the entrance of the tunnel so as to provide water for people.

Each of the 7 huge stone vats was higher than 1 m and wider than 2 m. Each of their volume was about 3 cubic meters. Therefore, the total volume of the 7 water vats was over 20 cubic meters.

Most of the soldiers and pioneers were above LV 3. Their physical potential had been developed to a certain degree. Each of them only needed about 150 ml water to survive a day; even though they had to do a lot of labor works a day, they only needed at most 300 ml water a day.

Now, over 40,000 people lacked drinking water in the

underground space. These people required about 12 tons of water a day. After filling the 7 huge vats, Zhang Tie made up the shortage at once.

The most important thing that Zhang Tie would do everyday was to manifest the God's will by filling those huge vats with that kettle.

It was the most solemn and sacred moment for Zhang Tie to manifest the God's will each day, under the breathless gaze of tens of thousands of people, Zhang Tie took over that sacred kettle from O'Laura's hands. After that, the crystal water started to pour out of the kettle and filled the huge vats in a few minutes.

After the Catastrophe, human beliefs spread in an explosive way. At this moment, even the world views of those who had no beliefs or those atheists collapsed at once, not to mention those who believed in the existence of God.

Besides the God's will, people could never figure out how so much water flew out of an average kettle constantly. In the eyes of those who had beliefs, even a water drop appeared in the eye of a sculpture would be taken as the tear of the God, which was pretty sacred, not to mention this scene.

Those who were responsible for guarding these huge vats and distributing water to those people who queued up here everyday were Sabrina and her female cavalries. Because of this, Sabrina even won a new name——Goddess Water!

Whenever Zhang Tie manifested the God's will in the public, his image would grow taller and more sacred.

On the 7th day, when Zhang Tie filled the 7 vats with that kettle, under the gaze of everyone, a wrinkled pioneer with pale hair walked out of the crowd in heavy footsteps. He knelt down in front of Zhang Tie. After that, he raised his face which was covered with tears and stared at Zhang Tie. Meanwhile, he raised his hands and prayed.

"The most divine person in the world. You've undoubtedly manifested the God's will in front of us and showed us the greatness and mercy of the God. We've been appreciating you so much. Please show us the immortal truth with your mercy and wisdom so that we, the lost lambs, could return to the kingdom of the God, and see light in the dark and hope in the pain and return to the God's territory in case of being depressed!"

This was absolutely an accident. Zhang Tie had never predicted it before. Zhang Tie realized that it might be because his performance was too successful these days, everyone was enjoying it, including himself. Everyone believed in the God's manifestation.

Zhang Tie looked at that senior pioneer in a calm look. Given the wrinkles and tears on the senior's face, Zhang Tie knew that he did it voluntarily. Perhaps, seniors would become more desirable about belief.

"Of course the truth needed to be preached in the public. However, I'm not qualified to be a preacher at all. I could only fabricate some words; if you really request me to talk a lot of nonsense, I'm afraid that I would fall down the altar at once." At this moment, Zhang Tie became very anxious inside. If not being gazed by so many people, Zhang Tie really wanted to kneel down in front of that old man and beg loudly, "Grandpa, forgive me please. I'm only an average guy who graduated from the Seventh National Middle School in Blackhot City. Are you going to make me embarrassed? Even though if you want to make me embarrassed, you should do that after we leave out of here. This is not the right moment..."

Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva. When he prepared to cheat the senior, more and more people knelt down...

"Please reveal the truth to us..."

...

"Please reveal the truth to us..."

Even Roslav and Waajid knelt down in front of him with one knee and gazed at Zhang Tie with desiring eyes. Zhang Tie became dumbfounded immediately.

Certainly, Zhang Tie's dumbfounded look also indicated that he was meditating in a solemn way in others eyes.

"Just do that! Castle Lord, this is an opportunity!" Heller's voice sounded in Zhang Tie's mind.

"Ah, but what to say? I'm afraid that my trick would be exposed in 10 minutes!"

"Don't worry about that. Castle Lord only needs to read the words!"

"Read what?"

The moment Zhang Tie asked, he felt his head becoming slightly swollen while many pieces of message flew out of the marvelous arch door. They seemed coming from a complete book.

"What's this?"

"This is the "Immortal Book" which has long disappeared in the long course of human history. Tens of millions of years ago, this book preserved the most powerful and prosperous worldwide religion. It is the sacred code carried forward by all the followers of that religion!"

Zhang Tie became slightly shocked. He didn't ask why Heller had this book. At this moment, his mind had been filled with the expression of the most powerful and prosperous worldwide religion, "Is it okay for me to expose the contents of this book to the public?"

"No problem. In the age when this book became popular, people didn't pursue the power of fighting strength, but the sublimation of souls and the fulfillment of the spiritual world. This is

completely different than the pursuit in this age. In this age, fighting strength is the pursuit. However, the contents of this book just cater to people's pursuit for spiritual truth."

After hearing this explanation, Zhang Tie became reassured, "It's okay as long as they don't threaten my life or do bad things with the contents. But why is Heller so passionate this time?"

After thinking about this question for a couple of seconds, Zhang Tie decided to solve the current dilemma first...

The contents of the "Immortal Book" flew across Zhang Tie's mind while the solemn expression reappeared on Zhang Tie's face.

"Do you know what is truth?"

Zhang Tie's question shocked everyone else. "What is truth?" nobody had thought about this question before...

However, Zhang Tie didn't need their answers at all; instead, he started his preach...

"Truth is not classified by size, difficulty or immortality. All the truths contain the same meaning——perfect love!"

After hearing this explanation, everyone was stunned once again.

"Truth itself is not the key. The key lies in its source, which is the original point of all lights and sacred things. The value of truth is immeasurable..."

"Truth is the manifestation of love. The real truth lies in the love. All those originate from love is truth; whereas, all the sacred things and miracles that you see are the most real expressions of truth..."

"Each one is entitled to have holiness; whereas, before having the holiness, one has to purify himself or herself; otherwise, the holiness would hide itself..."

"All the truth imply lives. The connection between truth and life is redemption. It's redemption when rich people helps poor ones,

when powerful ones protects weaker ones, when those on the riverside pulls out the ones who were almost drown and when smart guys teaches silly ones to identify righteousness..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's sincere words, the tens of thousands of people became quiet once again...

...

Maxim had been too thrilled that he started quivering all over because of a sacred sense of mission. He noted down each of Zhang Tie's words by quivering hands...

...

From today on, Zhang Tie had one more job—to preach after implementing the God's will every day!

After Zhang Tie's preach, the working efficiency increased again. What made Zhang Tie amazed was that even Gangula had rolled up his sleeves and moved stones on the third day since his preach.

Additionally, Zhang Tie found a side effect after the preach, namely nobody dared to see his eyes, including Sabrina, O'Laura and Setton; instead, they all lowered their eyes piously.

...

Although being blocked by the huge stones, they could still contact with the outside by remote sensing crystal.

Zhang Tie didn't know that the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness was boiling when he was trapped here.

On October 8th, ten thousands of xiphodon cavalries of the huge bear tribe flashed across the Costari Plain in the central part of the Ice and Snow Wilderness and headed towards south...causing an earthquake in the Ice and Snow Wilderness...

Chapter 475: Welcome, My Lord

Over 20 days had passed in the underground space. It was November now. Precisely, it was November 2nd. After 5 more days, it would be one month since Zhang Tie was taken as the God. Zhang Tie should get his monthly salary by then, if possible.

Most people's food was almost bottomed out. Although they were not starved, Zhang Tie was afraid that he had to manifest the "God's new will" in a couple of days.

"I really wonder how to explain them if I teleport food here, even fleshes of huge deep-sea monsters out of the void."

—In order to feed you, the Almighty God killed a huge deep-sea monster and brought its fleshes to you.

When this whim flashed by Zhang Tie's mind, Zhang Tie felt hilarious.

"If It's sacred to have spring water at God's will..."

"It should be acceptable to have food out of void..."

"But if a pile of fleshes came out of void, would it be?"

Zhang Tie remembered that God never sent roasted meat to those starved people in any religion or legend. When Moses and a great number of people felt hungry, the God turned dew and water drops into pies, instead of steaks or roasted meat.

If he had to do this, Zhang Tie decided to slip away the moment he returned to the ground. "F*ck, I cannot disguise as the God any longer. This is not a human job at all. Before being caught away and cut into pieces for study, I'd better escape away from Ice and Snow Wilderness as soon as possible."

If he truly feed them with the fleshes of huge deep-sea monster, Zhang Tie was not sure whether someone would connect the attack of the huge deep-sea monster against the Polar Light with

this. By doing this, he might greatly break apart his halos and increase his risk. That would be very irrational.

Thinking of the halos, Zhang Tie was still confused about the new look of his battle-Qi totem. He wondered about the meaning of the new totem. Heller's explanation was very simple, "The new totem is the reflection of Zhang Tie's will, spirit, desire and his mysterious strength. The secret of the new totem could only be explored by Zhang Tie himself. Heller could not tell him much about it now."

Although Heller didn't tell Zhang Tie about the answer but what he said did arouse Zhang Tie's curiosity. Zhang Tie was sure that the new totem was not simple. As for its function, he could figure it out gradually. The priority was to leave out of here.

The only good news these days was that Golden Roc Bank and the huge bear tribe had already dispatched their rescue teams here and had helped them from outside for many days. Benefited from this, they could leave out of here earlier than that they expected.

"If only the tunnel was broken through before the depletion of everybody's food." Zhang Tie walked out of the tent as he thought about this.

He slept in the main tent of the allied forces, where Gangula once slept in. Everyone thought it was reasonable, including Gangula, except for Zhang Tie, who felt a bit shameful about that.

It was really spacious to sleep in such a tent alone. If it was before, Zhang Tie felt that Sabrina and O'Laura should always visit his tent; unexpectedly, they both kept a distance with him. Although they were on his side, even touchable, they regarded Zhang Tie with more reverence because of Zhang Tie's different status. Not only O'Laura, even Sabrina became increasingly more solemn when facing Zhang Tie.

"Is this the sacrifice that I have to make as a fake God?" Zhang Tie finally knew why those evil fathers in Blackhot city were so

abnormal. "D*mn it, they have to do that..."

Seeing Zhang Tie walking out of the tent, all the soldiers who were guarding outside the main tent looked solemn.

At this moment, Roslav and Waajid walked over here. They were more like granites which had been weathering for 1000 years.

O'Laura also walked towards him while holding the sacred kettle with hands. Zhang Tie could not see her expression under the mask; after glancing at her tidy green skirt and the bracelet and finger ring that he had gifted her, Zhang Tie let out a sigh. Zhang Tie knew that O'Laura didn't care about these details before. Compared to her current look, if she wore a set of wearable warrior's clothes and carried that ugly kettle by one hand casually, Zhang Tie would feel much better.

However, Zhang Tie knew that it was impossible. Even though she disliked dressing herself up but she would also pay attention to her image in the public sacred spot. If you want a woman to dress herself casually in such a scene, it was nothing different than ruining their looks.

At the beginning, O'Laura was not used to the bracelet because emerald was very fragile for a LV 10 strong fighter. It could be easily broken. In such case, it was not suitable to wear it. Nevertheless, after noticing that Sabrina was wearing a bracelet gifted by Zhang Tie, O'Laura also wore one. Besides, she put on her finger ring of eagle's eye, which was very eye-catching. Especially when she held that kettle, her finger ring and bracelet attracted others' eyes naturally.

When Setton exposed that Zhang Tie sent the gifts to O'Laura, O'Laura's status became special. Wherever she went, she would gain respect. Although Sabrina didn't say anything, Zhang Tie could sense that her eyes turned increasingly gloomier.

Zhang Tie knew that O'Laura and Sabrina disliked each other. Unexpectedly, they were still contending with each other at this

moment.

Sabrina's counterattack made her a real Goddess. As she was responsible for distributing the water in the 7 huge vats, Sabrina could touch more people. Zhang Tie checked there when she was working and found that her smile was so pure and kind. Her gentle attitude almost made Zhang Tie mistake her for someone else.

Therefore, in this period, the Goddess Water's name was even louder than that of the Goddess Kettle.

Zhang Tie walked ahead of them quietly in a sacred and solemn way.

After a few steps, Zhang Tie looked around and stared at Roslav and Waajid, "You two don't need to be that serious, so doesn't others. If you don't know how to relax the muscles on your face, you can attempt a smile. I won't mind that. So won't others!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words in a solemn manner, Roslav and Waajid slightly frowned their foreheads. After exchanging glances with each other, Roslav twisted his strong neck as he ordered his soldiers, "Have you heard that? Relax your facial muscles and smile!"

Looking at those twisting faces, which could almost scare kids to cry, Zhang Tie was finally defeated, "Alright, whatever you want. But don't force yourselves to smile. Take it easy!"

Everything recovered.

After accessing to the path which was surrounded by tens of thousands of people, they arrived at the entrance of the tunnel, where Sabrina and her female cavalries were waiting in the most pious manner.

Although everyone had seen what Zhang Tie was going to perform for many times, they still kept their eyes on the water which flew out of the kettle constantly like enjoying a very beautiful drawing in a pious and solemn look. Many people knelt

down the ground while putting their palms together. It seemed that their minds was filled with holiness...

When he caught sight of their expressions which were almost the same, Zhang Tie understood it right away. He was afraid that he could not make their faces relaxed before they escaped out of here.

The God's will was manifested once again. After the ceremony, Zhang Tie handed the kettle to O'Laura. After that, he started an hour preach...

The moment he opened his mouth, everyone became fascinated while Maxim rapidly noted them down...

...

When Zhang Tie was preaching, the other end of the tunnel was completely different.

A 1000 m long team of 70,000-80,000 soldiers were moving away all the stones that blocked in front of them...

A huge rock blocked their way, which could be barely moved.

"Go away!", hearing this roar, those experienced ones hurriedly ran away. With a gleaming battle-Qi, a figure flew over here. With only one punch, he had inserted his palm into the huge rock. The huge rock was broken into pieces at once, which now could be easily moved.

Closely after that, the soldiers rushed forward and moved all the stones in a wink like diligent ants.

Half an hour later, after another huge rock was broken into pieces, the soldiers yelled as they had broken through the tunnel.

What made everyone curious was that nobody was in the opposite. When they were dumbfounded, a team of powerful fighters had already rushed in.

Hearing the footsteps surging towards him from behind, Zhang Tie's heart pounded heavily. He was so thrilled that he wanted to

jump up. Thankfully, he stood still and didn't move. So didn't the tens of thousands of people.

After breaking through the tunnel, the soldiers only saw a handsome young man sitting on a stone platform in a solemn way. Those tens of thousands of people whom were supposed to be flurried and thrilled were all sitting calmly in front of that young man while crossing their legs. They didn't even look that the newcomers at all.

Only that person's sound was resonating clearly in the relics.

Two women were standing on the young man's sides. One woman was holding a kettle. Roslav and Waajid were standing behind that man with a team of the huge bear soldiers.

The scene in front of them had undoubtedly indicated that young man's status.

Those newcomers drew in a deep breath.

"All the fear comes from your false perception, which is the nightmare. Suppose I cast light on a person who is making the nightmare, he would also include the light into his nightmare and intensify his fear. When he wakes up, if he recognizes the light, he will become fearless while the false nature of nightmare will be exposed. This doesn't rely on your illusions and false perceptions, but on your perception about the real world. The perception not only makes you free, but also makes you clear that you're born to be free..."

After saying this, Zhang Tie stopped, as he calmly looked at those soldiers who had just rushed in. Zhang Tie sensed a powerful Qi from these fighters.

Zhang Tie finally let out a deep sigh. He knew that his career as the fake God would finally come to an end.

However, Zhang Tie became happy too early...

When the team of soldiers arrived in front of Zhang Tie, they all

knelt down in front of him with one knee when Zhang Tie thought that they would say something. Even Roslav, Waajid and those huge bear soldiers walked to Zhang Tie's front and knelt down together with them.

Not only Zhang Tie, even O'Laura and Sabrina didn't know what was going on.

"My Lord, the huge bear tribe welcome you back to the Sacred Mountain!"

When they knelt down, they caused a boom, which woke up everyone else.

Zhang Tie's brain powered off for a few seconds. If not he knew that nobody was behind him, he really wanted to see whether these guys were talking to him or not.

"Roslav, what's going on? When did I become the lord of huge bear tribe!" Zhang Tie calmly said while his heart was pounding. "Are they playing a trick with me?"

"Since you were born, you were doomed to be our Lord. This is the prophecy of our great pontiff Elzida. Pontiff Sarlin has already confirmed it. We've already waited for this day for hundreds of years. Please forgive us. Waajid and I have already confirmed your status. However, we didn't tell you about that. If you're angry about our concealment, hope you can be satisfied with this..." after saying this, Roslav and Waajid exchanged glances with each other while a fortitude look flashed across their eyes. Meanwhile, they drew out their daggers and stabbed towards their own hearts.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie raised his hand and fly out to knock off their daggers at once...

After thinking about it for a short while with his eyes closed, Zhang Tie finally opened his eyes, "Is Pontiff Sarlin above there?"

"As Pontiff Sarlin is too old, he's not convenient to come inside. Although he's together with the army, he could only welcome you

above there!"

"Let's leave out of here first!"

Zhang Tie picked himself up and walked towards the entrance of the tunnel...

Chapter 476: My Lord is Returning!

Three days later, on the evening of November 5th, when everybody ran out of food, tens of thousands of soldiers of the allied forces and pioneers finally returned to the ground and saw the bright stars above Ice and Snow Wilderness after being trapped for 1 month.

As they've stayed in the underground for too long, many people had adapted to the dark environment. Zhang Tie especially chose this period for them to return to the ground because If they came out in the daytime, many of them would be blinded at the sight of the dazzling sunlight; but there should be no problem if they came back in the evening.

After breathing the fresh air above Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie finally became relaxed after being nervous for about a month. It was like a dream for him to bring so many people back alive. Even though Zhang Tie was not a narcissist but he also had mixed feelings at this moment.

"I made it, my brothers!" Zhang Tie muttered with inner feelings as he was fully moved.

When the first wisp of night wind blew over, Zhang Tie's eye corners turned a bit wet. It was because of pleasure, excitement and a bit pride. Even if he had disguised as the God, he successfully brought most of the figures out. For Zhang Tie, it was the most meaningful thing that he had done ever since he was born. "If dad and mom knew this, they would be proud of me for sure..."

It was uneasy, precisely, it was impossible for anyone else except him.

Even in the three days of travel back onto the ground, it was still not smooth as the contradiction between the tens of thousands of warriors of the huge bear tribe and those who were trapped inside had broken out since the beginning.

The contradiction between the two parties was caused by the 7 stone vats. Although they were valueless vats in Zhang Tie's eyes, they led to the conflict between those warriors of the huge bear tribe and those being trapped underground.

Although they were common in Zhang Tie's eyes, the huge vats were much more valuable than gold in other's eyes. Because they witnessed the God's will, they possessed special meanings as sacred objects.

The warriors of the huge bear tribe wanted to take away the huge vats; however, those pious followers of Zhang Tie stood out as they didn't allow the warriors of the huge bear tribe to move them. For the belonging right of the stone vats, they even drew out their weapons, making the atmosphere very tense.

For those warriors of the huge bear tribe, all the honors created by their Lord should return with their Lord. By contrast, for those people who had been fobbed off by Zhang Tie in the underground for almost one month, nobody could take away the redemption gifted by Peter.

Not until then did Zhang Tie fully understand what Donder said, "The thing which has been confirmed by the public is the fact!"

When the public thought the stone vats were unusual, the stone vats were unusual.

In human history, this thing being related to God's will and belief always had unmeasurable, great values. Numerous legends, wars and plots were caused by these special things. Numerous powers were created or vanished because of them.

The cup that Jesus used at the last supper became a sacred cup. It was said that the sacred cup could make people eternal!

The wooden cross which Jesus was nailed on became the sacred object of the Christianity. It was worshipped by numerous followers as the true cross.

A common centurion stabbed that common lance into Jesus's body. Being sprayed with Jesus' fresh blood, it became the famous lance of Longinus. Finally, this lance became the God's object and was used by the Roman empire to show off his power and meritorious deeds.

A common cup, a wooden cross and an iron lance became the most sacred objects because they were related to someone. Whether an object was sacred or valuable was not determined by its own value but what it had experienced and people it had met.

What Zhang Tie manifested was undoubtedly the most sacred in eyes of these people. Similarly, the above three special objects being related to God's wills could not be measured by money at all.

The cup that Jesus used became a sacred object, the toilet bowl that an emperor once used became a cultural relic. Then what the object that the God used would become?

Everybody knew it. Also because of this, when Zhang Tie decided to leave the underground space, the value of those sacred objects became outstanding at once.

At this moment, of course Zhang Tie would not disappoint his pious followers. Therefore, Zhang Tie ordered his followers to carry out the 7 huge stone vats.

The warriors of the huge bear tribe followed Zhang Tie's order immediately. However, everyone fixed their eyes on the sacred kettle which O'Laura was holding tightly.

As each stone vat weighed tons, it was very difficult to carry them out. In the course of transportation, all the warriors exerted their full efforts. As long as they could touch the vats, they would feel honorable.

One day before they arrived at the ground, when they rested in the evening, Zhang Tie manifested the God's will for the last time in the underground space by filling the 7 vats.

This time, ten thousands of warriors dispatched by the huge bear tribe to rescue them also witnessed the God's will...along with many rescuers from other tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness...and tens of thousands of people dispatched by Golden Roc Bank from Eschyle City...

The total population exceeded 100,000.

Zhang Tie accomplished this rite in the most attractive place of the underground space. At the sight of the God's will for the first time, many people became so thrilled, especially the warriors of the huge bear tribe, all of them knelt down.

"Here's our Lord, here's our Lord..."

Each warrior of the huge bear tribe shouted loudly inside. After waiting for hundreds of years, they finally welcomed their Lord. Who else was more qualified to be their Lord than a man who could manifest the God's will. The entire huge bear tribe would be honorable about this person! This Lord was gifted by the God.

"We will leave out of here tomorrow. Therefore, this is the last manifestation of God's will..." Zhang Tie's voice resonated clearly in the huge karst cave as he glanced at those silent people with a solemn look at a high risk of being seen through.

Everyone became silent and shocked. Zhang Tie was satisfied with this effect very much. He found that was the difference between the big figures and humble ones. When big figures made the decisions, they didn't have to explain anything; especially at his position, nobody dared to doubt him.

However, Zhang Tie still made an explanation to them, which also became pretty sacred.

"If one's belief has to be induced by God's will and wonders, one must have entered the wrong way and misunderstood the truth and the meaning of being sacred!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, everyone felt relieved.

They then regarded Zhang Tie with more reverence and felt lucky. Especially those who survived the relics, the bitterness and despair that they had experienced in the relics was really trivial than what they had obtained and witnessed.

Of course, the so-called God's will was precious and shocking because of rarity.

In the next 2 hours, Zhang Tie preached once again. He kept talking until he finished the rest of the "Immortal Book". Finally he drew a full stop to his status as a damn father.

Those who listened to the contents of the "Immortal Book" dropped tears one after another. They felt like they had heard the immortal truth and saw the true light.

The moment Zhang Tie's preach ended, numerous people had swarmed forward. Zhang Tie then dipped the water in the vats using his fingers and flicked it over those people with a faint smile, which also indicated that he was bidding a farewell to the one-month period as a damn father...

Over one night, Zhang Tie's deeds and words in the relics had been spread to everyone.

Under the gaze of everyone, he let pure water flow out of the sacred kettle...

He even healed many slightly and heavily wounded people by just putting his hand on the chest of the patient or wounded people. Each one who was cured by Zhang Tie on the battle field could witness that...

His blessing was also priceless. Under the baptism and blessing of Peter, Roslav and Waajid even completed their LV 2 sublimation...

And that sacred totem, like the new-born sun, the bloody and fiery curtain which could brighten the dark...

He even spread the immortal light and truth to everyone...

Finally, he led tens of thousands of people out of the dilemma and granted everybody with a new life...

When others spread his meritorious deeds, over one night, Zhang Tie also became completely relaxed like having relieved his heavy burden.

The three-days travel felt like a triumphant return.

Zhang Tie finally led everybody out of there.

Under the starlight all over the sky, Zhang Tie faced a borderless, silent jungle of square formations composed of blades and spears which stood as firm as stones. The gloomy armors reflected the pale blue moonlight.

Some seniors with white beards were standing in front of the formations. The one in the middle of them was especially eye-catching as he was wearing a snowwhite sacrificial robe while the faint light over him was slightly expanding and shrinking. Standing there, he felt like breathing the starlight over the sky.

With a sound "boom", the whole earth quaked while the borderless steel and iron jungle knelt down with one knee before roaring.

"My Lord is returning!"

...

"My Lord is returning!"

...

"My Lord is returning!"

...

Chapter 477: Doubts!

Zhang Tie and some white-beard seniors stared at each other for about 2 minutes in the spacious main tent. None of them spoke a word.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt being an eccentric item as those seniors eyes made Zhang Tie feel being naked like how mercury penetrated in the marrow.

A couple of minutes ago, Zhang Tie's heart pounded heavily as he was shocked by what he saw. However, he had already recovered his composure now. Additionally, after leading his men out of there, Zhang Tie felt having completed his mission. He didn't need to disguise as the God anymore. He could be himself once again. Therefore, he was relaxed all over.

After over 1 month, 5 more leakless fruits had become ripe on the small tree. Zhang Tie could advance to LV 8 at any time. Plus the 9 huge wolf seven-strength fruits which had not been eaten, Zhang Tie felt that his target in Ice and Snow Wilderness had almost been reached. At this moment, he thought he could directly change his look and leave.

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie recovered his composure. In the past three days, he realized that the prophecy of the pontiff Elzida of Ice and Snow Wilderness indeed existed. Many people knew about it. According to the prophecy of Elzida, a great Lord would appear, who would rule all the tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness and establish a country. After that, he would lead all the Slavs towards a great rejuvenation. Although the prophecy was true, Zhang Tie would never believe that he was that Lord in the Prophecy which had been spread for hundreds of years.

This was too ridiculous, just like someone suddenly foisted a lottery in his hand on the street and could not wait to tell him that he hit 5 million gold coins. That must be a plot.

Staring at these seniors, Zhang Tie slowly sorted out his thoughts. "These seniors must have realized my value after knowing that I manifested the God's will in the underground space. Therefore they want to push me to the throne of the king of their own tribe. After that, they could threaten me to rule the other tribes and make me their puppet."

This was also feasible for Zhang Tie. "Like doing a business, as long as it was advantageous to both sides, and these seniors could afford me, I don't mind being a puppet."

Zhang Tie admitted that the huge bear tribe was very rich. His ambition was also stimulated by those strong warriors. Zhang Tie realized that he could use the relationship between him and the most powerful tribe here.

Zhang Tie thought that he had found the truth; therefore, he slowly revealed a sneer. Arms crossed, Zhang Tie directly leaned against the back of the chair. Meanwhile he put his feet on the table arrogantly.

Zhang Tie imagined that if he had a cigar in his hand while O'Laura and Sabrina were standing behind him in a hot low-chest butt-tightening skirt, and one of them was peeling off a grape for him while another one was pinching his shoulders. That would be perfect! At least he would not be beaten by these seniors on Qi field. Pitifully, besides him and these seniors, nobody else was involved.

These old guys were damn fathers. Therefore, it wouldn't work by disguising as a damn father anymore. Neither would Zhang Tie like to disguise anymore.

"Honestly, what do you want me to do? What is your condition? As we're all smart, don't waste time any more. As I've been moved by that scene for a couple of seconds, I can coordinate with you to put on a play. It's okay even to be your puppet as long as you can afford my demands. Additionally, there's one point that I have to

tell you—I have my principle; if you want to cooperate with me, don't expect me to do those evil things together with you!"

Except for senior Sarlin, the eyebrows of the other two seniors on Sarlin's sides jumped as they turned around and stared at Sarlin.

Zhang Tie's ruthlessness didn't let senior Sarlin frown, instead, he revealed a wisp of satisfactory smile.

"We want you to be the clan elder and leader of the huge bear tribe, and we cannot give you any conditions!" senior Sarlin said with a slight smile.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie was enraged. He instantly sat up straight and patted on the table, causing a "bang!" in the tent. He glared at these seniors, "No way. You want me to follow your order without payment. What a nice plan!"

"Not because we cannot satisfy your demands. As all of our things belong to the huge bear tribe. After becoming the clan elder and leader of the huge bear tribe, you will have the entire tribe. You have the right to dispose anything, including all the materials and warriors. We cannot trade with you using your belongings!"

Zhang Tie was dumbfounded as he had never imagined that pontiff Sarlin would answer him in this way.

"You mean the entire tribe belongs to me?"

"Yes!"

"I can casually dispose the properties of the tribe, even use up all the savings of the tribe?"

"Yes, as long as you will, you can dispose all the wealth of the tribe. If you're happy, you can even throw all the gold coins of the tribe into the ocean!" Pontiff Sarlin replied as calmly as before.

"Can all the warriors of the tribe follow my order?"

"Yes, it's their mission and honor to implement your will!"

"Even let them die?"

"If you want them to die, death would be the paramount honor for them. Each warrior in Ice and Snow Wilderness would like to die for their Lord!"

Zhang Tie revealed a sneer, "Fine, I agree to be your clan elder. I deliver an order right now. All the warriors prepare well for attacking the Eschyle City!"

After a deep glance at Zhang Tie, Pontiff Sarlin directly turned around and told another elder on his side calmly, "Toles, go summon all the military officials!"

After taking a deep breath, the elder stood up at once. Without saying anything, he strode outside the tent.

"As the only city in Ice and Snow Wilderness founded by the iron bear tribe. This city represents the iron bear tribe. We, the huge bear tribe has sophisticated relations with all the other bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness. If the huge bear tribe wants to fight another bear tribe, nobody could deliver such an order, except you. Therefore, we will summon all the military officials outside. You will deliver the order to them by yourself!" Pontiff Sarlin explained it to Zhang Tie calmly.

Hearing this explanation, Zhang Tie put back his feet from the table. He sat straight and stared at pontiff Sarlin's face with narrowed eyes, wanting to see whether this old guy is telling a lie or not.

Pontiff Sarlin also stared at Zhang Tie calmly. They just stared at each other silently like the tranquil nightscene.

"He's a liar, this old guy must be lying to me." Zhang Tie muttered inside, "He thinks that I will stop Toles if he said this. After that, I will believe in their next lies. Humph, humph, no way. I will see how the play goes on."

Zhang Tie thought those old guys were cheating him with a lot of reasons. Being slightly unexpected, Pontiff Sarlin directly order

Toles to summon those military officials outside. Although such a trick could frighten average people, it didn't work in front of Zhang Tie.

Toles directly strode out of the main tent without any hesitation. Even when he reached at the entrance of the tent, he didn't glance at Peter at all.

Only after over 10 seconds, the fevered drums sounded outside the tent.

"All the military officials will arrive soon. Please take the main seat, clan elder!" Pontiff Sarlin stood up as he made a gesture to invite Zhang Tie. The main seat was about 1 m in width while the main table was covered with a snowwhite hide of an unknown beast, making it pretty gorgeous.

After peeping at Pontiff Sarlin, Zhang Tie looked solemn as he raised his head and strode towards the main seat. He then threw himself on the main seat.

Beside the main seat, there were three smaller chairs. Pontiff Sarlin and another old guy walked over there and sat down, Pontiff Sarlin's seat was closest to Zhang Tie while another old guy's seat was farthest to Zhang Tie, leaving the middle one empty.

After a short while, Toles walked in silently and sat straight on the middle chair beside Zhang Tie.

Seeing the solemn looks of the three old guys, Zhang Tie became slightly hesitated as a whim flashed across his mind. "Do they mean it? How come such a good thing fall on me? That's impossible! But if the old guys lied to me, it's unnecessary for them to do this. That would be a great loss. Liars would never do that."

When Zhang Tie doubted about that, all the military officials of huge bear tribe entered in armors while raising their heads, weapons over their waists...

Chapter 478: The Key Box

The huge bear tribe dispatched 100,000 people southwards. All of them were elite xiphodon cavalries. This population was equal to that of an elite corps. Zhang Tie knew that most of the tribes and forces in Ice and Snow Wilderness could not resist such a great power except for the bear tribes.

Over 20 military officials were qualified to enter the main tent, which included Aukin whom Zhang Tie picked up in the relics two days ago.

Aukin was a battalion commander, who ruled an armed force which guarded the sacred place of the huge bear tribe on Mount Elzida. The name of the armed force was "bear-killing camp". All the fighters of bear-killing camp were above LV 6. Across the Ice and Snow Wilderness, no tribe was able to establish a bear-killing camp of ten thousands of people except for the huge bear tribe.

The bear-killing camp was the main force that huge bear tribe dispatched to welcome Zhang Tie back in the deep underground space. They also witnessed the last manifestation of God's will in the underground. Although coming from bear-killing camp and were both LV 10 strong fighters, Roslav and Waajid were just Qi leaders. Therefore, they were not qualified to attend such a high-level conference.

The military establishments of the tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness were different than that Zhang Tie had touched. The minimal military unit in the tribes was wu(伍), who led 4 soldiers; 2 wus formed 1 shi(什); 5 shis formed a team; 2 teams included 100 soldiers, the head of which was centurion; 500 soldiers formed 1 qi(旗); 2 qis included 1000 soldiers, the head of which was chiliarch; 3000 soldiers formed a feng(锋); 10000 soldiers formed a battalion; 3 battalions formed a regiment; 10,0000 soldiers formed an army.

Briefly, the military ranks in the troops of the tribes in Ice and

Snow Wilderness were as follows: wu leader, shi leader, team leader, centurion; qi leader, chiliarch, feng leader, battalion commander, regimental commander and army commander. There was no army group of hundreds of thousands of soldiers in Ice and Snow Wilderness at all. Only the clan elder of the tribe was qualified to manage so many soldiers, if possible.

Such military establishments were closely related to the ranks of the tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Tribes were divided into rat tribe, eagle tribe, wolf tribe, leopard tribe, fox tribe and bear tribe. For example, a grey eagle tribe only had about 1000 regular soldiers. The rank of the head of a grey eagle tribe was equivalent to feng leader in Ice and Snow Wilderness, which was only a bit higher than chiliarch. O'Laura was a chiliarch in Ice and Snow Wilderness on the premise that she could completely take over the power of grey eagle tribe.

Ice and Snow Wilderness was also strictly hierarchical. Although being not as abnormal as Norman Empire, hierarchical barriers could also be seen everywhere here.

Take this moment as an example. The first batch of people who were qualified to enter the main tent were battalion commanders, whose personal power was at least fighting master or great fighting master. The moment they poured in, their powerful Qi field made Zhang Tie stressed, especially those leaders ahead of them. Although their Qi were not as powerful as that of knights that Zhang Tie had met but they could also cause a strong stress. If not being much more powerful than common LV 7 fighters and his great spiritual energy, Zhang Tie could not even sit firmly under the gaze and stress of so many people.

Sitting straight on the broad hide chair, Zhang Tie put his hands on his knees while glancing at those leaders one after another.

Previously, these leaders were told that Zhang Tie had some considerations about returning to the huge bear tribe and needed to negotiate with two elders and pontiff Sarlin. However, after

entering the main tent, these leaders found that Zhang Tie had already sat on the main seat of the ruler of the tribe. Therefore, they all thought that Zhang Tie already admitted his new status as they all revealed an ecstatic and exciting expression.

After entering the tent, all the leaders showed their respect to Zhang Tie by raising their right hands and punching on their left chest armors.

"Clan elder!" over 20 people shouted in gruff voice in unison. This voice not only resonated in the tent, but also drifted outside of the tent. After that, Zhang Tie heard constant yells from soldiers outside the tent. Remarkably, after hearing "clan elder!", those soldiers outside the tent knew Zhang Tie's stance; therefore, they started to cheer up.

Hearing the exciting and pleasant expressions on the faces of these leaders and the words "clan elder!", which arose louder yells, Zhang Tie knew that it could never be an illusion or trap made by Pontiff Sarlin; instead, it indicated that these leaders and soldiers accepted this prophecy, namely Zhang Tie himself.

"In this case, if someone would still use me to order the other lords, they would have trouble for sure."

"Clan elder has military order to deliver!" Toles stood up and said with no facial expression.

Soon after Toles' words, all the 20-odd military officials changed their faces. Chest raising, they all stared at Zhang Tie with gleaming eyes.

Zhang Tie glanced at Pontiff Sarlin, who still looked calm.

At this moment, numerous thoughts flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. Finally, all the thoughts converged into an icy and calm decision,

"Set out for Eschyle City tomorrow!"

Zhang Tie stared at those military officials in front of him. After

hearing this order, some of them were surprised, some were confused while some were so excited that they even quivered all over with gleaming eyes. Zhang Tie knew that his decision was a bit ludicrous; therefore, he could understand why some were surprised or confused; however, he could not understand why some were excited.

Zhang Tie thought that some military officials would definitely inquire about the reason; at least, Pontiff Sarlin should inquire about it. However, nobody asked. After showing their respect to Zhang Tie by punching their chests once again, all the military officials of the huge bear tribe left the main tent.

Zhang Tie and three elders were left alone in the main tent. After delivering that order casually, Zhang Tie noticed that the other two elders looked stiff.

After half a minute, Zhang Tie heard a distant and rich mort outside the tent. In only a couple of seconds, the yells of soldiers ceased.

"That's the sleep mort. As we're going to fight tomorrow, our soldiers have to sleep and rest as soon as possible so that they could keep their energy for the battle!" Pontiff Sarlin explained.

"What if I was kidding?" Zhang Tie smiled which almost caused a heart attack to good-hearted people.

"I've told you that the entire huge bear tribe belongs to you. You have the right to make fun!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter's, "If you have some trump card, just show it; you will have time to regret. The longer you wait, the higher the cost of regret would be!"

"I indeed have one item for you. Gouras, take out the item left by great Pontiff Elzida!"

...

Two minutes later, an aged odd-looking, heavy bronze metal box

was placed in front of Zhang Tie. The elder called Gouras put it onto the table in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie found it was a strange key box. Seven metal gears were put at the opening of the box. Each metal gear was respectively marked with traditional Chinese characters "零, 壹, 貳, 叁, 肆, 伍, 陆, 柒, 捌, 玖", which means "0,1,2,3,4,5,6,7,8,9".

The three gears on the most left side represented the very year of black iron calendar. The two gears in the middle indicated the very month while the rest two gears meant the very day.

"What's this?"

"Great Pontiff Elzida left that prophecy together with this box. He expressed to leave this box to the one in the prophecy. Only the very person could open this box. The code of this box is that person's birthday of black iron calendar."

"You mean your great Pontiff Elzida left this box to me?" Zhang Tie asked with an unbelievable look. Zhang Tie's feeling was like how those crazy followers witnessed his manifestation of God's will.

"Right. This key box is specially designed. It only allowed us to try three times. If you mistook the codes for three times, the device inside the metal box would destroy this box together with the item inside. Because of this reason, none of pontiffs in the history of the huge bear tribe dared to open this box. In fact, nobody touched this box at all!" Pontiff Sarlin explained in a solemn manner.

"What's inside?"

"No one knows!"

After hearing this answer, Zhang Tie doubted, "Are these three elders finding excuse for themselves. If I mistook the code for three times, they would have an excuse to declare that I'm not that very person in the prophecy. After that, they could kick me away. Otherwise, this box should be opened by any code. However,

something dangerous could be hidden inside..."

"What a naive trick..."

With a smile, Zhang Tie pulled over the box and casually rotated the seven gears. He input a date which was different from his birthday before pressing down the metal handle of the box. Although with a click, the box didn't move. However, the seven gears started to rotate rapidly and finally returned to "0".

Zhang Tie input another wrong date on purpose. With another click, the box still didn't move while the seven gears returned to "0" again.

At this moment, Zhang Tie found Pontiff Sarlin changed his face while Gouras and Toles became tense.

Zhang Tie shrugged with a shameless smile, "Hehe, don't worry, I input the wrong dates on purpose. I just wanted to see whether this box could be opened by wrong dates. The fact is you are not lying to me!"

After hearing this faint statement, Gouras and Toles instantly glared at Zhang Tie.

Almost in a split second, Zhang Tie felt being pressed by two mountains. He was almost forced to kneel down.

"Knights, f*ck" Zhang Tie swore inside. Although the two old guys' Qi field and stress was not as frightening as that of the elder of Huaiyuan Palace, they were undoubtedly very overwhelming.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the two old guys were knights. He gritted his teeth while sweat flew off his forehead...

"One more time, the correct one is enough!!" Pontiff Sarlin's voice sounded while the two huge mountains instantly disappeared.

After forcefully swallowing his saliva, Zhang Tie mopped the sweat on his forehead. Even though he could not read people's heart, from the expression in the eyes of Gouras and Toles, Zhang

Tie had already known what they were thinking about——how come such a r*scal and b*stard manifested the God's will underground? How come he is the Lord of huge bear tribe?

Under the glare of Gouras and Toles, Zhang Tie adjusted the gears for the third time. This time, he input his own birthday——8730326, namely March 26th, 873th year of Black Iron Calendar.

After inputting this date, Zhang Tie gritted his teeth as he pressed down the metal handle...

This time, the seven metal gears didn't rotate any more.

After rustles and slightly jarring frictions between the machine and metal, the metal key box slightly opened like a blossom...

The furious expression in the eyes of Gouras and Toles finally disappeared; instead, they watched the metal box opening one layer after another like blossoming in complicated looks. After bowing towards Zhang Tie, Gouras, Toles and Pontiff Sarlin left the main tent before the box fully opened.

As the item in the box was left to the very person by Pontiff Elzida, according to the will of the great prophet, only the one who opened it could see it.

The moment Zhang Tie caught sight of that item in the box, he was stunned...

Chapter 479: A Letter from Great Prophet

The three elders of huge bear tribe waited outside the tent...

At this moment, the camp of 100,000 soldiers was like a sleeping monster. However, it was still boisterous in the relics canyon which was a bit farther away. The huge bonfire rose high and reflected the sky, while tens of thousands of people were singing and dancing around the bonfires to celebrate their rebirth.

Seven huge stone vats were standing in the middle of those people. At this moment, the vats had become their sacred objects with numerous people praying around them. More and more people were crowding around the vats. They wanted to touch the sacred objects that had witnessed God's will.

Another group of people were sitting on the edge of the camp of the huge bear tribe. They didn't go to sleep after hearing the sleep mort, unlike the soldiers of huge bear tribe. Neither did they celebrate like the people in the relics canyon. They were just sitting outside of the cordon of the camp silently, watching the main tent from over there.

They had followed Peter here when Peter was welcomed by the soldiers of huge bear tribe. Nobody had asked them to come. After being stopped by the soldiers of huge bear tribe, they just sat silently like sculptures outside the camp, with legs crossed and eyes fixed in the direction where Peter had disappeared.

The group of people included soldiers from other tribes, pioneers and other various people. They would never have gathered together in the past. However, they converged now like water. Although it was silent, a great, invisible power was gradually surging.

The three elders slowly moved their eyes from the relics canyon to this group of people. They gazed at those people for a long time.

"I feel a great power, which is even more powerful and stable than that of dare-to-die corps!" Toles sighed, "If something happened to the person in the tent, these people would launch an attack towards the camp immediately. Even though they cannot defeat the 100,000 elite soldiers of our tribe, they would still attack us at any cost. None of them would retreat until the last one's blood had ran dry. If we had to clean up such a group of people, even though we outnumber them and our individual troops' fighting strength is higher than that of theirs, we would have to pay at least the same price as them!"

"This is the power of belief. That person is God in their eyes!" Pontiff Sarlin said.

"Honestly, numerous people have already witnessed that man's manifestation of the God's will. I still find it hard to believe that he turned a common tin kettle into an inexhaustible sweet spring!" Elder Gouras shook his head, "If it were true, I should have taken a look down there myself!"

"Are you sure that you won't act like those people after seeing it?" Elder Toles pointed at the batch of people who were still waiting there silently.

"I don't know. Perhaps I will see through the trick. Perhaps, I might also be trapped. In this world, even the most mysterious alchemy follows its own natural rules which can never be overridden. Even 3-in-1 strength, the most powerful legendary strength, comes from the accumulation, improvement and enlightenment of knights after long-term cultivation. But this completely violates natural rules. Unbelievable!" Elder Gouras said in a solemn manner.

"With rules we can achieve great power, but we should also show awe and humility towards unknowns. We should know that we're trivial!" Pontiff Sarlin said while his eyes were as profound as the stars all over the sky. "Since ancient times, nothing could be more eternal and greater than these stars. I have a premonition that

what we see today might have an unimaginable influence in the future. Perhaps, in future, when people talk about what happened today, the trivial person in our eyes now will seem brilliant. However, we will be his humble subordinates..."

After hearing Elder Sarlin's words, Gouras and Toles drew in a cold breath at the same time. Gouras and Toles both knew what this premonition from Elder Sarlin indicated, as he could understand the rules of time and space. As if they seemingly understood something, they then threw their eyes once again towards those who were celebrating around the bonfires in the relics canyon with their hands touching the vats, and that group of people who were sitting silently outside the military camp.

After thinking for a short while, Elder Toles asked Sarlin, "Are we really attacking Eschyle City tomorrow? If we fight the iron bear tribe, the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness will topple over. Additionally, a big problem would arise. Although our tribe is powerful, we're not able to unify the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness using force."

"Are we smarter than our great prophet Pontiff?" Elder Sarlin asked.

Gouras and Toles both shook their heads.

"Can we see farther than our great prophet?" Sarlin continued.

Gouras and Toles shook their heads once again.

"Do you think that our great prophet betrayed Slavs?"

Gouras and Toles shook their heads forcefully. They would never doubt the great prophet's affection and responsibility towards Slavs. If not for the great prophet Elzida, all the Slavs would have been reduced to dust and demon's food in history.

"If so, let's believe in and follow the decision of our great prophet, who's more intelligent and more concerned about the fate of the Slavs!" Elder Sarlin set the tone, "If that person from the prophecy

of our great prophet does what is within our expectations, he would be nothing different than us. If so, how do you expect him to do what we cannot do?"

"Pontiff Sarlin, before he opened the box were you also unsure about whether he was the right person?" Gouras asked.

"As the maze being interwoven with time and space is too mysterious, what I see and confirm are not always definitely true. For the lives and futures of the 100,000 soldiers of huge bear tribe, I have to stay modest and sensible. But at this time, I feel we have no reason to doubt at all."

"What on earth is in the box?" Elder Toles finally asked.

"Honestly, I don't know. The great prophet didn't want us to see it, so how could anyone know?" Pontiff Sarlin said in a sad mood.

...

When the three elders were pondering about the item in the box, Zhang Tie became stunned about the item inside the box.

Inside the box was no top secret item, no magic weapon, not even some valuable jewelry. It was only a piece of paper. That's right, it was a tidy piece of parchment on a black piece of flannelette with words on it. It seemed to be a letter.

After gazing at it for a short while, Zhang Tie picked up that piece of parchment, spread it and started to read the words on it. Although the piece of parchment had changed in color, its words were still very clear.

After glancing at just the first line of words, Zhang Tie almost sprung up. It was written tidily in Chinese. But what made Zhang Tie amazed was not that the great prophet could write beautiful Chinese characters, but the contents of that first line.

—Hello, Zhang Tie. Perhaps, I should call you Peter Hamplester. I'm Elzida.

After reading the first line, it was like Zhang Tie had been struck by a lightning bolt. In a split second, he felt goosebumps all over him as his face changed.

The key box might be a very delicate trick. However, this letter was definitely not a trick. Because even Zhang Tie's parents and his friends in Hidden Dragon Island didn't know about his whereabouts, not to mention that he had changed his appearance. Therefore, this letter was real. It had really been written by Elzida, the great prophet.

After being confused for about two minutes, Zhang Tie recovered his composure. He then continued to read the letter, full of awe.

——Don't be amazed about how I know you. When you are able to see through time and space, you will also know what will happen in the future, like me.

——Don't admire me as my road is very difficult and lonely, which doesn't fit you. When you read this letter humans won't need spectators, like me, who can see through time and space. What they'll need are brave warriors, who can embark on a blood-filled pathway with sabers and swords for the survival of the human race!

Chapter 480: The Contents of the Letter

"The third holy war between humans and demons will be far more miserable than that of the former two holy wars. I know you must want to know about the result of the third holy war and whether humans win the war or not. I can only tell you that, in the long course of history, I've seen too many variations of the future. None of them is fixed. The power of the demons and humans involved in this holy war has gone beyond that which I could predict."

"To a certain degree, I'm a spectator on the riverside of history. In other words, I'm just an ant on a huge tree. Compared to the ants walking on the ground, I can see farther than them, because I'm in a three-dimensional world and they are in a two-dimensional world!"

"However some humans and demons are like birds that can fly into the air from the top of a tree. Just as ants on the ground cannot imagine the world in the eyes of an ant on the tree, the ant on the tree also cannot imagine the world in the eyes of the birds. Neither can they predict where the birds are headed for, because birds are in an even more complex world of time and space!"

"You're that bird. Perhaps you can grow into an eagle. When you read this letter, you'll still be climbing on the ground, not having any concept of the sky. However, you will finally grow into a bird. Because you have a great power that is much more powerful than that of many other birds, even if you are on the ground, I still cannot clearly see your road ahead."

"Don't worry, I could not see too many of your secrets. I could only identify your two faces and your names in different situations, as your secrets are covered by a great power. There are so many unknowns and awesome things in the universe. Sometimes we have to admit that we're small and ignorant. It's your great power that reminds me of my own smallness and

ignorance."

"Therefore, compared to your curiosity, I care more about the fate of the Slavs in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Because I'm also a part of the Slavs, all of my friends and relatives and those who love me are continuing their bloodlines and finding other ways to live."

"If I were a commoner and could only be responsible for my own fate, I would choose to accept everything as arranged by fate. However, when I climb up the tree and see the fate of those Slavs on the ground, I start to feel a heavy burden on me. I want to do something for these people who share the same bloodline as me. When I see a flood in front of their path, I want to lead them to a relatively safer place!"

"Of course, this is not enough. When the third holy war arrives, no place is going to be safe in this world. Not even in remote places, where it's far away from the Eastern Continent. Therefore, I left my prophecy to them and let them wait for your arrival in the most pious manner!"

"Please forgive me for my selfishness as an old Slav. I'm sorry for signing this contract with you without your consent. However, I have to do this. Because in the future that I see all the hundreds of millions of Slavs wail and die, which makes me sleepless, sorrowful and despaired. Only a great power, which I cannot touch and see, could prevent this from happening. Only by being influenced and covered by that power can the destinies of all the Slavs in the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness be changed!"

"You have that power!"

"I know that you will come to Ice and Snow Wilderness sooner or later."

"Therefore, I leave the prophecy and choose an unknown road for all the Slavs. Compared to the cruelty that I could see, an unknown road is my best reward and the last hope for Slavs to survive on!"

"When you read this letter, the Slavs in Ice and Snow Wilderness will have already split up into different tribes. After hundreds of years, although the Slavs in Ice and Snow Wilderness still respect me, more and more Slavs will have started to put their own demands and interests in front of my prophecy. Whereas, no matter what, the warriors of huge bear tribe and the priests in the hieron will follow my orders and carry forward my spirit until you arrive."

"The entire Ice and Snow Wilderness is my gift to you. Since you've opened that box, all the warriors of huge bear tribe and all the priests in the hieron will firmly believe in you, follow you, advocate for you and be loyal to you. They will be your greatest assistance and help you ascend to the throne, even the altar!"

"Promise me that you won't abandon the Slavs who will be loyal to you forever from today. Do not leave huge bear tribe. Please keep them hopeful. I beg this of you. If you have to leave Ice and Snow Wilderness one day, please keep more Slavs alive and sustain this human race. I know you have the ability to create such a wonder, as I've seen it!"

"Your promise would comfort me most!"

"——July 21, 617th year of Black Iron Calendar"

After reading this letter, Zhang Tie blanked out on the chair. He was completely confused by this letter. Although Zhang Tie knew that the great power mentioned in the letter was Castle of Black Iron and that small tree, he really didn't know what else in him could awe Elzida.

'Elzida actually choose Castle of Black Iron, not me. If not for Castle of Black Iron, I know that I would still be a teenager struggling for food and survival in Blackhot City, or a trivial person in the Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace. If not for Castle of Black Iron, I wouldn't be qualified to have Elzida' trust at all.'

Zhang Tie knew the reason clearly, although it hurt his self-

esteem.

Gradually, Zhang Tie felt his hands getting slightly hot. He found the letter was burning itself. Therefore, Zhang Tie hurriedly threw it onto the ground. The piece of parchment then gradually became ashes.

It seemed that Elzida had already treated the paper with some special method. The moment it was exposed to the air or was touched for a few minutes, it would burn itself. Therefore, besides Zhang Tie, nobody would know of the contents in the letter any more.

'I've suddenly become the ruler of a tribe.' Zhang Tie still felt like he was in a dream.

The smallest population of a bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness was above ten million. As the most powerful bear tribe, huge bear tribe had more than ten million people for sure.

'Am I able to take responsibility for the fate of more than ten million people?'

When this question appeared in Zhang Tie's mind, Zhang Tie instantly felt great stress, and even great fear. However, Zhang Tie slowly recovered his composure.

'Now that I know the worst case scenario is the elimination of all the Slavs, no matter how I try it can't be worse than that. Therefore, I don't have to worry about that.'

Zhang Tie felt more relaxed now. He became spirited and intelligent once again...

But at that moment, Zhang Tie was yet to understand that being relaxed was the most difficult state to be in for him. Once he became relaxed, it meant that he'd become confident about being the ruler of huge bear tribe, and he started to loosen the reins on his rich imagination.

After eliminating his doubt, Zhang Tie started to imagine the

various benefits of having a huge tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness. His eyes gleamed.

Zhang Tie then called in the three elders.

The moment they entered, they caught sight of the ashes on the ground and felt Zhang Tie's calmness as he sat on the main seat of the clan elders.

"Elzida left a letter to me in the box. He explained that prophecy to me. After I read it, it burned itself!" Zhang Tie smiled after seeing them glancing at the ashes.

'The great prophet Elzida left a letter to this man and explained the prophecy to him?' The three elders became slightly stunned. After that, they became relieved as they let out a sigh.

"How many supplies has huge bear tribe brought here?" Zhang Tie asked Toles.

"The supplies are enough for a three month fight outside!" Toles didn't know why Zhang Tie had asked that. He just answered it honestly.

"I have some followers outside. Distribute one month's worth of supplies to them and tell them I've already become the clan elder of huge bear tribe. If they want to follow me, they can join huge bear tribe. Make each of them carry at least one two-hundred kilogram bloody-grain granite piece to huge bear tribe from the grey valley and wait for me outside!"

Chapter 481: The Power in Hand

The manifestation of God's will was really shocking. So, from then on, more and more people started to follow him.

In this age, the so called 'follower' was a special title, which was more special than the retinue and bodyguard. A retinue and bodyguard could be employed by money. The employees had to follow the master's orders completely within the scope of their duties. Nevertheless, followers were spontaneous. The relationship between them and the one whom they followed was very sophisticated. Sometimes, this relationship was both casual and flexible as the followers could leave at any time. Nobody forced them to do anything. Sometimes, this relationship became very sacred.

In Hebrew, the relationship between followers and the one being followed evoked many connotations. The simplest relationship between them was like that between fans and their idol. An intermediate relationship could be like that of team leaders and team members. And the strongest relationship between them was close to the strict relationship between masters and apprentices. The followers that suited the third relationship were gathered by the same belief.

Usually, the relationship between followers and the one being followed could change freely between the above three relationships, and the three types of relationships often coexisted within one group of followers. However, followers who gathered from the same belief were rarely seen as they could almost sacrifice themselves for their belief.

Zhang Tie's followers fitted the last type. Because of this, Zhang Tie's words had a great amount of influence over these followers.

On the second day, before the sun rose and the Faerie Dragon star in the eastern sky had disappeared, over ten thousand of Zhang

Tie's followers outside the camp of huge bear tribe had already gone.

Zhang Tie stood outside the camp in a set of thin clothes and stared at the place where the followers had been last night. Meanwhile, he tightly pursed his lips with perseverance.

Before daybreak the breeze was still a bit cold. Additionally, Zhang Tie's clothes and the hair on his forehead were messy. At this moment, he looked more like a casual neighboring teenager. After getting up he looked in the mirror and found a ring of fine hair around his lips, making him look more mature.

Although it wasn't daybreak yet, the military camp over the Ice and Snow Wilderness had already woken up. They were preparing for the coming war. 100,000 tents were pitched close to each other and went on for miles like steel chains across the ground. It was like a terrifying war machine.

A vanguard of 3000 soldiers rushed out from the farthest camp under the gaze of Zhang Tie. Even though they were far away, Zhang Tie could still sense the slight earthquake caused by them.

This was the strongest maneuvering power in Ice and Snow Wilderness!

'This is also my power!'

Until now Zhang Tie still felt like it was an illusion, even when he saw the first batch of cavalymen leaving the camp like a tide.

In the Ice and Snow Wilderness very few tribes could establish 100,000 elite cavalymen, which indicated the real fighting strength and strong background of the huge bear tribe.

'Can I really hold this power?' Zhang Tie asked himself as he looked at the vanguards gradually disappearing in the distance and the continuous military camp below. Zhang Tie's eyes gradually became penetrating while a flame was jumping in his heart...

At this moment, Roslav and Waajid came to him.

These two people had stayed by his side for a long time and they had witnessed how he'd manifested the "God's will" many times underground. They were most loyal to Zhang Tie and worshipped him with a blind and crazy trust. Therefore, Zhang Tie let them be the leaders of the bear-killing camp.

Zhang Tie remembered when he was chased underground like a dog by a LV 10 strong fighter and he'd almost lost his life. By comparison, he now had two LV 10 strong fighters as his own bodyguards. How amazing it was!

This was Zhang Tie's first order for adjusting personnel positions and his first time executing the power of clan elder since promising to be the clan elder of huge bear tribe. Roslav and Waajid were naturally dispatched to Zhang Tie's side. This order also made Roslav and Waajid thrilled.

In Zhang Tie's opinion, as the clan elder he should enjoy the right to make personnel decisions, as well as having the right to control resources and military. At least he felt good being the clan elder yesterday. Zhang Tie had tried these three rights yesterday and found that all of them were effective.

"My Lord, your clothes and armor are ready!"

Being addressed this way for the first time in reality, Zhang Tie was filled with mixed emotions. He had not imagined that his narcissistic illusion in Castle of Black Iron two years ago could be a reality.

Roslav and Waajid brought over the new costume for Zhang Tie. Now that Zhang Tie had become the clan elder of huge bear tribe, his clothes as a pioneer and the warrior's clothes prepared by Sabrina didn't suit him anymore. In Ice and Snow Wilderness, as the clan elder of bear tribe, he had to wear a special costume so as to manifest his authority and position.

Slavs worshipped the colors red, black and yellow. It was said that the powerful Slav Empire's national flag had had the three

colors before the Catastrophe. From then on, the costumes of the most honorable people in Ice and Snow Wilderness had been made with the three colors.

Red pants the color of brilliant velvet, delicate black edging with golden decorative patterns, a shirt with lining and a high rising collar on a high-necked knight's coat which could cover the back of the head...

Soon after putting on the clothes came the armor. Zhang Tie was custom fitted with a set of black titanium alloy chained armor. A roaring bear head was on the chest portion of the armor.

After putting the black armor on him, Roslav and Waajid buckled a golden woolen cloak onto Zhang Tie's shoulders.

Zhang Tie was relatively handsome within Ice and Snow Wilderness. After putting on this set of armor, he instantly became dignified, noble and brilliant. Even Roslav, Waajid and the other guards' eyes glittered with an admiring look. Thankfully, after one month of experience as a d*mn father underground, he had already become immune to such gazes and expressions. Otherwise, he would have felt conceited.

"My Lord, nobody fits this costume better than you in Ice and Snow Wilderness!" Roslav said sincerely.

"I wonder, do elders of other bear tribes wear this?"

"They pretty much look like this when they are going to lead their troops. If not, they could take off their armor and put on one Slav grand duke robe!"

Zhang Tie nodded. This suit of armor was truly nice, from its color, pattern, and protective uses to its degree of comfort. Additionally, it matched Zhang Tie's dark tearer gloves very well. If he wore them and joined the battle, nobody would think that they were not part of the matching set.

"Let's go!" After dressing up Zhang Tie walked out of his tent

closely followed by Roslav, Waajid and a team of guards.

"Which weapon do you want, my Lord?" Waajid asked.

"The battle hammer that I used in the death game!" Zhang Tie replied. He knew that his biggest advantage at this moment was his great strength, which fit the craziest weapon.

"That's the bear-killing hammer of wild bear tribe. The battle hammer of huge bear tribe is Thor's hammer, which fits the most powerful and fierce in the tribe. It's even 118 kilograms heavier than bear-killing hammer!"

"No problem. Go fetch me the Thor's hammer!" Zhang Tie nodded. After death game, he lit another two surging points and further released his potential. Even with over 100 kilograms more to carry, he would not feel that it was heavy at all.

Waajid nodded as he inclined his head and whispered to one of his guards. After that, the guard left with three people.

...

At this time, the army of huge bear tribe had built a temporary drill ground in the wild.

5000 strong cavalrymen were riding on their xiphodons with long spears and waiting for the arrival of Zhang Tie silently.

The 5000 cavalrymen occupied an area equivalent to that of over 20,000 average cavalrymen. They were divided into five tidy square formations and were standing straight quietly. Occasionally, the breathing sound of the xiphodons could be heard from under the metal protective armor of their heads, like working the bellows. The xiphodons exhaled hot air through the pores on the protective armor of the nose like furnace steamers. The white steam in the icy air felt pretty powerful.

These were the most powerful xiphodon cavalrymen in Ice and Snow Wilderness—the "King's Knights Regiment" from huge bear tribe. If the 100,000 cavalrymen of huge bear tribe were the most

powerful manoeuvring power in Ice and Snow Wilderness, the 5000 xiphodon cavalries were the most powerful living tanks among the 100,000 cavalries.

At the sight of the 5000 xiphodon cavalrymen, all the high-ranking government officials and heads of the allied forces who were invited to pay a visit to the military drill, including Gangula, changed their expressions when they recalled the legend about the King's Knights Regiment...

Salem almost passed out at the sight of the 5000 xiphodons. Grey eagle tribe was not even qualified to have one xiphodon. The wild bear tribe, which was closest to grey eagle tribe, only had hundreds of xiphodons.

...

With the expectant public outside, Zhang Tie appeared in his new uniform on the other side of the drill ground with Sarlin, Toles and Gouras.

Zhang Tie looked completely different to his previous downtrodden appearance. His costume, which could only be worn by around ten people in Ice and Snow Wilderness, was more persuasive than anything else.

"This team is called King's Knights Regiment because it was established for you, the king. This team will preserve and follow the doctrines and regulations of the great prophet like knights and wait for your arrival..." Elder Sarlin explained the background of this team to Zhang Tie as they walked forward.

Listening calmly, Zhang Tie felt his heart pounding inside.

"In the last hundreds of years, positions like regimental commander and clan elder of huge bear tribe were always vacant. All the affairs in the tribe were managed by the seniors. Previously, this knights regiment could only be matched with three deputy regimental commanders at most. In accordance with the great

prophet's advice, after you arrived and opened the key box, you were to be the regimental commander of this knights regiment. Except for you, nobody else is qualified to command this troop from today onwards. This armed force is under your direct affiliation. They are waiting for your review. Here's your time..."

When they entered the drill camp and drew close to those xiphodons, the three seniors all stopped.

In front of Zhang Tie was hundreds of meters of long, plain road and rows of xiphodon cavalrymen on his left hand side.

After taking a deep breath, under the gaze of the public, Zhang Tie carried his terrifying battle hammer and passed by the formation with firm and steady steps, while inclining his head towards those strong cavalrymen and xiphodons.

...

Chapter 482: Thor's Hammer

The xiphodons looked frightening in their steel armor. Combined with the knights also in steel battle armor and holding four to five meter long sharp spears in their hands, their assault power could only be imagined...

Now only the rustling of Zhang Tie's battle boots on the ground could be heard. When Zhang Tie passed by, all the warriors on xiphodons in each square formation raised their spears high. Meanwhile, they rotated their heads slowly along with Zhang Tie's pace.

The atmosphere at present looked majestic and solemn.

Zhang Tie was silent. After passing by all of them, he came to the high platform which was specially prepared for him. Standing there, Zhang Tie glanced at the cavalrymen. The sacred totem of a bloody and fiery curtain behind him immediately rushed up over 200 meters high in the sky like a flying flame. At the same time, Zhang Tie lifted the Thor's hammer with his right hand firmly.

It was silent for four to five seconds, and then——

"Wula..."

"Wula..."

"Wula..."

The overwhelming roars sounded at once. Gradually, the entire camp was filled with this sound...

All the warriors saw the raised banner of their Lord. At this moment, each warrior of huge bear tribe became spirited...

...

Lifting the Thor's hammer, Zhang Tie looked around as he roared, "From today on, you will no longer be known as King's Knights Regiment. Drop that womanly name. That name doesn't

match how you've waited for hundreds of years. From now on, your troop will follow the name of my battle hammer. Now, tell me your name!"

"Thor's Hammer..."

"Thor's Hammer..."

"Thor's Hammer..."

The 5000 xiphodon cavalymen exerted their full strength as they roared. Responding to their excited masters, even the 5000 xiphodons started to bluster. The raucous sounds changed the atmosphere among the whole audience.

Now, Pontiff Sarlin's and the other two elders' eyes began to gleam. They all understood why the great prophet had left that prophecy...

Zhang Tie also became thrilled because he knew that he'd finally attained a strong power that he could dominate. Elzida didn't cheat him. He'd truly left many good things to Zhang Tie.

...

One hour later, the huge bear tribe's army of 100,000 warriors set out and rolled towards the southeast in an overwhelming manner.

On such an occasion, all the military officials and heads of the allied forces were standing on the small mountain slope. They felt goose bumps all over while their limbs turned cold. 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe were heading for Eschyle City. Why were they? Was Peter, who had just been the previous clan elder of huge bear tribe, going to conquer the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness by force?

In the past ten or more hours, from last night to this morning, what had happened made everybody confused. Having still not recovered from the pleasure of escaping, everybody was in shock and frustration once again.

Peter manifested God's will underground...

Peter became the clan elder of huge bear tribe and made the prophecy of Elzida come true...

The first thing that Peter did after becoming the clan elder of huge bear tribe was to lead his army towards Eschyle City...

All these were big events, especially the last two, which could almost influence the entire history of the Ice and Snow Wilderness. These consecutive events really shocked the witnesses.

Everyone peered at Gangular's sour face, which looked entirely like a bitter gourd...

Over 6000 warriors of wild bear tribe became Peter's followers. They left wild bear tribe without a word. This loss would definitely fall on Peter and Sabrina, whose infamous reputation was known throughout the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness. She and Peter escaped together with some stone vats. Curiously, Peter even accepted her. How would her father feel if he was told about that news.

The moment he recalled wild bear tribe, Gangula would feel furious. When Peter started to manifest God's will underground, Gangula had already sent a message to wild bear tribe through remote sensing crystal, hoping his father would pay attention to that. Unexpectedly, the authenticity of his report didn't arouse his father's attention. Instead, he'd only got the sneers of his half-brothers, who had the same father as him but different mothers.

"My dear younger brother, even though you are trapped underground, you don't have to make up such a poor lie for the entire tribe to save you. Why did you fabricate that someone manifested the God's will there? It seems that you must be living poorly underground. However, please be reassured. Given that we have hundreds of thousands of warriors and Sabrina and you are both trapped there, we will come to save you. However, you have to wait for a few days before the tunnel is dredged!"

This was the reply from wild bear tribe. Because of those arrogant and prejudiced idiots, wild bear tribe had missed many things in the relics canyon this time. In the end, a series of major events happened in the Ice and Snow Wilderness. However, wild bear tribe could only watch on the sidelines silently as they let a good opportunity slip by, which could never be forgiven.

For other small tribes, it was normal for such events to happen as they didn't have the power to be involved. However, it was different for wild bear tribe. In the eyes of others, wild bear tribe was slow-witted at making decisions.

After Peter had come out for one day, iron bear tribe and wild bear tribe had already shown negativity towards him.

'Is that guy really that powerful besides being able to manifest the God's will?'

Gangula felt his heart racing. He knew it was just a beginning. After witnessing Zhang Tie's manifestation of God's will underground and the "truths" that Zhang Tie had declared, those saved by Peter would spread everywhere. No one could stop them from spreading. As a result, Peter's influence in the medium and small sized tribes in the south of Ice and Snow Wilderness would gradually increase and finally reach an unimaginable level.

If Peter were alone, wild bear tribe would still have the chance to conquer the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness. However, Peter had become the clan elder of huge bear tribe, and was the one in the prophecy of Elzida who would save all the Slavs and bring them to the brilliant road...

Gangula suddenly oozed cold sweat all over at once.

After a cold breeze came, Gangula shivered all over. He then recovered his composure and found that the army of huge bear tribe had long disappeared on the horizon in the distance.

...

"Go!" Gangula waved his hand weakly as he brought them back to the relics canyon.

After the underground tunnel was dredged, there were still many valuables to be discovered in the relics. Therefore, they didn't leave. The allied forces especially, which had lost many people, needed some valuables to "comfort" themselves for sure. However, there would not be as many people entering the tunnel compared to that of the previous time.

Some of the pioneers left, and some didn't.

However, at this moment the most important thing for the warriors of the allied forces and the pioneers was not the possible wealth from the relics, but an altar, which could be used to serve the stone vats which had consecrated the God's will.

As per the requests of numerous people, Peter let Sabrina take away six of the seven stone vats, leaving one here so that people could commemorate and worship it. They agreed to build a magnificent altar in the relics canyon so that they could put that stone vat on it...

70,000 to 80,000 people were excavating stones voluntarily and paving the ground, while some craftsmen among the allied forces and the pioneers were quarrelling loudly...

...

"Peter is a pioneer. Therefore, this altar should be built by our pioneers and constructed in our style!"

"No way, Peter is the clan elder of huge bear tribe. He's a Slav. Therefore, this altar should be built by us. How can it be handled by you outsiders!"

"As we all know, Peter is a pioneer and a so-called 'outsider' in your words. He was even wanted by your police. How can he be a Slav?"

"Even though he wasn't before, he is now..." said the craftsman of

the allied forces seriously. "How could such a great person be a pioneer? Remarkably, being a pioneer was just his temporary status cover-up. In the myths, didn't all the great people like Peter disguise themselves as shepherds, beggars or other humble civilians?"

"Farce..." the pioneers became so agitated that they sprung up directly from the ground. They looked like they'd just been robbed of some jewellery. "Peter was a pioneer when he came to Ice and Snow Wilderness by Polar Light. He even had pioneer friends and partners..."

...

Hearing the quarrel between the craftsmen of the allied forces and those pioneers, Gangula frowned. He wanted to say something, but he couldn't...

...

Two hours after the army of huge bear tribe had left the relics Canyon, Eschyle City received the news through a special channel about 1000 kilometers away and instantly became flurried. As a result, the whole city imposed a curfew in the daytime...

Soon, the news was spread across Eschyle City...

100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe are going to attack us...

Chapter 483: Returning to Grey Eagle Tribe

After leaving the relics canyon and crossing the river of Fitjar Estuary, the army of huge bear tribe had travelled over 500 kilometers before dusk. When they arrived at an expanse of wilderness over 30 kilometers away from the grey eagle tribe, they finally rested there.

It was really a rapid speed for an army of 100,000 soldiers to travel over 500 kilometers in a day across the Wilderness.

Zhang Tie didn't stay in the camp of the army. Instead, he led a group of xiphodon cavalrymen towards grey eagle tribe together with O'Laura and the cavalries from grey eagle tribe.

Over one month ago, O'Laura had brought out 400 cavalries, 200 of which belonged to her while the other 200 belonged to Salem. However, more than 60 people had left the team, five of which were killed in the battle underground while the rest became Zhang Tie's followers and had voluntarily left grey eagle tribe and O'Laura and moved towards grey hill...

This time, many soldiers of the eastern tribes who joined the allied forces action became Zhang Tie's followers. They gave everything that they had and chose an utterly different path. Almost one in six people from each tribe became Zhang Tie's followers.

Except for those who didn't return to grey eagle tribe, the remaining 330 or so odd cavalries had nothing to do with Salem. After all they'd experienced, if the soldiers of grey eagle tribe still wanted to stay with Salem and his dad, they would be especially stupid.

Before she left the tribe, O'Laura, Ollier and Juventus' forces were in equilibrium in grey eagle tribe. However, the balance had been destroyed at this moment.

Because of Zhang Tie's words, 'You're my mate, you don't have to kneel down in front of me', everyone simply knew that O'Laura was Zhang Tie's woman. Additionally, Zhang Tie was the legendary clan elder of huge bear tribe. Naturally, O'Laura would become the woman of a clan elder. Within Ice and Snow Wilderness, such a woman was destined to be a duchess. If O'Laura was to have a child with Zhang Tie, the kid would be qualified as a 'childe'.

Compared to O'Laura's great status, the two elders of grey eagle tribe were only like wealthy countryside landlords.

How could two countryside landlords match the duchess of a head of a bear tribe?

Additionally, O'Laura's reputation as Goddess Vat was definitely more influential than that of Ollier and Juventus in the tribes in the east of Ice and Snow Wilderness. They were not on the same level.

Therefore, in this case, the most active one today was not the army of huge bear tribe, not Zhang Tie, not O'Laura, but Salem. While the army and the soldiers of grey eagle tribe took a rest, Salem kept galloping on his horse and rushed back to the base of grey eagle tribe.

As a small tribe, grey eagle tribe had no expensive long-distance communicating device. In order to let his father prepare as early as possible and survive Ollier family, Salem had to explain the current situation clearly to his dad before O'Laura and Zhang Tie returned.

As Ollier had wanted to kill Zhang Tie when Zhang Tie entered grey eagle tribe, Zhang Tie could easily sweep the whole Ollier clan, not to mention the conflict between Ollier and O'Laura.

How intriguing it was! Nobody would have imagined that an Eschyle City wanted murder from over one month ago could become the clan elder of huge bear tribe and the very one in the

prophecy of Elzida the great prophet. Salem felt that the whole Ollier clan was played by the God.

Compared to Salem's anxious emotions, the other soldiers of grey eagle tribe, including Setton, felt like they'd won a battle.

Although this movement of allied forces had not reached grey eagle tribe and O'Laura's target, compared to other tribes, even wild bear tribe, grey eagle tribe was already a big winner. O'Laura being the wife of the clan elder of huge bear tribe, to be honest, was definitely more valuable than receiving one or two million gold coins for grey eagle tribe.

...

With the ground-breaking boom caused by the hoofs of xiphodons, the contour of grey eagle tribe gradually appeared in front of everyone's eyes.

This time, Zhang Tie imagined that O'Laura would deal with the two old guys fiercely. However, when they arrived at the gate of grey eagle tribe, Zhang Tie's illusion broke apart.

Juventus and Ollier, who were arrogant previously, were kneeling outside the gate of grey eagle tribe with dozens of their family members, old and young.

Among those people, the eldest were Juventus and Ollier while the youngest were four or five year-old kids. Because of their fear, the adults looked pale while the kids, being pressed onto the ground, were struggling and crying.

It was already November, so in the evening the temperature declined sharply. Wearing an unlined garment, Juventus and Ollier, who had always lived noble lives, were quivering on the ground. What a poor situation! God knew how long had they been kneeling there.

Salem was also kneeling among them. Beside him was a 30 year-old woman and two kids. One was about seven years old while the

other was about four or five. When over 50 xiphodons in steel battle armor appeared in front of them, the kids were so scared that they forgot to even cry. Instead they kept clinging onto their parents' arms while quivering.

Right behind these people, almost all the residents of grey eagle tribe had already come out. Standing in the distance, they were staring in front of them with sophisticated and dubious looks. Why had the two elders become so weak, waiting to be slaughtered outside the gate of the tribe.

Standing alone behind Juventus' and Ollier's families, Elder Merkel was staring at the guards on xiphodons with a worried look too. He didn't know how Zhang Tie would deal with Juventus and Ollier. He didn't even know whether Zhang Tie would punish him. After all, he had planted bone-exploding needles on Zhang Tie's body.

Under the majesty of huge bear tribe, small tribes like grey eagle tribe didn't even stand a chance to struggle under the hoofs of the xiphodons.

All the cavalries stopped 20 meters away. Seeing a priest standing there, Roslav and Waajid instantly locked onto priest Merkel. It seemed that they were going to pounce at priest Merkel as soon as he intended to move.

Raising their heads, Juventus and Ollier glanced at Zhang Tie, who was riding on a handsome xiphodon. They were instantly scared by the dignified tri-color costume of the bear tribe's clan elder as they lowered their heads again. Meanwhile, they started to quiver.

Zhang Tie slowly moved closer on his xiphodon. He didn't stop until the sharp tusk of the xiphodon almost touched Juventus and Ollier. Sitting atop the xiphodon, he then started to glance at the two old guys.

When Juventus knelt down, his fat body almost shrunk into a

ball. Although it was very cold now, his back was still wet all over with sweat. Even Ollier, who was always known for being aggressive, also dared not raise his head. He even dared not to argue.

Recalling how the two old guys in front of him had looked over one month ago and how they looked now, Zhang Tie, riding on the xiphodon, closed his eyes as he started to taste the sweetness of power for the first time in his life.

After opening his eyes once again, Zhang Tie glanced at the crowd behind the two people. After gazing at the three to five year old kids for a short while and the frightened women for another short while, Zhang Tie's killing intent instantly disappeared.

Finally he fixed his eyes on the two old guys, like he was watching two pieces of dried, pickled flesh. He then instantly felt bored.

"Now that you know your faults, stand up!" Zhang Tie said calmly.

After hearing this, Juventus and Ollier instantly raised their heads as they couldn't even believe what they had heard. At this moment, Zhang Tie's words were the most important to them. After exchanging glances at each other, Juventus and Ollier didn't dare to continue kneeling down any more. They then struggled to stand up.

Juventus's legs might have been numb. The moment he picked himself up, he lost his balance and almost fell down on the ground once again. After standing up, Ollier also staggered.

Following the two people in front, all their family members picked themselves up with confused looks on their faces.

"Lord Peter, I..." Ollier wanted to say something.

Zhang Tie was not interested in listening to him. Neither did he want to say anything. Instead, he shook the reins and drove his

xiphodon away, closely followed by his guards and the cavalrymen of grey eagle tribe...

Staring at Zhang Tie's back with a confused look, Ollier and Juventus seemed unable to believe that Zhang Tie could let them go. However, many of the women behind them suddenly burst out in tears of relief...

...

In the evening, after taking off his armor and cleansing himself, Zhang Tie changed into a loose robe. He was inside a small building of Juventus silently staring at the night sky in the distance.

The best house in the entire grey eagle tribe belonged to Juventus. Therefore, Juventus moved out together with his family members and left the best place to Zhang Tie and his guards.

Based on Zhang Tie's current status, it was really a great honor for grey eagle tribe to have Zhang Tie stay in their midst. Of course, they had to arrange the best house for Zhang Tie out of respect.

It was already November. Almost four months had passed since the event in Heavens Cold City. Zhang Tie still remembered that important message that he'd received after the event in Heavens Cold City. 'If Zhen Clan's plot had not been exposed by me, according to the analysis of Professor Simon, all the eggs of the puppet worms in Heavens Cold City might have hatched by next year. As a result, millions of people in Heavens Cold City would become terrifying zombies and killing machines under the control of puppet worms. If so, the whole Langya Prefecture of Jinyun Country would fall into chaos. The third holy war between humans and demons would break out.'

Although the plot was exposed, because the crisis caused by the demons had not been dissolved, Zhang Tie knew that the real holy war would arrive in two months at the latest. This holy war would

be the longest, most severe winter ever experienced by the human race.

'How are my friends in Blackhot City now?'

Zhang Tie remembered his friends, brothers and girlfriends in Blackhot City. A hint of sorrow flashed in his mind.

No matter what, Zhang Tie had already decided he'd go back to Blackhot City after leaving the Ice and Snow Wilderness.

At this moment, the door behind Zhang Tie was pushed open. Zhang Tie didn't turn around. He knew who it was.

After coming over to Zhang Tie, O'Laura tightly hugged him while pressing her face into his back.

After a short while, Zhang Tie felt that his back was wet from O'Laura's silent sobs.

"It's okay, it has all passed. Don't cry..." Zhang Tie turned around and wiped the tears from O'Laura's icy and delicate face.

About one hour ago, Zhang Tie had already discovered the result of the conference of grey eagle tribe. Juventus and Ollier resigned from their positions as the tribal elders. They completely handed over their power to O'Laura. Besides this, Juventus even "donated" over 300,000 gold coins to grey eagle tribe. Ollier also urged his sons and trusted followers to vow to be loyal to O'Laura. O'Laura had officially become the tribal elder of grey eagle tribe.

From today on, there was only one clan elder and one tribal elder in grey eagle tribe.

All the conflicts in grey eagle tribe came to an end. The whole tribe was back in the hands of O'Laura.

Before Zhang Tie could wipe off all the tears from O'Laura's face, she hugged him tightly all of a sudden and started to kiss him madly, almost suffocating Zhang Tie. Finally, she pushed Zhang Tie directly onto the bed in the attic...

...

Setton and Zhang Tie's other guards were alert downstairs...

After more than ten minutes, Setton heard O'Laura's muffled, painful groans from upstairs. He then immediately let out a sigh——that makes sense!

Chapter 484: Spencer Clan (I)

After the curfew was imposed in Eschyle City on November 6th, the whole city was shocked many times a day as the news about the army of the huge bear tribe was spread here constantly in the fastest speed.

On the second day, although various news about the army of the huge bear tribe caused a great clamour in Eschyle City. What made most of the residents in Eschyle City more stunned were the various events happened in the former day.

A pioneer called Peter became the clan elder of the huge bear tribe.

The prophecy of the greatest Slavic prophet and pontiff came true.

Before becoming the clan elder of the huge bear tribe, the pioneer called Peter saved tens of thousands of soldiers and pioneers of eastern allied forces and manifested God's will for many times in the dilemma.

Peter turned an average tin kettle into an endless sweet spring, which saved the lives of tens of thousands of people...

All the wounds, after being touched by Peter's hand, had healed...

After the baptism of Peter, two powerful fighters even completed LV 2 sublimation at that moment...

Peter also preached the immortal truth in the underground for tens of thousands of people...

Being moved and aspired by the God's will, tens of thousands of people became the followers of Peter...

When these news were spread in Eschyle City, the whole city became clamorous like boiling oil in the pot. Although some news were spread through the people's word of mouth, it lacked fidelity.

Whereas, they covered a more sacred halos over Peter.

At this moment, even no one could remember that the same guy called Peter was wanted by the police station over one month ago in the same city.

As the army of the huge bear tribe drew closer, the whole Eschyle City became increasingly more intense while more and more hidden forces appeared.

They were not common army of 100,000 soldiers, they were 100,000 elites from the huge bear tribe, among them, there were not only bear-killing camp, but also the most powerful xiphodon cavalries which were named as the Thor's Hammer by Peter. What was more important, two elders and Pontiff Sarlin of the huge bear tribe also arrived. Although both the two elders were already knights, Pontiff Sarlin was more unpredictable. They were led by the very person in the prophecy of the greatest prophet and pontiff in the history of Slavs.

After knowing these messages, commoners began gossiping about them; however, each member of Spencer Clan, especially the decision makers of the clan would feel a great stress.

When the army of 100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe left the Costari Plain, all the leaders of the bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness started to become intense.

Historically, all the bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness were split from the huge bear tribe. Therefore, there was always a tribal chauvinism in the huge bear tribe, especially among the senior leaders of the huge bear tribe. There was always a tone that—the bear tribes should return all the tribes of Ice and Snow Wilderness to the huge bear tribe and realize the rejuvenation of Slavs once again.

For the rulers of tribes, of course, this was hardly accepted. After being used to be a boss, they would feel unhappy to be others' subordinates. Therefore, when the army of the huge bear tribe left

Costari Plain, they started to be intense and prepared to defend.

When the army of 100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe headed for the the Haidela Glacier Crack in the south of Ice and Snow Wilderness, the rulers of Eschyle City let out a sigh and started to worry about the wild bear tribe. Some even expected to see the miserable outcome of those people in Haidela Glacier Crack. Unexpectedly, after being relaxed for a few days, they saw a sudden reversal.

Peter became the clan elder of the huge bear tribe. After that, he led his army directly towards Eschyle City!

The two events happened too fast, which left no time for Spencer clan to make any preparation. Hearing the army of 100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe rolling towards Eschyle City, the iron bear tribe became flurried...

No one thought that Peter was here for a travel or walk.

Facing such a situation, under the great stress, all the decision makers of Spencer clan had to negotiate about the countermeasures around a table.

...

On the evening of November 8th, all the big figures in Eschyle City gathered in the assembly hall of the iron bear castle of Eschyle City.

Under the magnificent and luxurious high-end crystal lamps, the gleaming marble floor even made the assembly hall as magnificent a as palace. Due to the curfew, even a mosquito could not fly in within 50 square meters,

As major figures had to discuss and determine about the fate of Spencer clan and the major events of Eschyle City in the future, the confidentiality of the assembly hall was very high. This was absolutely a closed room without any window. No one else except for the members of Spencer clan could enter.

If Zhang Tie arrived here, he would be able to find the great difference between Spencer clan and the rulers of the other tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness. None of the members of Spencer clan in the assembly hall were barbarous at all. All those here were wearing exquisite western coat or uniforms with well-combed hair. If not that huge metal emblem which represented the iron bear tribe on one wall, there conference looked nothing different than the board of directors of big business groups.

At this moment, this fully closed place was like a steaming pressure cooker. As the conference continued, an intense atmosphere started to spread each nook of the assembly hall...

Just now, all the members of Spencer clan heard the cause of the two wanted circulars about Peter Hamplester delivered by the police station in Eschyle City from the police chief Hellno.

After hearing the report, the assembly hall became quiet once again.

Hellno was the third son of Tilin Spencer and the most powerful wolf of Spencer clan in ruling Eschyle City.

After hearing the report, Tilin Spencer glanced at his third son and all the other silent audience, before opening his mouth in a muffled voice.

"Now that this event has been solved well, why would Peter still attack Eschyle City at any risk!"

Although Tilin intended to protect his own son, the other members of Spencer clan didn't express any dissatisfaction about that. Because Tilin was right. Unless Peter was a lunatic or idiot, he would never launch a war at such a great cost.

Obviously, a lunatic and idiot could not manifest the God's will. Even the legendary God's will was fabricated, he could never cheat hundreds of thousands of people without a high intelligence quotient and smart methods. A lunatic and idiot could never be the

clan elder of the huge bear tribe and survive so long while being chased by people from demon snake island. As long as the three elders of the huge bear tribe were not blind, they would never allow a lunatic and idiot to lead the army of 100,000 warriors towards here.

"What if the huge bear tribe had the plan to attack Eschyle City? What if Peter is just their puppet and excuse? This might be a performance led by the huge bear tribe. They pushed an average brat onto the throne and used him to unify the Ice and Snow Wilderness!" a member of Spence clan posed it seriously after thinking for a long while.

After hearing this, everyone was shocked. It was really possible. However, the other members of Spencer clan also posed different opinions.

"The prophecy of Elzida is very sacred in the huge bear tribe. They have been believing in this prophecy for hundreds of years. This is their spiritual belief. If someone wanted to do that in the huge bear tribe, he would be immediately opposed by Pontiff Sarlin. Additionally, if the huge bear tribe had long intended to conquer Eschyle City, they would not only assign 100,000 cavalries. At least, there should be a great quantity of infantries. Additionally, they had to carry enough instruments and weapons. However, according to our intelligence, no weapon or instrument was carried by the army of 100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe at all.

"Perhaps, it's just a small trick. Gouras and Toles will be easy to deal with. If they have made enough preparations the moment they left Costari Plain, we would know what they want to do then. If so, we would make enough preparations to counterattack! Additionally, If they want to conquer Eschyle City, they don't have to attack it; instead, they could only surround it so that we would fight them outside the city!"

Hearing utterly different opinions in the assembly hall, they

started to argue with each other loudly until Tilin coughed twice.

"Wuli, what would be the final outcome if we fought the army of 100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe?" The clan elder of Spencer clan asked a major in military uniform solemnly...

Chapter 485: Spencer Clan (II)

In this age, major general was already the head of an army. Although no military ranking system was executed in other tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Spencer clan which, due to frequent contact with the outside world and they treated as the represent of advanced civilization among all Slavic tribes. They had intergrated themselves with numerous countries on continent.

The man inquired by Tilin was over 50 years old. He was the bloodtied younger brother of Tilin, the head of Spencer clan. For many people reaching LV 10, this age was just as young as 20-old teenagers. The golden time in their lives just started.

Wuli Spencer took good care of his skin as he didn't have any wrinkles at all. Also, his hair was black and shiny. From his look, he must have been used to a dignified life. Additionally, the cyan military uniform which represented the highest rank in Eschyle City made him majestic. Since 20 years old, Wuli Spencer had already been known as a very handsome man in Eschyle City. His gossips were spread all over the Eschyle City.

After hearing the inquiry of the head, everybody threw their glances at Wuli. Facing this second powerful figure in Spencer clan, many people's eyes were mixed with flattery.

Hearing Tilin's question, Wuli slowly opened his mouth after carefully thinking about it for half a minute.

"If we fight 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe, we would face the same outcome..." the moment Wuli finished his words, many people were slightly stunned, 'how can that be?'

Wuli glanced at them as his muffled masculine voice sounded once again, "Based on the force of Eschyle City, this city's base would be at least completely destroyed if we have to fight the 100,000 elites of huge bear tribe. We could never deal with their counterattack or challenges from other tribes. Even though all the

warriors of huge bear tribe were killed, they could soon mobilize another army of 100,000 warriors on Costari Plain. If so, how do we block them?"

Hearing this possible outcome, everyone felt a heavy burden.

"As the most powerful tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness, huge bear tribe could mobilize at least 600,000 warriors, which is similar to an army group. However, Eschyle City could mobilize 250,000 soldiers at most, which were two armies. Therefore, we are not able to fight huge bear tribe at all. Additionally, no tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness could fight huge bear tribe independently." Wuli continued to explain.

"Can we diffuse this crisis with the help of wild bear tribe?" someone suggested.

"No way. The old guy in wild bear tribe might even be waiting for the battle between us and huge bear tribe like how we did when the army of 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe headed for the southern part of Ice and Snow Wilderness several days ago. God bless us if the old guy doesn't set us up!"

The moment the members of Spencer clan recalled the barbarious clan elder of wild bear tribe who was like a butcher, they felt a headache. As the clan elder of iron bear clan which ruled Eschyle City, Markov had criticized Spencer clan as the "fox in bear hide" and "iron tortoise with the stink of money". Therefore, the relationship between wild bear tribe and Eschyle City was always stiff. It was almost impossible to expect to collaborate with wild bear tribe at this moment.

"Where's fire bear tribe. Could they give us a favor or not?"

Tilin's elder female cousin was the wife of the clan elder of fire bear tribe. The two tribes had a very close relationship. Therefore, after hearing that wild bear tribe could not give a favor, someone instantly remembered fire bear tribe.

"Fire bear tribe is over 5000 km away from us. Additionally, fire bear tribe doesn't have so many cavalries. The clan elder has already contacted with the fire bear tribe a couple of days ago. The fire bear tribe have already dispatched 10,000 cavalries towards Eschyle City. However, as it is a long way, they have to pass the Caucasian Mountain Range and could not arrive here until one month later. If they dispatch over 100,000 infantries towards here, it would be one month later than cavalries do!"

A person at Tilin's right hand explained it to the others.

'One month? The army of huge bear tribe would arrive at Eschyle City in four days. You tell me the cavalries of fire bear tribe would arrive in one month? Additionally, facing the 100,000 cavalries of huge bear tribe, the effect of the 10,000 cavalries from fire bear tribe is still unknown.'

Everyone became flurried but they didn't complain about it. Because they all knew that it was already very good that fire bear tribe could give them a favor this time, as the bill had to be paid by Eschyle City.

After discussing about various countermeasures, they found that the basic problem facing Eschyle City was that huge bear tribe had the power to play the same game 2 or 3 times; however, Spencer clan could only barely play it one time.

Therefore, clan elder Tilin set the tone directly. They had to figure out Peter's real target and tried to avoid the potential war. Even though some crazy guys in huge bear tribe would like to unify Ice and Snow Wilderness by force, Eschyle City had to try itself to avoid from becoming the first target of huge bear tribe.

These people at present were all elites out of 10,000 members of Spencer clan on both intelligence quotient and vision. Through discussion, they soon proposed various reasons and possibilities of the war along with countermeasures.

"What if Peter doesn't have any reason. He might just want to let

his army make a travel around Eschyle City?" a voice appeared in the assembly hall. The moment it was heard, the whole assembly hall became quiet at once. After that, they threw their glances towards that member of Spencer clan.

It was Neymar Spencer, who was responsible for the propaganda and public opinions of Eschyle City. Concretely, he was only responsible for two newspapers and many troubadours who only knew how to seduce lonely women by boasting in the receptions and salons of Eschyle City. Such a figure could be ignored in Spencer clan. However, as it was an important conference of Spencer clan, big figures in all aspects needed to negotiate about major events here; therefore, he was also invited.

Perhaps because he had been responsible for propaganda and public opinions for too long, his mind was always radioactive. Sometimes, he absolutely indulged in wildest fantasy. In this way, people could not catch up with his mind.

Under the weird gaze of the other members of Spencer clan, Neymar became a bit tense as he swallowed his words back.

"Don't worry, Neymar, tell me about you certificate?" clan elder Tilin encouraged Neymar to explain it after hearing Neymar absurd conclusion after frowning his forehead.

Being encouraged by clan elder, after thinking it for a while, he explain it in a calm way.

"No matter Peter manifested the God's will underground or did anything amazing, as huge bear tribe suddenly appeared in front of him and told him that he was the very person in Elzida's prophecy and wanted him to be the clan elder of huge bear tribe, he must be dubious about that. Everyone would doubt that if it fell on themselves. He might worry about being cheated; therefore he wants to have a try."

"Have a try?" clan elder Tilin gazed at Neymar with meaningful and dubious eyes, "What do you mean by having a try?"

"I mean he just wants to have a try whether he could command the 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe. If the 100,000 warriors could follow his order, even when his order was a bit absurd, he would know that huge bear tribe don't cheat on him. If not, he could figure out that it was a plot!"

Neymar's words shocked everyone in the assembly hall. Although they were discussing about various plots and tricks, nobody seriously considered this event on the stance of Peter. Therefore, after Neymar posed it, although being very absurd, it felt reasonable.

"Right, Neymar; you're right. We've ignored this point. If it is truly as you think, what do you think the army of huge bear tribe would do after it?" Tilin asked.

"If it's true, I'm afraid that the army of huge bear tribe will turn around after drawing close to Eschyle City and go back!" Neymar put it straight, "Actually, I feel you ignored another possibility!"

"Another possibility?"

"Right, the one leading 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe towards Eschyle City is neither Peter nor those crazy tribal chauvinists, but someone else!"

"Someone else? How come? Do you think it's that someone could mobilize 100,000 warriors by just moving his mouth? It's not as easy as writing your paper." soon after Neymar finished his words, some contenders instantly sneered him as he aroused Tilin's attention.

"What if that person is the great Pontiff Elzida?"

The moment Neymar posed this, the whole assembly hall became quiet at once.

"Based on our intelligence, before setting out the army, Peter had already opened that key box left by Elzida. There was only one letter in the box. Peter was the only person who had read it.

Attention! After Peter opened that box for a few hours, huge bear tribe started to surge towards Eschyle City. Dare you say it was not related to the letter?" Neymar raised his voice.

"Why would Elzida do that?"

"How could we guess the decision of Elzida, a person who could observe the future? If it was true, Elzida might have already seen events in Eschyle City. Therefore, he dispatched the army of huge bear tribe here for the most proper preparations and disposal. Elzida had done many things like this in his life, many of which looked absurd and unpredictable; however, all that he had done helped Slavs out of crisis. Right because of this, he became the greatest prophet and pontiff in the eyes of Slavs!"

Everyone became silent. Compared to the first reason, this reason was more shockingg—Elzida still had a magical power for each one in Ice and Snow Wilderness until today.

If Elzida truly left some premonition in the key box, what a major event would happen in Eschyle City that could worth 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe's arrival?

In Slavic history, not until the moment the fate of the whole Slavs was influenced, Elzida would not expose the future that he had seen and made preparations for that. Right because Elzida had done many similiar things, he had saved the lives of Slavs for many times. Whereas, as he had leaked too many events in the future, his longevity was reduced according to the time rule. He passed away at the age of 60-odd years old.

The great prophet and pontiff shaped a great image in the heart of all the Slavs. The great image was still threatening now.

When Neymar posed the first presumption, all the others sneered him; however, after hearing his second presumption, the assembly hall immediately cooled down.

All the Spencers became silent as they felt very restless.

If Neymar's first presumption was right, they didn't have to do anything but to wait for the crisis to diffuse by itself. If the second presumption was right, the Spencers should discuss about how to coordinate with huge bear tribe to eliminate the crisis as soon as possible. Therefore, Spencers should not resist the 100,000 warriors; instead, they should welcome them.

What absurd! They were discussing about how to respond to this crisis just now; however, in a wink, everything changed.

In that abnormal silence, that person who had been silent since he entered the assembly hall became more eye-attractive. He slightly frowned his forehead before glancing at a people at the end of the conference table, who was lowering his head and shrugging his shoulders silently with a dissatisfied look.

"Pears, you're also a member of Spencer clan, tell me about your opinion!"

After hearing Tilin's words, all the Spencers threw their glances at that guy who was almost ignored by others. At the sight of that poor, frustrating look, many people twitched their mouth corners, which seemed like a a polite smile, yet was actually an contemption.

Compared to Tilin and Wuli, who was the most shiny stars in Spencer clan, Pears was as trivial as a broken sofa being thrown into a warehouse. Additionally, he smelt mouldy. It was really unbelievable that he could compete for the clan elder with Tilin dozens of years ago.

That man called Pears raised his fat face with his two frustrated eyes and evidently big eye bags due to excessive drinks and sexual intercourse. At the sight of him, everyone signed inside.

After being called by the clan elder, the one woke up from fatigueness.

"Ah...clan elder is right. Now that Peter is a lascivious guy and

could even have such a special relationship with that loose woman in wild bear tribe, we..only need to send him some women. Then, everything would be solved. I follow your opinions, I follow your opinions..."

Whilst hearing Pears repeating the former topic that they were discussing about twenty minutes ago, everyone became speechless.

Chapter 486: Spencer Clan (III)

One hour later, all the Spencer elites walked out of the assembly hall with a solemn look.

Clan elder Tilin had already made the decision that an elder would go to communicate with Peter and some elders of the huge bear tribe with the "sincerity" from Eschyle City tomorrow.

No matter what, they had to figure out the purpose of huge bear tribe before deciding to fight or seek for peace.

The army of the huge bear tribe was still over 500 km away. However, for the elite cavalries of huge bear tribe, it would only take them a couple of days to arrive at Eschyle City.

Being influenced by some messages or gossips, of course the so-called "sincerity" referred to the beautiful women of Spencer clan. This was the right moment for those women to sacrifice for their own clan. The clan elder only needed to take the selected woman over there. If Peter was truly lascivious, Spencer's woman had many methods to display their value in maintaining the clan's interests. This was what each Spencer woman learned since they were young.

In Ice and Snow Wilderness, each woman of the ruling clan, especially the women in the bear clans always used to maintain the clan's ruling by fulfilling men. This was not a secret at all. Except for the huge bear tribe which had no clan elder before, each tribe did this as they didn't think it was shameless at all.

For Spencer clan, when the other tribes' ruling clans were still using women as the primitive yet effective tool of inter-marriage, Spencer clan had long realized a "deep-processing" about this tool. Each woman of Spencer clan, since they were 6-7 years old, had already started to learn a lot of professional courses.

Besides common courses which could accumulate one's

personality, music, dance, poem, painting, makeup, etiquette, inter-personal relationship, style of conversation, psychology and stratagem were all their compulsory courses. When they were 14 years old, they had already started to learn how to please men.

Spencer clan invited real experts from the continent to carry out systematic education and training for these women. Those who taught them etiquette were court advisers from imperialism countries on the continent. Those who taught them how to please men were "famous prostitutes" who had already retired. Those who taught them inter-personal relationship were experienced diplomats and famous courtesans that were invited by Spencer clan at high costs. Those who taught them psychology and stratagem were real expert scholars and excellent people in all industries.

Under the intoxication of such a great education system, "Spencer Woman" even became a exclusive term across Ice and Snow Wilderness. In the tribes of Ice and Snow Wilderness, even in Eschyle City, if a neighbor pointed at some woman and said she was a "Spencer Woman", he was definitely speaking highly of her as Spencer women were all beautiful, shrewd, able and knew how to seduce men.

...

Pears was the last to leave the assembly hall. Even the younger generations of Spencer clan felt disgusted by him. Therefore, nobody glanced at him at all when he walked out, not to mention to greet him or leave Iron Bear Castle together with him.

When the other people left in a group of 2 or 3, Pears slowly walked behind them as he yawned. He came to the parking lot. After foisting his fat body into the back seat of a sedan which was imported from Eastern Continent, he ordered the driver to leave Iron Bear Castle.

Iron Bear Castle of Spencer clan was the standard mansion for

clan elders. Only the current elder was qualified to live in it. Even the sons and daughters of the clan elder were not qualified to live in it after they grew mature. Therefore, after the conference, all the elites of Spencer clan left here except for Tilin.

Of course, in the eyes of the other Spencer elites, they could pleasantly accept the reputation of "clan elites". However, if someone described someone else as the clan elite, he might be sneered.

Before completely leaving the Iron Bear Castle, those guardians outside the gate of Iron Bear Castle had already seen Pears taking out a bottle of senior gin from the gradevin beside the back seat, making a full cup for himself...

After drinking a cup of gin, Pears blushed and looked a bit more spirited.

At this moment, due to curfew, the entire Eschyle City became quiet. One week ago, the whole city was still brightly-lit all over in the evening. By contrast, soon after dusk, the city had already been in a deadly, silent darkness. Due to lack of vehicles, all the streets looked open. Therefore, Pears' car flashed on the streets.

His car soon drew close to his residence, from where the road was blocked temporarily. The police had gathered here.

The sedan parked. Pears rolled down the window and showed half of his fat face. He looked at that police head who was lowering his body to explain it to Pears.

Of course, this police head knew Pears. No matter how trivial Pears' position was in Spencer clan, Pears could not be offended by such a small police head.

"What happened?" Pears asked in a muffled, weak voice.

The small head raised his arm towards his subordinate to move away the roadblock as he explained, "Mr. Pears, someone brushed some slogans on the roadside walls in the evening. After receiving

the report, we especially come here to manage it!"

These days, all the heads of the Eschyle Police Station were sworn heavily by their superiors. Certainly, none of them dared to make any mistake at this critical moment. Therefore, soon after receiving the report, a great number of policemen arrived here.

"You idiots, piss off..." Pears swore them impatiently while waving his hand like chasing flies. Closely after that, he rolled up the window.

When the car passed by the roadside walls, Pears saw the painted slogans in red.

The Lord in the prophecy of the Great Prophet Elzida has appeared!

It's time for Slavs to unify the Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Even after hundreds of years, as long as there were Slavs in Ice and Snow Wilderness, there were always crazy fans and followers of Elzida and some Calvinism Slavs who always dreamed about rejuvenating all the tribes. Although these minorities were not able to rebel, they could stir up troubles at the critical moment.

After a short while, the two slogans had already been covered by the same red paint.

When he saw the name "Elzida", Pears tightened his right fist before loosing it and reaching towards the gradevin like nothing had happened.

"Pah..." seeing off Pears' vehicle, that small police head spat a mouth of saliva towards the back of the vehicle...

...

After a few minutes, the sedan returned to the luxurious villa which occupied a wide area of territory. The bodyguards opened the gate for him. After that, Pears had his car driven in the courtyard.

After getting off the vehicle, Pears looked gloomier.

Looking at the well-pruned evergreen trees in the parterre, Pears sent the steward to bring the gardener. He then lost his temper towards that gardener and ordered steward to deduct this month's salary of the gardener and lay him off. After that, he entered the villa furiously.

After half an hour, glass breaking sounds and roars drifted out of the villa at the same time along with the sobs of female servants who were slapped. The whole villa was in a terrifying atmosphere until Pears entered the study room.

After the door of the study room was shut up, Pears recovered his composure completely, causing a tranquility in the villa.

After sitting on the sofa calmly for 2 minutes, Pears stood up and came to the front of the fireplace. He twisted the button inside the fireplace using a pair of fire-tongs to open a wall silently beside the fireplace, exposing a dark tunnel leading to the underground.

After putting back the fire-tongs, Pears entered the tunnel. Closely after that, the wall returned to its original place.

The dim fluorite lamps made the basement greenish. It seemed to be an icehouse as it was piled with huge ice cubes. Each ice cube was glittering and translucent like super huge crystals while radiating dark blue luster.

Experts could identify that these were not common ice cubes, but aged ones. They had been preserved in this state for over 1 million years. They were harder than steel and iron and would not easily melt. The cost of each piece of such kind of ice cube was equal to that of the same weight of gold.

On the bed, which was carved on a huge aged ice cube, was lying a 15 or 16 year-old teenager with his hands crossed onto his abdomen quietly like being asleep...

Chapter 487: Paternal Love

Pears watched the asleep teenager with a benign and tender look. Moreover, he combed the hair on the forehead of the teenager carefully.

The teenager's face was as white as snow and he looked dead. At this time, Pears' kind look and action gave people a creepy feeling.

After a few time, the steward appeared on Pears' side.

Although Pears looked tender after entering the study room, the steward who looked kind and elegant outside immediately became gloomy and lofty the moment he entered.

The green fluorite lamps left a gloomy shadow on their faces, which made the whole underground more terrifying.

"What's the result of Spencer's conference?" The steward asked in a aggressive and paramount manner.

"There's a very bad news. Our plan might have been recognized by someone!" Pears'voice was very calm, which was sharply constructive to that humble look in assembly hall, "The army of 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe might be heading for us?"

After hearing Pears'words, the steward instantly responded with an amazed look, "You mean our trap in the relics was discovered and huge bear tribe followed the clue here? How can that be..." The steward urged as he waved his head, "After that powerful huge alchemist's bomb exploded, everything would be ruined. What else would be left? The three-eye association spent a lot of time and resources for this plan in order to attract the other tribes' attention. Even our animal controllers were killed."

"It's not our mistake. Someone might know our plan!"

"Who?" The steward's voice became gloomy at once. He stared at Pears and put it straight, "Now there is such a person, why haven't anyone killed him? Why do you come back now? Such a person

should die as soon as possible for our safety.

"But that man might be Elzida!" Pears replied with a muffled voice.

"Who?" The steward became dumbfounded.

"The great prophet of Slavs, Elzida!" Pears explained. He also added, "Elzida left a letter to Peter in the key box. He might mention what would happen in Eschyle City in the letter. Therefore, he told huge bear tribe to respond to it in advance."

Of course, the steward knew who was Elzida. After hearing Pears' explanation, his face changed, "Are you sure?"

"Not sure. After discussion, we found many possibilities. In a conclusion, the predominate powers behind it might come from three aspects. First, it's reasonable for some crazy men or tribal calvinists in huge bear tribe to launch an attack; however, their preparations are not sufficient!"

"Second, Peter might want to check his ruling power in huge bear tribe by launching the attack. The troop of huge bear tribe might come back reaching Eschyle City. Certainly, we need to consider about the marvellous events that Peter has down in that underground relics. Peter might have other plan on setting out the troop of huge bear tribe. If this man could truly manifest the so-called God's will when he was also in the trap, he might have discovered something. You know that, some regions are always unpredictable in this world..."

"Lastly based on Elzida's superb ability, he might have already seen what happened in Eschyle City in future. Therefore, he left a letter so that huge bear tribe could respond to it properly!"

Hearing Pear's expressionless tone, the steward's facial muscles twisted painfully. That was caused by fury, hatred or a bit frustration. After Elzida died hundreds of years, nobody knew his ability better than three-eye association.

When this person was alive, he managed all the plots of three-eye association towards Slvas. Hundreds of years ago, Elzida cleaned all the politicians and lackeys of three-eyes association lurking in the Slavic clans in aggressive and bloody manner, causing a great loss to the three-eye association. Even though now, three-eye association still hadn't recovered his vitality and influence among Slavs. Few Slavs could be absorbed by three-eye association. Therefore, the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness became the vacuum territory of the power of three-eye association.

Three-eye association had already spent a lot in absorbing Pears. Their plan would succeed in a few months after over two decades. Unexpectedly, that guy, who had died for hundreds of years, suddenly reappeared.

Perhaps, the Spencers were still a bit dubious when they heard about Elzida. However, as long as the name "Elzida" appeared in their plot towards Slavs, he targeted at three-eye association for sure.

The steward looked as terrifying and grim as a devil as he was covered with rolling black battle-qi totem. However, he surpressed it forcefully. Given the rolling battle-qi totem, the steward was at least a LV 10 powerhouse.

"Perhaps, the true situation is not that worse. This is just a presumption!" Pears said calmly.

"I know, of course it is not the worst scenario. Even though it was Elzida. he could not see all the events and details in the future. Otherwise, they only need to dispatch a knight towards Eschyle City, instead of an army of 100,000 warriors!"

Pears became silent as he threw his sights towards that teenager once again.

The steward also became silent as his eyes glittered weirdly. It seemed that he was struggling inside...

After the basement recovered its tranquility for a short while...

"Pears..." the steward called him calmly and kindly.

Pears raised his head and stared at the steward, seemingly that he had already predicted what would the steward say, "Are you going to launch an attack in advance? If we wait for another 3 months, everything would be different."

"We cannot wait any longer. When the army of huge bear tribe arrive, all that we've done might be meaningless. If so, we will lose everything. We cannot hand over the initiative to others. Now, we still have the ability to arise a chaos in Eschyle City. However, after a couple of days, we might be stranded fish!"

Pears also sighed as he touched the stiff face of that teenager, "Do you know why would I like to collaborate with you?"

The steward became hesitated for a second, "Only our three-eye association could bring a new birth to young master. As long as young master's body is well preserved, when our army arrive at Ice and Snow Wilderness, we will complete rebirth and clone for young master using his cells..."

"But, will he be the same little Hellfire? By then, I will be worthless for you to do that..." Pears waved his head with a sorrowful tone, "I collaborate with you because I only want to let Spencers know that they have to pay for what they did. This clan should belong to my little Hellfire. If he is alive, he should have become the clan elder. Although I could not match Tilin, my kid is more excellent than any of his sons. However, the accident happened to the most excellent person when he was executing the clan mission. However, those average people live shamelessly. Now that little Hellfire is dead, the Spencer clan could not die. It's meaningless for such a corrupted clan to exist!"

"You..." the steward was surprised. He felt heartache at once. He lowered his head and found a black long sword had been penetrated through his heart by the very humble man, whom he

thought having been under his full control.

'He had a sword? How come that be?'

'He attacked me by sword? Yet, I don't feel that until being stricken?'

'What's that swordsmanship? Is that the very humble and incompetent man who only knew about drinking?'

The fresh blood flew out of the steward's mouth. He widely opened his eyes as he stared at that man's fat body and loose sleeves. He seemed understanding something. However, as his strength and vitality disappeared rapidly, he didn't even have the strength to utter the last words although he opened his mouth.

"Now that I will die and meet my little Hellfire, why do you live? Do you know that as a Slav, I actually hate you b*stards of three-eye association very much." Pears said as he drew out of the long sword and chopped off his head. Meanwhile, the headless corpse fell down.

The whole basement was filled with blood at once. A drop of fresh blood even sprayed onto that teenager's face. Pears took out a snow-white handkerchief and wiped off that drop of fresh blood. After that, he lowered his body and kissed his forehead before revealing a regretful smile.

"Little Hellfire. Look, your dad is really old. I cannot even kill a person tidily. Sorry for the blood. If you are still alive, you must be sharper than your dad. Wait for a few days. After your dad finishes that, I will bring more people here to accompany you. By then, you would not feel cold and lonely any longer..."

Chapter 488: Zhang Tie's Plan

On November 9th, after many days of long-range raid, the army of 100,000 warriors of huge bear tribe were finally less than 1000 km away from Eschyle City. For the tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness. If 100,000 warriors were less than 1000 km away from their core, with cavalries' speed, this distance was already suitable for the two tribes to fight.

Its distance had already reached the cordons of most tribes. It meant the two tribes would fight very soon.

Although the greater part of the army of huge bear tribe was still about 1000 km away from Eschyle City, the vanguard of the army was already less than 400 km away from the Sciatta town in the west of Eschyle City.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had already confirmed that Elzida didn't cheat him. The whole huge bear tribe was Elzida's gift to him. Everyone across the huge bear tribe, including the most common warriors and big figures like Sarlin Pontiff had paid enough tribute to him, a guy who was doomed to the clan elder of huge bear tribe. Each of his orders was very absurd and required a high cost of huge bear tribe, could be implemented resolutely.

Take this time as an example, his original intention of ordering the huge bear tribe to set out towards Eschyle City had been hit by Neymar. Zhang Tie really wanted to confirm his ruling authority towards huge bear tribe. If Elzida's prophecy had lost its sacred influence in huge bear tribe, Zhang Tie would not waste time on those people who treated him as a puppet.

Elzida wanted him to take responsibility for the future of huge bear tribe. Therefore, Zhang Tie firstly should confirm whether huge bear tribe was worth for him to be responsible for. Otherwise, the prophecy of great prophet and pontiff was just a mad old man's illusion which could not restrict him at all. He

didn't think that he owed Elzida or Slavs. He had not reached any agreement or made any promise with anyone. Therefore, he didn't have to take responsibility for the future of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

If he had to take responsibility for that, Zhang Tie felt that his responsibility for O'Laura and Sabrina might be greater than that for all the Slavs.

According to Zhang Tie's plan, if he could really take over huge bear tribe, he would stop the army and return his army northward to the base of huge bear tribe when they arrived at the small town Sciatta. If so, this action was just an armed cruise. If huge bear tribe was not worthwhile for him to do that, he would leave Ice and Snow Wilderness directly from Eschyle City by boat and return to Blackhot City.

Zhang Tie had already delivered the order to stop when the vanguard of his army reached the small town Sciatta. They would wait there until the great part of the army arrived. Based on the current marching speed, the greater part of allied forces would arrive at Sciatta Town by the evening of the day after tomorrow. After resting one day near the Sciatta Town, the army would turn around and return to the base of huge bear tribe.

...

After exiting the underground relics for a few days, Zhang Tie could obviously feel that the temperature of Ice and Snow Wilderness gradually declined. The north wind became increasingly chilly. The Ice and Snow Wilderness was going to enter winter.

After pitching the camp last night, Zhang Tie directly came to the camp of Thor's Hammer for an investigation.

Zhang Tie was very curious about xiphodons. After several days' contact, Zhang Tie found that this animal was born to be ridden. Although it might not be the strongest beast for riding, at least it

was the best and strongest one that Zhang Tie had ever seen.

Xiphodon was the most comfortable one with the highest speed and the best endurance that Zhang Tie had ever seen. Additionally, it could carry the heaviest burden. According to his subordinate, in certain rigorous environment, xiphodon could cooperate with the cavalry in fighting for one week without eating or drinking. What an amazing ability.

Xiphodon could run at a speed of about 120 km/h. Common xiphodons could carry above 1500 kg in battle. Plus its own weight of more than 4 tons for an adult. A xiphodon could also break everything except for the city wall at a speed of 100 km/h.

If not considering the speed of the greater part of the army, Thor's Hammer had already reached Eschyle City yesterday.

In the camp of Thor's Hammer, the cavalries were loading off the battle armor for their own xiphodons. Many cavalries were busy feeding and watering xiphodons and combing fur for them before eating themselves. Seeing those though guys taking care of xiphodons so patiently, Zhang Tie bet they would never take care of their women at home.

For cavalries of Thor's Hammer, xiphodons were not only for riding, but their brothers, partners and family members. For most of cavalries, as xiphodons could live long, they could befriend one or two xiphodons at most in their whole life. Therefore, they especially treasured their partner.

"What's that?" He saw some cavalries throwing purple pies into a xiphodon's mouth and the xiphodon enjoying it, Zhang Tie walked over there out of curiosity.

When he didn't disguise, Zhang Tie looked like a commoner. He liked to stay with his subordinates and warriors very much. When he was in Blapei, Zhang Tie, as a small official of Logistics Department who had rich payment, always stayed in the vehicle maintenance workshop with those repairmen. He always drilled in

and out of the chassis of vehicles. Although being covered with oil, he enjoyed it.

When he acted kindly in Blapei, his subordinates felt him easygoing; however, if he did that at this moment, he would make his subordinates flattered and highly inspired. Zhang Tie was still the same person; however, due to different positions, the same deed had different effects.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming over, the cavalry who was feeding his xiphodon instantly became thrilled as he hurriedly stood at attention.

"Easy, I saw you feeding it with something weird and it seemed to be different to other food!" Zhang Tie explained kindly, "What did you feed just now. Can you show it to me?"

"Colonel, I'm feeding Tyrrhenia with perilla stem!" the warrior answered loudly as he passed a hat-sized pie to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie took it over and found it was about 5 or 6 kg. It was made of leaves of dried broad-leaved herbaceous plant in the shape of pie. Zhang Tie remembered that Sabrina told him that xiphodon ate meat. He also found that most of xiphodons ate jerk these days.

Coincidentally, Sabrina was at Zhang Tie's side. Zhang Tie then threw a dubious look at her.

"My clan elder. Don't look at me like that. I didn't lie to you..." Sabrina peered at Zhang Tie in a charming way, "Tyrrhenia is the speciality in Costari Plain and the most favorite food of xiphodon. As there's no tyrrhenia in other places except for Costari Plain, xiphodon could only eat meat in other places. Even in Costari Plain, tyrrhenia could not be easily found. When there's no tyrrhenia, we will feed them with meat."

'Xiphodon is an omnivorous animal?' Zhang Tie realized that at once. However, after thinking it carefully, he found it was not strange at all. 'Most of bulky terrestrial animals like bear and

elephant are omnivorous animals even herbivores. Aren't horse and cow herbivores? But they are all very powerful and could run fast. Weren't dinosaurs, the biggest and strongest animals in the legend, herbivores?

Zhang Tie bore the name of tyrrhenia in mind and was thinking about taking a look at such a plant when he reached Costari Plain.

After taking a round in the camp of Thor's Hammer, Zhang Tie was going to come back. Right then, an airship flew towards the camp. Although being not as exaggerating as the fury-class airship, it was also huge and shiny, which looked brilliant. A remarkably huge bear-head symbol being surrounded by gears was on it.

"Eschyle City sends you beauties?" Sabrina blinked her eyes towards Zhang Tie.

"I guess they are here to inquire about the intention of huge bear tribe!" Zhang Tie smiled.

"Haven't you heard the term "Spencer women?" Sabrina asked.

"What do you mean?"

Therefore, Sabrina told Zhang Tie about the allusion, "I bet the big figures of Spencer clan must bring you some beautiful Spencer beauties. Perhaps they are using honey trap to you!"

"Is my image that embarrassed? Do Spencer clan plan to deal with me by only two women?" Zhang Tie almost cried.

"It seems that it's my fault!" Sabrina sighed.

Zhang Tie burst out laughter. Ignoring others' eyes, he directly patted Sabrina's plumpy butts. After that, he walked towards his tent, "What are you talking about? How come a man blame a woman. Let's take a look at the Spencer women!"

Looking at Zhang Tie's casual look, Sabrina revealed a smile as she walked towards the main tent in the distance together with Zhang Tie.

The huge airship landed about 1 km away from the camp. After that, a team of people walked towards the camp...

Chapter 489: A Sudden Change

On the way back to the main tent, Zhang Tie listened to Sabrina's introduction about Spencer clan as he gradually improved his plan in his heart.

According to the information revealed by Sabrina, Zhang Tie realized that he might rip off Spencer clan if he was lucky enough. He had already fabricated a reason——Eschyle City asked 4 silver coins from him when he entered the city.

This was obviously a prejudice to Zhang Tie.

'If this reason would not make Spencers spurt blood, how about the legendary clan elder of huge bear tribe being wanted by the police station of Eschyle City?'

The wanted circular of Eschyle City almost killed Zhang Tie. Thankfully, Bluesea Castle revoked the wanted circular for Zhang Tie at a high price. Zhang Tie still owed Bluesea Castle the repeal of the wanted circular instead of Eschyle City.

'As I was a trivial figure at that moment, after the wanted circular was revoked, Eschyle City only dispatched one person to manage me without promising any compensation. If I told them about this, they would consider it well.

On some events, Zhang Tie was not that open-minded, neither was he that kind of person who would stand being spat with saliva on face. As Spencer clan was wrong first, he had the reason to make a fuss.

Sabrina told Zhang Tie everything about Spencer clan and Eschyle City, which deepened Zhang Tie's understanding about this women.

Until now Zhang Tie and Sabrina were still just friends and lovers. They had not broken through the last barrier. Although Sabrina was infamous outside, Zhang Tie knew that she was not

only innocent but also had her own pursuit. Compared to most women's dependence on men, Sabrina was very powerful inside. She dreamed to be an independent female who could control her own fate.

His current social status was completely different than that one month ago. However, Sabrina always kept a distance with him. Although they were still intimate, they didn't seek for stimulation without any consideration any longer.

Because of this, Zhang Tie became more respectful about Sabrina.

After sleeping a girl, Zhang Tie would always treasure her better. Whereas, Zhang Tie also gave enough respect to the women who didn't sleep with him.

Zhang Tie knew that Sabrina was trying her best to display her value in front of Zhang Tie. This woman was very smart and valuable. Additionally, due to her special status, she could get many unusual information. Zhang Tie felt her words very enlightening.

"You are really familiar with Eschyle City. Are you going to settle down there?" Zhang Tie joked.

"Compared to other tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, the atmosphere in Eschyle City is more relaxed. There're more opportunities to make money over there. Additionally, my status might frighten many people over there. I truly thought about that before!" Sabrina confessed. as she ran her fingers through her hair womanly, "Additionally, it's also convenient to leave Ice and Snow Wilderness from Eschyle City. I was thinking that if that old man of wild bear tribe forced me too much, I would leave Ice and Snow Wilderness and bought a small island in Ewentra Archipelago. I preferred to be a king of an isle. After that, I will open a hotel or a bar by the sea. After that, I could look at the sea or take a walk on the beach everyday!"

Zhang Tie burst out laughter at once. He had not imagined that Sabrina had such an idea before.

...

The Spencer representatives soon arrived at the camp of the huge bear tribe. It was heard that the head of the team was an elder. According to the equivalence principle in this case, elder Gouras went out to welcome them; however, Zhang Tie, Pontiff Sarlin and elder Toles waited for them in the main tent.

As Sabrina was not qualified to attend this meeting, she left the main tent.

Zhang Tie soon saw the elder of Spencer clan. When the thick curtain of the main tent was opened, elder Gouras and that man entered.

That was an old man with grey hair, who looked spirited and healthy. His name was Rodolfo Spencer. After feeling that the old guy's qi was weaker than that of Gouras and Toles, Zhang Tie finally recovered his composure.

If this world was covered with knights, those people below knights would have no chance to survive any more. Elder Sarlin said there was only one knight in Spencer clan, the grandpa's grandpa of Tilin. He had already been over 200 years old. Such an important people would always stay in the clan. He would never leave Eschyle City at this moment.

Since Titlin's grandpa's grandpa, the whole Spencer clan failed to cultivate one knight for 200 years at the cost of numerous clan resources. From this, we knew how difficult to cultivate a knight.

Sabrina also mentioned this dilemma facing Spencer clan—no successive top fighting strength.

Behind this old man was a slightly fat 40-year old man, who was followed by two women. The moment the two women entered, Zhang Tie's eyes gleamed.

They were very beautiful and had distinctive charms. The elder one was about 30 years old who was almost as charming as Sabrina like a ripe honey peach. The younger one was only 17-18 years old, who looked naive.

Although with distinctive images, when the two women walked together, the charming one would be more alluring while the naive one would be more innocent. The two women looked similar to each other. When they stood together, their charms would drive any men to make crimes.

They were Spencer women, two nature-born stunners!

All the four Spencers greeted Zhang Tie with the regular etiquette on greeting clan elder of huge bear tribe.

After that, Rodolfo introduced the other three Spencers to Zhang Tie. After that, he sat on the opposite of Zhang Tie, Pontiff Sarlin and Toles.

Through Rodolfo's introduction, Zhang Tie knew that 30-odd woman named Matia while the younger one named Beryl. As to the rest man, Zhang Tie knew that he was here to make the Spencer elder not too embarrassed as he gifted the two women to him. That man was nothing but a ritual prop. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't even want to remember his name.

After taking a seat, they exchanged pleasantries with each other for a short while. Then, Rodolfo told them about his purpose in a very skilled way. Slow-witted guys might even not understand the meaning of this old guy.

"The prophecy of the great prophet and Pontiff Elzida finally fulfilled. When we received this message, as a member of Slavs, iron bear tribe and our Spencers were very spirited about that. Therefore, I'm here to congratulate huge bear tribe and clan elder Peter on behalf of Spencers!"

Soon after Rodolfo finished his words, the fat guy beside him had

already took out a brocade box, put it on the table before pushing it forward.

"We know there's a misunderstanding between clan elder Peter and Eschyle City. Therefore, we're especially here to congratulate clan elder Peter and huge bear tribe. Meanwhile, we extend our sincere apology to that we mistook you as a wanted criminal due to our negligence two months ago. We really appreciate Bluesea Business Group for correcting us. Thankfully, the misunderstanding didn't develop into a regret. Here are gold checks of about 3 million gold coins in the case. It's our sincerity. If clan elder Peter accept our apology, our Spencers would welcome clan elder Peter to visit Eschyle City at any time. We will arrange the most hospitable and solemn reception for clan elder Peter."

After thinking about two seconds, Zhang Tie figured out four meanings in the elder's words.

First, Spencers admitted the legality and sacredness of Peter as the clan elder of huge bear tribe. Additionally, as a member of Slavs, Eschyle City would be in consistent with huge bear tribe to a certain degree on the events that were involved with the interests of all Slavs.

Second, Spencers had already known what Bluesea Castle had done for revoking that wanted circular. They would compensate Bluesea Business Group and would not let Bluesea Castle suffer a loss in this event.

Third, Spencers might have no high-end fighting strength; however, they had enough money. Now that they could afford 3 million gold coins a gift, Spencers could also spend more money to support Eschyle City in the battle. By then, the two parties would suffer a loss.

Fourth, if you agree, let your army of 100,000 warriors go back as soon as possible. After that, Spencers would welcome Peter to visit Eschyle City at any time. The two beauties also presented their

sincerity.

After thinking for a few moment, Zhang Tie finally figured out Rodolfo's words.

'F*ck, are all these old guys that smart and hypocritical?' Zhang Tie swore inside. If they were two gang leaders, one of them would have long patted the gold checks of 300 gold coins onto the table and asked "Who will roll out of here first, you or me?" How easy would that be?

Everyone fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie. Gouras was even worried that Zhang Tie might not understand the meaning of the old guy.

"Let bygones be bygones. I heard the spring in Sciatta was nice. I just want to take a look over there. After resting one day in Sciatta Town, my army would turn northward and return to Costari Plain. If possible, I will pay a visit to Eschyle City next time!" Zhang Tie opened his mouth.

Soon after the words, not only Rodolfo and the other Spencers, even Sarlin, Gouras and Toles let out a deep sigh. Everyone became reassured.

Sciatta Town was still over 300 km away from Eschyle City. If the army of huge bear tribe finally stopped in Sciatta Town. Everyone would feel acceptable.

Therefore, the atmosphere in the main tent became relaxed at once.

Gouras and Toles exchanged glances with each other as they were all surprised about Zhang Tie's calmness and decisiveness. Even if Peter was chosen as the clan elder of huge bear tribe by Elzida, Peter's performance refresh the two people's recognition about him.

After leading the army of 100,000 warriors for a few days, Peter displayed the great power of huge bear tribe, which was threatening to all tribes. Meanwhile, he gained 3 million gold coins

from Eschyle City so easily. What a hopeful clan elder!

Not until then, elder Gouras clapped. After that, a team of warriors entered and served drinks and food on the two tables...

Naturally, the guests and the owner became happy and harmonious.

...

Unexpectedly, when Rodolfo bottomed up for the clan mission in the main tent of huge bear tribe, the whole Eschyle City were sent in chaos completely after a ground-breaking explosion.

After that explosion, the whole Iron Bear Castle became ruins. The whole city was shocked by that explosion. Many residents in Eschyle City were shocked by that explosion so much that their faces even turned utterly pale. Gradually, the eyes of some city guards who resided Eschyle City started to turn red. Meanwhile, they started to attack everyone that they saw...

As a result, the Eschyle City was gradually filled with cries, battle calls and roars.

The entire city started to weep...

...

One hour later, when a flurried people bumped into the main tent "accompanied" by two warriors of huge bear tribe regardless of rites. He passed an emergency note that he got through remote-sensing crystal to Rodolfo. Only after one glance, Rodolfo instantly sprung up as his face turned from white to red and from red to black. Finally he spurted a mouthful of blood and fell back onto the ground.

...

A few minutes later, acute and inspiring mort drifted in the camp of the huge bear tribe.

Zhang Tie rushed into the camp of Thor's Hammer like a storm

as he raised high his battle hammer.

"Thor's Hammer, have my order! Everyone, throw away your heavy armors and supplies, only take your weapons and follow me!"

Zhang Tie then jumped onto his xiphodon and rushed out of the camp of Thor's Hammer together with his bodyguards.

At the same time, his bloody and fiery curtain rose into the sky...

That was a burning banner in the chilly wind...

That was a flying banner under the brilliant stars...

At the sight of the rising banner and first one rushing out of the camp, all the warriors of Thor's Hammer's eyes turned red. Among endless growls, 5000 xiphodons followed up that banner in a dauntless way.

After that, numerous hoofs boomed the ground...

Chapter 490: 1000 Km Gallop

Before daybreak, a blood-red color appeared on the horizon, which was not the sunlight, but the big fire in Eschyle City below it.

After 11 hours of gallop, Zhang Tie finally arrived at the periphery of Eschyle City together with his Thor's Hammer.

After running over 1000 km, even the strongest xiphodons felt very fatigued at this moment.

In the cold wild, after running over night, the 5000-odd xiphodons were like red iron pots being sprayed with cold water as each of them were steaming.

This was a small hillside right over 20 km away in the northwest of Eschyle City. A limpid stream flew by the hillside from its foot. Even though Zhang Tie was very anxious inside, he had to stop Thor's Hammer and take a rest in order to deal with the coming fierce battle.

No matter how powerful a bolt was, when its energy was exhausted, it could barely break a thin silk cloth. Although it looked cool to rush towards Eschyle City from 1 km away, it was a huge challenge to both cavalries and xiphodons. Cavalries still stuck to it; however, xiphodons were already very tired. If they did not take a rest for a short while, Thor's Hammer's fighting performance would decline.

"Rest half an hour. Then, we will set out!"

Soon after Zhang Tie delivered his order, all the cavalries jumped off the xiphodons silently. However, none of the cavalries took a rest; instead, they started to help their xiphodons relax themselves and recover energy. This skill had to be mastered by cavalries, which was concluded by the cavalries of the huge bear tribe after hundreds of years of practices. It was a kind of a massage. After the

whole massage, the xiphodons' physical strength and running ability could recover rapidly.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't know about this skill. However, he had another method. After jumping off his xiphodon, Zhang Tie pasted his palm onto xiphodon's body. After locking the xiphodon's stomach with his powerful spirit, Zhang Tie directly injected 6 vials of all-purpose medicament into his stomach from Castle of Black Iron.

This method was taught by Heller when he disguised as the God underground. When his spirit was powerful enough and the opponent was relaxed, the substance was carried out of Castle of Black Iron could penetrate into the opponent's cell walls in disperse pattern. In this case, Zhang Tie could directly inject water, all-purpose medicament or recovery medicament into the opponent's stomach.

Zhang Tie implemented this in the name of the "God's will" by touching the patients to cure them.

Of course, some had noticed Zhang Tie's movement; however, they didn't pay special attention to that. When Zhang Tie left the xiphodon and climbed onto the top of the hill to observe the situation in Eschyle City in the distance with some people, one of Zhang Tie's bodyguard walked towards his xiphodon to massage it. However, he found that Zhang Tie's xiphodon had already recovered its physical strength, which arouse the curiosity of the nearby warriors...

Zhang Tie climbed onto the top of the hill and watched the big fire in Eschyle City in the distance. He clenched his fist as a painful expression flashed across his eyes. Zhang Tie knew that people would die every second in Eschyle City.

If he was alone, Zhang Tie would have long rushed towards Eschyle City at once. However, as the general of Thor's Hammer, he had to be responsible for those people who handed their lives to

him. He could not send those pious warriors into dilemma due to his warm blood and impulsions.

Therefore, even if Eschyle City was covered with blood at this moment, the Thor's Hammer had to rest here for half an hour at least.

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally understood the proverb "Kind people are not suitable to rule the army", because no matter whatever decision he made, he would always have to sacrifice many lives.

Clenching his fist, Zhang Tie kept his eyes closed for a couple of seconds. After opening his eyes, he looked more decisive.

Zhang Tie was followed by Roslav, Waajid and some generals of Thor's Hammer. At the sight of the city full of wails in the fire, they all looked very solemn.

After a boom, Iron Bear Castle was completely destroyed by an alchemist's bomb. Spencer clan suffered a great loss. The command center of the clan was paralyzed at once. They still didn't know about the casualties in Spencer clan because of that boom. They were only told that the elites of Spencer clan were holding a conference in Iron Bear Castle when Iron Bear Castle was destroyed by an alchemist's bomb. Closely after that, a lot of demon puppets appeared in Eschyle City, turning this city into a hell at once.

The earliest demon puppets were transformed by at least 80,000 city guards in Eschyle City. No one knew how many commoners in Eschyle City were transformed into demon puppets.

That was why Zhang Tie insisted on rushing towards here. The appearance of demon puppets indicated that demons or three-eye association were involved in it.

The most important thing in front of them were the number of demon puppets and whether they were controlled by puppet

worms. After the event in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie deeply knew the terror of demon puppets. If demon puppets were controlled by puppet worms, it would be more terrifying.

Right then, under the gaze of everyone on the top of the hill, a cavalry of about 50 people soon reached the foot of the hill while hefting a banner of the huge bear tribe.

After receiving the intelligence from Eschyle City last night, Zhang Tie had already ordered the vanguard of the huge bear tribe to save as more people as possible in Eschyle City. Therefore, the vanguard of 3000 cavalries arrived here in a few hours ago.

The leader of the cavalry was soon guided by Zhang Tie and the other generals of Thor's Hammer.

"Clan elder!" the enterprising leader stood upright. Meanwhile, he raised his right hand forward and punched onto his left chest at once as a military salute.

"How is the situation in Eschyle City?" Zhang Tie put it straight.

"It's very chaotic. The whole city was disordered. People were killed everywhere. Our team has just arrived there for less than 2 hours. Given the chaotic situation in Eschyle City, we didn't dig deep into it. Under the command of the leader, we grabbed the north gate of Eschyle City and opened it so that the alive people could escape out of there!"

"How many demon puppets are there in the City?"

"At least 600,000 people, among them were at least 150,000 regular soldiers in Eschyle City. As demon puppets killed every alive people they saw. Few soldiers who had not been demonized were still fighting those demon puppets. Spencer have already lost their control of this city. Everyone is fighting for themselves!"

"Were those demonized puppets acting like a well-organized army? Did they look like being commanded by others?"

"My vanguards have already fought some demonized puppets.

They are too crazy to be killed; however, they are poorly organized. They just killed every alive man they saw!"

Zhang Tie thought about it for a few seconds, "Do you know the most populated place of demonized puppets?"

"I was told by some residents escaping out of the city that the most populated place of demonized puppets was near the Iron Bear Castle of Spencer clan!"

"Near the Iron Bear Castle?" Zhang Tie considered it for a short while before sighing inside. "Spencer clan is over. The Iron Bear Castle and its neighborhood was where the most of the Spencers lived." However, now, Iron Bear Castle was boomed into pieces. After pouring in another hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets from the neighborhood, how many Spencers could still survive such a catastrophe would be a question.

Although having not seen it himself, Zhang Tie could almost confirm that the maternal puppet worm was in the Iron Bear Castle. Perhaps that boom killed that maternal puppet along with the Iron Bear Castle. Therefore, so many demonized puppets gathered around the Iron Bear Castle.

"Fine, I know. Go back and tell your vanguard head. Guard the north gate of Eschyle City. The Thor's Hammer would arrive soon!"

"Yes, sir!" the team leader punched onto his chest once again towards Zhang Tie before leaving the top of the hill rapidly.

Zhang Tie glanced at those generals of Thor's Hammer. After hearing the words of the team leader, the generals of Thor's Hammer didn't look worried; instead, they looked faintly excited as their eyes glittered.

The catastrophe facing Spencer clan and the chaotic situation in Eschyle City was indeed a good chance for the huge bear tribe.

"Bring me the map of Eschyle City!"

Closely after Zhang Tie's words, an adviser among the generals opened a metal cylinder and took out of the map of Eschyle City from it.

For various tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, as long as the army set out, each troop had to take maps of the other tribes' habitation, especially Eschyle City. They could buy one in Eschyle City at the cost of a couple of silver coins. They could dispatch some people here to look around the Eschyle City before drawing a military map on the basis of the original map.

After opening the water-proof military map and pressing the four corners of the map with some fluorite lamps, the generals of Thor's Hammer stood aside and watched the map while holding their breaths. Zhang Tie watched it for a short while before drawing a circle of about 5-6 square kilometers by a red pen centered in the Iron Bear Castle of Eschyle City. After that, he started to deploy the battle plan...

Chapter 491: A Bloody Suppression

Zhang Tie's plan was very simple; to clean all the demonized puppets on the three main horizontal avenues and three main longitudinal avenues using the force and speed of Thor's Hammer in Eschyle City around the red circle. Additionally, to break through the city gates being linked to the 6 main avenues so as to create a tunnel for those alive to escape out of the city.

Being different from common maps, the widths and depths of the six avenues on the military map of Eschyle City had been marked for the convenience of the xiphodons or common rhino-horse cavalries.

Zhang Tie only had one requirement about Thor's Hammer in the whole plan——In any case, maintain the maneuverability and speed of the troops. Keep moving; otherwise, once being surrounded by the demonized puppets, the Thor's Hammer would be gnawed sooner or later like fierce tigers being trapped in marsh.

As the others had not fought the demonized puppets before, they could hardly sense the terror of the demonized puppets, not to mention that they could make a battle plan like Zhang Tie. Whereas, as Zhang Tie had already experienced the similar battles in Heavens Cold City, he was very familiar with the battle patterns of those demonized puppets. Furthermore, he knew it clearly how to defeat demonized puppets using his own advantages.

If the Thor's Hammer included 50,000 warriors, perhaps Zhang Tie would consider to take a look in the neighborhood of the Iron Bear Castle. However, in the current situation, it was really not sensible to crash that hard bone with Thor's Hammer.

"As the military officials and generals of Thor's Hammer, you have to keep one thing in mind after leading your troops into Eschyle City, 'If you lose your speed, you will lose your life.' The first battle of Thor's Hammer will sustain until this 12:00 am. By

then, you have to retreat from the north gate. After that, you will converge outside the north gate and take a rest. I don't expect to see any cavalry of Thor's Hammer being trapped in the city by then. Although casualties cannot be avoided, I don't allow any member of Thor's Hammer to die unless on the back of xiphodons while in movement, if possible. Am I clear?"

As Zhang Tie was so solemn, all the military officers and generals of Thor's Hammer nodded solemnly.

"Well, go pass my order to your warriors. We will set out on time!"

All the generals and military officials heavily pounded their own left chests.

...

Half an hour was actually very temporary. After the cavalries of Thor's Hammer finished massaging their xiphodons and allowed them to drink water, they took a rest for less than 5 minutes. When the twilight exposed in the skyline, the troop set out once again.

Speed, speed, speed——this was what their colonel required them. Each cavalry of Thor's Hammer kept this in mind.

When it was still over 10 km away from Eschyle City, they saw many residents escaping out of the city in a flurried way.

These people were awakened from their fears by the booms of the xiphodons' hoofs. They hurriedly gave a way to the xiphodons in front of them. Hiding aside, they widely opened their eyes as they saw this batch of powerful cavalries flashing before them.

"Papa...who...are them?" a 11-12 year-old boy asked his father with his frightening eyes fixed on a male xiphodon which he had never seen before escaping out of the city while standing on an earth slope.

Looking at those xiphodons, his dad became silent for a short while with a complicated look while his face was still sprayed with

some blood stains. Only one tribe could afford so many xiphodon cavalries at once across Ice and Snow Wilderness. This must be the army of 100,000 warriors of this tribe, which had frightened the entire Eschyle City these days.

"They...they are the King's Knights Regiment!"

At this moment, the man didn't know that the King's Knights Regiment had been changed to Thor's Hammer.

"King's Knights Regiment..." the little boy stared at the backs of those strong cavalries who were darting towards Eschyle City. From then on, the tough backs and the fierce beasts left a deep impression in the little boy's heart, which would accompany with him for the rest of his life.

When some escaped out of that hell, some rushed into that hell!

The little boy was very innocent.

...

In a wink, the north gate of Eschyle City appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

When Zhang Tie arrived at the north gate, he saw the 3000 vanguards of the huge bear tribe fighting 6000-9000 demonized puppets. They were fighting from the outside of north city gate to the doorway.

The moment the vanguards heard the hoofs of xiphodons of the Thor's Hammer, they instantly gave a way to them, allowing thousands of demonized puppets to rush out of the city through the doorway with grim, bloody eyes.

Seeing this ugly demonized puppets, a killing thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. He knew that the real people had died, all these were bugs cultivated by demons which were manipulating and profaning the human corpses...

The moment those demonized puppets rushed out of the city,

they had seen the xiphodons surging towards them.

Closely after that, constant sounds of breaking bones, tendons and breaking jars of pickled vegetables dropping onto the ground from 3rd or 4th floor drifted from the north gate of Eschyle City.

A lot of demonized puppets were bumped and sent flying back dozens of meters. Each demonized puppet struck by a xiphodon could collide a lot of its kind onto the ground like a flying flesh balls. As for those being collided onto the ground, before they climbed up, they had already been kicked back onto the ground by the hoofs of xiphodons.

The cavalries then reached out their long javelins and stabbed into the heads of those demonized puppets precisely and sharply. After that, they shook their javelin and directly injected their surging battle Qi inside, exploding the heads of demonized puppets.

Zhang Tie rushed ahead of the Thor's Hammer. Each time he waved his terrifying battle hammer, he would split a demonized puppet's body into pieces like a broken porcelain, sending them flying back to dozens of meters and shooting down a great number of demonized puppets.

The deputy regimental commander behind Zhang Tie was thrashing his iron javelin horizontally towards those demonized puppets like using a common wooden stick, causing rows of demonized puppets to fly backwards in weird gestures.

A qizhang's javelin was connected with 5 or 6 struggling demonized puppets like [sugar-coated haws](#). After the qizhang's battle Qi flashed by, it blew up all the demonized puppets...

Under the gaze of the 3000 vanguards, the 5000 cavalries of Thor's Hammer formed a triangular arrowhead. After that, the arrowhead rolled towards the 7000-8000 demonized puppets like how a herd of mad cattle trampled on the roadside scarecrows without declining their speed.

After that, the arrowhead penetrated through the north gate of Eschyle City and disappeared in front of them, leaving a hundreds of meters long flesh swamp. Only a few of the 7000-8000 demonized puppets were left there. They were standing on two sides of the flesh swamp with a confusing look and looking around, seemingly could not figure out what was happening.

This was Thor's Hammer, the most powerful warriors in Ice and Snow Wilderness led by the clan elder.

After a couple of seconds, the 3000 vanguards yelled. Soon after that, they swarmed back and killed all the rest alive puppets. By then, they took control of the north gate of Eschyle City once again.

Zhang Tie was also shocked by the first battle. Such a powerful cavalry was dreamed by each commander. Zhang Tie was sure that this team's fighting strength could rank within top five even top three across Blackson Humans Clan on the premise of the same population, not to mention in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

However, there were thousands of human cavalry teams across Blackson Humans Clan.

After rushing into the north gate of Eschyle City, the Thor's Hammer didn't stop. Instead, they split into three parts. Zhang Tie led 2000 of them forward while each of the two deputy regimental commanders led 1500 of them towards the two sides.

Like plows, the three cavalries plowed towards south along three main avenues in Eschyle City...

...

The six main thoroughfares were very broad. Benefited from the developed industry, commerce and trade in Eschyle City, the width of each thoroughfare was greater than 40 m.

As curfew was implemented these days in the Eschyle City, no vehicle or traffic tool could be seen in the thoroughfares across the

city.

Based on Zhang Tie's experiences, in such case, the average people in the city might be hiding in their homes or chose hidden and safe paths to escape out of the city together with their friends and neighbors. Those who were fighting demonized puppets would also take advantage of the terrains. Nobody dared to swagger in the main thoroughfares so as to attract the attention of those demonized puppets unless they wanted to die. However, those who really wanted to seek for death could not be more dead at this moment.

Therefore, those who were swaggering in the main thoroughfares of Eschyle City were all demonized puppets. What was there in front of Zhang Tie verified his judgment.

Seeing those demonized puppets rushing towards his xiphodon with bloody eyes, Zhang Tie roared as he waved his battle hammer to suppress them all with the help of his 2000 warriors of Thor's Hammer...

As they moved forward, the road behind was gradually paved with fleshes and rolling heads.

Facing those slow-witted demonized puppets who only knew about killing using their instinct, Thor's Hammer had an overwhelming advantage. In the broad main thoroughfares, all the cavalries of Thor's Hammer only needed to do this; kept the formation, followed the team, raised their javelins, charged, charged and charged forward.

No demonized puppets could block such a cavalry.

If demonized puppets had high intelligence, they would set road blocks or change their tactics and fighting ways. In this way, they could bring huge trouble to the cavalries of Thor's Hammer.

However, as these demonized puppet couldn't grow mature due to the death of the maternal puppet worm, they only knew about

killing and destroying others. They had no intelligence at all. Therefore, they did two things to Thor's Hammer——rushed toward the cavalries while waving their arms; shrilled towards the cavalries of Thor's Hammer out of fury and chased after them.

However, the Thor's Hammer only did one thing——each team chose one horizontal and one longitudinal main thoroughfares and kept galloping their xiphodons in them.

At the beginning, the two deputy regimental commanders didn't understand Zhang Tie's order——keep galloping their xiphodons in the main thoroughfares. In their mind, after killing those demonized puppets in the main thoroughfares twice, they would have no demonized puppet to kill anymore; however, when they made a round trip in their own main thoroughfares, they found they could not clean them all at all as the other demonized puppets in the far would soon arrive after hearing the shrills of their same kind...

What the two deputy regimental commanders needed to do was to keep "refreshing" the roads to and fro like a road roller together with their cavalries on the terrain which was most beneficial for xiphodons to play their role.

Before arrival, no general of Thor's Hammer had imagined that they would fight this way...

Sugar-coated haws are usually seen nearby Chinese bus stations. Kids like to eat it. One string of 6-8 sugar-coated haws would cost you 1-10 RMB.

Chapter 492: The Brilliant Military Exploits

Since they rushed into Eschyle City, the 5000 cavalries of Thor's Hammer had been rushing and killing in the six main thoroughfares of the city until 12:00 am. When the three troops of Thor's Hammer converged at the fixed time and retreated out of the north gate of Eschyle City to take a rest, 5000 cavalries and 5000 xiphodons were all covered with blood and aggressive killing intent.

Seeing them coming out of the city, all the alive people who had escaped out of the north gate of Eschyle City watched this cavalry with awed and appreciative eyes. Many people's eyes were filled with tears as they gave a way to the cavalries silently. Everyone knew that they might not be able to escape out of the city at all without this powerful cavalry.

Because of the impact of Thor's Hammer, the other 5 city gates of Eschyle City were also opened consecutively. All the demonized puppets nearby the 5 city gates were eliminated by Zhang Tie's moving tactics. When Thor's Hammer were attracting and killing those demonized puppets in the six main thoroughfares of the city, a great number of residents escaped out of the city gate through the safe roads which had been cleaned by Thor's Hammer, including some established detachment of city guards.

Based on the population and power of Thor's Hammer, Zhang Tie knew that he could not consider each street and each residential area. However, he indeed had already played the role of Thor's Hammer to the utmost extent and tried his best to create conditions for those alive people who wanted to escape out of the city.

All the Thor's Hammer cavalries and xiphodons had only rested half an hour before daybreak since rapid march last night; plus 5 hours of consecutive high-intensity fight, the whole Thor's Hammer was very fatigued, by noon, including cavalries and

xiphodons.

The temporary camp of Thor's Hammer was over 200 m outside the north gate, being close to the north gate tower and a section of the city wall. As an important material storage warehouse of the city guards of Eschyle City, this place was very spacious.

There were over 300 guards here previously. Since last night, the great changes in the city made the guards flurried. As they didn't receive any order, they could only stay here to defend this place. After Zhang Tie rushed towards them with Thor's Hammer and declared that this place had been expropriated, the military officers opened the gate of the warehouse only after a few seconds.

After the cavalries jumped off the xiphodons, their military exploits were soon reported.

—In the entire morning, 278 cavalries of Thor's Hammer were slightly wounded, 24 were worse yet could still fight while 3 were heavily wounded, who could not join the battle anymore. They were receiving the medical treatment and were no longer in danger. However, they killed 80,000 to 100,000 demonized puppets in total, 30,000 of them were the original regular army of Eschyle City.

This was a very brilliant victory which was out of one's imagination--Killed 100,000 enemies, yet lost no one itself.

Roslav's voice trembled when he reported this military exploit to Zhang Tie. Although such a brilliant military exploit was caused by the sharp difference between demonized puppets and xiphodons in fighting strength, it was benefited more from Zhang Tie's command and fighting tactics. Although being boring and mechanical, the moving tactic played a great role in the battle. Otherwise, it was not even possible for the 5000 xiphodons cavalries to kill 100,000 mad dogs, not to mention 100,000 demonized puppets.

After receiving the report, Zhang Tie was also shocked. Honestly,

Zhang Tie had not accepted any systematic military and command training since he was born. The reason that he insisted on this fighting tactic lay in his experience in fighting demonized puppets. He just felt it was practicable. And he could not think about better fighting tactics for Thor's Hammer in Eschyle City.

Given the military exploits, this fighting tactic was not especially effective.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie found that he had already reached a supreme level in military command mentioned by chief of staff Guderian, which was desired by most of the commanders and generals—to complete the battle in the most advantageous way with more powerful forces on the predetermined battle field.

Although Zhang Tie also felt very fatigued, after hearing this report, he still stood up and told Roslav, "Let's take a look out there..."

For Zhang Tie, as long as he put down his Thor's Hammer, it would be the best rest. In order to maintain the morale of the cavalries, Zhang Tie kept waving his Thor's Hammer until now. After putting it down, Zhang Tie felt that his arms were in so much pain that they almost became numb.

Even though he had eaten a lot of seven-strength fruits, he still could not bear it after the high-intensity march and battle from last night to now with that Thor's Hammer.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt coming back to Iron Blood Camp.

When he walked out of the door of the tent, Zhang Tie silently "transported" some all-purpose medicament into his mouth before forcefully swallowing them like swallowing his saliva. After that, he gradually recovered.

Feeling the cold north wind, Zhang Tie raised his head and found that it was already snowing in the cloudy day.

"Is it snowing?"

Zhang Tie reached out his hand, having the glittering snow flakes fall on his hand.

"It's good. At least, now we don't have to worry about the corpses in the city being rotten. If those corpses could not have timely dealt, it would probably have arose plague in the neighborhood and killed more people." Zhang Tie sighed inside.

"Perhaps, even the God would not like to see this city become worse."

When it snowed, Zhang Tie took a look at those warriors.

As a result, all the fatigued warriors silently climbed up from the ground and watched Zhang Tie's back when they saw Zhang Tie passing by them. Some of them even punched their chest to pay their tribute to him.

The brilliant military exploits also spread across the Thor's Hammer at this moment.

Looking at those awed eyes, Zhang Tie knew that his status as the regimental commander of Thor's Hammer was fully accepted and sincerely advocated by all the warriors of Thor's Hammer until now. Before this, the warriors of Thor's Hammer accepted Elzida's prophecy more than him.

Whatever the prophecy was, Zhang Tie knew that only the commanders and generals who could win a battle and survive their subordinates would win the adoration and support of the warriors. If his performance was too bad, like how a wastrel squandered his 1 million gold coins of deposit in bank, sooner or later, he would lose everything, including all the resources left by Elzida to him like that marvelous halos and the warriors' belief in him.

Zhang Tie took a round among the warriors of Thor's Hammer to check those who were moderately or heavily wounded. After confirming that those wounded warriors had been properly

managed and had been no longer in danger, Zhang Tie walked out of the wards.

"Open the warehouse. There are some things available inside. Deliver them to the warriors first!" Zhang Tie walked as he sent an order to the one beside him, "Pick up the thick clothes, tents and food first to ensure the supply of Thor's Hammer and the vanguards; after that, dispatch some people to other places outside the city, if there are other material warehouses near us, expropriate them; after counting the materials inside, prepare to deliver them to the refugees!"

Zhang Tie didn't know how many people had he saved. Therefore, he could only try his best at this moment.

"Yes, sir!"

"Bring me that garrison officers. Something in Eschyle City has to be managed by them. As we have no surplus people to consider about other things in this couple of days, it's nothing different than killing them if we sent them into the city; however, they could play their role in other places!"

After the Thor's Hammer took over this material warehouse, they had already put the 300-odd guards under house arrest.

Receiving Zhang Tie's order, someone soon brought the garrison officers here.

He was a 50-year old middle aged man with the rank of captain. He looked very experienced and honest. Being promoted to a captain and was dispatched here to defend the warehouse in his 50s , this person must be a rather honest guy.

That person also knew about Zhang Tie's current status; however, he had not imagined that Zhang Tie wanted to meet him. Therefore, he looked very tense while his forehead was oozing. He did not dare to look straight into Zhang Tie's eyes.

"Don't bully honest ones.", this was the code of conduct to be a

man taught by his mom. Therefore, at the sight of such an honest man, Zhang Tie looked kinder at once.

"Take a seat, captain. What's your name?"

"My...my name is Cruyff!"

"Are your family members still in Eschyle City?"

"My family members are outside of the city; however...my brother's family is still in the city!" Cruyff said after a second.

"Captain Cruyff. You must have known what happened in Eschyle City. To put it straightforward, you might not determine the future of this city; but are you willing to do one thing if it could help a lot of residents in Eschyle City, even save a lot of them without having to risk your life?"

After a short hesitation, Cruyff raised his head and looked at Zhang Tie's sincere eyes before nodding, "I am!"

...

Several minutes later, Cruyff left together with his 300-odd subordinates...

Without taking a rest, after making an arrangement to Thor's Hammer, Zhang Tie rushed into Eschyle City again with Roslav, Waajid and the other 7 bodyguards whose comprehensive fighting strength was above LV 7...

Chapter 493: Only for Peace of Mind

It took Zhang Tie's team less than 20 minutes to arrive from the north gate to the Duhaer Avenue after killing dozens of demonized puppets on the way.

Duhaer Avenue was a common place in the west of Eschyle City. There were all sorts of commercial firms and buildings of 4-5 storeys on both sides of the avenue.

Many gates of the commercial firms on the first floor of the buildings was broken. The avenue was covered with over 100 corpses and blood stains.

When they arrived here, they saw a group of demonized puppets who were squatting on the roadside and tearing some fresh corpses.

"Kill them!" Zhang Tie muffled his voice as he charged towards the demonized puppets right away.

Feeling enemy rushing towards them, those demonized puppets instantly raised their bloody face from the incomplete corpses and darted towards Zhang Tie's team.

Roslav and Waajid were both LV 10 strong fighters, the other members except for Zhang Tie were all above LV 7. Therefore, before those demonized puppets arrived in front of Zhang Tie, a lot of them had been stricken down by Roslav and Waajid.

Holding a common long sword, Zhang Tie only chopped off the ugly heads of the two demonized puppets before the battle came to an end.

Before the next batch of demonized puppets arrived, the whole avenue became quiet temporarily. Because the population of demonized puppets in Eschyle City was less than that in Heavens Cold City. Heavens Cold City was where most of the people became demonized puppets and was the real hell. In that city, each step

should be meticulous. If the current situation in Eschyle City was the same as that in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie would never let Thor's Hammer involve in, no matter how sharp Thor's Hammer was. Facing millions of dauntless demonized puppets, each step forward was like facing a flesh wall of dozens of meters in thickness. In that case, it was nothing different than sending them for death by dispatching army in.

It snowed heavily while the white snow formed a sharp contrast with the blood stains in the avenue, which felt very cruel.

After jumping over a roadside metal barrier, Zhang Tie rushed forward while looking at the door-numbers on either side of the streets and names of those small commercial firms or stores.

When No. 176 in Duhaer appeared in front of Zhang Tie, he felt a bit cold inside as the gate had been broken while some fresh blood and broken glass were spread over the steps outside the gate.

There was a blue signboard called Isle & Mays Commercial Firm on the broken gate.

Zhang Tie rushed in, followed by his men.

Behind a counter on the first floor, a young man's neck was bitten off while the fresh blood was flowing over the floor. Nobody else was in the 1st floor. However, hearing the loud sound on the 2nd floor, Zhang Tie instantly rushed upstairs.

It was a warehouse on the 2nd floor while many goods were piled inside. Nobody was in. Therefore, Zhang Tie rushed to the 3rd floor.

The 3rd floor was more chaotic. The moment he rushed to the entrance of the stairs, Zhang Tie had already seen a demonized puppet twisting its head and reaching its hand towards the axe head on his shoulder. However, as the axe head was deeply stuck into its shoulder and the handle was on his back, the demonized puppet could not take it off.

Seeing Zhang Tie rushing up, that demonized puppet became shocked for a second. Closely after that, Zhang Tie waved his sword and chopped off its head, sending it flying in the air.

After passing by two rooms on the 3rd floor, Zhang Tie found the source of the sound. Five demonized puppets were hacking a metal door crazily using axes and various objects. As they hacked it, they uttered terrifying shrills.

However, after each hack, some kids inside the door would burst out a scream of terror.

Waajid instantly rushed forward and chopped off the heads of the five demonized puppets. After swaying on the ground for a while, the headless corpses finally fell down while the rich bloody smell instantly spread in the narrow corridor.

Zhang Tie walked over there and found that door had already been transformed while some steel bars being linked into the wall had been exposed. Zhang Tie slightly waved his head, "If I didn't come here, I really wonder how long would it stand."

Zhang Tie grabbed the door-frame of the metal door. After releasing his barbarous strength, he instantly pulled open the metal door, causing a crack.

When the metal door fell down, an axe was thrown out from inside.

"Stop, Isle, it's me!" Zhang Tie instantly caught the handle of the axe as he pulled that mad guy out of there.

This guy was a friend that Zhang Tie made on Polar Light, a small businessman in Eschyle City who was especially in food and fur trade.

At this moment, Isle's face was completely pale with bloody eyes while his clothes were covered with some blood stains. If the other cavalries of Thor's Hammer caught sight of his red eyes, they might have already killed him.

After being rocked heavily by Zhang Tie twice, Isle finally woke up. He glanced at the headless corpses, then Zhang Tie with his eyes widely opened in an unbelievable way.

"Peter..."

Zhang Tie glance at that narrow room and found a 20-odd woman was tightly hugging her two kids while huddling up at a corner with a frightened look.

The elder kid was a 5-6 year old boy who looked a bit like Isle while the younger one was a 2-3 year old girl. The woman covered their eyes with her hands as she didn't want them to see the scene when the door was broken.

At the sight of a safe, Zhang Tie guessed that this room might be the financial affairs office of this commercial firm. As something important was put inside, the door was a solid metal door. When in danger, Isle's family just hid here; unexpectedly, their lives were saved.

"Hurry up, call all of your family members out. We have to leave out of here right now!"

"Peter, why are you here?"

"It's a long story. I will tell you on the way!"

"Mays, come out, he is our friend!" saying that, Isle turned around and ran into the small room. He hugged that little boy and covered his face into his chest to hide the bloody scene of outside. After that, he walked out with the woman who he called Mays.

"Isle, are they your kids and wife?"

"Yes!"

"After a while we have to leave out of here. Women and children may not be able to keep pace. For safety reasons, only people can carry them away!"

"As long as you can take my little Kevin and Tess out of here, Isle

and I could stay here. We will never bring trouble to you..." Isle's wife glanced at Zhang Tie and his men. Feeling that they were powerful fighters, she said that very decisively.

Zhang Tie was moved by the braveness and maternal love of Isle's woman. After hearing Mays' words, Isle also nodded towards Zhang Tie in a solemn way.

At the critical moment, both the parents hoped to save their kids.

"Mom, don't leave me...wuhwuh..."

"Mama..."

Although the two kids were hugged by Isle and Mays and couldn't see what happened outside, they could hear what their parents were talking about. After hearing their mom's suggestion, the two kids both cried as they tightened their grip.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie took a deep breath as he put one hand onto Isle's shoulder heavily "Isle, do you believe in me?"

Isle nodded.

"I will carry your family members out of here, including you, your wife and your two kids for sure!"

...

After a couple of minutes, Zhang Tie's bodyguards carried Isle's kids and his wife as they rushed out of the Isle & Mays Commercial Firm towards the north gate along the path they came from.

As it was too terrifying outside, Isle's wife took two pieces of handkerchiefs and covered her kids' eyes. Additionally, she didn't allow her kids to open their eyes.

Even after carrying a person, the fighters were still running very fast at a speed of 100 m per second. Although Isle was healthy and young, he also lit some surging points. However, after following them over 500 m, Isle had been panting heavily.

"Peter, leave me here..."

Before Isle finished his words, Zhang Tie, who had been paying attention to him, immediately grabbed him and carried him on the back.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's movement, his bodyguards were shocked inside as all of them felt like being injected with a boiling flow...

Roslav and Waajid hurriedly rushed to Zhang Tie's side. They wanted to say something; however, after seeing Zhang Tie's eyes, they didn't say anything.

Isle instantly burst into tears...

Zhang Tie felt that it was his responsibility to help most of the residents to escape out of this city through the safe paths that had been cleaned by Thor's Hammer.

At this moment, he also thought that he should carry his friend out of here.

When he rushed in the north gate with Thor's Hammer, he had thought about taking Isle out; however, that whim just flashed across his mind. He soon rejected that idea due to the rigorous situation. At this moment, seeing that Isle's family members were safe, Zhang Tie was very satisfied; thankfully, he had no regret about that.

Zhang Tie knew that he might not save everyone, neither would he satisfy everyone; What he did was only to be not regretful and for peace of mind. As to what other big figures would do facing such a situation, it was nothing to do with him...

...

Right then, a dangerous person on the roof of a 10-odd storey building on the roadside over 100 m away instantly stopped when he saw Zhang Tie carrying Isle on his back. He had been following Zhang Tie since Zhang Tie entered Eschyle City for the second time.

That was an old man with silver hair. Standing on the roof of the building, he looked as steady as a mountain.

Seeing Zhang Tie running fast with Isle on his back, the old man looked sophisticated while the last bit of killing intent in his eyes gradually disappeared. After a long while, the old man let out a deep sigh as he looked at the direction of the Iron Bear Castle. As he moved his feet, he disappeared from the roof of the building. When he reappeared, he was already on the roof of another building over 300 m away...

After this person left this building in less than 10 seconds, the snow had started to twist weirdly in the sky. After that, a pair of blurry, profound eyes appeared like an inverted image on water. After a glance at that old man, it immediately disappeared.

When the blurry image appeared again, although the old man had already arrived at the Iron Bear Castle almost 10 km away from here, his body became stiff for a second as he turned around and looked at that direction where he stood just now...

...

Over 200 km away in the northwest of Sciatta Town, Pontiff Sarlin opened his eyes...

...

The next noon, when the army of 100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe arrived at Eschyle City, the periphery of the whole Eschyle City had become a huge refugee camp. In a recent couple of days, millions of people escaping out of Eschyle City had already occupied each available place within dozens of kilometers of Eschyle City with tents or movable wooden cabins.

Those refugees filled all the small towns nearby Eschyle City. Some brave people even directly crowded in the commercial area from the south gate of Eschyle City to the harbor area as they were waiting for the day to return to Eschyle City.

The periphery of the whole Eschyle City had been overcrowded; thankfully, the basic order was maintained...

Chapter 494: The Negotiation

When the army of the huge bear tribe arrived, Zhang Tie had already finished today's "cleaning mission" in the six main thoroughfares of Eschyle City with 1000 xiphodon cavalries.

After the 5000 xiphodon cavalries finished their mission in Eschyle City that morning, besides those being wounded, all the others were divided into four groups, 1000 for each. They entered Eschyle City one group after another to constantly clean the demonized puppets in three horizontal and three longitudinal main thoroughfares.

For Thor's Hammer, this was a very simple mission. Each group only needed to rush one time in 6 main thoroughfares before returning. It only took each group 2 hours to complete their mission. After resting 6 hours, they started the second strike.

In such a wheel war, the six main thoroughfares were unimpeded. Therefore, a lot of residents escaped out of there. Meanwhile, the demonized puppets in the city gradually decreased.

Within two days, over 150,000 demonized puppets had been killed by Thor's Hammer.

After putting on the armors and the protective gear that were found in the combat readiness warehouse, the cavalries of Thor's Hammer were well protected in the later actions. No soldiers were heavily wounded anymore. Most of the wounds were minor.

The moment Zhang Tie came out of the north gate, he had seen the army of the huge bear tribe. They were pitching tents on the riverside in the north of the city.

At this moment, it was already immense white in the wild. After snowing for 24 hours, the accumulated snow on the ground had been as thick as 15 cm. The warriors of the huge bear tribe moved

away the snow and nailed their tents onto the ground.

At the sight of the army of 100,000 warriors, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh, "As the demonized puppets in Eschyle City have been cracked down, it's time for the huge bear tribe to negotiate with Spencer clan."

After this battle, Zhang Tie didn't know how many people were left alive in Spencer clan. Over 20,000 guards of Spencer clan escaped out of the city. Based on such a small population, they could not control the entire city anymore. Zhang Tie knew that even though the huge bear tribe didn't occupy Eschyle City, the powers that envy about the resources of Eschyle City would not give up this opportunity either.

Spencer clan was in various crisis. Its foundation in ruling Eschyle City had been completely shaken. In the past two days, there was already a gossip that the one who arouse this tragedy was Pears, a member of Spencer clan. As the former clan elder, he not only brought an alchemist's bomb into Iron Bear Castle, but also activated the puppet worms across the city, including the army.

It was not the ordinary people who came out with this news, but some military officers of the city guards in Eschyle City. At this moment, after suffering such a huge catastrophe, everyone escaped out of the Eschyle City was furious. As such an accident happened in the city under the rule of Spencer clan, although Spencer clan also suffered a great loss, especially a great amount of city guards became demonized puppets, Spencer clan should shoulder the responsibility.

...

When the night fell again, the wind and snow grew fiercer. The wuthering sound of north wind drifted everywhere. Not only Eschyle City, even the entire land started to sleep in the darkness.

Besides some guards who were residing and controlling the city

gates of Eschyle City, even the demonized puppets slowed their action in the city.

Zhang Tie cancelled the action of Thor's Hammer in this evening. Everyone just stayed in the camp to recover themselves, including the army of 100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe.

Almost everyone knew that a big war was going to break out tomorrow. However, before the big war, the huge bear tribe could negotiate with Spencer clan tonight—the huge bear tribe would not bleed for the interests of the iron bear tribe while Spencer clan would not just gift Eschyle City to the huge bear tribe unconditionally.

The result of the negotiation tonight would determine the future of Eschyle City.

At this moment, almost all the senior military officers of the huge bear tribe had gathered in a tent not far from the main tent. When they waited for the news from the main tent, they started to do tactical deduction for Thor's Hammer on the new sand table of Eschyle City.

After the army of huge bear tribe arrived, they were immediately shocked by the brilliant military exploits of Thor's Hammer. Killed 150,000 enemies safely without losing even a single warrior, if not happened to their own troop, nobody would believe in that.

The tactical deduction on the sand table was implemented by some senior military officers. When the deputy regimental commander of Thor's Hammer was explaining about the details, the other military officers had fixed their eyes on the sand table while standing on the side.

After the result of the rigorous deduction came out, all the military officers in the tent became silent. Nobody knew what to say. They were all in awe of Peter for the time when he chose to attack Eschyle City and the brilliant military exploits of Thor's Hammer under his leadership.

Although not everyone had witnessed the man's manifestation of the God's will in the underground but everyone witnessed the "God's will" that he manifested on the ground.

Right then, Spencer clan finally posed their bottomline in the main tent not far from this tent.

Only two people of Spencer clan were qualified to negotiate with the huge bear tribe, Rodolfo that Zhang Tie had seen a couple of days ago and another knight whom Zhang Tie had not seen before.

Pontiff Sarlin told Zhang Tie that the elder was Turin, the only knight of Spencer clan.

For knights, their ages could be hardly identified. Although elder Turin looked only 60-70 years old, if not being warned by Pontiff Sarlin, Zhang Tie actually would not believe that this guy was over 200 years old.

Elder Turin looked icy. Since he entered the main tent, he didn't speak at all with his eyes closed. In the whole process of negotiation, elder Rodolfo was negotiating with Toles and Gouras of the huge bear tribe on behalf of Spencer clan. The old man kept his eyes closed until the two parties showed their hands when he looked at Zhang Tie.

"If you agree, Eschyle City will be your personal territory from then on, including all the human resources, materials and wealth of Spencer clan and the numerous resources that Eschyle City contains. If you don't agree, from tomorrow, Spencer clan will exert its full efforts to fight the huge bear tribe to the end for its own benefit! Although Spencer clan could fall or perish but we would never survive ourselves as timid as a rabbit!" Elder Turin opened his mouth, making the main tent colder.

At this moment, everyone silently fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie, including Pontiff Sarlin, Toles and Gouras and waited for Zhang Tie's final decision.

Zhang Tie was considering it carefully. The condition of Spencer clan was very simple——Eschyle City would be incorporated into the huge bear tribe as Zhang Tie's private territory. He could enjoy everything in Eschyle City. However, Zhang Tie had to marry some Spencer women and had babies with them. All the kids' family name should be Spencer. In the future, the Eschyle City could only be inherited by one of those Spencer kids, even the new clan elders of Spencer clan had to be succeeded by one of those Spencer kids.

This was Spencer's plan to the future of Eschyle City.

Zhang Tie felt that this condition was really shrewd. He really wondered who thought out this condition. Only through simple inter-marriage and inheritance, the huge bear tribe and Spencer clan both would feel like owning Eschyle City.

"Based on such a condition, Spencer clan would not suffer any loss. After tiding over the current difficulty with the help of me and the huge bear tribe, they would have the whole city once again. I would not suffer any loss either. As they are my children, if they had equal powers over Eschyle City, they would not cause a loss to the huge bear tribe. As the head of the huge bear tribe, my willingness is also the willingness of the huge bear tribe. Even in the future, the one who rules this city would also be the son of the clan elder of the huge bear tribe."

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he had to experience a political inter-marriage so fast.

Actually, no man would refuse such a condition. The only condition for you was to have others' money, women, foundation and resources, to have your son succeed to all of this!

Zhang Tie was also a man, a man who would not do bad things or limit himself with too many moral sentiments.

Therefore, only after thinking for half a minute, Zhang Tie had nodded before saying, "I agree!"

...

Only after a few minutes, the result of this negotiation had been passed to the tent of the military officers in the tent not far from that main tent. After hearing this result, everybody yelled. From today on, the one who ruled this city would be their Lord and the offsprings of their Lord. They didn't care whether the Lord's kids were male or female.

"Prepare for the battle. We will kill all the demonized puppets in Eschyle City tomorrow!"

...

Chapter 495: Step by Step

On the next day, both wind and snow stopped while the accumulated snow outside the Eschyle City was about 30 cm in thickness. Although it was still cold, the whole Eschyle City gradually boiled like a burning furnace of a steam machine.

100,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe, over 20,000 city guards of Eschyle City, plus 180,000 young adults who had escaped out of Eschyle City started to march towards the core area near the Iron Bear Castle.

After the 5000 xiphodon cavalries of Thor's Hammer swept over the six main thoroughfares once again and left, 60,000 warriors of the huge bear tribe entered Eschyle City from six city gates to clean the demonized puppets.

The most powerful warriors of bear-killing camp were divided into six parts as the vanguards for eliminating demonized puppets. Each part contained 1500 people. While the rest 1000 people prepared to fight outside the city as the reserved force.

Each one of the 10,000 people was above LV 6. According to Zhang Tie's requirements, each of them put on a heavy plate armor weighing over 160 kg provided by Spencer clan. Besides, they had to hold a broadsword and huge axe.

Together with the bear-killing camp were hundreds of shield carts, the front of which were two riveted layers of thick steel plates. There were sharp metal spines and thorns. The steel plates fixed in front of the cart were 2.5 m in height and 1 m in width. The cart could be moved by two common warriors. When these shield carts moved in a row, they could form a solid steel shield formation in the streets. Additionally, they could be freely organized according to the width of the streets. They were suitable to both avenues and alleys.

Behind the shield carts formation and the soldiers of bear-killing

camp, there were also fully-armored warriors of the huge bear tribe and the former city guards of Eschyle City. These soldiers and warriors held javelins or lances. When they moved, they looked like a wood.

Behind these troops were the young adults that were recruited from Eschyle City temporarily.

When Thor's Hammer rushed into Eschyle City, the six troops were already ready to set out. When Thor's Hammer rushed out of Eschyle City, the six troops had already gathered outside the city gates.

At this moment, the huge airship of Spencer clan had already reached above Eschyle City. The three elders of the huge bear tribe, Zhang Tie and the other two elders of Spencer clan were all watching the war situation on the airship.

A huge sand table of Eschyle City was placed in the spacious hall on the first floor of the airship. The advisers of the huge bear tribe and Spencer clan were waiting for the message from below around that huge sand table.

On the deck of the airship, more than 10 people were observing the city below with a telescope.

The light signal team on the airship was ready...

The crystal remote-sensing communication team was also ready...

...

Sitting in the command module on the second floor of the airship, Zhang Tie watched the snowwhite city below through the huge circular glass window.

Thor's Hammer rushed in Eschyle City and worked as efficient and sharper as before.

After detouring the core area of Iron Bear Castle, the 5000

cavalries of Thor's Hammer rapidly finished their task, offering a good start for the great battle.

Under the gaze of Zhang Tie, the cavalries of Thor's Hammer left the north gate of Eschyle City. Before he delivered an order, he had already received a message.

...

Only after 10 more seconds, a voice sounded in the command module of the airship.

"Clan elder, Thor's Hammer have already completed the first stage of mission and left Eschyle City safe and sound!"

After hearing this sound, everyone in the command module of the airship fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie's face.

Zhang Tie just nodded calmly before sending the order, "Start!"

...

Seeing the changing light signal on the airship, the six troops below started to enter the city from six directions.

The bear-killing fighters rushed ahead and chopped off the heads of those wandering demonized puppets. Those demonized puppets in the streets could never fight the bear-killing fighters. Therefore, within a few minutes, each troop had already marched forward 100 m in Eschyle City.

Behind the bear-killing fighters were the shield carts.

Soon after the bear-killing fighters cleaned a small section of roads, the shield carts and soldiers with javelins and lances had occupied the area and closed all the entrances in all directions in case of being raided by demonized puppets.

After that, the bear-killing fighters started to rush towards various buildings on both sides of the roads in a group of 10 and started to clean the possible demonized puppets in the buildings.

After the team of bear-killing fighters came out of a building, the

young adults being recruited from Eschyle City would rush in at once. They then carried the corpses of demonized puppets or residents out of the buildings and transported them to the outside of the city to deal with them.

Meanwhile, hundreds of thousands of people were digging in a pit which was almost as deep as a football field outside the city while oozing sweat like it was raining.

The heads of corpses of demonized puppets were chopped off. Therefore, the moment they were transported to the outside of the city, they were thrown into the huge pits. After pouring oil on them, people would burn and bury them. Those corpses being killed by demonized puppets would be transported to another place for the recognition of their relatives.

Battle calls drifted in the city while ground-breaking cries could be heard outside the city.

...

"Troop 1 enter 200 m forward Roseville Avenue, Clear..."

...

"Troop 2 enter Gurness Department, shield carts are blocking the crossroads..."

...

"Troop 4 complete the cleaning in Spring Avenue, turning to Buckthorn Street..."

...

"Troop 5 complete the cleaning of 300 m in Harbor Road East, keep going..."

...

"Troop 3 meet over 2000 demonized puppets. Some of the demonized puppets are LV 10 strong fighters, Troop 3 have casualties...demonized puppets clear...200 m in Harbor Road West

clear!"

...

"Troop 6 surround D1 residential area...D1 residential area clear. Some residents in D1 residential area have been rescued. We're heading for D2 along Snowwhite Avenue..."

The shield carts pushed forward step by step. The six troops followed the shield carts entering each street, each building and each residential area...

With constant reports, more and more streets, buildings and communities were cleaned on the sand table of Eschyle City in the hall of airship while more and more blue flags, which represented safety, started to appear on the sand table of Eschyle City.

After receiving each new message, the advisers would push forward the sign cards on the sand table for a distance; meanwhile, they constantly passed the information to the command module on the second floor of the airship.

The six troops pushed forward orderly according to the prefixed routes interdependently. As a result, all the demonized puppets were separated, surrounded and eliminated by the six troops. After that, the corpses of the demonized puppets were soon thrown into the huge pits outside the city by the young adults of Eschyle City.

Zhang Tie constantly delivered his order in the command hall,

"Warn troop 5. They are moving too fast. After cleaning Harbor Road East, they need to stop marching ahead temporarily. They must wait for troop 4 and troop 3 on their left and right flanks to clean up Buckthorn Street and Harbor Road West before moving on. It's too risky to move alone..."

...

"Warn troop 2. To be ready for over 10,000 demonized puppets who are surging towards them from the west along Thunderbolt Square!"

...

"Notice troop 6, there's a great batch of residents on the roof of some residential buildings in D2. Some demonized puppets were attempting to break the safety door leading to the roof. The residents are defending them. tell troop 6 to dispatch some elite teams to rescue them. Meanwhile, tell the follow-up troop to cover them."

"Let Thor's Hammer be ready for the coming enemies. A great number of demonized puppets are forced back in the main thoroughfares. Let them clean there in 5 minutes..."

The orders were delivered down there from the airship through light signal. After seeing the signal, some people started to coordinate and command the actions of the six troops.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was pretty clear-minded. After seeing what was happening in Eschyle City, he instantly delivered orders one after another.

Zhang Tie was not used to command so many people. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie had to take the position of the supreme commander.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie was afraid of making any mistake. However, he soon found that he could easily command about 10 people, who would manage 300,000 soldiers for him. He only needed to command the six troops like commanding six people.

Additionally, based on his experience in fighting demonized puppets, he only needed to take the six people as himself. If he imagined what he would do facing the same situation down there, it would be much easier.

Zhang Tie didn't know how would others command and deliver orders in his position. Because he had no such experience at all. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie felt that he could see clearly the battle field and the battle situation.

Through such an efficient and steady advancement, only after one morning, the troops had already killed more than 100,000 demonized puppets at a low cost and reached the core area of the city around Iron Bear Castle.

This core area was about 5-6 square kilometers, which gathered over 400,000 demonized puppets. Almost all the buildings in this area had been destroyed by the crazy demonized puppets. Zhang Tie felt goosebumps all over when he looked at the densely populated wild beast-like demonized puppets from the airship.

This place gathered the most populated demonized puppets in Eschyle City.

According to Zhang Tie's plan, after the six troops reached here, they would not rush forward any more; instead, they would adopt new strategies.

In Zhang Tie's words, the new strategy was a seesaw battle. To be concrete, it was like how wild dogs drew intestines.

When the six troops reached here, they encountered a greater resistance from demonized puppets. They then stopped moving forward; instead, under the protection of the shield carts, they started to retreat.

Of course, the demonized puppets who only knew about killing wouldn't let go their preys. Therefore, they chased after the retreating troops.

When a number of demonized puppets left the Iron Bear Castle, the six troops launched an counterattack and killed them all. After that, they repeated the series of movement—move forward, retreat, move forward again. Like a seesaw battle, they gradually cleaned all the hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets.

By then, they didn't need any command anymore.

If demonized puppets were a bit smarter or they might have a commander, this tactic would be ineffective. All the demonized

puppets could bring a big trouble or a miserable loss to the troops only by attacking the troops in one or two directions. However, they were only using their instinct to kill just like a worm. They were even more primitive than wild beasts. It was too difficult to let these demonized puppets to move in an organized way. However, it was not impossible. These demonized puppets could only respond to certain stimulations.

Sitting in the command module of the airship, Zhang Tie watched that fiery battle on the ground as his blood gradually boiled. The powerful battle intention of iron-blood fist that was deeply rooted in his blood, flesh and soul started to explode.

"If not practice in such a great battle, how could I improve my iron-blood fist? How can I have a bright future?"

"Isn't the battle field down there the real trouble-reappearance situation?"

"Aren't those fighters on the battle field as average as me? How can I just sit here and watch them fighting there?"

"Am I more advanced than those fighters or have I already forgotten about my former status as a commoner after enjoying the privilege for a few days? Have I forgotten that my real name is Zhang Tie and started to belittle these who are same as me in a vain, arrogant and lofty manner? "

After closing his eyes for a long while, Zhang Tie opened his eyes. With a wisp of smile, Zhang Tie lifted his hands and put them in front of him carefully...

"If not for this pair of hands, how would you create any miracle?" Zhang Tie mocked himself inside...

After that, Zhang Tie stood up from the high, gorgeous chair and delivered one order which shocked everyone at present.

"Move above the Iron Bear Castle, I will go down..."

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, the whole command module

became silent. Everyone stared at Zhang Tie, including the three elders of the huge bear tribe, Turin and Rodolfo from Spencer clan and some Spencer women who served as female servants in the command module.

Since Zhang Tie boarded on this airship, he had already found some Spencer women in the command module, some of whom were familiar such as Matias and Beryl, some of whom were strange yet delicate faces. Their age ranged from 16 to 20-odd. It was said that Spencer clan always trained these women outside the city; therefore, these women escaped from this catastrophe.

Spencer clan seemingly intended to arrange Spencer women to contact Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie didn't care about it. In Zhang Tie's eyes, the alleged Spencer women were nothing different than those women in Rose Association at all. They were just a bit better than those girls in Rose Association as they could contact better people and knowledge. It was not improper to treat them as advanced girls in Rose Association. Zhang Tie didn't refuse to find a smart and beautiful mom for his kids after 10-20 years. Because this was also one of his humble dreams.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, a Spencer woman who was adding an expensive tea water into Zhang Tie's cup was instantly stunned. As a result, the tea water even flew out of the tea cup.

"Lord, the battle below has not ended yet. It's very dangerous for you to go down there just now. Especially in the ruins of Iron Bear Castle, there were the most populated demonized puppets!" breaking the silence, elder Gouras stood up as he told Zhang Tie respectfully.

"I want to join the battle. It would be meaningless for me to go down there after the battle. Additionally, I know how to survive there."

"If so, Lord, you can choose any one of the six troops. After knowing that Lord is going to join them, they would be greatly

spirited. All the fighters have been sincerely respectful about the military exploits and braveness of the Thor's Hammer under your command!" Elder Toles stood up from his chair.

"Each troop have their own commander. If I join them, I would make the commander embarrassed. I don't want to show something. Don't ask me why. I just want to fight with my fighters in the most dangerous place..." seeing that Elder Gouras wanted to say something, Zhang Tie raised his hand, "This is not my request. This is my order. As the clan elder of the huge bear tribe and the owner of Eschyle City, I hope this is the last time I interpret the reason to you. I don't want to repeat my order for the second time!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie looked at the coxswain, "Move it above Iron Bear Castle and drop the wire cable!"

...

Chapter 496: The Iron-Blood Fist Intention

The airship soon arrived above the Iron Bear Castle and started to circle over 100 m high in the air. After that, the airdrop hatch was opened and filled with cold wind immediately.

Seeing the black points of demonized puppets down there, everyone in the airship drew in a cold breath. It was nothing different than putting themselves in the circle of hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets.

"Lord..." Roslav wanted to say something.

"No more persuasion. Whatsoever, if I cannot bear that, at least I can escape away!" Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he waved his hands. After that, he looked at the red faces of his bodyguards and Waajid, "I will go down alone. This is my own battle. But I treasure my life very much; I won't play jokes about my life. It's not good for you to go down there!"

Everyone became silent.

The cable wire being put down reminded Zhang Tie of the spiral rotachute in Huaiyuan Palace. Pitifully, that object was too expensive. Many aspects were relatively underdeveloped in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Nobody would like to establish any airship troops which would cost a lot. Therefore, those objects being matched for elites could not be seen here. "If I'm still in Hidden Dragon Island, I might have already learned how to use rotachute. Whereas, I have to accept the fact."

After revealing a smile to the others, Zhang Tie put on his dark tore gloves before sliding off by the cable wire.

Gouras glanced at Elder Turin of Spencer clan, who also revealed a smile. Seeing Zhang Tie sliding off the wire, Turin's eyes glittered, "We can pull him back if he couldn't stand anymore. This man is very special. Only such a talent is qualified to own Eschyle

City. A Lord having not experienced bloody fight was nothing different than a lion in cage."

...

The moment Zhang Tie jumped out of the hatch, he felt much colder. The wuthering north wind drilled in Zhang Tie's collar through the gaps between the pieces of his armor. Zhang Tie was ready for the battle right away.

This scene reminded Zhang Tie of his experience in raiding Heavens Cold City by the airship of Huaiyuan Palace several months ago. He jumped off the airship like how he did last time. When he declined quickly in the air, Zhang Tie realized that he preferred joining such a battle himself than sitting high in the warm command hatch to watch his army fighting. Compared to that role as a commander who had to be responsible for hundreds of thousands of soldiers, he was more suitable and excel at being responsible for himself in the battle.

"Is this the nature that I'm born with?"

Some people would like to control everything at a high position while some people would prefer to practice something themselves at the cost of their own sweat and efforts.

I should be the second kind of people.

When this whim in his mind broke apart and disappeared, those grim faces gazing at Zhang Tie became clearer...

After loosing his grip, Zhang Tie instantly landed. After that, he bounced towards those demonized puppets who were rushing towards him. Meanwhile, he waved his dark tore gloves; with a blurry shadow, the sharp edge of the pair of gloves flashed by the necks of a pile of demonized puppets who were wearing the military uniforms of the city guards of Eschyle City, sending their heads flying in the air.

Closely after that, Zhang Tie kicked out consecutively like a

windmill, releasing his iron-blood battle Qi at the same time, booming a great number of demonized puppets into pieces around him.

Uttering shrills, the other demonized puppets charged towards Zhang Tie from all aspects at once.

"Kill!" Zhang Tie roared as he pounced at them; he was attacking his enemies with his hands, feet, shoulders, elbows and knees in each movements.

There was no road or space in front of him anymore as they were all crowded with red-eyed demonized puppets.

However, Zhang Tie chose a "killing" road using his force...

As he was surrounded by densely populated demonized puppets, Zhang Tie also gradually increased his speed and used his movements in a handsome way. He punched 12 times and kicked 6 times. As a result, 18 demonized puppets were boomed into pieces at once, spraying their flesh and blood all over the ground.

At that moment, everyone was watching Zhang Tie's battle in the airship. They could only see constant blossoming red flowers which were cruel, horrible and beautiful. Magically, they could not even move their eyes away from that.

However, there were really too many demonized puppets, especially down there. The battle, the bloody smell and the constant shrills attracted more demonized puppets.

Those in the airship could only see the surging heads of demonized puppets on the ground. Bloody flowers always blossomed around Zhang Tie. However, narrowing space was available for Zhang Tie to move. Facing hundreds of meters thick demonized puppets, even armored vehicles could hardly move, not to mention a person.

Among the surging demonized puppets, Zhang Tie was like a sailor on an isle. The black tide gradually flooded the isle, leaving

increasingly fewer part of the isle above water...

Watching Zhang Tie's smaller movable space, some Spencer women who had known about their mission in the future widely opened their eyes. When Zhang Tie was almost covered by those demonized puppets, those women immediately covered their mouth with hands.

Zhang Tie directly sprung up from the ground...

The heads of the demonized puppets reminded Zhang Tie of the scene where he practiced his basic footwork in Hidden Dragon Palace. The quincuncial piles were extremely similar to the current scene.

Zhang instantly stepped onto a head, breaking it into pieces. At the same time, he directly rushed out. With each foot forward, he would collapse a head of demonized puppet.

With laughter, Zhang Tie rushed forward about 100 m while stomping on the heads of those demonized puppets. He kept stomping, shoveling and kicking at the original place, booming over 100 demonized puppets' heads...

The demonized puppets were infuriated. They poked their weapons towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie grabbed two lances. After slightly putting forth his strength, he grabbed away the lances from the hands of the two demonized puppets. After that, he started to run on their heads; at the same time, he kept whipping their heads on both sides like how a kid whipped roadside weeds with a small wooden stick while running jubilantly in the wild.

Zhang Tie's strength was extremely great. The two common lances were nothing different than straws in Zhang Tie's hands. Along with the wuthering sound of the lances were the cracking sound of heads.

Some demonized puppet shrilled as it also sprung up and rushed towards Zhang Tie while stepping on the dense heads of

demonized puppets.

The demonized puppet was wearing the uniform of military officers of city guards in Eschyle City. Judging from its rank, it was a lieutenant colonel. Meanwhile, its battle-Qi totem was rolling around him. It might be a LV 10 strong fighter before death.

When the demonized puppet was over 40 m away from Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie threw out his lance...

The lance broke the air before striking off its head, leaving a boom in the air.

Zhang Tie caught another lance and continued to run, stomp and whip like he was on the ground. Any place that Zhang Tie passed by would spurt out blood plasma under his foot and his side. Coincidentally, some LV 10 or LV 9 demonized puppet appeared; yet they were all killed sharply by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie didn't know how many powerhouses above LV 11 were there in Eschyle City, whether they had been killed by these demonized puppets or had been killed by the alchemist's bomb. After fighting for quite a while, he had not encountered any powerhouse above LV 11 at all. This made him reassured completely. Although there were so many demonized puppets around Iron Bear Castle, none of them could really threaten him.

Zhang Tie didn't know how long had he fought. He only remembered that he had broken over 10 lances and killed numerous demonized puppets. Later on, he jumped off their heads and dropped off the bent lances. After a roar, he applied his iron-blood fist once again, booming all the demonized puppets completely into pieces.

If it was someone else, he would feel fatigued for sure. However, as Zhang Tie had eaten nine wild wolves seven-strength fruits, nine iron-teeth hyena seven-strength fruits and nine demon rat seven-strength fruits, one of which was demon rat king seven-strength fruit, Zhang Tie felt that his spiritual energy and

endurance were out of commoners' imagination. He could almost keep fighting like a machine. As long as he didn't want to stop, he could maintain that extremely high fighting efficiency.

Zhang Tie completely immersed in the cool battle by iron-blood fist. He absolutely forgot about the existence of time. He didn't care about it even if his armor was broken. He didn't even know when his bloody and fiery curtain would start to explode...

When Zhang Tie found that none of demonized puppets were beside him, he finally stopped. However, it was already deep night...

Standing on the ruins of Iron Bear Castle, Zhang Tie looked around and found that the corpses of demonized puppets within 300 m had been as thick as 1 m. The closer he was to it, the higher the pile of corpses would be. Standing on the piles of corpses, he boomed all the surging demonized puppets into pieces one after another.

At the same time, the over 200-m high bloody and fiery curtain brightened the whole sky. Six troops of the huge bear tribe and the cavalries of Thor's Hammer were standing out of this ring. Over 100,000 military officers and soldiers and over 100,000 young adults of Eschyle City behind them were silently watching Zhang Tie who was standing high on the corpses of demonized puppets.

In the battle, when Zhang Tie's bloody and fiery curtain rose from the ruins of Iron Bear Castle, all the soldiers of the huge bear tribe were driven crazy. They knew that their Lord was fighting together with them in the core, the most dangerous place of the battle field.

"Have we eliminated all the worms...of demons?" the moment Zhang Tie opened his mouth, he found that his voice had become hoarse. Meanwhile, he felt painful all over his body and could not help but frown slightly.

This was a worthwhile battle. Seeing the numerous corpses of

demonized puppets, Zhang Tie finally understood what was the real iron-blood fist.

In the end of the battle, his iron-blood fist had been blurry in movements as he could attack and counterattack his enemies casually on the right moment.

Although visible things were shattered, invisible things started to boil in Zhang Tie's blood. It was the iron-blood fist intention, which gradually appeared and stimulated each cell and each wisp of Zhang Tie's strength, resonating the surging masculine strength and willingness in the universe.

That wisp of strength and willingness was hiding in each flying snowflake, in each tender grass that drilled out of the broken bricks and stones in the ruins, in the vast starry sky behind the clouds, under everyone's feet and blood.

All the lives and existences might die out or be destroyed; however, they would neither fail nor retreat. As long as they existed dauntlessly, they would live forever!

The flying snowflakes originated from this strength and willingness...

The tender grass drilled out of the ruins in the wind and snow with this strength and willingness...

The silent and firm land originated from this strength and willingness...

The vast starry sky above him originated from this strength and willingness...

The iron-blood fist intention originated from this strength and willingness.

...

On November 12th, after one day's fierce battle, all the hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets in Eschyle City were

eliminated. Therefore, the city was back in the hand of humans.

After this battle, each people in Eschyle City remembered a great name, Peter Hamplester!

——the new owner of Eschyle City and the clan elder of the huge bear tribe!

When the two powerful bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness were merged by one person in only a couple of days, the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness was shocked.

The fire bear tribe, wild bear tribe, mountain bear tribe, sea bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe dispatched their important figures or elders to Eschyle City almost at the same time...

Chapter 497: Sacrifice

On November 15th, Eschyle City was covered with white snow. It was already the third day since Eschyle City recovered its order. No flesh and blood pulp like that two days ago could be seen in the streets any more. Whereas, the whole city still looked a bit cold and sluggish, especially in the six main thoroughfares of Eschyle City. Few pedestrians could be seen there.

The accumulated snow in the main thoroughfares had been shovelled away by environmental sanitation workers. However, the blue-gray granite ground bricks on the six main thoroughfares had already become dark brown like people have changed them. Looking at the color-changed ground bricks, all the environmental sanitation workers and passers felt chilly and showed their awe to Peter, Hamplester, the new ruler of this city.

The color of the ground bricks of the six main thoroughfares were tainted by the fresh blood of demonized puppets. Those young adults who participated in cleaning the six main thoroughfares a couple of days ago described them as the blood and flesh avenues.

That scene could wake up anyone in nightmares. In other words, all the nightmares were dwarfed in front of the six blood and flesh avenues.

"The six main thoroughfares in Eschyle City are six huge sausages being filled with shattered corpses of demonized puppets. Broken corpses and heads as high as mountains could be seen everywhere. The six main thoroughfares had been paved with a thick layer of bones and bloody flesh, which had been trampled by xiphodons repetitively and they were pretty disgusting and terrifying..."

"People being responsible for cleaning six blood and flesh avenues had to shovel the pulp from the ground like shovelling cattle dung in the stable. Even though the most strong-willed volunteers being

recruited would vomit heavily in less than 10 minutes. However, no matter what, they have to do that..."

Among those who survived, someone who served as a writer for a small paper in Eschyle City was jostling down what he witnessed in this catastrophe in Eschyle City in case that the event was forgotten by people in future.

People in future might forget about these details. However, these residents of Eschyle City could never forget about details as the six most spacious thoroughfares in Eschyle City had completely changed their colors due to the current ruler of Eschyle City.

On November 12th when Eschyle City was retaken, it was said that a man called Peter had killed over 10,000 or 20,000 demonized puppets by himself near the Iron Bear Castle. Additionally, all these demonized puppets were former city guards of Eschyle City who were the hardest to deal with.

Besides frightening people, these gossips also made people awed. For the most of residents in Eschyle City who looked like flurried birds, such a ruler could at least bring them a sense of safety during crisis.

Although people were relieved from fear and concern, the reality of facing Eschyle City pushed people back into the sad river.

This crisis lasted four days, in which period, the death and missing population in Eschyle City reached 1.37 millions, namely 1/4 of the total population in this city disappeared in this world. Almost each person in this city had lost some relatives, friends or familiar people in this catastrophe. This was not a small stimulation for everyone.

At 9 am, the whole city was drifted with the silvery bell rings——duang...duang...duang...

After hearing the bell rings, all the residents in the city and in the towns outside the city stopped what they were doing and started to

stand in silent tribute for the dead people. As a result, a sad atmosphere immediately spread across the whole city.

At the same time, at the foot of a hill miles away from Eschyle City, hundreds of thousands of residents of Eschyle City were standing in line in a solemn way and watching a monument being erected at the foot of the huge cemetery hill where were buried with over 1million people.

All the big figures of Eschyle City and some elders of huge bear tribe attended this sacrificial ceremony.

Elder Rodolfo of Spencer clan was standing in the heavy snow on the high platform in front of the monument with tears and was loudly accusing about the atrocity and catastrophe of demons and their lackeys towards Spencer clan, Eschyle City and all the people across Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Rodolfo's thin body shook in the wind and snow. For many times, he almost passed out due to excessive excitement, which looked extremely miserable and pitiful.

'Spencer clan also suffers a miserable loss in this catastrophe. We almost lost all of our clan elites.' Rodolfo revealed the loss in a very skilled way, which aroused the resonance of numerous people in front of him.

Zhang Tie, in a thick black bear fur, was also one of them. He looked a bit pale out of sickness.

On November 12th, after feeling the iron-blood fist intention and killing numerous demonized puppets, Zhang Tie also suffered a lot of wounds. On the very evening, after peeling off the broken armor from Zhang Tie's body which had been soaked in blood. Everybody became silent when they saw Zhang Tie's wounds. Some women who were cleaning Zhang Tie's body even cried.

Zhang Tie's body had been covered with 137 wounds in total. If Zhang Tie was a common person, he might have long lost his life.

However, Zhang Tie survived with his strong will. He even forgot about these wounds during the battle.

"What on earth were you thinking about?" Elder Turin of Spencer clan asked Zhang Tie.

"I just felt that I was nothing different than those soldiers. I cannot just watch them fighting. If I can kill one more enemy, I might save a soldier's life!" Zhang Tie answered.

After hearing Zhang Tie's answer, Elder Turin became silent for a long while. Finally, he let out a sigh.

The simple dialogues between Zhang Tie and Elder Turin instantly spread among the soldiers of huge bear tribe and the remaining city guards of Eschyle City.

Although Zhang Tie was listening to the mournful complaints of Elder Rodolfo at this moment, he was picturing what he saw in Pears' basement—the teenager lying on the aged ice cube and the bloody lines on the wall left by Pears.

Pears had known that someone would come to his basement after that ages ago. Therefore, he wrote down the reasons on the wall.

This was a mad revenge of a hopeless man towards the entire Spencer clan. As a result, three-eye association even became the tool of this man.

Pears knew that he would die. so, he just thought about revenging Spencer clan regardless of the result.

Such events were rarely seen in big clans.

This was the biggest scandal of Spencer clan. Once it was exposed, the Spencer clan's reputation would be destroyed. Additionally, they had to bear the fury of residents in Eschyle City. Therefore, only five people were qualified to enter that basement and see the bloody contents on the wall—the only two survived elders of Spencer clan, Zhang Tie, Elder Toles and Elder Gouras.

After reading the contents, they cleaned the bloody contents. From then on, the catastrophe in Eschyle City became a plot towards Eschyle City and humans dominated by demons and three-eye association. A small figure called Pears was controlled by three-eye association and became a puppet-like victim. It was reasonable to explain this event in this way as this was the original intention of those scums in three-eye association.

Everything was buried in this huge cemetery, including that teenager lying on the ice bed called Hellfire.

Seeing Elder Rodolfo's endless vivid speech and those residents of Eschyle City whose faces were covered with tears, Zhang Tie's face slowly changed.

Elder Rodolfo was obviously putting on a show and telling a lie. However, Zhang Tie just listened in silence. He didn't know whether it was because of being mature or experienced, out of the benefits of the overall situation or selfishness, maintaining the benefits of Spencer clan or preserving his own benefits, the moment he thought that he might become a common audience under the platform, he would feel hateful towards this liar on the high platform who acted as the pawns of the tiger. Gradually, Zhang Tie looked worse.

"What's wrong? Are you sick?" O'Laura, on Zhang Tie's side, slightly pinched Zhang Tie's hand as she asked in a low voice out of concern.

...

Chapter 498: Being Urgent

The grey eagle tribe heard about the events in Eschyle City and Zhang Tie's performance on the morning of November 12th. O'Laura and Setton arrived at Eschyle City to unite with Zhang Tie at noon on November 13th, when everything had passed.

Because Zhang Tie was heavily wounded, O'Laura just stayed there to look after him. At this moment, O'Laura had already picked off her mask, revealing her cold yet delicate face.

"No, I'm not sick. I'm afraid that one day I might turn into the kind of people that I hate!" Zhang Tie said in a muffled voice.

"How come?" O'Laura comforted him.

Zhang Tie slightly revealed a bitter smile, "Nobody was completely deteriorated in one day. People were not born to be greedy and hypocritical; people were not born to be familiar with game rule, shrewd and indifferent; people were not born to criticize things; people were not born to cheat others for their own benefits."

Previously, Zhang Tie hated such persons very much; however, at this moment, when he covered the cause of the catastrophe and the strategy of the event in Eschyle City where over 1 million people were killed, Zhang Tie realized that he was right in the very position that he hated and despised before. If he was still that one in Blackhot City, he must have hated the one who covered the truth. He couldn't wait to tell everyone about the truth. However, he became an important member of the community of interest who covered the truth. As a result, Zhang Tie felt blue at once.

O'Laura who always hid herself and was not good at peeping into others' inner hearts, she didn't find Zhang Tie's changing mood. However, Sabrina, on Zhang Tie's side, glanced at him after hearing his low voice.

...

"Defeat the demons; fight for our relatives; rejuvenate Eschyle City..."

"Defeat the demons; fight for our relatives; rejuvenate Eschyle City..."

Numerous residents of Eschyle City had been full of hatred and spirit by the last words of Elder Rodolfo. Therefore, they started to shout slogans loudly.

When the slogans declined, Elder Rodolfo opened his mouth once again in another affectionate and solemn tone.

"Hundreds of years ago, Elzida, the greatest prophet and Pontiff of Slavs left a prophecy that a great figure would lead all the Slavs in Ice and Snow Wilderness to prosperity and magnificence!"

"One month ago, out of the plot of the demons and their lackeys, all the soldiers of the eastern tribes alliance and tens of thousands of pioneers were trapped in the underground relics ruins of Haidela Glacier Crack. When everyone ran out of ammunition and grains and was going to fight each other for the limited water resources out of despair, this person appeared. He manifested the God's will for many times. He let the sweet spring flow out of the kettle and cured the wounds of soldiers immediately; he even led over 100,000 despairing people out of the underground world..."

"Pontiff Sarlin of the huge bear tribe knew his arrival and confirmed his identity. Therefore, he led 100,000 soldiers of the huge bear tribe towards Haidela Glacier Crack to welcome him. This man opened the key box left by Elzida!"

"Several days ago, people in Eschyle City appeared to be in a great trouble. He led Thor's Hammer to break through the safe roads in Eschyle City, allowing numerous residents to escape out of the dangerous place. On November 12th, he rushed ahead of his army of the huge bear tribe and those young adults to eliminate

hundreds of thousands of demonized puppets in Eschyle City.

"He is the first clan elder of the huge bear tribe and the very hero who saved Eschyle City out of the demons' plot. From today on, our Spencer clan will follow the expectation and will of Elzida, our great prophet. In order to realize the rejuvenation of the entire Slavic race, we will hand over Eschyle City to this person. From today on, this man becomes the patron and ruler of Eschyle City!"

"This man is standing behind me. I think all the people in Eschyle City have already heard about his name. Right, he is Peter Hamplester!" after saying that, Elder Rodolfo moved aside.

Those people down there surged, agitated and swarmed; however, they were blocked out of the cordon by the strong warriors of the huge bear tribe.

Under the gaze of everyone, Zhang Tie slowly walked forward.

Zhang Tie silently glanced at the dense population, then the biggest alchemist equipment under his feet, which was a loudspeaker made by alchemists.

In Zhang Tie's glance, the crowd gradually became quiet. Everyone was staring at him and waiting for him to say something.

After a long while, Zhang Tie raised his head, "Actually, I don't want to stand here at this moment! If I could save the 1.37 million people, I prefer to abdicate. "

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, everyone became silent when Zhang Tie's voice spread to the distance and resonated in the wild.

"I was pushed here to stand on this huge alchemist equipment which is more expensive than the same volume of gold of the people, the hope, the responsibilities and the force behind me.

"Before coming to Ice and Snow Wilderness, I've not imagined that I could stand here. I wonder if it's my fate to stand here. The so-called fate is the most illusory and marvelous trace in the maze of time and space. Even if Elzida was also just a passerby on this

trace. He came, saw and left something; then he was gone..."

"Elder Rodolfo said that I was the very person who led Slavs onto the brilliant road. I don't agree with him. Due to his respect for Elzida, he believed that the prophecy left by the great prophet and pontiff must have a magic, which would send everything back onto the brightest track. However, what could push the fate of the Slavic race back onto that bright track? Nothing. I tell you. Nothing could do that. Neither do I nor others have such an ability. Even the Almighty God doesn't have such an ability!"

"Do you want to know what Elzida left to us in the key box? That's a letter. On the letter, Elzida told me that he saw the destiny of Slavs in the third holy war between humans and demons. In the future, the last Slav would be killed by the army of demons in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Like those human races disappeared in the former two holy wars between humans and demons, all the Slavs would be killed in the 3rd holy war!"

Zhang Tie said calmly. However, the contents of his words shocked everybody at present like a lightning bolt. Not only those common residents of Eschyle City, even the elders of the huge bear tribe and Spencer clan behind Zhang Tie had changed their faces. Those standing behind Zhang Tie moved their eyes onto Pontiff Sarlin, whose look made their heart pound.

At this moment, Pontiff Sarlin lowered his head and became silent.

"Elzida saw your fate; however, he could not see my fate. He only knew that I would arrive in Ice and Snow Wilderness at a certain time. Therefore, he shouldered me the responsibility for your lives in that prophecy. He expected me to change the fate of the entire Slav race using my unknown fate. He requested me to bring hope to the rejuvenation of Slavs at the most dangerous moment. Because of this reason, he left the huge bear tribe to me and made me the leader and clan elder of the huge bear tribe!"

"The fate of each Slav is not a brilliant avenue, but a mysterious road interwoven between death and unknowns. I'm not born to be dignified. Neither do I know whether I would be used to tell a lie. I don't want to lie to you here. I only want to tell you the fact that I don't know how to lead you to the brilliant road; I'm even not sure whether I can save you in the future. I can only tell you that the third holy war between humans and demons is very close. Next year, the 3rd holy war would break out in an all round manner. This war would be even crueler than the former two holy wars. Nobody could escape from it. The battle fire of the coming holy war would cover the ground, the sky and the oceans. Hundreds of millions of living beings would die in the war."

"If the army of demons truly arrive at Ice and Snow Wilderness one day, in front of the 1.37 million souls here, I promise you that I will accompany you to the end as long as the last Slavic fighter who's loyal to me is fighting on this ground!"

"Meanwhile, I will also tell the other tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness and those who are watching me in a terrifying way, the huge bear tribe and the iron bear tribe will keep the current situation. We will prepare for the coming holy war; however, we won't allow Slavs to slack Slavs. When the holy war is coming, any war between tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness would be a betrayal to the whole Slavic race!"

"This is all I want to say!"

"Wish the dead to rest in peace; wish the alive ones to prepare well for the coming holy war!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie turned around and bowed towards that monument...

When Zhang Tie watched the ground, he recalled the bloody words on the wall of Pears' basement once again.

——The demonized puppets in Eschyle City are set to mature at the beginning of the next February.

After combining with the key information that Zhang Tie had obtained in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie knew that the holy war would arrive in next February. This meant they only had at most 3 months to prepare...

"I have to go back to Blackhot City and help my friends out of there..."

Chapter 499: Preparation

Of course, Zhang Tie was serious about the preparation for the coming holy war. On the second noon since the Eschyle Victim Cemetery was founded, the five elders of huge bear tribe and Spencer clan sat together with Zhang Tie and started to discuss officially about how to respond to the coming holy war.

What Zhang Tie said yesterday outside Eschyle City not only shocked common people but also 4 of the 5 elders who were sitting on Zhang Tie's sides. Elder Sarlin was the only one who stayed calm.

This conference was held in a manor of Spencer clan outside Eschyle City. After leaving the cemetery, they arrived here.

This place was once the vacation center of the clan elder of Spencer clan. But it became Zhang Tie's sanatorium now.

Superb white pine wood floor and the ceiling lamp of a pile of class-IV pyramid crystals made this place low-key and luxurious. In winter, the superb white pine wood floor would radiate a wild pale fragrance of pine needles. As long as you sniffed it, you would feel relaxed completely. However, the crystal ceiling lamp above their heads formed a special natural energy which filled the room with a pleasant and energetic environment.

Zhang Tie admitted that the former ruler of Eschyle City really enjoyed his life. It would take them at least 10,000 gold coins for the layout of this average-look room.

This morning, Zhang Tie made an investigation about huge industries of Spencer clan in Eschyle City by car. Yesterday, the ownership of all the properties of Spencer clan in Eschyle city had been officially transferred to Zhang Tie.

Under the supervision of some influential figures in huge bear tribe, wild bear tribe and Eschyle City, Zhang Tie, Elder Rodolfo,

Elder Turin, Elder Gouras, Elder Toles and Pontiff Sarlin respectively signed their name on a document, which represented that Zhang Tie, Spencer clan and huge bear tribe officially confirmed his ownership, position and the right of succession of this city in the future, etc..

Spencer clan transferred 75% of the whole Eschyle City and its ownership of clan industries to "Peter Hamplester", namely Zhang Tie. Spencer clan only kept 25% of its ownership to its clan industries.

In future, the above ownership and property of Spencer clan that Zhang Tie owned would be succeeded by a kid between Zhang Tie and a Spencer woman. That kid would also be the clan elder of Spencer clan in the future.

All the elders of huge bear tribe agreed with the document.

In a sense, this was only a symbolic document, especially for the top decision makers of two tribes. However, sometimes, such a symbol was unnecessary as those words on white papers could make people reassured and reduce a lot of troubles.

After signing that document, Elder Rodolfo read a book like an account book for more than 10 minutes when Zhang Tie finally understood what did it mean by 75% of the properties of Spencer clan.

Eschyle City alone would have over 2.8 million gold coins of tax revenue and over 1.7 million gold coins of property fee and wharf annuity a year.

Moreover, Spencer clan also had dozens of business groups and commercial firms, hundreds of factories and workshops, dozens of manors and farmlands and thousands of square meters of land of different exploitable value and more than 10 mines...

Zhang Tie felt confused after listening to them.

"You tell me, how much can I use each year and how many people

can I mobilize?" Finally, Zhang Tie had to interrupt Elder Rodolfo.

"Except for the expenditures and accumulations for the normal operation of Eschyle City and Spencer industries, 7.8 million gold coins and over 13.4 million people are available each year. Except for the organs of violence like city guards and policemen, 1.26 million people are employed by you in various industries. After the policemen and city guards are re-organized, you have 250,000 city guards and over 40,000 policemen. All the others would follow your order."

Zhang Tie finally understood. He only remembered two figures, 7.8 million gold coins and over 1.5 million people that could be mobilized by him. The two figures were great. After having the people and resources of Eschyle City and Spencer clan, Zhang Tie genuinely felt the great power of a bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

In order to deepen his impression on these things, Zhang Tie especially took a round in Eschyle City this morning.

Zhang Tie paid special attention to three places, Eschyle Steel Plant, Iron Bear Steam Power Corporation and North Wind Shipyard. All of them belonged to Zhang Tie now.

The three companies were the most important industrial enterprises under the affiliation of Spencer clan. Except for Iron Bear Steam Power Corporation which was located in Eschyle City, the other two companies were in an industrial park area called Spias Gulf 30 km away in the east of Eschyle City, where gathered most of industrial enterprises of Eschyle City.

The main products of Iron Bear Steam Power Company were some locomobiles whose power ranged from 5 horsepower to 100 horsepower.

In this age, locomobiles which connected steam engine with boiler was almost human's best friend. This machine could play a great role in rural areas, cities or plants. As long as it was

connected with the proper equipment, it would be used to irrigate farmlands, saw wood, mill rice, drill well, extract oil, thresh, build roads, process and forge machine. Its steam exhaust could also be used to dry, evaporate and warm up as a heat source.

Locomobiles could be fed with both firewood and coal. Besides a heavy weight and a slow start-up speed, this was one of the most perfect machine that humans could produce in this age.

The locomobiles produced by Iron Bear Steam Power Corporation were famous across Ice and Snow Wilderness. One or two locomobiles could always be seen in tribe agglomerations. Even in Kurgan village, Zhang Tie had also seen a small low-speed 5-horsepower locomobile. The machine was used to drill well in Kurgan village.

Iron Bear Steam Power Corporation produced about 3000 sets of various locomobiles a year, which were mainly sold in Ice and Snow Wilderness; few of them were sold to Ewentra Archipelago. Those average buses in Eschyle City were also produced by this company. However, they could only produce a limited number of buses.

The Eschyle Steel Plant could produce 280,000 tons of steel a year as the largest and only steel producer in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

The Eschyle Steel Plant was supported by an iron mine over 40 km away in the east of Spias Gulf which covered about 15-16 square kilometers. This iron mine area contained 940 million tons of high-quality open-air iron ore, which were easily exploited. There was a coal mine about 210 km away in the north of Eschyle City. It contained above 2 billion tons of coal, which was enough to support the demand for coal of the steel industry in Eschyle City.

Of course, the coal mine and iron mine both belonged to Zhang Tie.

Each year, North Wind Shipyard would consume about half of the total production of steel products in Eschyle City. This

shipyard was much bigger than the Milky Way Shipyard of Zhang Tie's grandpa in Golden Sea City. It was already able to build huge steamers of tens of thousands of tons. Whereas, being restricted by the poor industrial development across Ice and Snow Wilderness from various reasons, North Wind Shipyard and Eschyle City didn't have the ability to build key equipment for steam turbine of large ships. North Wind Shipyard purchased the key parts of steam turbines from Gantyadu Island and assembled them on Eschyle City.

This was the Eschyle City in Zhang Tie's eyes and the overall industrial development situation across Ice and Snow Wilderness. According to Zhang Tie's knowledge, due to extremely rigid living environment and the scarcity of various materials, life styles of tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness were divided into three categories, 1/3 for farming work, 1/3 for nomadism and 1/3 for hunting.

Each bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness had their fixed territory. They lived a relatively poor life in their own territory. Except for bear tribe in Eschyle City, almost no other tribe had a well-developed industrial system.

Facing such a situation, Zhang Tie felt pretty frustrated. For Zhang Tie who grew up from Blackhot City, he clearly knew about the importance of steam and steel to human living and prosperity. It could be said that without steam and steel industries, people would never sustain to the end in the former two holy wars between humans and demons.

Xiphodons were fierce; cavalries that rode xiphodons were also tough men and powerful fighters; however, neither could each one have an xiphodon, nor be a fighter above LV 6. For most of commoners, if they could drive a high-performance steam tank or armored vehicle towards a demon, they would not play a weaker role than xiphodon cavalries on the battle field...

"It's the most reliable and effective way for us to face the threat

from demons by using steel and steam. I wonder how the industry of Eschyle City and huge bear tribe would develop?" Zhang Tie determined the theme——To Respond to the 3rd Holy War between Humans and Demons through Industrialization at the beginning of the conference...

Chapter 500: Industrialization

"Costari Plain where huge bear tribe lacks major steel and coal resources which are necessary for industrialization. There's no major coal mine and iron mine across Ice and Snow Wilderness except for the coal mine and the iron mine near Eschyle City!"

Elder Gouras who was responsible for civil affairs in Ice and Snow Wilderness opened his mouth after being silent for a while.

"There's no major coal mine and iron mine in other places of Ice and Snow Wilderness?" Zhang Tie felt unbelievable about this. From the map, Ice and Snow Wilderness occupied more than 20 million square kilometers. Previously he only thought that the weather here was worse. Unexpectedly, it also lacked natural resources.

"There are resources. However, we cannot exploit them. Due to the very severe climate and living conditions, many resources could not be exploited in a large scale. Take the Fire Dragon Coal Mine outside Eschyle City as an instance. We need at least 70,000 miners to exploit such a coal mine. It's easy to feed such a great number of people near Eschyle City; however, if they were dispatched to the wilderness in the north of Eschyle City, a bear tribe might be dragged down. This is equal to supplying an guerrilla of 70,000 soldiers all the year round. It requires a very terrifying daily expenditure which is far more than the value created by these workers." Elder Gouras added.

"Large-scale industrial development has to depend on sufficient population. However, people have to survive on enough grains and suitable living conditions. Workers need to get married and live. It's impossible for them to exploit ores constantly. What's more, Ice and Snow Wilderness severely lacks grains and suitable living conditions. When each tribe chooses their living territory, they have to solve the food problem firstly, instead of directly choosing a place with ores. Only when everyone is full could tribes attempt

to find and exploit some ores so as to meet their basic demand. However, they dare not exploit too much ores considering the cost.

"

"Whether it was experience from the development of human society before the Catastrophe or the objective conclusion in this age, over 40 million population is the priority for a country or region to complete industrialization. However, even though huge bear tribe has the most population among all the tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, we only have less than 20 million people. Such population could hardly complete industrialization in Ice and Snow Wilderness."

Zhang Tie rubbed his forehead as he had to face the reality, "You mean we could only depend on the coal mine and the iron mine near Eschyle City based on the current condition?"

"That's true. Before these fundamental living conditions in Ice and Snow wilderness are improved and enough grains could be produced to meet the basic demand of people, we have to maximize the use of the current resources!" Elder Rodolfo answered.

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie said, "However, less than 300,000 tons of irons a year is too low for Eschyle Iron Plant. What's the highest capacity of Eschyle Steel Plant?"

"Its highest capacity could reached above 2 million tons. Previously, as there was no such a market and demand in Ice and Snow Wilderness, each tribe could almost solve their own demand about steel. Therefore, we didn't expand our capacity. Additionally, it requires a lot of money for expansion of capacity. If we want to expand the capacity of Eschyle Steel Plant, we have to expand the mining scale of the coal mine and the iron mine outside the city! Besides money, we also need a lot of workers and technicians to ensure the smooth operation of the steel plant!"

"Don't worry about money. Get people to make the plan first. We will make further plan after knowing the demand!" Zhang Tie

glanced at the elders, "My principle is that I would not spend any cent of the 7 million gold coins per year in Eschyle City, neither would I spend them in other places outside Ice and Snow Wilderness. We will spend all these money in the preparing for the coming holy war. We will use them to lay the foundation of huge bear tribe and wild bear tribe!"

All the elders nodded inside.

"Now that, we will soon start to expand and optimize the capacity of Eschyle Steel Plant. This might take us about 2 years and over 10 million gold coins..."

"Even if it's completed a bit late, it's always better than the current situation! This is just the prior program. I will spend my money in such a place at first. However, if we want to play the role of steel and steam, it's not enough to just increase the steel capacity. What's more, we need to turn steel into something and put them in certain places so as to enhance our strength to the utmost. Now I want to ask you about a key question. where about do you think the demons would arrive here, if possible, sky, sea, above ground or underground? I heard about some answers about this, but I still want to confirm."

"From sea, for sure!" Elder Toles confirmed while the other elders nodded, "The geological position of Ice and Snow Wilderness is very special. The deepest place under Ice and Snow Wilderness is full of lava. Therefore, demons would never enter here from underground. We have demon north wind belt in the sky which would isolate all the airships. Ice and Snow Wilderness is adjacent to sea in three directions. Only our north is an Ice-Capped Continent. Ice-Capped Continent is a vast depopulated zone, which is hundreds of times bigger than the entire Blackson Humans Corridor. Many places in Ice-Capped Continent have extreme climates. Most areas of Ice-Capped Continent are below 50 Celsius degrees and suffer from ice storm in the evening. Even though knights might not come back alive if they deepen into the Ice-

Capped Continent, not to mention major troops. Therefore, demon troops have to come here by sea!"

"If demons are doomed to come over here by sea, we have to do something to stop them. After expanding Eschyle Steel Plant, we need to expand the capacity of North Wind Shipyard too. The North Wind Shipyard cannot produce steam turbine now. We cannot just import steam turbine. When demons arrive here by sea, we will not be able to import any thing any more. Therefore, I think we need to learn the technology by spending money, inviting people or directly moving the factory of steam turbine from Gantiyadu Island to Ice and Snow Wilderness. Steam turbine is the most sophisticated steam power equipment. As long as we get this technology, we will improve the overall technology strength of Eschyle City greatly!"

"I have some friends in Gantiyadu Island. I will go there in a couple of days. I will bring back the equipment and technicians of steam turbines!" Elder Turin talked in a calm way like it was very easy.

"Didn't Spencer clan want to master this technology before?" Zhang Tie asked.

"The relationship between us and Ewentra Archipelago is very special. Most of the big clans and business groups in that island are our business partners. Whereas, they are also worried about suffering a loss firstly if we want to leave Ice and Snow Wilderness one day; therefore, they keep the key technology for manufacturing huge ships. There's even a confidential agreement among those great powers and big clans who have great sea power in Ewentra Archipelago. The moment Spencer clan or Slavic armored fleet pass by Oro Strait, they would join hands with each other to eliminate this fleet. Therefore, in order to avoid stimulating them excessively, Spencer clan always purchases steam turbine from them. Although we could obtain the manufacturing technology and equipment of steam turbine

through other channels. They also know that we are compromising to them. Therefore, they always sell the products to us at a relatively reasonable price, which is even cheaper than that we can produce, if possible." Elder Rodolfo answered Zhang Tie.

However it would be different now. The 3rd holy war between humans and demons were urgent while demons and their lackeys were growing rampant. Additionally, Spencer clan were sharply weakened. As long as those people were normal, they would never believe that Eschyle City would fight them with armored fleet. Furthermore, although the technology of steam turbine was expensive, it was not unreachable, neither it was a patent. It could be produced in many countries. Now that Elder Turin had promised, this problem would be solved for sure.

In the following minutes, Zhang Tie made his 3rd decision, sending everyone at present in silence.

Zhang Tie wanted to build a railway from Eschyle City to Costari Plain, which penetrated through the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness from south to north. The railway was over 9000 km in length, the two ends of which were respectively linked with huge bear tribe and iron bear tribe. Besides, the railway would connect too many small and medium-sized tribes.

This was Zhang Tie's real plan, which he named as——Tribal Axis!

The moment the elders heard about this ambitious plan, they had been shocked.

"It requires at least 50 million gold coins to build such a railway!" Elder Rodolfo swallowed his saliva, " It's too hard to support such a plan by huge bear tribe and wild bear tribe!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "Don't worry. The two tribes don't need to pay a single cent!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the others glanced at him with a

dubious look, 'It's impossible even by the God's will...'

Table of Contents

[Castle of Black Iron](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: Good News](#)

[Chapter 402: Being Wanted Once Again](#)

[Chapter 403: The First Destination](#)

[Chapter 404: What A Freak!](#)

[Chapter 405: Partners](#)

[Chapter 406: It was Strange](#)

[Chapter 407: A Great Ambition](#)

[Chapter 408: Impulsion and Enlightenment](#)

[Chapter 409: Encounter](#)

[Chapter 410: Empty City Tactic](#)

[Chapter 411: Earthworm Number One](#)

[Chapter 412: Dropping Teeth](#)

[Chapter 413: Heavy Wounds](#)

[Chapter 414: Demon Rats](#)

[Chapter 415: A Wretched Tactic](#)

[Chapter 416: Kill Them All](#)

[Chapter 417: Great Wildness Sutra](#)

[Chapter 418: To be an Animal Controller](#)

[Chapter 419: Making a Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 420: The All-Spirits Pagoda](#)

[Chapter 421: A Butcher](#)

[Chapter 422: The Wild Patron](#)

[Chapter 423: Motive](#)

[Chapter 424: A Discovery](#)

[Chapter 425: The Culprit](#)

[Chapter 426: Prodding the Culprit](#)

[Chapter 427: The Collision](#)

[Chapter 428: Being Shocked Three Times](#)

[Chapter 429: The Sacred Beast's Bone](#)

[Chapter 430: The Hiding Effect](#)

[Chapter 431: A Trouble from a Familiar Person](#)

[Chapter 432: Subduing the Opponents](#)

[Chapter 433: Hostage](#)

[Chapter 434: Zhang Tie's Pet](#)
[Chapter 435: A Dangerous Night](#)
[Chapter 436: The Grey Eagle Tribe](#)
[Chapter 437: Weal and Woe](#)
[Chapter 438: Oh, I See](#)
[Chapter 439: Being Bloody or Not](#)
[Chapter 440: The Heroic Feeling](#)
[Chapter 441: The Team](#)
[Chapter 442: The Mermaid](#)
[Chapter 443: Being Surrounded](#)
[Chapter 444: A Special Invitation](#)
[Chapter 445: Being Eye-catching](#)
[Chapter 446: The Death Game](#)
[Chapter 447: A Bloody Waltz](#)
[Chapter 448: A Startling Javelin](#)
[Chapter 449: Reputation](#)
[Chapter 450: Being Kind-hearted](#)
[Chapter 451: The Prophecy](#)
[Chapter 452: Becoming a Butterfly](#)
[Chapter 453: Super Relics](#)
[Chapter 454: The Arrival of Fury-Class Airship](#)
[Chapter 455: Chaos and Freedom](#)
[Chapter 456: Conquer O'Laura](#)
[Chapter 457: Underground Relics](#)
[Chapter 458: A Humanoid Excavator](#)
[Chapter 459: Excavating Treasures](#)
[Chapter 460: Immortal Stones](#)
[Chapter 461: A Trade](#)
[Chapter 462: Qiyun](#)
[Chapter 463: The Most Valuable Thing](#)
[Chapter 464: A Hidden Force](#)
[Chapter 465: A Business](#)
[Chapter 466: An Unexpected Thing](#)
[Chapter 467: Fruits](#)
[Chapter 468: The Cage Was Closed](#)
[Chapter 469: A Hopeless Situation](#)
[Chapter 470: My Brothers](#)
[Chapter 471: The God's Manifestation \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 472: The God's Manifestation \(II\)](#)

[Chapter 473: The God's Manifestation \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 474: Continue to Play as the God](#)
[Chapter 475: Welcome, My Lord](#)
[Chapter 476: My Lord is Returning!](#)
[Chapter 477: Doubts!](#)
[Chapter 478: The Key Box](#)
[Chapter 479: A Letter from Great Prophet](#)
[Chapter 480: The Contents of the Letter](#)
[Chapter 481: The Power in Hand](#)
[Chapter 482: Thor's Hammer](#)
[Chapter 483: Returning to Grey Eagle Tribe](#)
[Chapter 484: Spencer Clan \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 485: Spencer Clan \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 486: Spencer Clan \(III\)](#)
[Chapter 487: Paternal Love](#)
[Chapter 488: Zhang Tie's Plan](#)
[Chapter 489: A Sudden Change](#)
[Chapter 490: 1000 Km Gallop](#)
[Chapter 491: A Bloody Suppression](#)
[Chapter 492: The Brilliant Military Exploits](#)
[Chapter 493: Only for Peace of Mind](#)
[Chapter 494: The Negotiation](#)
[Chapter 495: Step by Step](#)
[Chapter 496: The Iron-Blood Fist Intention](#)
[Chapter 497: Sacrifice](#)
[Chapter 498: Being Urgent](#)
[Chapter 499: Preparation](#)
[Chapter 500: Industrialization](#)